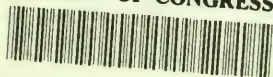


<http://stores.ebay.com/Ancestry-Found>

LIBRARY OF CONGRESS



00015129736

<http://stores.ebay.com/Ancestry-Found>



<http://stores.ebay.com/Ancestry-Found>























# HISTORY

OF THE

## FIFTH MASSACHUSETTS BATTERY.

---

ORGANIZED OCTOBER 3, 1861,

MUSTERED OUT JUNE 12, 1865.

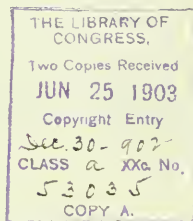
---



BOSTON :  
LUTHER E. COWLES, PUBLISHER,  
60 FEDERAL STREET.  
1902.

Copy 2

E 513 .  
.8  
5<sup>th</sup>  
copy 2



COPYRIGHT, 1902, BY LUTHER E. COWLES

*All Rights Reserved*

## P R E F A C E .

---

In submitting these pages to the general public, made doubly and more profoundly critical by new opportunities for observation, furnished by the recent war with Spain, we are aware that our most appreciative readers will be found among the daily diminishing ranks of our comrades and their circle of friends whose memories reach back to the period of which it treats, — forty years ago.

It is not without some feeling of complacency that we have reviewed these records of the endurance of hardships, which, in the inexperience of early youth, we accepted as the inevitable, and carelessly turned into jest as the easiest and quickest way of getting over the misfortunes of war, and we have closely followed the trials to which were submitted those innate impulses of courage inspired by patriotism, that found us all ready to mount at the call of “Boots and Saddles,” and, harnessing our impatience to the wheels of the grumbling cannon and caissons, to seek the field wherever, whenever and howsoever we were directed.

To our aid in this work we have called the sister of a soldier of the 18th Massachusetts Regiment Infantry, who has brought to her task that which is considered indispensable in the historian of a distant period, “the familiarized knowledge of many years.” Her impressions do not all come at second hand. They are the product of memories transplanted from a living past, to assist in the selection of scenes in camp, on the march,

and in the field, and to present them in a form of ready reference for the use of its members and their descendants for all time, to bear witness to the labors, sacrifices and achievements of the 5th Massachusetts Battery, Light Artillery.

NATHAN APPLETON,  
HENRY D. SCOTT,  
JOHN F. MURRAY,  
THOMAS E. CHASE,  
GEORGE L. NEWTON,  
*Committee.*

The committee desire to acknowledge the receipt of historical data, loan of books, letters, diaries and other means of information necessary to the compilation, from the following persons : —

*Massachusetts*: Miss Katharine Phillips, Miss Jane Phillips, Mrs. Stephen H. Phillips, Brevet Brigadier-General Augustus P. Martin, Stephen F. Keyes, Judge Advocate, Department of Massachusetts, G. A. R., George H. Freeman, Quartermaster R. A. Peirce, Post G. A. R., Charles F. Shaw, R. C. Ingraham, Charles W. Coggeshall (Coggeshall, Maxfield & Co.), B. F. Brightman (Alaska Oil Co.), Isaac S. Mullen, Ward Room Steward U. S. ships *Portsmouth* and *Chocura*, Milo J. Proctor, 6th Massachusetts Infantry, Charles O. Eaton, Custodian of State Flags, Rev. George Batchelor, Wm. G. Kirschbaum, *New Bedford Standard*.

*Maine*: Brevet Major-General Joshua L. Chamberlain, Brevet Major Henry S. Burrage, Major Holman S. Melcher, 20th Maine Regiment Association, Captain Harvey H. Webber.

*New York*: Brevet Colonel Horatio C. King, Hugh Hastings, State Historian, Frank H. Norton, Edmund

B. Taber, New York *Herald*, R. G. Butler, New York *Sun*.

*North Dakota*: Colonel C. A. Lounsberry, 20th Michigan Infantry.

*Pennsylvania*: Colonel John P. Nicholson, Gettysburg National Park Commission.

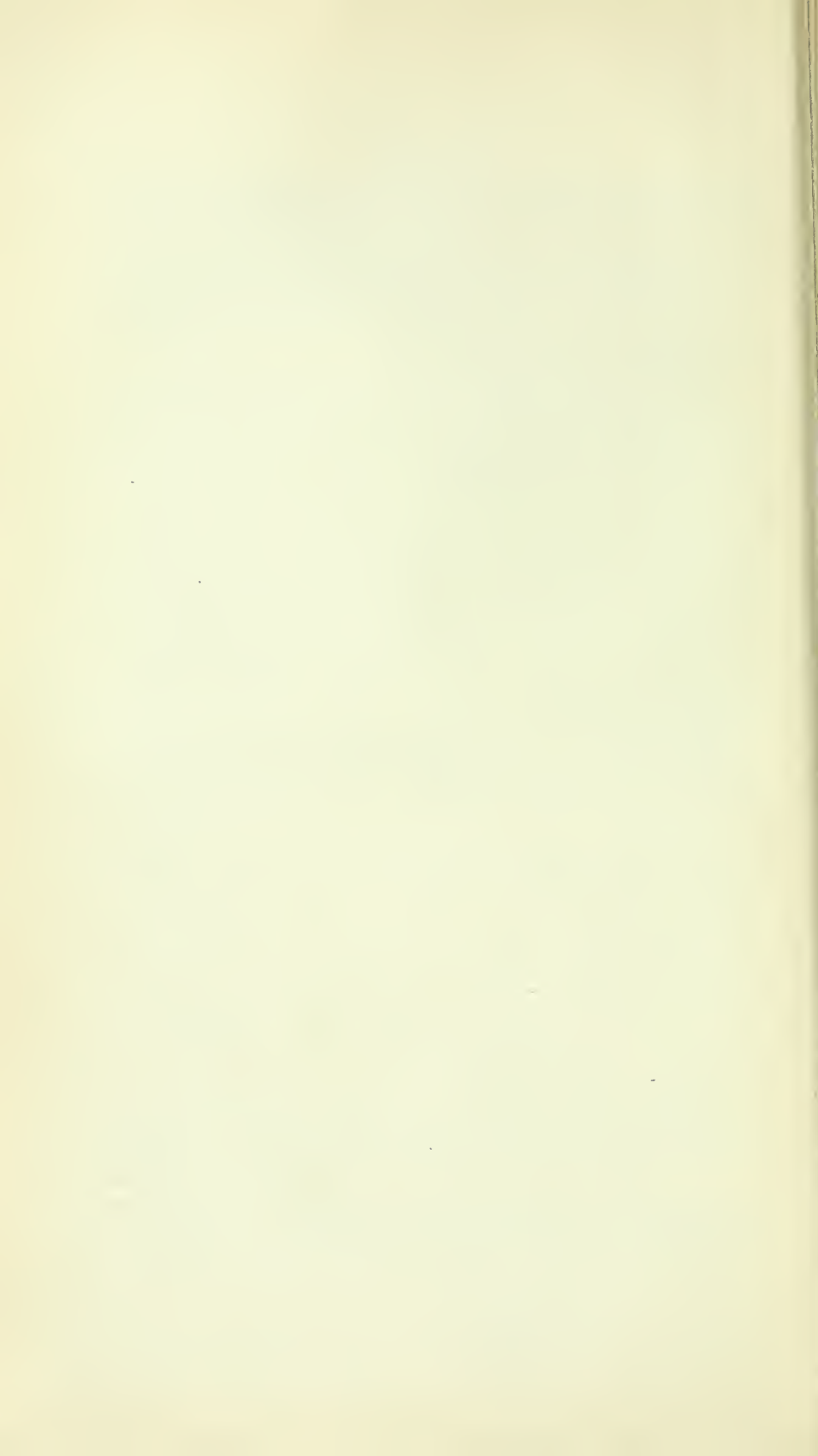
*Rhode Island*: Major Geo. E. Randolph (Denver, Col.), William Ames Card (New York, New Haven & Hartford Railroad), Captain Wm. B. Weeden, 4th (Weeden's) Rhode Island Battery, First Lieutenant Gideon Spencer, 1st Rhode Island Light Artillery, Captain Wm. B. Rhodes, Battery E, 1st Rhode Island, John Galvin and J. B. Peck, Battery C, 1st Rhode Island, Frederic M. Sackett, Adjutant General State of Rhode Island.

*Virginia*: Colonel Wm. Thompson, Governor National Soldiers' Home, W. W. Scott, Librarian State Library, Richmond.

*Washington, D. C.*: Captain Charles E. Troutman, Colonel Lee Crandall, William Crozier, Brigadier-General, Chief of Ordnance, U. S. A.

NOTE. — Parentheses are used to explain the text and for cross-references. Parenthetical remarks by the writers quoted are between dashes.





# TABLE OF CONTENTS.

---

## CHAPTER FIRST.

December 29, 1861—December 22, 1865.

The Battery Flags, 3; The Color Bearers, 4; The Flags Unfurled, 5; The Flags Replaced, 6; The Worn Colors, 11; Corps and Brigade Flags and Badges, 18.

## CHAPTER SECOND.

December 3, 1860—August 23, 1861.

In 'Sixty-One, 23; The Safety of Washington, 24; The Massachusetts Legislature, 24; Massachusetts in the National Congress, 24; The Report of a Committee, 25; General Order No. 4, 26; Interview with U. S. Attorney General Stanton, 30; The Roads to Washington, 36.

## CHAPTER THIRD.

April 2, 1863—June 1, 1865.

The Composition of the Battery, 49; Light Artillery in the Field, 52; Artillery Tactics, 63.

## CHAPTER FOURTH.

August 20, 1861—December 26, 1861.

Recruiting the Battery, 66; The Defences of Washington, 67; McClellan and the Artillery, 68; City of New Bedford, 69; Boston and Vicinity, 70; Recruiting Office in New Bedford, 71; Recruiting Office in Boston, 72; Enlistment Rolls of Lieut. John B. Hyde, 78; Original Commissioned and Non-Commissioned Officers, 82; Enlistment Rolls of Lieut. George D. Allen, 87; Camp Schouler, Lynnfield, 83; Camp Massasoit, Readville, 90; Departure for the Seat of War, 93.

## CHAPTER FIFTH.

December 25, 1861—March 9, 1862.

Washington, D. C., and Hall's Hill, Va., 95; Camp at Washington, D. C., 98; Camp at Hall's Hill, 131; The Target Shooting, 139.

## CHAPTER SIXTH.

March 10, 1862—April 4, 1862.

The Advance upon Richmond, 156 ; The President's War Order, 158 ; McClellan's Address to the Army, 162 ; The Peninsula, 163 ; Centreville and Manassas, 165 ; The Embarkation, 169 ; The Situation, 192 ; Banks' Fifth Corps, 195 ; Howard's Mills, 195 ; The First Gun Fired, 195.

## CHAPTER SEVENTH.

April 6, 1862—May 8, 1862.

Yorktown, 205 ; " In Battery," 205 ; In the Earthworks, 210 ; The Masked Battery, 213 ; Guarding the Bridge over Wormley's Creek by Sections, 217 ; The Trenches, 231 ; The Camp, 233 ; Batteries of Siege Guns, 240 ; The Charge on the Right Fort, 244.

## CHAPTER EIGHTH.

May 9, 1862—May 31, 1862.

The Battle of Hanover Court House, 252 ; Up York River, 253 ; West Point to Cumberland Creek, 257 ; White House Landing, 263 ; Fifth Provisional Army Corps, 264 ; In Hanover County, 271.

## CHAPTER NINTH.

May 31, 1862—June 27, 1862.

The Valley of the Chickahominy, 287 ; Battle of Mechanicsville, 288 ; The Battery at the Bridge, 289 ; Leaves of Absence, 295 ; Review of the Fifth Corps, 296 ; On Picket at New Bridge, 299 ; In the Earthworks, 299 ; The First Death in Camp, 300 ; On Gaines Hill, 302 ; The Bridges across the Chickahominy River, 304 ; Battery No. 4, 310.

## CHAPTER TENTH.

June 26, 1862—June 28, 1862.

The Battle of Gaines Mills, 314 ; The Situation, 315 ; In Battery, 319 ; The March, 319 ; Casualties, 320 ; The Retreat of the Forces, 336.

## CHAPTER ELEVENTH.

June 29, 1862—July 1, 1862.

The Battle of Malvern Hill, 361 ; The March, 361 ; The Navy Assists, 362 ; The Gunboats, 363 ; McClellan and the Artillery, 367 ; Casualties, 370.

## CHAPTER TWELFTH.

July 2, 1862—August 14, 1862.

The Battery divided, 381 ; Harrison's Landing, 382 ; The Inspection, 383 ; Review by Gen. H. W. Halleck, 383 ; Special Order No. 200 Dividing the Battery, 387 ; Officers Resigned, 388 ; Officers Promoted, 390 ; The Sick and Wounded, 392 ; An Artillery Demonstration, 398.

## CHAPTER THIRTEENTH.

August 14, 1862—September 3, 1862.

From Harrison's Landing to Acquia Creek, 413; The Battle of Second Manassas, 413; The Relief of Major General John Pope, 414; The March to Williamsburg, 414; The Sick and Wounded, 415; Acquia Creek, 415; The Fourth R. I. Contingent, 423; Casualties, 423; The Peril of the National Capital, 428.

## CHAPTER FOURTEENTH.

September 3, 1862—October 9, 1862.

The Battery Reunited and Reinstated, 432; The Battery Concentrated, 439; Battle of Antietam, 445; Reported to Gen. Whipple, 445; Re-recruiting the Battery, 447; Emancipation, 448; Full Equipment, 452; Reported to General Morell, 458.

## CHAPTER FIFTEENTH.

October 11, 1862—January 25, 1863.

The Battle of Fredericksburg, 459; Men of Massachusetts and Michigan, 464; Crossing the River, 465; Joined the Division at Harper's Ferry, 477; Snicker's Gap, 479; Camp near Warrenton, Va., 483; Near Falmouth, Va., 489; Hooker in Command of the Fifth Corps, 495; In Battery, 496; Casualties, 497.

## CHAPTER SIXTEENTH.

January 26, 1863 — June 13, 1863.

The Battle of Chancellorsville, 544; A Cavalry Review, 568; Grand Review, 569; Invalid Corps, 576; In Line of Battle, 582; Recrossed the River, 583; Report of Captain Phillips, 586; Reduced to Four Guns, 595; Drew another Section, 598.

## CHAPTER SEVENTEENTH.

June 13, 1863—August 8, 1863.

The Battle of Gettysburg, 602; Rebels said to be in Maryland, 603; Veteran Volunteers, 617; Duty and the Death Penalty, 621; Positions of the Battery, 626, 651; "Fix Prolonge to Fire Retiring," 630; Tenth New York Battery, 664; Fifth Massachusetts Battery Monument, 676; High Water Mark, 678; Progress South of the Armies, 682.

## CHAPTER EIGHTEENTH.

August 9, 1863—November 23, 1863.

The Battle of Rappahannock Station, 695; Massachusetts State Agency, 697; White Sulphur Springs, 703; Target Practice, 706; The Invalid

Corps, 709; The Fight at Bristoe, 716; Manœuvring for Position, 721; Music in the Army, 728; Attack on the Earthworks, 732; Under Fire, 733.

## CHAPTER NINETEENTH.

November 23, 1863—February 29, 1864.

The Battle of Mine Run, 740; Brigade Drill, 744; The Crossing of the Rapidan, 745; In Line of Battle, 746; Longfellow's Son Shot, 747; A Fatal Mistake, 749; Reënlistments, 761; Music for the Army, 762; Money Paid by Drafted Persons, 767.

## CHAPTER TWENTIETH.

March 1, 1864—May 7, 1864.

The Battle of the Wilderness, 776; Grant takes Command, 777; The Invalid Corps, 784; Lieut. Scott Resigns, 785; "Wanted,—Recruits." Poster, 787; Ball at General J. J. Bartlett's Headquarters, 789; Veteran Reserve Corps, 790; Reduction of Army Corps, 792; The Countersign, 797; The Demi-Brigade, 798; The Demi-Brigade Dissolved, 803; The Fight of May 5, 805; The Fight of May 6, 807; The Flight of May 7, 808.

## CHAPTER TWENTY-FIRST.

May 8, 1864—May 18, 1864.

The Battle of Spottsylvania Court House and Laurel Hill, 811; Captain A. P. Martin Wounded, 816; The Fight of May 8, 816; The Fight of May 9, 818; Casualties, 818; The Fight of May 10, 819; The Fight of May 11, 820; The Fight of May 12, 822; Casualties, 823; Turned in a Section, 825; The Fight of May 18, 826.

## CHAPTER TWENTY-SECOND.

May 19, 1864—May 25, 1864.

The Battle of the North Anna River and Virginia Central Railroad, 827; The Fight of May 19, 831; Rounds Fired by the Battery in Eighteen Days, 833; The Fight of May 23, 834; The Crossing at Jericho Ford, 834; The Fifth Battery Men as Barn Movers, 835; The Fight of May 25, 839; Casualties, 839; Lieutenant Appleton's Promotion and Resignation, 847.

## CHAPTER TWENTY-THIRD.

May 26, 1864—June 14, 1864.

The Battle of Bethesda Church, 851; Officers Promoted, 857; Casualties, June 2, 858; Bethesda Church, 858; The Charge of the Battery, 863; The Company Fund, 864.



## CHAPTER TWENTY-FOURTH.

June 15, 1864—August 18, 1864.

The Battle of Petersburg, 869; The Assault of June 18, 877; Casualties, 877; The Fortifications, 879; The Norfolk Railroad Cut, 881; The Sanitary Commission, 886; The Army Ration, 887; A Work Built for the Battery, 889; The Rebel Raid into Maryland, 890; Bombardment of July 30, 893; Casualties, 894.

## CHAPTER TWENTY-FIFTH.

August 18, 1864—September 1, 1864.

The Battle of the Weldon Railroad, 899; Expiration of Term of Service, 901; The Possession of the Weldon Railroad, 904; Casualties, 905; The Third Massachusetts Battery, 906; Officers Promoted, 907; Members of the Third Massachusetts Battery Transferred, 908.

## CHAPTER TWENTY-SIXTH.

September 2, 1864—November 19, 1864.

The Battle of Hatcher's Run, 910; Disposal of Transferred Non-Commissioned Officers, 915; Commission Officers Promoted, 917; Non-Commissioned Officers Promoted, 918; The Battery in Fort Davison, 919; Mustered Out at Expiration of Term of Service, 923; New Section (Centre) Added, 924; The Fight at Hatcher's Run, 924; The Defences of Washington, 927.

## CHAPTER TWENTY-SEVENTH.

November 4, 1864—April 6, 1865.

The Assault on Petersburg, 930; Examination of Recruits at the Hospital, 935; The Weldon Railroad, 936; In the Advance Going Out: In the Rear Coming Back, 938; Four Guns in Fort Hays, 938; Two Guns in Battery 22, 938; Retired from the Forts, 939; Returned to the Forts, 940; Hatcher's Run, 941; Back to the Old Camp, 941; Turned in a Section, 942; The Final Attack, 943; The Last Shot, 943; Casualties, 947.

## CHAPTER TWENTY-EIGHTH.

April 3, 1865—June 24, 1865.

Guns removed from Fort Hays, 953; The Artillery Reserve, 954; The Artillery Brigade, 955; The Last Camp in Virginia, 956; The Last March, 957; Mustered Out of the United States Service, 958.

---

Proceedings of the Fifth Massachusetts Battery Association, 969.



## LIST OF ILLUSTRATIONS.

---

	PAGE
THE BATTERY FLAGS . . . . .	<i>Frontispiece</i>
THE COMMISSIONED OFFICERS . . . . .	66
EQUIPMENTS . . . . .	75
LIEUT. HYDE AND "BLACK CHARLEY" . . . . .	92
PLAN OF OPERATIONS: YORKTOWN . . . . .	204
BUGLE CALL—"IN BATTERY" . . . . .	205
BUGLE CALL—"TO THE COLOR" . . . . .	209
SIGNAL FLAG . . . . .	219
REDOUBT . . . . .	225
LUNETTE . . . . .	226
CAMP CHAIR . . . . .	228
HOUSE NEAR WORMLEY'S CREEK . . . . .	234
REBEL REDOUBT . . . . .	247
VALLEY OF THE CHICKAHOMINY: PLAN . . . . .	286
BATTLE OF GAINES MILLS: PLAN . . . . .	314
BATTLE OF MALVERN HILL: PLAN . . . . .	360
SECOND POSITION AT MALVERN HILL . . . . .	372
CANNONEER'S SWORD . . . . .	386
ARMY DESK . . . . .	441
BATTLE OF FREDERICKSBURG: PLAN . . . . .	459
BATTLE OF CHANCELLORSVILLE: PLAN . . . . .	544
BATTLE OF GETTYSBURG, JULY 2, 1863: PLAN . . . . .	602

	PAGE
PORTRAIT OF CAPTAIN AUGUSTUS P. MARTIN . . . . .	613
BRINGING OFF THE GUN . . . . .	636
BATTLE OF GETTYSBURG, JULY 3, 1863; PLAN . . . . .	648
CAPTAIN PHILLIPS AND HIS HORSE . . . . .	662
FIFTH MASS. BATTERY MONUMENT . . . . .	676
HIGH WATER MARK: TABLET . . . . .	678
LIEUT. APPLETON AND HIS HORSE "FOLKO" . . . . .	707
RAILROAD BRIDGE OVER THE RAPPAHANNOCK RIVER . . . . .	733
CAMP OF THE FIFTH MASS. BATTERY, RAPPAHANNOCK STATION, VA., DEC. 1863,-APRIL, 1864 . . . . .	740
"ACTION FRONT." DRILL AT WINTER QUARTERS CAMP, RAPPAHANNOCK STATION, VA., MAR. 1864 . . . . .	793
ONE PIECE OF THE FIFTH MASS. BATTERY, RAPPAHANNOCK STATION, VA., APRIL, 1864. LIEUT. SIMONDS STANDING IN THE REAR . . . . .	797
BATTLE OF PETERSBURG: PLAN . . . . .	869
REUNION AT NEW BEDFORD, MASS., AUG. 9, 1892 . . . . .	967

## CHAPTER I.

### THE BATTERY FLAGS.

"An' didn't we flock to the colors when the drums began to beat,  
An' didn't we march with proud step along this village street?  
An' didn't the people cheer us when we got aboard the cars,  
With the flag a-wavin' o'er us, and went away to the wars?"

—CAPTAIN JACK CRAWFORD.

There never was a time when the American Flag stood for so much in the estimation of the people of the Commonwealth of Massachusetts, as in the spring and summer of 1861: there was never a time when the emblem of the indivisibility of the Union stood so much in need of appreciation and respect.

Emotions of alarm and anxiety for the security of the individual and all he held most dear, mingled with and intensified the enthusiasm which called together great convocations of all classes and both sexes, to witness the simple raising of the flag which represented all that the constitution of the United States was intended to guarantee. In the capital of the state vast assemblages breathlessly watched the unfolding of flags of immense size, made of the costliest material, across the principal streets, in the most conspicuous places, to the music of the national airs.

Flags were flung out from the steeples of churches. The clergy were among the most patriotic of those who addressed the multitude, the exercises opening with prayer. Far as the eye could see, above the crowd in the street, in the windows and on the roofs of houses, the people waited for the orator's closing words: "Our Country, the United States of America," which were the signal for the running



out of the flag, and for long continued and hearty cheering, while the bands played "The Star Spangled Banner" and "Hail Columbia."

Members of Congress anxious to show their colors, and returned travellers from the turbulent South, made soul stirring speeches and roused their youthful hearers to a wild fervor which from the first was unrestrainable, and sooner or later carried them "away to the wars." Ardent, unfaltering, undying devotion to the beautiful ensign was inculcated by the speakers and punctuated by the fife, drum and bugle.

In the hush of the church vestries mission circles were formed by women, ten thousand of them in this state, who, fearing they knew not what, saw their stitches set through tears, by hurrying, tremulous hands, while the men cheered at the "flag raisings." They organized little bands called "Soldiers' Aid Societies."

Sweethearts and wives, and sisters, made red, white and blue neckties, which the young soldiers wore in the state camps or on brief furloughs home.

Young ladies in private schools took up subscriptions and purchased handsome standards which they presented to the volunteer companies. Young gentlemen in theirs presented flags and equipments to graduates. Note paper and envelopes ornamented with flags were the correct thing in correspondence.

A large and elegantly wrought shawl was presented to the wife of Governor Andrew by R. H. Stearns & Co., popular dry goods merchants, designed and executed, by a lady in Newton. It was of the finest worsted in red, white and blue colors, with thirty-four stars and the Union shield of the same material so arranged as to give to the whole a symmetrical appearance and an exceedingly fine effect.

And underlying all this ebullition of feeling absorbed by one object, in the participation of which political lines were effaced and a "war democrat" was as good a fighting man

as a republican, there was absolute, uncompromising fealty to the government, and a grim determination to stand by the flag at whatever cost to themselves or to others.

Major C. A. Woodruff, U. S. A., in a speech at one of the reunions of the Society of the Army of the Potomac, has given the best expression to this sentiment :

"No patriotic citizen of this Government can admit that there was any equality of flags: for true Americans there was but one national flag, and that the one the Union soldiers bore to complete victory: nor that there was any co-honor of causes: for true Americans there was but one just cause, and that the preservation of the Federal Union."

To prove this fealty by action there was an ever increasing necessity in the danger which threatened Washington, and called forth from Wendell Phillips the following enunciation :

"The war, then, is not aggressive, but in self-defence, and Washington has become the Thermopylæ of liberty and justice. Rather than surrender that Capital, cover every square foot of it with a living body; crowd it with millions of men and empty every bank vault at the North to pay the cost. Teach the world, once for all, that North America belongs to the stars and stripes, and under them no man shall wear a chain. . . . Cannon think in the 19th century; and you must put the North in the right before you can justify her in the face of the world: before you can pour Massachusetts like an avalanche through the streets of Baltimore, and carry Lexington on the 19th of April, south of Mason and Dixon's line."

## THE FLAGS OF THE BATTERY.

NOTES OF FRANCIS P. WASHBURN, MAY 5, 1900.

"As regards the Battery flags: two were given us by the state when we were organized; one a full-sized silk battle flag, the stars and stripes, the other a white silk guidon with

cross cannon and number and name of the Battery. The first had the staff shot off at Gaines Mills, and after the battle, was spliced, and did service through the Seven Days fight. Both flags were so badly used up in the campaign that when the men were transferred to the Third Mass. and Fourth R. I. batteries at Harrison's Landing the flags were sent back to the state. The only flags we ever carried after this were the regular U. S. Artillery guidons.

The guidon was not used at the Seven Days' fight but was in the baggage wagon at that time, and a can of oil was spilled on it which spoiled it for use by the Battery, and I always supposed it was sent home with the other flag.

The flags were furnished by the state, and were a part of the equipment carried by a battery at that time. When we joined the Army we were not allowed a color bearer or a guide: one of the buglers took those places."

### THE COLOR BEARERS.

The buglers were James Winters, John C. Tucker, and after Tucker's three years' term expired, Henry M. Gifford. Winters re-enlisted and served through the war. The first guidon was Mortier Gale. He carried a large flag at parade, a small flag or guidon was ordinarily used. On a march both flags were carried in the Battery wagon. He carried the U. S. flag until after the seven days' battles. He was afterwards hospital steward. The second Bugler took his place. The state guidon could not be used because of the white color. It was sent home from Harrison's Landing.

Then came Andrew Hosley, a detached man from an infantry regiment, who carried the colors, and after him A. K. P. Hayden.

In the memory of some members Chris. Allen of New Bedford at one time acted as color bearer, and George W. Poole as Guidon.

According to the report of Colonel Charles Amory, Master of Ordnance of the Commonwealth of Massachusetts for 1861, that department issued to the Fifth Mass. Battery 1 silk Guidon with staff and socket, 1 National flag, silk, with staff and socket, 4 camp colors with staves, and 2 bugles.

## THE FLAGS UNFURLED.

*Journal of D. Henry Grow.*

"Camp on Pennsylvania Avenue, Washington, about 8 or 10 minutes' walk from the Capitol, Sunday morning, Dec. 29, 1861: After breakfast put on my uniform and went on dress parade. As it is the first Sunday here, we took our Ensign and Right Guide from their covering and for the first time in our presence our colors were loosed to the breeze.

"They are handsome flags, one an American flag of silk, and the guidon of red and white with golden cannons, and the number of the Battery. After parade, before we were dismissed we had divine service. The officers sang a psalm, then Lieut. Allen acted as chaplain. He read the first chapter in the Bible, then sang, then a prayer, and finished the services by all the men singing 'Old Hundred.'"

At this time the state guidon, swallow tail in form, was half red and half white, but subsequently, while retaining its shape, the stars and stripes were added in accordance with the following general order:—

HEADQUARTERS OF THE ARMY,  
ADJUTANT GENERAL'S OFFICE,  
WASHINGTON, January 18, 1862.

General Orders  
No. 4.

1. Under instructions from the Secretary of War, dated January 7, 1862, guidons and camp colors for the Army will be made like the United States flag, with stars and stripes. . . .

By command of Major General McClellan.

L. THOMAS,  
*Adjutant General.*

## THE FLAGS REPLACED.

His Excellency Governor John A. Andrew in his inaugural address, January 9, 1863, recommended replacing the flags torn and worn in battle in the following words:

"Since the summer of 1862, several of our volunteer corps which reported that their colors had become unfit for use by being in battle and worn by the exposures of service, have been supplied by the Master of Ordnance with new flags upon the return to his charge of those which they had borne so honorably through two campaigns. I respectfully ask an appropriation to cover the expense thus incurred, and of the replacement when needed of the colors of all the Massachusetts troops. It is a proud satisfaction to know that never yet has the white standard of this commonwealth been surrendered to the enemy."

In 1863, Joel Hayden was Lieut. Governor, Oliver Warner, Secretary, Henry K. Oliver, Treasurer. Jonathan E. Field was president of the Senate and Alexander H. Bullock was Speaker of the House of Representatives.

The legislature of that year passed the following Resolve:

Resolved, That a sum not exceeding three thousand dollars is hereby appropriated for the purpose of replacing the flags of Massachusetts regiments worn out or lost in service, the same to be expended from time to time during the current year, by the Governor with the advice and consent of the Council.

Approved March 5, 1863.

A copy of this Resolve was sent to the Captain of the Battery with the following words added in red ink: "A 'special Requisition' for the above will be promptly answered."

It is noted by the historian of the Third Mass. Battery that on March 13, 1863, a new state color appeared in line. The Fifth Mass. Battery was then in camp near the Third in the vicinity of Falmouth, Va., but there is no record of a new color having been sent or received. In his Returns of Clothing, Camp and Garrison Equipage for Oct. 31, 1863, Captain Phillips made the following entry:

"Oct. 31, 1863, Received One Silk Guidon—new—." In November of the same year "On hand One Guidon."

According to the report of the Master of Ordnance of the State of Massachusetts for the year 1863, no worn colors from the Fifth Mass. Battery were in possession of the Department, January 1, 1864, nor received during that year ending December 31, 1863, neither is there any mention of the one issued to them during that year.

In the Acts and Resolves of the Massachusetts Legislature for 1864, Chapter 68, may be found the following Resolve to provide for the procuring of flags to replace those lost or worn out in the service, and for other purposes:

Resolved, That the unexpended balance of the appropriation of three thousand dollars authorized by Chapter 26 of the Resolves of 1863, together with an additional sum not exceeding one thousand dollars, shall be allowed and paid for the purpose of replacing the flags of Massachusetts regiments worn out in the service, and also for providing the necessary colors and guidons for Massachusetts regiments and batteries in the service of the United States; the same to be expended from time to time, during the current year by the Governor, with the advice and consent of the Council.

Approved May 10, 1864.

Section 77, Chapter 238, Acts and Resolves, 1864.

Each regiment shall be furnished by the State with the national and state colors, their staffs, belts and sockets, and each battery of light artillery and company of cavalry with its proper guidon, staff, belt, and socket, and the commander of such regiment, battery, or company, shall be responsible for their safe keeping.

From the Report of Brigadier-General and Acting Chief of Ordnance Richard A. Peirce to the Governor and Commander-in-Chief, dated January 2, 1865, for the year 1864:

"Schedule K: Worn colors received by the Chief of Ordnance during the year ending December 31, 1864.

5th Light Battery, 1 Guidon, silken.

Schedule L: Worn colors in charge of the Chief of Ordnance, December 31, 1864.

5th Light Battery, 1 Guidon, silken."



There is no mention of the one issued to them in 1864.

In a letter to a member of his family Captain Phillips wrote: "Before Petersburg, Nov. 16, 1864, I send you by Lieut. Tripp the Battery flag which I wish to preserve as a trophy. It is torn and spotted, but I wish to keep it just as it is."

In his Returns for the month of November, 1864, he has,—"Rec'd One Guidon in case—new—" and in December "On hand one Guidon."

### THE INSCRIPTIONS ON THE FLAGS.

HEAD QUARTERS OF THE ARMY.

ADJUTANT GENERAL'S OFFICE

WASHINGTON Feb. 22 1862.

General Orders

No. 19

The following Order has been received from the War Department:

It is ordered that there shall be inscribed upon the colors or guidons of all regiments and batteries in the service of the United States the names of the battles in which they have borne a meritorious part. These names will also be placed on the Army Register at the head of the list of the officers of each regiment.

It is expected that troops so distinguished will regard their colors as representing the honor of their corps—to be lost only with their lives; and that those not yet entitled to such a distinction will not rest satisfied until they have won it by their discipline and courage.

The General commanding the Army will, under the instructions of this Department, take the necessary steps to carry out the order.

By command of Major General McClellan.

L. THOMAS

Official:

*Adjutant General.*

Nothing was done in relation to this order until the autumn of 1864, when there appeared the following circular forwarded through the Commander of the Artillery Brigade:

HEAD QUARTERS 5TH ARMY CORPS,

September 21st 1864.

Circular

No. 135

Division Commanders and the Commander of the Artillery Brigade, will please have made out a report from each regiment and battery in their commands, of the battles which they claim should be inscribed on their flags and guidons for meritorious conduct as prescribed

in General Order No. 19, of February 22, 1862, from Head Quarters of the Army.

By command of

MAJOR GENERAL WARREN.

(Signed)

FRED T. LOCKE

A. A. G.

HEAD QUARTERS ARTILLERY BRIG. 5TH A. C.

Sept. 21st 1864.

Official.

Furnished for the information of Battery commanders. A list of battles in which their commands have borne a part, and which will entitle the commands to have the same inscribed on their guidons, will be forwarded by commanders with the least possible delay.

By command of

COL. C. S. WAINWRIGHT

FORD. MORRIS,

Lieut. A. A. A. G.

The following November a document was received at Battery Head Quarters labelled "Decision of the Military Board in Relation to what constitutes a battle to distinguish from skirmishes in which some portions of the command may have been engaged.

Also calling for a list of Battles in which Battery E has actually been engaged during the present war."

This is endorsed by Captain Phillips, "Received and information furnished Nov. 11. 1864."

## THE DECISION ETC.

HEAD QUARTERS 5TH ARMY CORPS,

Nov. 8. 1864

General Orders

No. 55

By decision of the Military Board convened at these Head Quarters Oct. 29, 1864, by S. O. (Special Order) No. 268, the following list comprises all the battles in which this Corps has been engaged. Many regiments have claimed as battles actions which the board decides are only part of the same battle, and to be included under one name.

All that are claimed on the original list that do not appear on the list furnished have been rejected.

It is decided that an organization may claim any engagement in which the Corps to which it belonged took part, whether actually engaged or under orders and held in readiness on the field. Division Commanders and the Commander of the Artillery Brigade, will have new lists forwarded as soon as possible from all the regiments and batteries in their commands to include only such battles designated on the accompanying list, in order that the claims may be forwarded, and the list published at an early date.

By command of

MAJ. GENERAL WARREN

A. S. MARVIN JR.

A. A. General.

Head Quarters Artillery Brig. 5th A. C.

Nov. 9, 1864.

FORD MORRIS

Lieut. and A. A. A. General.

Official:

The "list" is appended, and in the following spring the order for the inscriptions was issued:

HEAD QUARTERS ARMY OF THE POTOMAC

March 7. 1865.

General Orders

No. 10.

In accordance with the requirements of General Orders No. 19, of 1862, from the War Department, and in conformity with the reports of boards convened to examine into the services rendered by the troops concerned, and by the authority of the Lieutenant General commanding Armies of the United States, it is ordered that there shall be inscribed upon the colors or guidons of the following regiments and batteries, serving in this army, the names of the battles in which they have borne a meritorious part, and as hereinafter specified, viz:

#### BATTERY "E" MASSACHUSETTS ARTILLERY.

Yorktown.

Hanover Court House.

Mechanicsville.

Gaines Mills.

Malvern Hill.

Second Bull Run.

Rappahannock Station.

Mine Run.

Wilderness.

Spottsylvania.

North Anna.

Bethesda Church.

Fredericksburg.	Petersburg.
Chancellorsville.	Weldon Railroad.
Gettysburg.	Hatcher's Run.

By command of Major General Meade

GEO. D. RUGGLES,  
*Assistant Adjutant General*

Official :

### RETURNED TO THE STATE.

Many flags had been returned before the war ended, for Governor Andrew thus referred to them in his inaugural address to the legislature in January, 1865 :

"In the vestibule of the capitol of the Commonwealth you passed to this hall of your deliberations beneath a hundred battle-flags, war worn, begrimed and bloody. They are sad but proud memorials of the transcendent crime of the Rebellion, the curse of slavery, the elastic energy of a free Commonwealth, the glory and the grief of War.

There has been no loyal army, the shout of whose victory has not drowned the dying sigh of a son of Massachusetts. There has been no victory gained which her blood has not helped to win."

After the war was over the Government made the following provision for the preservation of the colors in the following order :

WAR DEPARTMENT  
ADJUTANT GENERAL'S OFFICE  
WASHINGTON May 15, 1865.

General Orders

No. 94.

Extracts : III. The Adjutant General of the Army will designate places of rendezvous in the respective States, to which the regiments, after muster out, will be forwarded *for payment*.

IV. Upon arrival at the rendezvous where the musters-out are to take place, a critical examination of the regimental and company records, books, &c., will be made; and in case of omissions, the proper commanders will be made to supply them, and make all the entries as enjoined by the Army Regulations. At the same time the muster-out rolls will be commenced and prepared *in accordance with existing regulations*, under the direction of the Assistant Commissaries of Musters of Divisions, superintended by the Corps Commissaries. Corps

and Department commanders will see that the work is pushed with energy and executed promptly, using to this end Division and Brigade commanders to superintend it, and their respective staff officers, to aid the mustering officers in collecting the data for the muster-out rolls and discharge papers as well as the preparation of the same. . . .

V. So soon as the rolls of a regiment are completed, the said command, with its arms, colors, and necessary equipage, will be placed *en route* to its state, and to the rendezvous therein at or nearest which it was mustered in.

*En route*, and after arrival in the State the following will be observed:

1. Immediately on arrival at the State rendezvous, the regiment will be reported to, and taken control of, by the Chief Mustering Officer for the State, or his assistant at the point.

7. The Chief Mustering Officer will, under regulations to be established by himself, take possession of and carefully preserve the regimental and company records, also the *colors* with the respective regiments, and hold them subject to orders from the Adjutant General of the Army.

8. As soon as practicable after arrival at the state rendezvous the Chief Mustering Officer, or his assistant, will see that the arms and other public property brought to the State by the troops are turned over to the proper officer of the Supply Department thereat.

VI. In preparing the muster-out rolls, Corps, Department, Division and Brigade commanders will hold regimental officers to a strict accountability, in order to insure accurate and complete records of the enlisted men, and the better to establish the just claims of the non-commissioned officers and privates who have been wounded, or of the representatives of those who have died from disease or wounds, or been killed in battle.

VII. Prior to the departure of regiments from the rendezvous where mustered out, all public property,—except arms, colors, and equipage required *en route*,—will be turned over to, and cared for by, the proper officers of the Supply Department concerned.

## THE RETURN OF THE GUIDON BY CAPT. PHILLIPS.

HEADQUARTERS BATTERY E.  
MASS. ART'Y

READVILLE, MASS., June 12, '65.

I certify on honor that I have this day turned over to

Bv't Capt. (Robert) Davis 2d U. S. Inf. and mustering officer the following articles of C. C. and G. Equipage in obedience to G. O. No. 94 War Dept.

A. G. O. current series.

#### A GUIDON.

On the back of this paper is written:—

“No. 4. Transferred to Capt. Davis, 1 Guidon.”

In Captain Phillips' Returns of Clothing, Camp and Garrison Equipage for the month of June, 1865, there is the entry:—

“Transferred to Capt. Davis One Guidon.”

The records of the Record and Pension Office of the War Department, show by information forwarded from that office December 8, 1900, that by telegram dated War Department, Adjutant General's Office, June 13, 1865, the chief mustering officer of the State of Massachusetts was authorized to turn over all regimental colors in his charge under section 7, paragraph 5, Special Orders No. 94, War Department, Adjutant General's Office, 1865, to the Governor of the State of Massachusetts, at such time as the latter might name.

#### RECEIVED BY THE STATE.

On the 13th of December, 1865, the following General Order was issued:

COMMONWEALTH OF MASSACHUSETTS

HEAD QUARTERS, BOSTON.

December 13, 1865.

General Orders No. 18

By General Order No. 94, of the War Department, issued May 15, 1865, volunteer regiments and batteries, on their return to their respective states, when mustered out and discharged, were to deposit their colors with the chief United States mustering officers, to be by them transferred to the governors of the states.

Since that time the following Massachusetts regiments and batteries, having faithfully served their country to the end of the Rebellion, returned home and been discharged, their colors have been received by Brevet-Colonel F. N. Clarke U. S. A., Chief Mustering Officer, viz. . . . 4th, 5th, 6th, 7th, 11th, 15th, 16th Batteries, Light Artillery . . .

On Friday, 22d. instant.—Forefather's Day.—the colors will be escorted from Colonel Clarke's headquarters, No. 2 Bulfinch Street, to the State House, where they will be formally received by His Excellency the Governor: and placed in the public archives of the Commonwealth, to be sacredly preserved forever as grand emblems of the heroic services and patriotic devotion to Liberty and Union of one hundred and forty thousand of her dead and living sons.

The escort will be performed by the 1st Company of Cadets Lieutenant Colonel Holmes commanding, who will report to Brevet Colonel Clarke, at his headquarters, at 11 o'clock a. m., when the line of march will be taken up.

All general, regimental and company officers, and past general, regimental and company officers of Massachusetts, and especially all officers and past officers, and all non-commissioned officers and privates of the several organizations named above, are invited to take part in the ceremony, and join in the procession.

The officers will, as far as practicable detail a color-guard for the colors of their respective late commands. The original date of muster-in of each command will govern its place in the procession. Officers and enlisted men, as far as practicable, will appear in uniform.

For further orders and information apply to the Adjutant General of the Commonwealth.

By order of His Excellency JOHN A. ANDREW,  
Governor and Commander-in-Chief.  
WILLIAM SCHOULER, *Adjutant General*.

The returned regiments and batteries having by their representatives signified their intention of taking part in these ceremonies, the following order was issued:

COMMONWEALTH OF MASSACHUSETTS,  
HEAD QUARTERS, BOSTON,  
December 13, 1865.

[General Order, No. 19.]

It having been represented at these head-quarters that the Massachusetts regiments and companies which had filled their allotted terms of service in the field prior to May 15, 1865, the colors of which are deposited in the State House, desire to take part in the flag reception on the 22d. instant, referred to in General Order No. 18, current series,



the Commander-in-Chief most cordially complies with their wishes. The colors of these organizations will be handed them on the morning of the 22d. upon proper requisition. They are to be returned at the close of the services. Major General Darius N. Couch of Taunton, ranking officer of volunteers in Massachusetts, has been invited to take command of the troops. Should he decline Brevet Major General George H. Gordon of Boston, next in rank, will take command.

The commanding general will arrange details.

By order of His Excellency JOHN A. ANDREW,  
Governor and Commander-in-Chief.

WILLIAM SCHOULER, *Adjutant General.*

Major Gen'l Couch accepted the command, appointed his staff, designated the Division and Brigade commanders, and made such arrangements for the order of the procession as he thought proper, announcing the same through the public press as directed by the Commander-in-Chief.

Included in the regiments and batteries were those who served three months, ninety days, one hundred days, six months, nine months, one year and three years regiments and batteries, and it was decided that the organizations should take their places in line according to their numbers and not according to date of muster-in, as stated in General Order No. 18. This was to prevent confusion in the formation of the line. Meetings were at once held and color-bearers appointed by the organizations, and Brig. Gen. Edward W. Hinks was appointed Chief of Staff with headquarters at Room 10, State House.

Brigadier and Brevet Major-General Joseph Hayes was appointed to the command of the Division of Artillery, which consisted of two Brigades: First, sixteen light batteries, Captain and Brevet Colonel Augustus P. Martin, commanding, and Second, four regiments and two battalions heavy artillery, Colonel Wm. S. King, commanding.

The procession formed in the following order:

1st, Cavalry; 2d, Artillery; 3d, Infantry.

The Cavalry formed on Park Street mall of the Common, right resting near Park Street gate, the Artillery on the

Tremont Street mall, right resting near Park Street gate, and the Infantry on Beacon Street mall, right resting in front of the State House.

General officers and their staffs appeared mounted as far as practicable, and officers and men were in uniform and carried side arms when such were available.

The weather was clear and cold and the ground was white with snow.

The stars and stripes floated from staffs attached to churches, and decorated public and private buildings. The windows and roofs of houses were filled with spectators looking down on the crowd beneath, but the mind was busy with memories of events undreamed of in 1861, and at sight of the worn colors borne by the troops, although there were cheers hearty and prolonged, they were cheers with a difference.

The headquarters of General Couch were pitched on the Park Street mall near the gate, and the colors were delivered to the officers of the respective commands from his tent. Before the procession started the flags were formally passed over, with a few remarks from Brevet Colonel Francis N. Clarke, Chief U. S. Mustering Officer to General Couch at these headquarters.

General Couch's speech of acceptance closed with the following words:

"To those who have been spared to bear them on to final triumph, devolves the privilege of returning them to the Commonwealth, in the consciousness that *the object for which they were unfurled* has been fully accomplished, the principles they symbolize triumphantly vindicated, and the Union of the States restored upon a firm and enduring basis."

This ceremony over, the procession started at eleven o'clock a. m. The Boston Brigade Band accompanied the Independent Cadets who formed the escort, and Gilmore's Band preceded the Infantry Corps.

The route of march was from the Common to Tremont Street as far north as Hanover Street, then as far south as Dover Street and back to the Common through Arlington and Beacon Streets.

In the Artillery Division, which made a fine display, the Fifth Mass. Battery, Brevet Major C. A. Phillips, marched with 40 men.

The moment the head of the procession reached the State House, its arrival was announced by a gun from Light Battery A on the Common.

The color-bearers took their places on each side of the steps leading up to the front of the capitol, and the remainder of the commands stood about in the yard on either side.

The colors were raised when the Governor and his staff came forward, and prayer was offered by the Rev. Samuel K. Lotthrop D. D. Chaplain of the Cadets. Gen. Couch then addressed the Governor. His speech ended with the words,—

“May it please your Excellency, the colors of the Massachusetts Volunteers are returned to the State.”

In his address of acceptance Governor Andrew promised that they should be “preserved and cherished amid all the vicissitudes of the future, as mementoes of brave men and noble actions,” and his pledge has been kept inviolate by successive Governors and legislatures, the result of whose combined efforts is a Memorial Hall designed especially to hold them, in simple grandeur second to none in the world, which forms a part of the rotunda of the capitol. In their sockets cut in the shelves of these niches the staves are firmly fixed, and from them forever droop the colors never more to be “loosed to the breeze.”

#### THE BATTERY FLAGS IN 1902.

From the Report of Brigadier General and Acting Chief

of Ordnance Richard A. Peirce to the Governor and Commander-in-Chief, dated January 1, 1866, for the year 1865:

"Schedule of Worn Colors in charge of the Acting Chief of Ordnance Dec. 31, 1865. . . .

5th Light Battery Mass. Volunteers 2 Guidons, silken, National."

These are doubtless the flags belonging to the Battery now preserved at the State House as described August 11, 1900, by Mr. Charles O. Eaton, who made the flags for the troops in the first place, and has had exclusive charge of them since they were brought back from the War, viz.,

No. 1, a National Flag, stars and stripes, about five feet long, a large flag for a battery. It has no lettering, and is ragged and torn. It is made of silk, and has a staff with spear-head and battle-axe combined.

No. 2, is a National Guidon in good condition, that is, not torn. It has a staff with spear-head. It is swallow tail form, with gold stars on a blue ground, and the stripes red and white alternate, beginning and ending with red. The names of the battles are inscribed with red letters on white stripes and gold colored letters on red stripes, beginning with Yorktown in the upper red stripe. The list of battles is the same as that given in General Order No. 10 p. 10 except that "Second Bull Run" is written "Bull Run 2d."

## CORPS AND BRIGADE FLAGS AND BADGES.

"He interposed only a pin between himself and the only thing he dreaded—oblivion. The pin held his name to his blouse, so that on the morrow the newspapers might tell who had died for his country."

—GEN. W. W. AVERELL on the *American Volunteer*.

The Corps, Division, and Brigade flags accompany the commanding general on the march, and are pitched in front of Head Quarters in camp.

HEADQUARTERS ARMY OF THE POTOMAC,  
CAMP NEAR ALEXANDRIA SEMINARY, VA.  
March 24, 1862.

## General Orders

No. 102.

## Extract.

X. Brigades in Divisions, and Divisions in Army Corps, will be numbered from right to left, but in reports of operations they will be designated by the names of their commanders.

XI. Flags will be used to designate the various Headquarters as follows:—

General Head Quarters: National Flag.

1st Army Corps, National Flag, with a small, square red flag beneath; 2d Army Corps, National Flag, with a small, square, blue flag beneath; 3d. Army Corps, National Flag, with a small, square blue and red flag vertical beneath; 4th. Army Corps, National Flag, with a small, square, blue and red flag horizontal beneath.

1st. Division of an Army Corps, red flag 6 ft. long and 5 ft. wide.

The Artillery will have the colors of the Division to which it belongs, and be distinguished by a right angled triangular flag, six feet long and three feet wide at the staff.

The Hospitals will be designated by a yellow flag.

These flags will be attached to a portable staff 14 feet long, in two joints, and will be habitually displayed in front of the tent, or from some prominent part of the house or grounds occupied as the Head Quarters which they designate, and on the march shall be carried near the person of the officer commanding the Corps, Division, Brigade or Regiment it is intended to designate.

By command of

MAJ GEN'L McCLELLAN.

S. WILLIAMS,

A. A. G.

This order, that in reports of operations the organizations should be designated by the names of their commanders, has done much to make incomprehensible the records of the War, and to rob those who merited them of the honors to which they were entitled, for in many instances only the last name of a commander is given, where there were several of the same name in the Division.

March 24, 1862, General Fitz John Porter's Division to which the Fifth Mass. Battery was attached, formed a part of the Third Corps of the Army of the Potomac, and had embarked at Alexandria for the Peninsula campaign and Yorktown.

When the Fifth Corps was permanently established, July 22, 1862, Porter's Division became the 1st Division of that Corps.

General Philip Kearney, who commanded a Division in the old Third Corps, ordered during the Peninsula campaign the wearing of a red diamond-shaped patch on the side of the cap, for identification of the members of his Division, which is said to have suggested the Corps badges devised by General Daniel Butterfield a year later, and adopted by Major General Joseph Hooker.

The flag of the 1st Division, Fifth Corps, in the spring campaign of 1863, was a rectangular white flag, with the red maltese cross in the centre.

## DISTINCTIVE CORPS BADGES.

HEAD QUARTERS  
ARMY OF THE POTOMAC  
March 31st 1863.

"Circular"

For the purpose of ready recognition of Corps and Divisions of this Army, and to prevent injustice by reports of straggling and misconduct through mistake as to their organizations, the Chief Quartermaster will furnish without delay the following badges to be worn by the Officers and Enlisted men of all the regiments of the various corps mentioned. They will be securely fastened upon the centre of the tops of the caps. The inspecting officer will at all inspections see that these badges are worn as designated.

5th Corps, a Maltese Cross. Red for 1st Div: White for 2d Div:  
Blue for 3d Division.

The size and color will be according to pattern.

By command of MAJ. GEN'L HOOKER.

S. WILLIAMS,

(Sd.)

A. A. G.



HEAD QUARTERS 5TH ARMY CORPS,  
April 1. 1863.

(The Badges are now being prepared and will shortly be furnished.)

Official:

(Signed) FRED T. LOCKE,  
A. A. G.

## HEAD QUARTERS 1ST DIV. 5TH CORPS.

April 1. 1863.

Official: (Sd.) C. W. B. MERVINE,  
Asst. Adj. Gen'l.

## HEAD QUARTERS DIVISION ART'Y

1st Div. 5th Corps, April 2d. 1863.

Official:

A. P. MARTIN,  
Capt. Com'd'g Div. Artillery.

These badges were worn upon the top of the men's caps, and on the sides of officers' hats.

The Reserve Artillery had a swallow-tail flag, red, with cross cannons white, in the centre.

From the Diary of Captain Nathan Appleton.

## MARTIN'S BRIGADE BADGE.

"Sunday, November 22, 1863. Captain A. P. Martin gets up a Brigade badge. . . ." "The first time he went to Boston after this, he had one made by the firm of Guild, jewelers on Washington street. It is a maltese cross: the bars being of gold, and the centre a small maltese cross of stones, the white one being pearl, combining the three Division colors, red, white and blue, the pin at the top composed of two crossed cannons."

## HOSPITAL FLAGS.

WAR DEPARTMENT  
ADJUTANT GENERAL'S OFFICE  
WASHINGTON, Jan'y 4. 1864.

General Orders

No. 9.

The Hospital and Ambulance Flags of the Army are established as



follows:—For General Hospitals, yellow bunting 9 by 5 feet, with the letter H, 24 inches long, of green bunting, in centre.

For Post and Field Hospitals, yellow bunting 6 by 4 feet, with letter H, 24 inches long, of green bunting, in centre.

For ambulances, and guidons to mark the way to Field Hospitals, yellow bunting 14 by 28 inches, with a border, one inch deep, of green.

By Order of the Secretary of War,

E. D. TOWNSEND,  
Ass't Adjt. General.

#### HEAD QUARTERS FLAGS.

#### UNDER GRANT AND MEADE.

##### HEAD QUARTERS ARMY OF THE POTOMAC,

May 2, 10.30 a. m. 1864.

Circular:

Hereafter the designating flag for these Head Qrs. will be a magenta colored swallow tail flag, with an eagle in gold surrounded by a silver wreath for an emblem.

By command of Maj. Gen'l Meade.

(Sgd) S. WILLIAMS,  
Ass't Adjt. Gen'l.

##### HEAD QRS. 5TH ARMY CORPS.

May 2, 1864.

Official:

(Sgd) FRED T. LOCKE,  
Ass't Adjt. General.

##### HEAD QRS ART'Y. BRIG. 5TH A. C.

May 3, 1864.

Official:

A. MATTHEWSON,  
Lieut. & A. A. A. Gen'l.

#### THE LETTER E.

In the estimate for clothing for October, 1864, in Quarter Master Sergeant Wm. H. Peacock's Account Book, are 30 blouses, 40 caps, 100 cross cannon, and 100 Letter E. See p. 50 General Order No. 86, Consolidation of Artillery.

## CHAPTER II.

### IN 'SIXTY-ONE.

"They knew how genuine glory was put on;  
Taught us how rightfully a nation shone  
In splendor; what strength was, that would not bend  
But in magnanimous weakness."

—WILLIAM WORDSWORTH.

In the first moment of the declaration of a Union of States bearing the title of the United States of America, the germ of expansion had taken root, and following close upon its rapid growth came the anxiety for the safety of the seat of government. John Quincy Adams in a speech in Congress on April 14, 1842, thus gave expression to his belief that the vicinity of Washington would, sooner or later, become the theatre of a great conflict:—"If civil war come" said he, "if insurrection come, is this beleaguered capital, is this besieged government to see millions of its subjects in arms, and have no right to break the fetters which they are forging into swords? No! The war power of the government can sweep this institution (slavery) into the Gulf."

The "institution" standing thus between the States, an ever present, ever increasing source of ill feeling, was nevertheless not the immediate provocation that roused the North to action in 'Sixty-One. Not the slightest allusion was publicly made to it amidst the bustle and unusual excitement of a military character, which unsettled the public mind; in which decision and hesitation alternated, when men resolved and women pleaded tearfully, then yielded with a proud, fond foreboding, too soon realized,

of the sacrifice to come: but the plea was always the danger that menaced the capital and the threatened disseverance of the Union; a plea which was comprehended in England as shown by a few words of John Bright in a speech at Rochdale, when he declared:—"If the thirty-three or thirty-four States of the American Union can break off whenever they like, I can see nothing but disaster and confusion throughout the whole of that continent. I say that the war, be it successful or not, be it Christian or not, be it wise or not, is a war to sustain the government and to sustain the authority of a great nation."

In 1861, John A. Andrew was Governor of the state of Massachusetts, John Z. Goodrich Lieutenant Governor, Oliver Warner Secretary, Henry K. Oliver Treasurer. President of the Senate William Claflin, Speaker of the House of Representatives John A. Goodwin. Clerk of the Senate Stephen N. Gifford, Clerk of the House William Stowe. The Rev. A. L. Stone was Chaplain of the House, the Rev. A. S. Patton of the Senate. Maj. John Morrissey was Sergeant-at-Arms.

The Governor's Staff consisted of Lieutenant-Colonels Horace Binney Sargent, Harrison Ritchie, John W. Wetherell and Henry Lee Jr.

The members of the United States Senate from Massachusetts, were Charles Sumner, who was chairman of the Committee on Foreign Affairs, and Henry Wilson, who was chairman of the Committee on Military Affairs. U. S. Representatives from this state were Thomas D. Eliot, James Buffington, Benjamin F. Thomas, Alexander H. Rice, William Appleton, John B. Alley, Daniel W. Gooch, Charles R. Train, Goldsmith F. Bailey, Charles Delano, Henry L. Dawes.

Abraham Lincoln of Illinois, had been elected President of the United States, and Hannibal Hamlin of Maine, Vice President. The election took place on November 6, 1860.

South Carolina, the most recalcitrant State, had threatened, in case Abraham Lincoln was elected, to secede from the Union, in order to form a new confederacy of those states which upheld the traffic in slaves. Accordingly, notwithstanding Congress was not in session until the 3d of December, 1860, the members of the United States Senate from South Carolina hastened to resign their seats. It was determined that United States law should no longer be administered in that state, and the United States judge for the district of South Carolina resigned his office. Other civil officers of the Government followed suit, the palmetto flag of South Carolina displaced the flag of our Union on several vessels in Charleston harbor, and a convention of the people was recommended by the state legislature then in session. On December 20, 1860, South Carolina by a unanimous vote formally passed an ordinance of secession; commissioners were appointed to proceed to Washington to treat with the United States, and soon thereafter its representatives in Congress dissolved their connection with that body.

Thus was inaugurated the War of the Rebellion, for Georgia soon joined her fortunes with those of South Carolina, and the "blue cockade" a sign in former years of South Carolina's nullification, appeared in the streets of Savannah. In 1832, South Carolina nullified the revenue laws of the Union.

January 5, 1861, John A. Andrew was inaugurated Governor of the Commonwealth and on the 14th a committee of the State Senate made the following report:

Report of a Committee.

IN SENATE, January 14, 1861.

The Committee on the Militia, to whom was referred the portion of the Governor's address relating to the Militia, beg leave to report that they have considered the suggestions therein contained, and in order to give the Commander-in-Chief the power of immediately increasing the efficiency of an active militia by enlarging the number of privates in

companies of cavalry and infantry, by organizing new companies, and filling up to their quota the regiments and battalions now existing, and by increasing the whole force on the present basis, to such an extent as in his opinion the exigencies of the times may require, unanimously recommend the passage of the accompanying Act.

For the Committee,

CHARLES O. ROGERS.

This report was accepted but before the bill came up in the Senate the following General Order was issued by the Adjutant General of the State.

COMMONWEALTH OF MASSACHUSETTS.

HEAD QUARTERS, BOSTON.

January 16, 1861.

[General Order No. 4.]

Events which have recently occurred, and are now in progress, require that Massachusetts should be at all times ready to furnish her quota upon any requisition of the President of the United States, to aid in the maintenance of the laws, and the peace of the Union. His Excellency the Commander-in-Chief therefore orders.—

That the commanding officer of each company of Volunteer Militia examine with care the roll of his company, and cause the name of each member, together with his rank and place of residence, to be properly recorded, and a copy of the same to be forwarded to the office of the Adjutant General. Previous to which commanders of companies shall make strict inquiry, whether there are men in their commands who from age, physical defect, business, or family causes, may be unable, or indisposed to respond at once to the orders of the Commander-in-Chief, made in response to the call of the President of the United States, that they be forthwith discharged, so that their places may be filled by men ready for any public exigency which may arise, whenever called upon.

After the above orders shall have been fulfilled, no discharge, either of officer or private shall be granted, unless for cause satisfactory to the Commander-in-Chief. If any companies have not the number of men allowed by law, the commanders of the same, shall make proper exertions to have the vacancies filled, and the men properly drilled and uniformed, and their names and places of residence forwarded to Head Quarters.

To promote the objects embraced in this order, the general, field, and staff officers, and the Adjutant and Acting Quartermaster General will give all the aid and assistance in their power.

Major Generals Sutton, Morse and Andrews, will cause this order to be promulgated throughout their respective divisions.

By command of His Excellency, JOHN A. ANDREW,  
Governor and Commander-in-Chief.  
WILLIAM SCHOULER,  
Adjutant General.

Adjutant General Schouler in his "History of Massachusetts in the Civil War" says that although this order was criticised as unnecessary and sensational, in some quarters, it was obeyed with alacrity by those to whom it was addressed.

Next came the discussion of the Militia Bill in the State Senate:

### AN ACT IN RELATION TO THE VOLUNTEER MILITIA.

Be it enacted by the Senate and House of Representatives in General Court assembled, and by the authority of the same, as follows:—

SECTION 1. The volunteer militia companies, as now organized, with their officers, shall be retained in the service: and, hereafter, as the public exigency may require, the organization of companies of artillery may be authorized, on petition, by the Commander-in-Chief, with advice of the Council, and the organization of other companies may be authorized on petition by the Commander-in-Chief, or by the mayor and aldermen or selectmen by his permission; but all additional companies, battalions and regiments which may be organized under the provisions of this Act, shall be disbanded whenever the Governor, or the legislature, shall deem that their services are no longer needed. Companies of cavalry shall be limited to one hundred privates and a saddler and a farrier: companies of artillery to forty-eight cannoneers, twenty-four drivers, and a saddler and a farrier: the cadet companies of the first and second divisions to one hundred, and companies of infantry and riflemen to sixty-four privates.

SECTION 2. The fourteenth section of the thirteenth chapter of the General Statutes, and all laws or parts of laws now in force, limiting the number of the volunteer militia, are hereby repealed.

SECTION 3. This act shall take effect upon its passage.

SENATE, January 18, 1861.

Passed to be engrossed.

Sent down for concurrence.

S. N. GIFFORD, *Clerk*.

There were several substitute bills but they were rejected, and the bill as here given passed both branches; amended in Section 1, by the insertion of the words,



"and said companies so retained and so organized, shall be liable on a requisition of the President of the United States upon the Commander-in-Chief to be marched without the limits of the Commonwealth,"—

after the lines referring to the authorization of the companies and before those referring to their disbandment.

It was signed by the Governor February 15, 1861, but in the mean time Resolutions had passed both branches and received the Governor's signature, for plans for secession were rapidly reaching their consummation in the Southern States, and the situation became more and more one of anxiety and alarm. Mississippi promptly gave evidence of her affiliation with the seceding states. Jefferson Davis, afterwards president of the confederacy, who had been U. S. Secretary of War under President Franklin Pierce, and was then U. S. senator from Mississippi, took leave of the U. S. Senate on January 20, 1861. It was months before the other Southern States passed ordinances of secession, and the western portion of Virginia never wavered in her loyalty to the Union, but was made a new state, that of West Virginia, while the conflict raged in the eastern portion of her sacred soil. There was in all the southern states a respectable minority in favor of the Union who found their most distinguished representative in the person of ex-President Andrew Jackson of Tennessee, on the pedestal of whose monument were cut in the solid granite by the order of the citizens of that state, his memorable words:—"The Union must and shall be preserved."

It was the union of the State of Virginia with the Confederacy which placed Washington, the capital of the nation in imminent peril for four years. Already, in the winter of 'Sixty-One the extremity of the Long Bridge across the Potomac River over which was the passage south out of Washington, was "hostile soil."



RESOLUTIONS IN THE MASSACHUSETTS  
LEGISLATURE.

January 23, 1861, the Governor signed the following:

Resolves tendering the Aid of the Commonwealth to the President of the United States, in enforcing the Laws and Preserving the Union.

WHEREAS, Several states of the Union have through the action of their people and authorities, assumed the attitude of rebellion against the national government; and whereas, treason is still more extensively diffused, and, whereas, the state of South Carolina, having first seized the post office, custom house, moneys, arms, munitions of war and fortifications of the federal government, has, by firing upon a vessel in the service of the United States, committed an act of war: and, whereas, the forts and property of the United States in Georgia, Alabama, Louisiana and Florida, have been seized with hostile and treasonable intention: and, whereas, senators and representatives in Congress avow and sanction these acts of treason and rebellion: therefore,

*Resolved*, That the legislature of Massachusetts, now, as always, convinced of the inestimable value of the Union, and the necessity of preserving its blessings to ourselves and our posterity, regard with unmingled satisfaction the determination evinced in the recent firm and patriotic special message of the President of the United States (James Buchanan) to amply and faithfully discharge his constitutional duty of enforcing the laws and preserving the integrity of the Union: and we proffer to him, through the Governor of the Commonwealth, such aid in men and money as he may require, to maintain the authority of the national government.

*Resolved*, That the Union-loving and patriotic authorities, representatives and citizens of those states whose loyalty is endangered or assailed by internal or external treason, who labor in behalf of the Federal Union with unflinching courage and patriotic devotion, will receive the enduring gratitude of the American people.

*Resolved*, That the Governor be requested to forward, forthwith, copies of the foregoing resolutions, to the President of the United States, and the Governors of the several states.

Approved January 23, 1861.

At this period, and intimately connected with the scenes enacted in the national capital previous to the inauguration of President Lincoln March 4, 1861, immortal names

of Massachusetts illumine every page of history, names, some of which are borne by members of the Battery and by others whose influence swayed its fortunes. Here also Rhode Island, so closely connected with the Battery in its marches, camps, and battles, furnishes her quota of leading figures.

It was as members of a commission appointed to represent the interests of Massachusetts on a question of disputed boundary between Massachusetts and Rhode Island, —a question which had long been in dispute, the first report of a commission having been made to this Commonwealth February 21, 1792,—in the Supreme Court of the United States, that four lawyers met at Washington in January, 1861: Ex-Governor John H. Clifford of New Bedford, who had been attorney general of the state from 1849 to 1853, and again from 1854 to 1858, and was then "Of Counsel for the Commonwealth," and Hon. Stephen H. Phillips who had been attorney general since 1858, represented Massachusetts; the Hon. Charles S. Bradley ex-Chief Justice, and the Hon. Thomas A. Jenckes, represented Rhode Island. All arrived in Washington before January 26, 1861. Hon. Edwin M. Stanton was then U. S. Attorney General, holding that office in the Cabinet of the retiring President, James Buchanan.

An account of an interview between Attorney General Stanton and these gentlemen, with attending circumstances, by the late Hon. Stephen H. Phillips, from which these facts are taken, was published in the *New York Sun*, June 11, 1893. He was then the only surviving member of the commission.

On Wednesday evening January 30, 1861, a special messenger was sent to Willard's Hotel to convey the gentlemen from Massachusetts to the Attorney General's office in the Treasury Building.

Stanton said when Governor Clifford remarked upon the difficult access to the building, that such strictness might

keep honest men out, but that all the public buildings were full of traitors. In relation to the seizure of all the archives and muniments of the Government, the following is quoted by Mr. Phillips from a letter written by Governor Clifford to Gen. the Hon. Henry Wilson, dated Feb. 5, 1871:—

“When it was known with what facility this could have been accomplished, and a provisional Government declared, with the ready recognition of almost every diplomatic representative of foreign governments then in Washington, it is not surprising that I should have felt in passing through the corridors of the Treasury building at midnight with two or three superannuated watchmen only for its custody and defense, as if I were walking over a mined fortress, that might at any moment be blown up under my feet.”

At the time of this interview of January 30, 1861, the navy had been dispersed where it would do no good, the “Brooklyn” was the only fighting ship at Secretary Toucey’s disposal, (Isaac Toucey of Connecticut was Secretary of the Navy) the officers of the Naval Academy and the practice ship “Constitution” and the northern cadets generally were loyal.

Secretary Stanton thought that the militia could be promptly mobilized only in three states, viz., New York, Massachusetts, and Rhode Island.

The following is a copy of a letter signed John H. Clifford and Stephen H. Phillips to Governor John A. Andrew, written that night after their return to the Hotel from their call upon the U. S. Attorney General:—

WASHINGTON, WEDNESDAY NIGHT,  
January 30, 1861.

*Dear Sir.*

In an interview we have had with the Attorney General of the United States, we have been authorized to express to you confidentially his individual opinion that there is imminent if not inevitable peril of an attack upon the city of Washington, between the 4th and 15th February, with a view to secure the symbols of Government, and the power and prestige of possessions by the traitors who are plotting the dissolution of the Union.

We have a moment before the closing of the mail, to say to you, in this informal way, that no vigilance should be relaxed for Massachusetts to be ready at any moment, and upon a sudden emergency, to come to the succor of the Federal Government.

This may be an unnecessary precaution, but we feel that it is a simple discharge of a plain duty on our part, to give you the intimation of what we have heard from a source of such high authority.

In great haste we are very truly and respectfully,

JOHN H. CLIFFORD.

STEPHEN H. PHILLIPS.

Gov. Andrew.

---

Clifford said to Phillips "Bradley and you must get through your printing by Friday. If the Supreme Court endures till then we will pack up and go home, arouse the people, and await the logic of events."

The "logic of events" was a favorite phrase of the secessionists. Phillips says "They reckoned upon getting the revolution well under way, and afterwards trusting to the 'logic of events.'"

Stanton mentioned that General Scott, who was at the head of the Army, had prevailed on the President to send for two more batteries.

Stanton was an old democrat, without as he, himself, said, affiliation with Republican leaders, neither was he in the councils of Mr. Lincoln and his friends, yet he accepted the entire responsibility of publishing to all whom it might concern, his profound sense of the impending peril, and his earnest appeal to all in authority to contribute their utmost energy for the preservation of the Union.

The day after the meeting at the office of the U. S. Attorney General, the gentlemen from Massachusetts sent a letter to the Hon. Horace Gray, explaining much that Mr. Stanton had told them, and especially indicating the route through Annapolis which Mr. Stanton favored. Mr. Gray was to apprise Governor Andrew of the contents of this letter.

Mr. Felton of the Philadelphia, Wilmington and Baltimore Railroad in a conversation with Mr. Clifford that day, said he was alarmed for his bridges.

On Friday, February 1st, Governor Clifford explained the elaborate details of the disputed boundary case to the Supreme Court, and then alluding to the troubled condition of the country, protested that in New England we should resort to no arms but those of the law to settle troubles between sister states. He used few words, but the placid dignity of his manner made a profound impression. When he got through the Chief Justice gave special directions to the Clerk, carefully notifying that the plat and surveys must be returned into court by the 1st of August. (See p. 47. Letter of C. A. Phillips.)

Feb. 2, 1861, Saturday, the commissioners left Washington. At the President street station they passed a long train, with pieces of artillery, caissons, horses, and the equipage of a light battery, followed by three cars full of soldiers. This was the West Point battery, which had left the Military Academy the day before, commanded by Lieut. Charles Griffin, afterwards a Division and Corps commander often mentioned in these pages. The orders of which Mr. Stanton had spoken had been executed with military promptness.

In a New York newspaper which they obtained at Trenton, Mr. Clifford read what caused him to exclaim "Our letter has reached Boston." Then he read that by request of Governor Andrew, the legislature of Massachusetts went the day before into secret session, in consequence of alarming news from Washington, and placed an emergency fund of \$100,000 at the disposal of the Governor.

In New York Mr. Phillips met John Bigelow, then connected with the New York *Evening Post*, who urged him to go to Albany to see Governor Morgan which the Massachusetts gentlemen refused to do. Mr. Bigelow called, bringing Mr. W. C. Bryant and a friend of the Governor,

but Phillips earnestly exhorted them to persuade Gov. Morgan to send some officer of the National Guard to confer at Washington with General Scott and the secretary of war, [Ex-Postmaster General Joseph Holt of Kentucky an honorable and patriotic Democrat, was then Secretary of War], and this timely warning in New York no doubt resulted in the readiness of the N. Y. 7th Regiment to go to Washington the following April. The commissioners reached Boston at 11 o'clock p. m. Monday Feb. 4th, going to the Tremont House, where they met more friends anxious for news. They seemed to be preparing for the worst, which simply meant war.

Mr. Phillips went to the State House at an early hour, and was cordially welcomed by Governor Andrew, who spoke of their letter as acceptable, not because it contained anything unexpected, but because it was the first responsible and compact statement which he could show to others.

Everything was bustle about the Governor's room. Military preparations were universal.

Later in the day, after Mr. Clifford's call on the Governor, Colonel Harrison Ritchie was ordered to proceed to Washington at once, to be in communication with Mr. Stanton and General Scott according to Clifford's advice.

In a sketch of Governor Andrew by Albert G. Browne Jr. military secretary to the Governor during the war, published in 1868, is the following in relation to the route to Washington by sea:—

“General Scott and Governor Andrew in consultation had provided in anticipation of obstruction of their route overland, that they should proceed by sea and be disembarked either under cover of the guns of Fort McHenry at Baltimore, or else at Annapolis Md., and steamers were kept for weeks in readiness at his (the Governor's) bidding, to transport them to the Chesapeake.”

This in point of time was January and February, 1861. Fort McHenry was built in the form of a star, the guns



being placed on the projections. Towards the city of Baltimore there were open and level grounds affording an opportunity for 50,000 men to manœuvre. The walls were earth embankments, not more than six to eight feet in height. Mr. Phillips thus refers in his article to what occurred in March and April:—

“During the inauguration of President Lincoln, it was thought prudent to display a strong military force and to conceal a stronger one. All the avenues and approaches to the Capitol and even the roofs of buildings were guarded by armed men and artillery posted to sweep the streets. Little more than a month later, in consequence of the attack on Fort Sumter, the new President appealed to the country and 5,500 men of Massachusetts and 1,000 from Rhode Island with Governor Sprague at their head, moved almost at the tap of the drum.”

### LINCOLN'S CABINET.

President Lincoln's Cabinet consisted of William H. Seward Secretary of State, Simon Cameron Secretary of War, Gideon Welles Secretary of the Navy, Salmon P. Chase Secretary of the Treasury, Edward Bates Attorney General. The Department of the Interior was in charge of Caleb Smith and the Post Office Department had Montgomery Blair at its head. These counsellors of the President exercised a marked influence on the conduct of the War in its earliest years.

March 9, 1861, the Confederate Congress passed an Act for the organization of an army, and the Confederate Secretary of War prophesied that the Confederate flag would float over the Capitol at Washington before the 1st of May, and it might float eventually over Faneuil Hall itself.

April 12, 1861, the attack was made by the Confederates on Fort Sumter, South Carolina, and 30,000,000 people, it was said, watched the contest by telegraph.

April 15, 1861, Abraham Lincoln President of the United States issued a proclamation calling for 75,000 men.



## THE ROADS TO WASHINGTON.

The railroad bridges of the Northern and Central Pennsylvania and the Philadelphia and Baltimore Railway, crossed several rivers within the boundaries, and on the night of the 19th of April, 1861, after the Massachusetts 6th Reg't. Infantry, had fought its way through the riotous city of Baltimore, the bridges over them were destroyed by the order of the authorities of the city.

Besides the route from the north to Washington through Baltimore, there were two other routes viz., one by the Potomac River, and the other by way of Annapolis. The route adopted by the New York 7th Regiment Infantry was followed for months by all succeeding regiments from the North. From Philadelphia there were two ways to Annapolis, one down the Delaware River, passing the capes of Chesapeake Bay, through the Bay and up the Severn River to the harbor of Annapolis, the other was to go to Havre de Grace, from Philadelphia, and from there to Annapolis. The N. Y. 7th took the latter route. All the rails were up from Annapolis to Annapolis Junction, and communication between Washington and the North by rail and wire, was destroyed. Telegraphing direct from Washington to New York, was suspended for nine days.

At this time Charles A. Phillips a younger brother of the Attorney General and afterwards captain of the Battery, having graduated from Harvard College class of 1860, at the age of 19, was studying law in a lawyer's office in New York. The following is an extract from his Journal.

New York. Monday, April 22, 1861: "I start on Wednesday to join Salem Zouaves—uniform ordered—revolver purchased and all ready. I am just packing this book away."

The Salem three months men were passing through

New York bound South. The next day he wrote home, "I am off for Washington. I have stood it as long as I could and can't keep away: I was asked to join the 9th Regiment here but I prefer to join the Salem Zouaves, so I am going on to join them and see if they will not take me. I shall start at the earliest opportunity, probably on Wednesday or Thursday, with the 9th Regiment. Massachusetts is doing nobly and exciting the admiration of all here."

Still in New York on April 24th he wrote to one of his brothers:—"I want to get on to Washington and join the Salem Light Infantry, but find I may have some difficulty in getting on. Can't you get me some certificate or something of the sort from the authorities in Massachusetts, that will put me through? I have no doubt Captain Devereaux will take me.

Can't you get a note from Gov. Andrew passing me on to Washington as a recruit to the S. L. I.? They are rather short of men, only 64, and ought to be glad to get me. I am determined to go, somehow, and if you can get me something of the sort I can get an opportunity to leave with the 9th Reg't. which will leave here no earlier than Friday afternoon, and probably not before Saturday. Missing these, I can probably get a chance very soon. I prefer a Massachusetts regiment. Please see what you can do for me."

The advice he received from his brother was that if he was to join the Salem Zouaves, or Light Infantry, he must go home and start from Massachusetts. Another brother Edward W. Phillips afterwards lieutenant in the 50th Massachusetts Infantry, had joined the Fourth Battalion. The New York Seventh Regiment arrived in Washington at noon of April 25th and were cheered by the Sixth Massachusetts outside the Capitol as they approached the station. For five days Washington had been isolated from the

rest of the world, defended only by a small force of Regulars and District Militia, the Massachusetts Sixth Regiment, and citizens, including congressmen from the western states; not more than five thousand men under arms. The windows of the public buildings by order of General Scott were barricaded and earthworks were thrown up. The principal passage ways of the Treasury and the Capitol were defended by howitzers which raked their length. Breastworks were set up in the Capitol made of the iron plates cast for the dome supported by barrels of cement and heaps of stone and timber. The basement of the building was used as a kitchen and bakery, and after communication with the North was resumed, troops bivouacked in the rotunda, and the chambers of the Senate and House were turned into barracks.

A large proportion of the incumbents of the public offices in all the Departments, had been retained by the incoming administration, and it was well known that among them were many spies and traitors, ready to give aid and encouragement to the enemy in the destruction of the Government to which they had taken the oath of allegiance. The Confederacy had a considerable force the whole line, from the Chesapeake Bay to Edward's Ferry, about 30 miles above the capital. Maryland was then mainly in hostile possession. Baltimore and Ashland Md. were in the hands of the insurgents. The White House and Treasury building might be destroyed by long range cannon aimed from Arlington Heights two miles away.

The number of troops then reported at Richmond under command of the rebel general Beauregard was 27,000 men, in addition to the Virginia troops in the vicinity of Washington.

The Long Bridge had been secured by General Scott, and the bridge at Georgetown had been rendered useless.

If taken, the capital could not have been retained against superior numbers, but the capture would have placed the

archives in the hands of the enemies of the Union. Washington was, however, in the words of President Lincoln, considered "safe for the country and the Constitution," after the Mass. 6th Regiment via Baltimore, and the New York 7th via Annapolis had arrived, although there was "great need of reinforcements."

#### PRIVATE OF MARINES.

C. A. Phillips instead of going to Washington as he proposed in his New York letters, went to Salem and as he recorded in his Journal of July 27th, 1861, "got a place as private of marines on board the Propeller 'Cambridge' owned by the State of Massachusetts and the underwriters of Boston.

Sergeant of Marines JOHN DOVE.

Corporal CHAS. J. LEE."

There were other Salem young men on this transport.

#### FOUR LETTERS OF C. A. PHILLIPS.

(BOSTON, MASS.)

"PROPELLER CAMBRIDGE T WHARF.

Wednesday Evening, May 1, 1861.

We got on board here about two hours ago. and are just sitting down. Yesterday we did nothing but drill a little, get caps etc. About 5 o'clock we were dismissed for the night, and I went out to Cambridge and spent the night with Fox and Scott. Fox was keeping guard at the Arsenal in the rain till 9 o'clock this morning. We reported at 9 o'clock, and after loafing round a little while, we signed a receipt for equipments etc. and then the Articles, and took an oath of allegiance. After this we were dismissed till 3, and Huntington and I went over to Jamaica Plain; our uniforms passing us over the road free. At half past two we got our uniforms, and started for Roxbury with the Sergeant. Our uniform consists of a dark blue fatigue

cap with a bugle in front, dark blue frock coat with brass buttons and yellow trimmings, and light blue pants, altogether a snug looking uniform. After standing in the rain some time we got into a car and started for Roxbury. Arriving at the Sergeant's we stumbled into the middle of an Irish picnic party and a good many small boys. The Sergeant—John Dove—has a pretty little house and quite a large estate, into which we marched and paraded for a little time, after which we marched into the house, stacked our arms in the back parlor, and then marched into the front parlor to be introduced to the notabilities. Here we found quite a crowd gathered to receive us, particularly young ladies. After a short interval of conversation, we adjourned to the dining-room and prepared to pitch in. The Sergeant had prepared quite a little collation of oysters, ham, corned beef, salad, coffee, lemonade etc. to which you may be assured we did ample justice, particularly as I had had no dinner. After this we returned immediately to our quarters and were ordered to prepare to go on board. Accordingly we shouldered our knapsacks and haversacks, took our revolvers, formed, and marched down State Street.

Here we got our first taste of glory.

The small boys hurraed, the people stood still and looked, and for a short time we were the centre of attraction. Our men are pretty good looking, and a pretty good set of fellows. Their names are Sergeant John Dove, Corporal C. J. Lee, Privates James Turner, Andrew Miller, Albert Upton, — Arnold, Ben Nichols, C. E. Pond, — Cutler, — Henry, Frank Pope, W. D. Huntington, C. A. Phillips.

When we got to the wharf we found the 'Cambridge' lying ready to take in her guns, which were on the wharf: two 8 in. to go forward, one small brass to go on the quarter deck, another ditto to go forward. We are quartered in the state rooms,—3 in a room—opening into the cabin.

Huntington, Lee and I are in one room. Our state rooms are first rate and our accommodations excellent. At this moment we are most of us sitting around the cabin table. 78 bunks have been fitted up amidships to carry two men in each, recruits. We shall sail tomorrow for Fort Monroe and Annapolis. Our Articles bind us for 30 days unless sooner discharged."

"PROPELLER CAMBRIDGE

OFF CAPE COD

May 2, 1861.

As I shall get a chance to send a letter at Holmes Hole by William Lee I have come down from deck to write a little. To continue my journal which I sent by Mr. Huntington:—Last evening we turned into our state rooms and enjoyed a good night's rest till about 7 o'clock. As the cook had neglected to provide for us we went on shore to get breakfast. At half past nine having returned to the boat, we were put on guard at the gangways and on the wharf, while we took on board our guns:—two 8 in. forward, one 12 pounder brass gun on the forecastle, and one 12 pound rifled brass gun on the quarter deck. From 9 and one half to 11 and one half, I was keeping guard on the wharf, my musket gaining weight very rapidly. At 11 and one half we cast off, and steamed down the harbor, saluting Fort Independence as we passed. We were too far off, however, to distinguish any faces.

At noon our duties proper commenced, and so far consist in mounting guard three at a time, two at the after companion way, and prevent any but officers, marines, etc. from passing, and one on the lower deck over the forward hatchway, to prevent any smoking, fire etc., the powder being stored below. The last guard carries a cutlass, and the post is not considered a very desirable one, as it helps on sea-sickness very much. The weather was very rough coming out, the number stretched out on deck was very



large, and I fared like the rest, but having now cast up my account and eaten a good dinner I feel all right. We dine in the cabin, faring like the officers on roast beef, ham, potatoes etc. Owing to the number of officers on board we have been crammed a little, 6 being quartered in each state room: but as we shall keep watch and watch, this will not trouble us much. The watches will be set tonight at 8 o'clock. There are two watches of six each, four hours apiece, two at the companion way, two at the powder hatch, and two on deck. We have a number of troops on board, I do not know how many, bunked amidships. We shall stop at Fort Monroe, then at Annapolis, and thence, nobody knows where."

"WASHINGTON May 9, 1861.

4 o'clock P. M.

My last letter left me at Fort Monroe, Saturday night. Sunday morning we hauled up to the wharf and landed about a hundred troops, and then took in six eight inch Columbiads and 1200 shells to carry to Washington. This was quite a job as there were no machines for handling the heavy guns. The shells were passed in quite easily, a string of riflemen forming, and passing them from hand to hand. During the day we got two hours leave of absence, and visited the Fort. This is a tremendous fort and a very pleasant place. The grounds are planted with apple trees and the officers' quarters are surrounded with gardens full of roses and flowers of all kinds, in full bloom. After exploring the Fort thoroughly we went down to see the big gun which stands out on the point on a concrete platform, solitary and alone. They say they won't allow it to be fired, because it breaks all the windows in the Fort. After getting in a part of our cargo, we hauled into the stream and lay there over night, keeping a strict guard, to guard against any attack. In the morning we found the steamer 'Roanoke' lying alongside, and while speculating



as to her character and passengers, her boat came alongside with Capt. Devereaux and Lieut. Putnam of the Salem Zouaves, who were going to Washington in the 'Roanoke.' By this time we could see the fellows on the quarter deck getting leave of absence. We started in the ship's boat for the 'Roanoke.' The wind was blowing heavily, and I had a tremendous long oar, but Cambridge training showed itself, and very soon we arrived. We met quite a cordial reception on deck, and had quite a jolly time till our leave expired and we reluctantly rowed back. Luckily, however, we did not part here: the 'Roanoke' wanted to go up the Potomac, and having no guns hardly dared to go alone, not knowing how many batteries might have been erected along the shore.

As we were armed and our new Captain not unwilling to try our guns, we changed our destination and agreed to go as a convoy.

About 11.30 Monday morning, having got all our cargo on board, we steamed off up Chesapeake Bay in company with the 'Roanoke.' The weather was squally and unpleasant, but nevertheless we contrived to enjoy the sail. About 8.30 we arrived in the mouth of the Potomac and anchored for the night.

About 20 of Dodd's Rifles turned out to assist us in the watch, and we began to realize that we were in an enemy's country. We were armed with rifles and revolvers loaded and capped, and had ten rounds of ball cartridge in our boxes. Our orders were not to allow any boat to approach the ship, but to hail it and to fire if they did not sheer off, and, as the Captain observed, to fire very quick.

However, we were not molested, as the secessionists evidently did not care to attempt to cut out an armed steamer.

The rifle which we carry on night watch, is a very pretty one, with a large bore and rather heavy, but very neat and serviceable.

Early in the morning we started up the Potomac, the 'Roanoke' ahead with a pilot. The day was lovely, and we had a splendid sail up the river. We saw nothing of the batteries thrown up along the river and we think they must be somewhere else. However, we were all ready for them; our guns were shotted and run out, and all of us, who were not on duty, were ordered to be between decks to serve the big guns.

Acquia Creek was the point where we apprehended an attack, and as we approached it, the Captain told the gunners to get ready to be fired into. Our 8 inch gun on the port bow was cleared for action, the tackle run out, sight adjusted, and all the preparations made. As we approached the critical point the 'Roanoke' dropped back to give us the first chance, and we steamed ahead, expecting the battle to begin, every moment. All our hopes, however, were disappointed: our peaceful voyage was not interrupted, and we steamed past Fort Washington and Alexandria, where the secession flags have all disappeared, and made fast to the Arsenal wharf, after colliding with another propeller, which carried away the starboard fore shrouds.

The next day we commenced to unload, and as we were of no use we went into the city.

Ist to the Capitol, where we found the Salem Zouaves quartered in the rear of the left wing behind the House of Representatives. The House was full of soldiers, writing letters. Lang Ward was at one desk, John Hodges at another, and by invitation of the Salem Zouaves we stopped to dinner and had a jolly time.

The dining room is very high studded, being the area on the side of the Capitol steps. Our dinner consisted of minced fish, bread, crackers, and coffee, and though not very luxurious fare we had a pleasant time, and a jollier crowd was never seen. We spent about the pleasantest time we have had since we left. We returned, according to orders, about six o'clock, just in time to see the 'Cambridge'

steaming up the river and passing through the bridge. Inquiring I found she had gone up to G street, so chartering an omnibus we started, and arrived on board at 8 o'clock; luckily finding the steamer, as we should have been locked up if found out after 9.30. This regulation is quite strict, a man was shot last night for not answering the post. It was about 2 o'clock in my watch, only a quarter of a mile off. I saw the flash and heard the report.

This morning I was up at the Capitol, then went down to the National Hotel to get a bath and some dinner. Washington is quite warlike, regiments parading, all round, and almost every other house being used as barracks. Colonel Ellsworth's regiment is very ubiquitous, and you see them everywhere. They keep guard at the Capitol, where, however, our uniforms pass us everywhere, and last night they turned out to put out a fire at Willard's. They entirely took the shine off the Washington firemen. This morning they were pulling down the wall as we passed. The 5th Mass. Regiment is quartered at the Treasury Department.

We are lying at the foot of G street, discharging and repairing. We shall probably sail in 4 or 5 days, though there is some talk of selling the ship to the Government and discharging the crew. I don't think however, this amounts to anything."

Fort Washington mentioned in this letter was on the Potomac River six miles below Alexandria. It was a mere water battery, intended for offensive action against the river side.

This trip on the "Cambridge" lasted ten days, and Phillips went back to the study of law which he continued in Boston in the office of his brother Hon. Stephen H. Phillips. From there he wrote the following letter:—

"BOSTON, June 10, 1861.

I think the Government has shown great energy, and the

movements of the Army seem to be well planned and eminently successful. Of course such dashing exploits as the ride through Fairfax C. H. appear to display more energy than the advance of a large army, but like the charge of Balaklava they do not decide the event of a war. It is only an army of inferior strength that needs to try such experiments. Scott's policy, I take it, is to use to the utmost the advantages he has in numbers and position, and never to allow the enemy a chance to fight except at a disadvantage. Such appears to be the plan at Harper's Ferry.

Our forces are advancing from every direction, in overwhelming numbers, and the Southerners, if they remain, must inevitably be surrounded and starved out, or fight Scott on his own ground.

So with Richmond, a strong column will soon move down from the North on this city, while Butler will co-operate on the South. If the rebels, therefore, take position on either side of the city for its defense, they will be answered by the advance of the column on the other side. They will thus be unable to check the march of either column at a distance from the city, and must take up a position near Richmond and fight it out. This, I have no doubt, is the way in which the first battle will be fought, and Scott is not the cautious general we think him, if he loses it. Of the success of this plan I have no doubt, but its success depends much on careful preparation, which may account for the apparent sluggishness of the movements. But still, the advance goes on: day after day we hear of military movements, small in themselves, but in a week amounting to a great deal. Now it is the attack of a company on Fairfax Court House, to be followed by a regiment in a day or two: now a regiment attacks Philippi and in three days 10,000 men occupy the town: or General Butler occupies the point of Newport News, and in a week we find 5000 men advanced 10 or 15 miles into the country. So the movement goes on. The first attack attracts people's atten-

tion, but few pay any attention to the advance of the troops afterwards. For the last week I have kept an account of military movements, and I have on my list 69 regiments of volunteers now in active duty in Virginia and Maryland, besides several batteries of field artillery, battalions of rifles &c., and my list is by no means complete, for there must be 20 or 30 regiments, at least, in these states, of which I have no account.

This does not include the troops at Cairo, encamped in Ohio, at Chambersburg, in Massachusetts, Staten Island &c., which would more than double the number. This certainly does not look like a lack of energy.

In addition to the plan I have sketched out, the approach of cool weather will probably witness an attack upon Charleston and New Orleans: the navy yards at Norfolk and Pensacola will be repossessed, and a fleet and army will move from Cairo down the Mississippi. Thus threatened on every side I do not see what the rebels can do but surrender.

In the meantime I am getting a little anxious about our foreign relations: the attitude of England is anything but friendly. Spain seems to have taken advantage of our dissensions to seize St. Domingo, and the rejection of Burlingame is a gratuitous insult on the part of Austria. I should not be surprised if a general war broke out within a year, with England, Spain, and Austria,—and perhaps Prussia,—on one side, and France, Russia, and the United States on the other. Better this than that we should descend so low as to bid against our rebel subjects for the favor of foreign nations.

I am studying law in Stephen's Boston office, and shall not, probably, return to New York."

Now approaches the 1st of August when the papers relating to the Rhode Island boundary were to be returned into court, and Charles A. Phillips was employed by his elder brother as special messenger. The commissioner says

in his article in the *Sun*, referring to this mission, "He got through without difficulty. Upon completing his business a clerk in the office from a window in the west front of the capitol showed him rebel flags at Hall's Hill. The enemy never got nearer than Hall's Hill."

In a note dated Washington Aug. 1, 1861, written to his brother young Phillips says:—

"Immediately after my arrival I went up to the capitol. . . . I was in the Senate this morning, and left while Breckenridge was making a speech against confiscating property in the seceded states."

---

The utterances of the Southern press were read with great interest at the North. Said the Richmond *Whig*, as quoted in the Boston *Journal* of Aug. 23, 1861:—

"They are alarmed for Washington, but they have not yet begun to tremble for New York' and Boston. As England and France knew that there could be no stable peace with the treacherous, knavish, cowardly and cruel Chinese, short of Peking, so we know that there can be no lasting peace with the Chinese counterparts on this continent until Confederate cannon overawe New York, and Confederate legions bivouac on Boston Common. Boston is the Peking of the Western China: and 'On to Peking' is the watchword of Southern armies. Washington is a mere circumstance."



### CHAPTER III.

#### THE COMPOSITION OF THE BATTERY.

"Whether in camp, on the march, or on the field of battle, there was a strength, an evident power in the artillery service that left an impression on the mind of the spectator not liable to be effaced, and no scenes in war are more terribly suggestive than an array of batteries in position, ready to open fire at the word of command."

EDWIN FORBES.

The artillery has been esteemed a valuable arm of the service, on account of its capability of inflicting so much more loss than it receives, and the many changes in the composition of the light batteries, which followed the fortunes of the Army of the Potomac, as well as in their organization, prove their adaptability to the requirements of the variable demands, and that the general disposition of them, as reduced or enlarged in their capacity, occupied a large share of the attention of the authorities whose deliberations determined these changes, in the state legislatures, in Congress, and at General Head Quarters.

Her batteries of light artillery were sent out from the Commonwealth of Massachusetts as independent batteries, known by numbers from the "First" to the "Sixteenth." This suited the requirements at the time, for at first single batteries were attached directly to infantry Brigades,—one battery to each Brigade,—and they "camped and marched, and fought together." Some batteries in other states were independent, and some were formed into regiments, like the Regular artillery of 12 batteries each, designated by letters from A to L, but these were, like the rest, passed around from one Division or Corps to another, even after



the artillery was grouped into Brigades, and in that way attached to a Division or Corps, forming a part of it and under the orders of its commander, and there was a distinct organization called the "Artillery Brigade," and the "Artillery Corps," with a chief who had his staff as in infantry or cavalry.

The only reason for preference seemed to be that in the regimental organization, although assigned like the rest to temporary service, there was chance for promotion for the officers, while as independent batteries there was no such chance.

In respect to Massachusetts it will be shown that notwithstanding all the influence that could be brought to bear upon the War Department to effect the change, her batteries came back as they went out, designated by numbers and independent of each other, and had no right to be classed in any sense as a regiment and designated by letters, yet in the spring of 1863, when it was thought expedient to consolidate the artillery, General Orders No. 86 compelled the Fifth Mass. Battery, although not a part of any regiment, to accept the regimental company or battery designation of a letter "E."

#### CONSOLIDATION OF ARTILLERY.

General Orders  
No. 86.

WAR DEPARTMENT  
ADJUTANT GENERAL'S OFFICE  
WASHINGTON April 2, 1863.

1. Under the authority contained in Sections 19 and 20 of the act "for enrolling and calling out the national forces, and for other purposes," approved March 3, 1863, it is ordered that for each and every regiment of the volunteer army *now reduced*, or that may be reduced hereafter, as set forth in said sections, consolidation shall be made in accordance with the following rules:

#### ARTILLERY.

3. Each regiment will be consolidated into *six*, or a *less number of batteries*, and the colonel, two majors, and one assistant surgeon, mustered out.

4. The companies and batteries formed by consolidation will be of the maximum strength, and will be organized as now directed by law and regulation. The first letters of the alphabet will be used to designate the companies. (See p. 22. The "E" on the caps. Peacock.)

5. The company officers—commissioned and non-commissioned—rendered supernumerary, with those enumerated in the foregoing, will be mustered out of service at the date of consolidation, all other officers and non-commissioned officers will be retained.

6. The officers to be retained will be selected by the Division and Corps commanders, under the instructions of the Commanding General of the Army or Department, from among the most efficient officers of the respective regiments.

111. The following are the sections of the Act referred to, and under which the foregoing is ordered:

Sec. 19. *And be it further enacted*, That whenever a regiment of volunteers of the same arm, from the same state, is reduced to one-half the maximum number prescribed by law, the President may direct the consolidation of the companies of such regiment, Provided, That no company so formed shall exceed the maximum number prescribed by law. When such consolidation is made, the regimental officers shall be reduced in proportion to the reduction in the number of companies.

Sec. 20. *And be it further enacted*, That whenever a regiment is reduced below the minimum number allowed by law, no officers shall be appointed in such regiment, beyond those necessary for the command of such reduced numbers.

By order of the Secretary of War.

E. D. TOWNSEND,  
*Assistant Adjutant General.*

---

The legislature of Massachusetts, mindful of its responsibility hastened to put on its passage the following Act:—

Chapter 243, Section 2, of an Act in Addition to an Act concerning the militia.

The Militia so organized shall consist of at least one regiment of cavalry to consist of twelve troops or companies: *one regiment of artillery of not more than twelve batteries*, and eight regiments of infantry of ten companies each, which shall be officered in the manner prescribed by the laws of the United States and of this State concerning the Militia.

Approved April 29, 1863.

## NOTES OF CAPTAIN NATHAN APPLETON.

“That I gave some time and thought to the improvement of the Light Artillery service of our Army during the long months of comparative idleness of winter quarters, 1863 and '64, can be judged by the letters I wrote to the Secretary of War, Hon. Edwin M. Stanton, Hon. Alexander H. Rice M. C. from Massachusetts, and a long article to the ‘Army and Navy Journal’ which I do not think was published:—

## TO SECRETARY STANTON.

HON. EDWIN M. STANTON.

*Sir.*

Ever since the Rebellion has existed, the Light Artillery of Massachusetts has been organized as so many independent batteries, each commanded by a captain.

The Governor and Senators of Massachusetts, I am informed, and some of the Artillery officers of the state, have interested themselves in the plan of having the batteries united in a regiment, with the appointment of field officers. I consider that it personally concerns all those connected with the Mass. Light Artillery, and I lately received a communication from one of Governor Andrew’s staff on the subject, who said that a request from General Sykes,—Captain Martin 3d. Mass. Battery, is the chief of artillery of the Fifth Corps,—or from General Meade, to the Secretary of War, might have the desired effect.

This, at best, places the matter in uncertainty, and is an embassy which it would scarcely be becoming for one so young as myself (20 years of age) to undertake, unless so ordered, and I thought that I would write to you, and express freely my opinion on the subject.

That Massachusetts should have Field officers of Light

Artillery seems to me a right which she deserves, not merely in connection with other states that have regimental organizations,—and I believe that most of the states having Light Artillery enough to warrant it are so arranged,—but, also, in connection with her Cavalry and Infantry. For now there is a dead stop to promotion in Light Artillery, and some of the oldest and best tried officers of the state, who have served since the beginning of the war, and who do not wish to leave their favorite branch of the service, cannot get higher up the ladder than two bars. But, Sir, there is another consideration,—The Artillery Brigade of our Corps is commanded by a captain of Massachusetts. In the Brigade there are captains belonging to states having regimental organizations. In case of their promotion to field appointments in their regiments the Massachusetts captain would be ousted from his command.

I think that the subject of Artillery in the field is one about which little can be known except from actual experience. A Brigade of Infantry must generally act together, but it is not so with Artillery, for it has to do its work for the whole Corps. Some guns have to be put in one place, some in another, some rushed to the front, some kept in reserve, and the caissons must be put in some sheltered spot. This must be all personally attended to by the Chief of Artillery, and in addition, the position of everything remembered, while he is responsible for everything.

A Brigade of Infantry is commanded by a brigadier general or a colonel: a Brigade of Artillery often by a captain!

It seems to me that a man commanding one hundred and fifty men, one hundred, odd, horses, six guns and six caissons, in all about fifty thousand dollars worth of United States property, and who has an independent command, should rank higher than one commanding one hundred men and one hundred muskets, and who is under the direct command of another.

Why cannot the Artillery be reorganized, and the chiefs

of Artillery be commissioned by the President, and the old plan of calling a battery a company be dropped?

Is not a battery of six guns as responsible a command as that which a major of Infantry generally has? For while regiments are constantly thinned a battery must be kept full to a certain complement, or its guns are worse than useless.

And, finally, is Massachusetts to be forgotten?

It may seem to you, sir, unbecoming for one so young as myself to write thus on this matter, but I think that in a democracy one cannot overrate the good or bad which he can individually perform, and I consider it the bounden duty of any one who has ideas which he thinks may accomplish good, to present them to those in places of authority.

I have the honor to be most respectfully yours.

NATHAN APPLETON

2d. Lieut. 5th Mass. Battery.

HON. EDWIN M. STANTON.

This very contingency mentioned in my letter to Secretary Stanton, occurred when General Grant came in person to the Army of the Potomac, and consolidated the corps.

When the Third Corps was united to the Fifth, its chief of Artillery was Colonel Charles S. Wainwright of the First N. Y. Regiment of Light Artillery, and as he ranked Captain A. P. Martin, he naturally assumed command of the Artillery Brigade. I was on his staff later as I had been on that of Captain Martin.

In a letter I wrote my brother W. S. Appleton from this camp about this date, I described Captain Martin's command as follows:—

'Our Brigade is commanded by Captain Martin of the 3d. Mass. Battery, and he has as big a staff and as responsible a place as any Brigadier. It consists of the 3d. Mass. Lt. Walcott, 12 lb. Napoleons; 5th Mass. 3 inch; Battery D,

5th U. S. Griffin's Battery, commanded by Hazlett killed at Gettysburg, now by Lieut. Rittenhouse, Parrotts 3 inch; Batteries F & K. 3d. U. S. four guns 12 lb. Napoleons, commanded by Lieut. Barstow; Battery L, 1st Ohio 12 lb. Napoleons, Capt. Gibbs; Battery C, 1st N. Y. 4 guns, 3 inch Ordnance,—same as 5th Mass.,—Capt. Barnes.'

I find this at the end of my letter:—'And now I want you, and some other influential people in Boston, to go to work, with John A. Andrew to get the light batteries formed regimentally, with a colonel, lieutenant colonel, 3 majors, adjutants, quartermasters &c &c. It ought to be done, as it stops promotion, keeps down pay, and gives the responsible command of a Brigade,—over 30 pieces of Artillery,—to a captain. Moreover the other states are organized and Massachusetts kept behind. If the matter was brought before the Governor in the right manner I think he would fix it all right. If I am in Boston this winter I shall try to do something about it myself.

Another thing is, the Mass. Batteries ought to have conscripts *immediately*. I have no doubt but what there are enough at Long Island today to fill them all. This should be attended to, as it is hard on the men to have to do Guard Duty so often.' "

---

At the time this letter was sent home by Lieut. Appleton the Legislature of 1864, had assembled.

Jonathan E. Field was president of the Senate, Alexander H. Bullock was speaker of the House of Representatives. John A. Andrew had been elected Governor for the fourth time, Joel Hayden was Lieut.-Governor. Warner and Oliver were Secretary and Treasurer as in 1861. The United States senators were the same, Sumner and Wilson, but there had been some changes in the members of Congress. Some of the old ones had dropped out. The new ones were Oakes Ames, Samuel Hooper, George S. Boutwell, John D. Baldwin and William B. Washburn. Edwin



M. Stanton attorney general in Buchanan's Cabinet was U. S. Secretary of War.

LETTER FROM GOVERNOR ANDREW TO THE SENATORS  
AND REPRESENTATIVES FROM MASSACHUSETTS  
IN CONGRESS.

COMMONWEALTH OF MASSACHUSETTS,  
EXECUTIVE DEPARTMENT,  
BOSTON, May 5, 1864.

To the Honorable, the Senators, and the Representatives of the Commonwealth of Massachusetts in the Congress of the United States:

I beg to renew my previous representations of the anomaly existing in the organization of the light artillery arm of the volunteer forces of the United States, by means of which an injustice is done to certain states relatively to certain other states and their officers. I will illustrate by the example of the Commonwealth of Massachusetts the nature of this injustice, selecting that Commonwealth for the illustration only because I am more familiar with the facts concerning it, but being informed and believing that similar injustice is practised towards others also.

There are in the volunteer service of the United States, at this time, sixteen batteries of light artillery from the Commonwealth of Massachusetts.

The Government, having power in the premises to grant or to withhold organization, denies a regimental organization for these batteries, or any portion of them, while it concedes such organization for the artillery batteries of the states of Illinois, Indiana, Maine, Michigan, New York, Ohio, and Rhode Island, certainly, and perhaps to some other states.

This discrimination creates great dissatisfaction among the artillery troops, and with reason, for a man enlisting into an Illinois, Indiana, Maine, Michigan, New York, or Rhode Island battery, has a road open to promotion to be a colonel, while in the Massachusetts batteries, no regimental organization existing, a soldier can rise to no grade higher than captain.

Among the sixteen batteries of Massachusetts, is one which has been in the field since April 19, 1861, having accompanied the column which opened communication between Annapolis and Washington, and having re-enlisted for three years at the end of the three months' term of enlistment.

[This was the First Light Battery M. V. M. Major Asa M. Cook: Lieutenants Josiah Porter, Wm. H. McCartney, Caleb C. E. Mortimer and Robert L. Sawin. It proceeded to Washington with the Fifth Mass. Infantry, April 20,



1861, by way of Annapolis, and was stationed at the Relay House, 10 miles from Baltimore.]

A majority of all the other Massachusetts batteries entered the field near the beginning of the war. They have served everywhere with honor: their officers have been tested and sifted by this long experience, and they deserve, by military accomplishment and meritorious service, equal opportunity for promotion with the officers of any other state.

I have frequently, but in vain, by letter and by officers of my staff specially deputed for the purpose, asked for them from the Secretary of War such equal opportunity, which would be afforded by authorizing the appointment of field officers of light artillery for the Massachusetts batteries in the same manner as for the batteries of Illinois, Indiana, Maine, Michigan, New York, Ohio, and Rhode Island.

The reasons which are assigned, in reply, by the Secretary of War, for thus withholding from one state what he grants to others, are:—

1. The averment that he accepted the batteries from those other states as components of regimental organizations, while he accepted the batteries from Massachusetts as independent and unattached.

2. That he regards the appointment of any field-officers of artillery as useless, and

3. That by Section 1. of General Order No. 126 of War Department's series of 1862, he intended to restrict such appointments by denying special authorities for muster, and thereby ultimately to do away with them altogether.

But I would respectfully represent:—

1. That the volunteer batteries of all the states named, whether accepted originally as components of regimental organizations or not, have all been serving in like manner.

2. That the weight of military practice sanctions the employment of field-officers of artillery, and

3. That since the date of General Order No. 126, above mentioned, special authorities for the muster of field-officers of artillery have repeatedly been granted by the War Department.

The example of all other military powers' instituting grades of rank among artillery officers corresponding with those among officers of other arms of the service, has long been approved by the legislation of your honorable body, and the artillery arm of the regular army of the United States is organized accordingly into regiments.

And in the volunteer service independent though the batteries may be, each constituting a unit of organization, yet, practically they do serve in conjunction, and if no artillery officers have higher rank than captain, there will be, in such a force as ours, a great number of such

officers exercising more than a captain's command, and for every captain thus employed, there will be a first lieutenant exercising a captain's command, a second lieutenant exercising a first lieutenant's command, and a sergeant exercising a second lieutenant's command.

Therefore the injustice of thus restricting to the rank of captain, officers doing field-officers duty reaches the whole way down through all the grades of rank, preventing some first lieutenant from his rightful promotion as captain, some second lieutenant as first lieutenant, some sergeant as second lieutenant, some corporal as sergeant, and some private as corporal.

I fully recognize that in any great army it will be often necessary, by the exigencies of the service, for officers to exercise commands, temporarily, superior to their grades of rank; but at the same time this fact in no manner justifies the restriction of rank as a principle, or rule, in the case of the light artillery officers of the volunteer service, and the unsoundness of the principle in its application to these officers is aggravated by the inequality of its administration; it being enforced against Massachusetts and certain other states, while it is relaxed from Illinois and Indiana, Maine, Michigan, New York, Ohio, and Rhode Island, and also, as I am informed from unofficial sources, from New Jersey and Pennsylvania.

Within the last month the *captain* of a Massachusetts volunteer battery, who has long exercised with honor, the command of a Brigade of Light Artillery, in a Corps of the Army of the Potomac, has been *superseded*, through no fault of his own, but by the addition to the Corps of an officer who is his senior in point of *rank* only, by reason of one state being privileged to appoint artillery field-officers, while like permission is refused to another state.

It is irksome to me to be obliged to return to this subject. But I know not how I can otherwise discharge my duty to the officers and men of sixteen batteries of Massachusetts Light Artillery: many of them among the best the Commonwealth has contributed to the service during the war. I am convinced that I ought not to leave them unsupported by such effort as I may be able to command. I had hoped that the object would have been attained without my appealing to the Congressional Delegation from the Commonwealth in this formal manner, but now I fear that the session of Congress may end without its accomplishment.

If captains of batteries were never needed for field or staff positions pertaining to officers of higher rank, the mere desire to secure rank to our soldiers, however meritorious, would not have influenced me, but when I know that our officers are used and needed to command Brigades of Artillery, to act as chiefs of Artillery and otherwise, on the staffs of corps and division commanders, leaving their companies to be commanded by lieutenants; when I know that the laws and regulations for the Army of the United States, include the regimental organization, with its field-officers, for regular United States batteries,

when I know that such organization and officers are not denied to other states,—some of them with fewer batteries in the field than we have—; and when I know that by reason of this sort of discrimination, good and brave officers whom I have commissioned are made to suffer what the soldier feels to be a personal and undeserved humiliation, I am not at liberty to omit my efforts.

I, therefore, earnestly and respectfully commend this subject to the attention of the gentlemen whose presence in Washington, whose relation to the Executive Government, and whose personal and official insight as the Senators of the Commonwealth and the Representatives of the People of Massachusetts, will enable them to speak efficiently, and entitle them and their opinions to the highest influence and consideration.

I have the honor to be, gentlemen, most respectfully,

Your obedient servant,

JOHN A. ANDREW,

*Governor of the Commonwealth of Massachusetts.*

Official Copy.

A. G. BROWNE JR.

*Lieut.-Col. Military Secretary.*

## STATE LEGISLATION.

In the Acts and Resolves of 1864, may be found the following:—

### Section 17, Chapter 238. Concerning the Militia.

The volunteer companies shall be formed into separate regiments, or attached to such regiments of the active militia as the commander-in-chief shall deem proper, and he may retain any existing regiments of the volunteer militia.

Section 19. Companies of cavalry, artillery and engineers may remain unattached to any regiment or brigade, if the good of the service in the opinion of the commander-in-chief, shall require it, and the two corps of cadets, or either of them, may be attached to divisions at the pleasure of the commander-in-chief. In such case, such companies or corps, shall be subject to the immediate orders of the commanders of such divisions or brigades as the commander-in-chief shall designate: who shall receive the reports, returns and orders, have the authority and discharge the duties, with regard to such companies or corps, which are prescribed for the commanders of regiments with regard to other companies.

Section 25. Artillery. To each *regiment* of Artillery there shall be

one colonel, one lieutenant-colonel, one major, to every *four* companies or batteries, one adjutant, and one quartermaster, each with the rank of first lieutenant, but not to be extra lieutenants, one chaplain, one sergeant-major, one quartermaster-sergeant, one commissary-sergeant, one hospital steward, and two principal musicians.

To each battery of Light Artillery, or company of Heavy Artillery, there shall be one captain, two first lieutenants, two second lieutenants, one first sergeant, one quartermaster-sergeant, six sergeants, twelve corporals, two musicians, two artificers, one wagoner, and one hundred and twenty-two privates.

Approved May 14, 1864.

Thus it will be seen that no blame can attach to the state legislature for neglect of duty in this regard.

Every artillery officer from the highest to the lowest rank was interested in this subject, and pens were busily employed in the endeavor to effect a change. An article appeared in the *Army and Navy Journal* of Nov. 14, 1864, in which the following views are attributed to General W. F. Barry. The theme as expressed by the author of the article is "The Deficiency of Rank in the Artillery service":—

"This faulty organization can only be suitably corrected by legislative action, and it is earnestly hoped that the attention of the proper authorities may be at an early day invited to it."

The editor adds that he "regrets to say that although their 'attention' has often since been 'invited' to it, the evil remains to this day in almost equal force, and the gross injustice is seen of a body of officers, whose services are unequalled in their value and importance, suffering from the false organization of their arm. This radical defect has already lost us some of our finest artillery officers, and if not corrected, it must, we fear, lose us a great many more."

Of the result in Congress, Brevet Major Charles A. Phillips thus wrote in a letter home, dated at City Point, March 15, 1865; Captain Robert H. Fitzhugh of New York had gone above him, and was lieutenant colonel in command of a Brigade of the Artillery Reserve, after having been a junior captain to him at Gettysburg:—

"Partly I think at my suggestion Senator Wilson introduced a bill to remedy the evil, and give all battery commanders an equal chance of promotion, but I believe it was incorporated into the 'Onnibus Bill,' and was lost at the close of the session. However, Congress managed to raise our pay, which will make a difference to me of \$30 per month."

FROM THE REPORT OF B'V'T. MAJ. GEN. HENRY J. HUNT,  
U. S. ARMY, CHIEF OF ARTILLERY:—

ARTILLERY HEAD QUARTERS, ARMY OF THE POTOMAC.

CAMP NEAR FORT ALBANY, VA.

June 1, 1865.

. . . . In my previous reports I have had occasion to call attention to the want of a proper proportion of field officers for the artillery, and this I did especially in the reports of the battles of Chancellorsville and Gettysburg: and as there is no bureau of artillery nor other centre of administration for it, I take this occasion to present the same subject in order that the results of our experience may not be lost. This is due to the reputation of the artillery in this war, as well as to the future interests of the service. At an early period of the war, orders were given that field artillery should be taken into service only by single batteries, 'in order to save field officers'; this whilst infantry regiments of a single battalion were allowed four with their proper staffs. Why this policy, so contrary to that of all modern armies, and so destructive to the efficiency of the most complicated of all the arms of the service, was adopted, I am at a loss to discern. Its effects have been but too clear. Not only has the service suffered from the want of officers absolutely necessary to its highest efficiency and economy, but the system has stopped promotion in the artillery, and, as a consequence, nearly every officer of promise as well as of any distinction has been offered that promotion in the infantry, cavalry, or the staff, which no amount of capacity, gallantry, or good conduct, could secure him in his own arm. The result is that, with a few marked exceptions, in which officers were willing to sacrifice their personal advancement and prospects to their love for their arm, the best and most distinguished of the officers of the artillery accepted positions elsewhere, or left the service in disgust, as opportunity offered. The effect of this and of other errors of organization, has been but too evident: the artillery, although it has done much better than under the circumstances could have been expected or even hoped, has not attained to that efficiency which was possible, and has failed to retain the pre-eminence it once held in our Army and in public estimation. This sacrifice of efficiency has been made at the expense of economy. I do not



hesitate to say that the field artillery of this Army, although not inferior to any other in our service, has been from one-third to one-half less efficient than it ought to have been, whilst it has cost from one-third to one-half more money than there was any necessity for. This has been due principally to the want of proper organization, which has deprived it of the experienced officers required for its proper command, management, and supervision, and is in no respect the fault of the artillery itself."

General Meade wrote to Captain Martin at the expiration of the term of service of the Third Mass. Battery, as quoted by the historian, "In no branch of the service is knowledge and experience so essential to success as in the artillery, nor is there any branch of the service where so little has been done by promotion to encourage the faithful and efficient officer."

Perhaps the Adjutant General of the State, William Schouler, who shared with the Governor the care of all the troops who went from Massachusetts throughout the War, had as clear an insight, and was as capable of impartially stating what treatment her light artillery deserved and what it received as any one.

In his "History of Massachusetts in the Civil War" published in 1868, he says:—"No arm of the Massachusetts volunteers did greater service to the nation, or reflected greater honor upon Massachusetts, than the sixteen light batteries which went from this Commonwealth to the War. Many of the officers held high commands, some of them of the artillery of a Corps, and yet none of them could ever reach a higher rank than captain, and for the reason that the Secretary of War would not consent to have our batteries given either a battalion or a regimental organization. States, which did not send half as many batteries into the service, had these privileges allowed them, and in consequence they had their majors, lieutenant-colonels, and colonels of artillery, while Massachusetts had no officer of higher rank in this arm of the service than a captain.

The Governor exerted his utmost power to have this

wrong righted, but in vain. The only answer which Secretary Stanton gave, was that 'mistakes had been made in the beginning of the War, which he did not wish to keep up.'

We will not say that the Secretary was altogether to blame: but the wrong done could have been righted by Congress fixing a brevet rank which would have carried command and pay with it, and not have permitted officers of the skill and bravery of Martin, McCartney, Nims, and others we could name, to serve in positions which properly belonged to brigadier generals, and to perform the duties of those positions with pre-eminent merit, while only holding in reality the commissions of captains, and allowed only the pay and allowances of captains.

It is true that these gentlemen were named in official bulletins in words of praise, for 'gallant and efficient service in the field,' and at the end of the War they were brevetted brigadier-generals: but something more was due the officers and men of the light batteries of Massachusetts."

#### A GLANCE AT ARTILLERY TACTICS.

"The Artillery drill, although equally interesting, was not as rapid as that of the cavalry, because of the weight of the guns, but there was a grandeur in the movement of so many spirited, well-trained teams and heavy pieces, not seen in the other branches of the service. Target firing was also practiced to a high degree of excellence."

EDWIN FORBES.

Brig. Gen. John Gibbon who compiled "The Artillerist's Manual," edition of 1863, declares that—"Batteries derive all their value from the courage and skill of the gunners, from their constancy and devotion on difficult marches, from the quickness and capacity of the officers, and especially from the good condition and vigor of the teams. without which nothing can be undertaken."



From the revised system of Light Artillery Tactics submitted January 15, 1859, by a Light Artillery Board consisting of Brevet Major Wm. H. French, Captain William F. Barry and Brevet Major Henry J. Hunt, having been approved by President James Buchanan, accepted for the government of the Army by the Secretary of War, and used by the Light Batteries during the War of the Rebellion, the following is taken:—

“The battery of manœuvre is composed of six fieldpieces and six caissons, properly manned, horsed, and equipped. It is sometimes reduced to four or increased to eight pieces. The tactics is adapted to either number, but six pieces are supposed. Each carriage is drawn by four or six horses, and the officers and men are as follows.—One captain, who commands the battery, three lieutenants, each commanding a section: the section of the junior lieutenant should be in the centre.

One lieutenant commanding the line of caissons.

When half batteries are formed, they are commanded by the two lieutenants highest in rank.

Six mounted sergeants, each charged with guiding and superintending a piece.

Twenty-four, or thirty-six drivers, being one to each pair of horses.

Six detachments of cannoneers, each containing nine men in mounted batteries, and eleven in horse batteries. This number includes two cornorals, one of whom is chief of the caisson, and the other the gunner, has charge of the gun and its detachment.

Two trumpeters or buglers.

One guidon.

The battery is divided into three sections denominated the right, left, and centre sections.

A section contains two pieces and two caissons and in each section the pieces are denominated right piece and left piece.

The battery is also divided into half batteries denominated right half battery, and left half battery. The word piece applies to the gun or howitzer, either with or without its limber, and sometimes to the piece and caisson together.

The front of a battery, in the order in battery, is the front of the line of pieces. In all other formations it is the front of the first line of drivers.

The right or left of a battery is always that of the actual front, whether the pieces or caissons lead.

## PARADE FOR REVIEW AND INSPECTION.

The battery being in line, with the pieces in front: the first sergeant 2 yards from the right: the bugler and guidon in one rank, 6 yards on his right: the quartermaster sergeant 2 yards from the left: the artificers in one rank, 6 yards on his left: all dressed on the lead drivers of the pieces: the Captain commands:

1. Attention.
2. *Prepare for Review.*
3. Action Front.
4. *Right-Dress.*
5. Front."

## A LITTLE BIT FROM MEMORY.

Notes of Private D. Henry Grows Oct. 28, 1900:—"A section consists of two guns, as there are six guns to a battery, they are called the Right, Left, and Centre sections. When in camp the tents are placed the same as the men are at the guns, viz., odd numbers on the right and even ones on the left, making Nos. 1, 3 & 5 on the right, and 2, 4 & 6 on the left, so you will see that I, being in the 5th detachment I would be placed on the right half. No. 6 is rarely changed, because the one holding the place has to learn the firing table, which is placed in the cover of the limber chest."

Notes of Corporal Benjamin Graham Nov. 11, 1900:—"The pieces are all numbered from One to Six on a march or in a line. On a march the First piece is supposed to be in front or first, and in line of battle it is supposed to be on the right, thus: 6, 5, 4, 3, 2, 1, and the First piece is the First Detachment, the Second piece the Second Detachment, and so on."

## CHAPTER IV.

### RECRUITING THE BATTERY.

"Come forth! come as the torrent comes when the winter's chain is burst!

So rushes on the land's revenge, in night and silence nursed—

The night is passed, the silence o'er—on all our hills we rise—

We wait thee, youth! sleep, dream no more! the voice of battle cries."

—*The Summons*, Mrs. Hemans.

The summons of the Secretary of War, to send on all regiments and parts of regiments then enlisted, gave rise to an increased activity in the various executive departments. The demand made so peremptorily, called for prompt and speedy action. Governor Andrew issued a proclamation on August 20, 1861, which closed with the following words:—

"Citizen Soldiers of Massachusetts! Duty, Honor, the dearest sentiments of Patriotic Love and Devotion call for your brave hearts and unconquerable arms!

JOHN A. ANDREW

*Governor and Commander-in-Chief.*"

On the 25th advices had been received at the State Department in Washington, from all our foreign ministers, stating confidently that there would be no movement among the European governments to recognize the rebels so long as the federal government kept forces in the rebel states and held Washington.

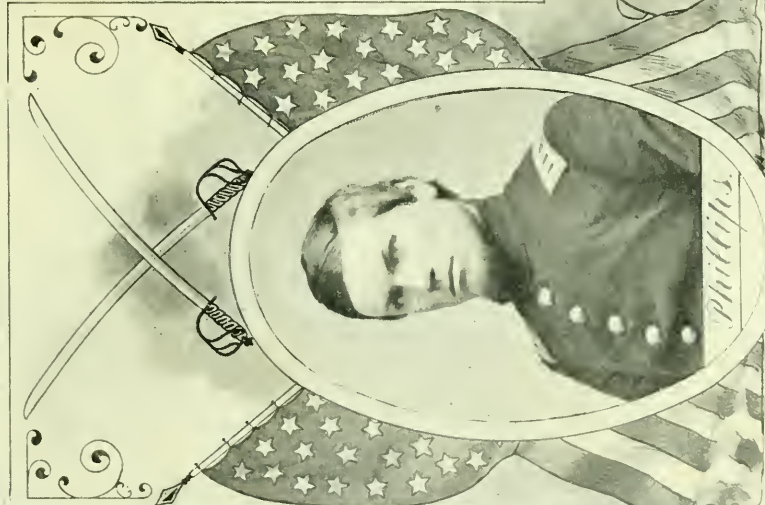
The President not only directed that fortifications should be erected to protect Washington, but he desired that they should form a base of operations against the rebels. These



*Eppendorff*



AND PAUL CO.



*Phillips*



*Allen*









Kyde



Dillingham



Page



Blake



AMER. ENG. CO.



Tripp







*Scott.*



*Lull.*



*Shear.*



*Appleton.*



*Simonds.*



*Hamblet.*



works were divided into three sections,—western, middle, and eastern.

Army Head Quarters were at Arlington House on Arlington Heights, a ridge of land running parallel with the Potomac River from Alexandria to a point opposite Georgetown a distance of nine miles. South of these heights was Four Mile Run, a small creek, and upon them a series of earthworks were erected by which a few thousand men could hold a large army in check. The Potomac Canal crossed the river on a high stone bridge. The bridge was guarded by a breastwork, and two bomb proof block houses of large logs two stories high were erected and pierced on all sides for musketry. Opposite on the Virginia shore the land rises about 150 feet to a plateau on which stood Fort Corcoran. About a mile from Arlington Heights towards Alexandria, were the middle works, erected at the crossing of the road from Alexandria to Georgetown and that from the Long Bridge to Fairfax Court House. They commanded a deep ravine towards Arlington, a wide plain towards Fairfax, and a broad valley toward Alexandria. A dense forest was cut down in order to permit an unobstructed view.

The eastern defences were back of Alexandria on Shuter's Hill and were known as Fort Ellsworth. The leveling of a forest of fifteen acres which sheltered Alexandria by three thousand men in a short time, is thus described in the *Philadelphia Ledger* in August, 1861:—"The axmen cut the trees only on one side, leaving them with just enough of the body to keep them upright. When the utmost verge was reached the largest trees were cut, and falling, swept the entire fifteen acres with one stroke. These laps are all sharpened and present a formidable appearance."

General George B. McClellan, at the immature age of thirty-two suddenly summoned from Western Virginia to take command of the Army of the Potomac, was already

from personal observation qualified to express an opinion on the methods to be adopted in carrying out the President's plans. He criticised the conduct of the allied generals of the Crimean war in the following terms:—"Their measures were half way measures, slow and blundering, they failed to keep constantly in view the object of the expedition, and to press rapidly and unceasingly toward it. . . . If a deficiency in men and means is assigned as a reason for the early operations of the allies, it is but another proof that, in undertaking the affair, they neglected one of the clearest rules of war; that is, to undertake no important operation without full and reliable information as to the obstacles to be overcome, and the means of resistance in the hands of the enemy."

He immediately introduced the strictest discipline, of which there had been a lack. It had been said that the battle of Bull Run exhibited the efficiency of artillery, and the comparative weakness of the infantry arm of the service. McClellan declared that this should be a war waged with artillery, and at once called for a large increase of artillery and cavalry, and after the review on the South side of the Potomac it was telegraphed August 25, 1861, all over the country:—"Gen. McClellan declares perfect satisfaction with his army, and his army, the greatest ever seen on this continent, is equally satisfied with him."

From this moment a sentiment of sacred honor attached itself to membership in the Army of the Potomac, and McClellan's acknowledged preference for artillery aroused in Massachusetts the latent liking for that arm of the service which had lurked in the militia system since the first two years of the Revolutionary War, when the one Corps of Artillery in the service of the Continent, under the immediate command of General George Washington, was composed chiefly of Massachusetts men.

September 5th, 1861, the mayor of New Bedford, Hon. Isaac C. Taber, was authorized to organize one or more

companies "for the national army", the bounty to each member not to exceed fifteen dollars, and the next day the *Taunton Gazette* thus appealed to the people:—

"Shall we have an artillery company?" "We say yes:" replies the *New Bedford Mercury*, "and suggest that the company already in existence here under command of John B. Hyde, as the nucleus of such an organization. Captain Hyde, we doubt not, would enter into such a scheme with zeal, and of his efficiency there can be no question."

John B. Hyde was born in New Bedford, August 14, 1830, and was educated in the public schools of that city. At the age of 18, he joined the New Bedford Volunteer Fire Department, and was Foreman of Columbian Engine No. 5, from 1854, to 1861.

In 1855, he became a member of the New Bedford City Guards, and served out the enlistment term of five years, during which time the Guards were commanded by Major George A. Bourne and Colonel Timothy Ingraham, both superior military men. In 1857 and '58, he was elected a member of the Common Council. At that time the Hon. George H. Dunbar was mayor of the city.

When the war broke out and the Home Guard was formed, he was requested by Mayor Taber to take charge of two brass pieces belonging to the city, and organize a company to man them: and from the spring of 1861, to the time of his recruiting of the Fifth Mass. Battery, he was in command of that branch of the home guard for the protection of the city in case of an invasion. This no doubt inspired the effort which resulted in the larger organization, whose destination was the seat of war.

The New Bedford City Guards, composed of so many of her citizens who were inclined to serve their country in the hour of danger, enlisted on the call for three months men, and with Timothy Ingraham as captain, went out as Company L of the Third Mass. Regt. Infantry. Colonel David W. Wardrop commanding. On their return July 23, 1861, with full ranks, their arrival was greeted by a



salvo of artillery fired upon the Common, and they were escorted to the City Hall by four companies of the Home and Coast Guard where they were addressed about 5 p. m. by the mayor and Ex-Governor John H. Clifford.

It is recorded in the columns of the daily press that the Flying Artillery at the Common performed sundry evolutions, previous to the arrival of the City Guards, which evinced a commendable knowledge of their peculiar duty, and great dexterity in discharging, unlimbering, and limbering their pieces.

The New Bedford *Mercury* of July 25th says of this artillery company :

"They are entitled to great credit for the proficiency they have made in artillery practice, and particularly as they have not had the benefit of any instruction, but have studied the science without any aid from a master. We regard it as quite extraordinary that Captain Hyde and his command have acquired such skill in all the details of duty from the mere reading of the manual."

Captain Timothy Ingraham was afterwards Lieutenant Colonel of the Mass. 18th Regt. Infantry, and Colonel of the 38th. He was provost marshal in Washington when President Lincoln was assassinated.

The Morning *Mercury* announced on this 6th September, 1861 :—

"The sabres loaned to the city for the Home and Coast Guard Light Artillery, have been recalled by the Governor. Captain Hyde will take them to Boston today."

Thus the scene was changed to the city of Boston. Three days after, there was issued the following document bearing the state seal :—

GENERAL RECRUITING OFFICE FOR MASS. VOLUNTEERS.

HEAD QUARTERS FIRST BRIGADE  
FIRST DIV. M. V. M.  
NO. 14 PITTS STREET.  
BOSTON, Sept. 9, 1861.

This certifies that I have this day appointed G. D. Allen Deputy

Recruiting Officer for Gen. Wilson's Regiment Massachusetts Volunteers in the towns of Malden, Medford and Melrose.

All Recruiting Officers appointed by this Department are hereby directed to co-operate with each other, By order of

W. W. BULLOCK

General Recruiting Officer Mass. Vols.

The Fifth Mass. Battery was in camp with the 22d and the 23d, but both infantry regiments preceded it to the field.

From the New Bedford *Mercury*.

Sept. 13, 1861.

The New Artillery Company: Lieut. John B. Hyde has opened a recruiting office at the Armory corner of Mechanics Lane and Pleasant street. The Company for which he is recruiting is to be attached to Gen Wilson's regiment (22d.), and it should be filled at once. Lieut. Hyde is well known in this county, and his personal popularity should secure his success in his present undertaking. If he fails, we shall despair of any man's raising a company in New Bedford."

In another column was the advertisement:—

#### LIGHT ARTILLERY COMPANY

##### RECRUITS WANTED.

For an Artillery Company now forming in the City of New Bedford to be attached to Gen. Wilson's Regiment.

\$100 Bounty at the end of the War.

\$15 Bonus from the City at the time of enlisting.

\$13 per month, with Clothing and Rations.

\$4 per month for a wife.

\$8 per month for a wife and one child.

\$12 per month for a wife and two children.

Pay monthly from the State. Pay and Rations to commence immediately.

These inducements are the best now offered for young men desirous of serving their country.

Office at the Armory of the N. B. Light Artillery Company, corner of Mechanics Lane and Pleasant Street.

J. B. HYDE.

Boston next.

GENERAL RECRUITING OFFICE FOR MASS. VOLUNTEERS.

HEAD QUARTERS FIRST BRIGADE

FIRST DIV. M. V. M.

NO. 14 PITTS STREET

BOSTON, Sept. 16, 1861.

This certifies That I have this day appointed G. D. Allen Deputy Recruiting Officer for the Fourth Battery of Light Artillery for Gen. Wilson's Regiment, Massachusetts Volunteers, in the City of Boston and vicinity.

All Recruiting Officers appointed by this Department are hereby directed to co-operate with each other.

By order of

W. W. BULLOCK

General Recruiting Officer

Mass. Vols.

NOTES OF CAPTAIN GEO. D. ALLEN

Sept. 3. 1900.

"I had the mustering in papers made out on the date of the first order I had for recruiting the Battery, this especially saved the New Bedford men two or three weeks pay.

General Schouler sent for me to come to his office in the State House, and informed me that Salem and Lawrence wanted to join in recruiting a battery, and he had decided to call their battery the Fourth, and our battery would be the Fifth."

THE CALL.

The New Bedford *Standard* of Sept. 23, 1861, contained the following notice:—

"Lt. John B. Hyde advertises today for recruits for the artillery company to be attached to General Wilson's regiment. Lt. Hyde is well known here and has been exceedingly popular with his acquaintances, among whom we trust his call will meet with a prompt response. The inducements [This refers to general inducements offered

by the city] it will be seen are extremely liberal. His office is at the Armory, corner of Mechanics Lane and Pleasant street.

The following appeared in the *Boston Journal* of September 25, 1861:—

“Wanted—Recruits for the Fifth Massachusetts Light Battery, to be attached to the Twenty-third Regiment, Col. Wilson.

Able-bodied young men of good standing will please apply immediately to G. D. Allen, 111 Court street.

The Company goes into Camp at Lynnfield immediately.”

The regiment raised by Senator Wilson was the 22d. The 23d. was commanded by Colonel John Kurtz. The Third Mass. Battery accompanied the 22d. to the seat of war.

111 Court street was about where the Palace Theatre now stands, at the head of Sudbury street. Sergt. Wm. H. Peacock recollects the enlistment place as a vacant store.

September 28th, 1861, George D. Allen of Malden was commissioned First Lieutenant of the Fifth Massachusetts Battery. The same day the following Special Order was issued:

COMMONWEALTH OF MASSACHUSETTS  
HEAD QUARTERS, BOSTON,  
Sept. 28, 1861

Special Order No. 484.

Mr. George D. Allen of Malden, who is recruiting the Fifth Battery of Light Artillery, to be attached to the Twenty-third Regiment of Massachusetts Volunteers, now in camp at Lynnfield, is ordered to report with his command to Lt. Col. Kurtz, who will find him proper quarters.

By order of the Commander-in-Chief.

WM. SCHÖULER  
Adj. General.

The New Bedford *Mercury* of the same date had the following notice:—

#### NOTICE.

“To the members of the N. B. Light Artillery Company.

The members of this Company are notified, that they go into camp

at Lynnfield, on Monday Sept. 30, 1861. They are requested to meet at the Artillery Armory, Mechanics Lane, on Monday morning, Sept. 30, 1861, at 6 o'clock *precisely*.

LIEUT. J. B. HYDE.

New Bedford Sept. 28, 1861.

Lynnfield formerly a part of Lynn, is a small town 12 miles from Boston, and the camp was established near the Lynnfield Hotel, in a level field, once used for a race-track.

When Lieut. Allen went into camp at Lynnfield he was presented with a horse, in color a dark chestnut, by E. R. Sawyer & Co.—in whose employ he was when he joined the army;—other wholesale coal dealers in Boston contributing. When he found that they were not going to take the Battery horses from here, he was obliged to sell him, and buy another in Washington.

From the New Bedford *Mercury* Oct. 2, 1861.

#### DEPARTURE FOR THE CAMP.

"Lieut. John B. Hyde and his command, 56 men, left by the early train, on the New Bedford and Taunton Railroad yesterday morning. They marched from their Armory to Market Square (City Hall) where prayer was offered by the Rev. John Girdwood, and his Honor the Mayor made a few remarks, and presented to Lieut. Hyde, on behalf of the City, a full set of equipments. Lieut. Hyde made an appropriate response. As the train left, a salute was fired on the Common by a detachment of the Light Artillery Company of this city, under command of Lieut. Pliny B. Sherman. A large number of citizens were at the depot to witness the departure of their friends and neighbors, and to express their hearty wishes for their success."

Same date:

"We learn from the 'Journal' that Lieut. Hyde and his command dined at the Parker House in Boston yesterday. His Honor Mayor Taber accompanied them, and Mayor Wightman (of Boston) and our friend Colonel Hatch were at the dinner. The Mayor of Boston was introduced by the Colonel, and addressed the men in cheering words of welcome."







## PRESENTATION OF EQUIPMENTS.

His Honor Mayor Isaac C. Taber requested Lieut. Hyde to present himself with his recruits October 1, 1861, at 7 o'clock in the morning, in front of the City Hall, where he proposed to make an address to his command. Owing to sickness the Mayor was unable to be present in person but delegated Mr. James B. Congdon, who made the address and presented to Lt. Hyde his equipments, consisting of a sabre, belt, sash, shoulder straps, spurs, and a pair of Colt's revolvers.

After these ceremonies were concluded they proceeded to the depot, headed by the New Bedford Brass Band, and took the train for the camp at Lynnfield.

## CERTIFICATE OF MEMBERSHIP.

NEW BEDFORD, October 1, 1861.

This certifies that William H. Peacock has been regularly mustered and sworn into the service of the United States, as a member of 5th Battery, 23d Regiment, now in Lynnfield.

LIEUT. JOHN B. HYDE.

"Personal" in the New Bedford *Mercury*

Oct. 3, 1861.

"Lieut. J. B. Hyde of the Fifth Battery, returned to the city last evening. He reports that his men have all been sworn in, uniformed and equipped. They are all in excellent spirits, and highly pleased with their quarters and rations."

The next day came the following announcement.

"Fifth Battery: Lieut. Hyde returns to Camp Schouler at Lynnfield this morning (October 4th) with the following recruits:—

Robert A. Dillingham, Timothy W. Terry, Henry D. Scott, Alpheus Haskins, Edward F. Smith, William Turner, Mason W. Page, Joseph G. Braley, George McCully, Samuel A. Hardy, George H. Chadwick, J. Augustus Wood, Christopher C. Allen, Edward Mitchell, Philo P.

Braley, William Greeley, Josiah W. Gardner, John Langley, James D. Allen, Charles D. Barnard, Michael Flynn, George W. Smith, Thomas Higgins and several others whose names we could not learn.

Timothy W. Terry, brother of our city marshal, has received the appointment of Quartermaster's Sergeant. The recruiting office will be kept open a short time, and those intending to enlist should do so at once. Lieut. Hyde has made arrangements with the postmaster at Lynnfield, so that all letters addressed Fifth Battery Artillery, Camp Schouler, Lynnfield, will be conveyed daily to the camp by the Quartermaster's Sergeant."

#### ADVERTISEMENT IN THE *MERCURY* OCT. 5th.

##### "LAST CHANCE.

20 able-bodied men wanted Immediately. For the  
New Bedford  
Light Artillery Company  
Now encamped at Lynnfield."

After specifying the bounty, as before, the following is added:—

"Call soon, as only a few more can be accepted in this Company.

Apply at the Armory of the New Bedford Light Artillery Company, on Mechanics Lane, above Purchase street."

October 8, 1861, John B. Hyde of New Bedford was commissioned Second Lieutenant. Robert A. Dillingham of New Bedford Third Lieutenant. Charles A. Phillips of Salem, Fourth Lieutenant of the Fifth Mass. Battery.

On the same day the New Bedford *Mercury* announced the following additional recruits:

##### "THE FIFTH BATTERY

"Lieut. Hyde leaves for camp this morning with the following recruits for the Fifth Battery, completing the number of his company: Christopher C. Allen, Michael Hewitt, Robert King, Joseph R. Hathaway, Thomas Place, Richard Heyes, John F. Hathaway, Stephen Townsend, John H. Alton, Christopher B. Tripp, William S. Wilcox, Peleg W. Blake, Joseph B. Alton, James Robinson, Thomas A. Cushman, Squire W. Butts, Michael Sullivan, David B. Peirce, Benjamin S. Kanuse, James L. Warren, William H. Caswell, John T. Drew, Francis P. Washburn. Lot Tynan, James H. Albro."

Oct. 8th, the 22d. Regiment left Boston for Washington. On the 10th, according to the *Mercury*, the mayor and city treasurer of New Bedford "proceeded to Camp Schouler, Lynnfield, and paid the bounty offered by the City to volunteers in Lieut. Hyde's company, and the Clifford Guards, Co. D, 23d Regiment."

This company was recruited by Cornelius Howland Jr. and went to camp about the time the artillery company was sent there. On the 16th Colonel Kurtz changed the camp of the 23d to the location vacated by the 22d.

October 23, 1861, Max Eppendorff of New Bedford, was commissioned captain of the Fifth Mass. Battery.

#### CAPTAIN MAX EPPENDORFF.

The first commander of the Battery enjoyed the full confidence of His Excellency Governor Andrew, and the high officials with whom he came in business connection, and he tried to deserve this confidence to the best of his ability.

#### NOTES OF CAPTAIN EPPENDORFF.

October 26, 1900.

"When, in the early part of the year 1849, the Royal Saxon Army,—I am a subject of the King of Saxony, *not* of Prussia—, was reorganized and increased, the Minister of War was compelled to call for Volunteers to fill the vacant positions of Subaltern Officers.

With 8 other young men, who like myself, had formerly been students of the Polytechnic High school in Dresden, I applied for admission in the Artillery Corps. We were accepted and mustered in as Ensigns. For 5 months we were drilled in Artillery and Infantry service, and instructed by Officers of the Regiment in general duties of an Artillery Officer, and in special Artillery science.

Having satisfactorily passed examination before a committee composed of the Staff of the Regiment, we obtained

our appointments as Second Lieutenants of the Saxon Artillery.

I served my King faithfully for 6 years, when I tendered my resignation and obtained my honorable discharge with pension, which latter I am by special favor allowed to draw in any foreign country.

On my first interview with Governor Andrew, I handed him these papers, of whose contents he took the necessary insight. My application for a position as a kind of instructor for officers and men of Batteries of the State then to be organized, was finally refused by the Secretary of War in Washington."

## THE ORIGINAL ENLISTMENT ROLLS IN NEW BEDFORD.

Signed by The Recruits.

Enlisted at New Bedford from September 23d. to Oct. 8th, 1861, by Lt. John B. Hyde.

Robert A. Dillingham	.....	New Bedford, Mass.
Henry D. Scott	.....	New Bedford, Mass.
Timothy W. Terry	.....	New Bedford, Mass.
Charles H. Morgridge	.....	New Bedford, Mass.
George Shaw	.....	New Bedford, Mass.
Anson E. Ferris	.....	New Bedford, Mass.
John Pilling	.....	New Bedford, Mass.
Luther Petty	.....	New Bedford, Mass.
Thomas Burke	.....	New Bedford, Mass.
Jacob A. Gilbert	.....	New Bedford, Mass.
Francis Oldis	.....	New Bedford, Mass.
Michael Flynn	.....	New Bedford, Mass.
George W. Smith	.....	New Bedford, Mass.
Samuel R. Jordan	.....	Mattapoisett, Mass.
Henry W. Soule	.....	New Bedford, Mass.
John C. Hart	.....	New Bedford, Mass.

Patrick Walsh .....	New Bedford, Mass.
James A. Tripp .....	New Bedford, Mass.
John G. Sanford .....	New Bedford, Mass.
Robert Miller .....	New Bedford, Mass.
Michael Dugan .....	New Bedford, Mass.
Alexander Moore .....	New Bedford, Mass.
Henry D. Crapo .....	New Bedford, Mass.
Andrew W. Almy .....	Fairhaven, Mass.
Francis Carson .....	New Bedford, Mass.
John Agen .....	New Bedford, Mass.
Benjamin T. Burt .....	Fall River, Mass.
James Winters, Bugler .....	New Bedford, Mass.
William W. Carsley .....	New Bedford, Mass.
Albion K. P. Hayden .....	New Bedford, Mass.
George S. Manchester .....	New Bedford, Mass.
Jacob Peacock .....	New Bedford, Mass.
Charles C. Weeden .....	New Bedford, Mass.
Joseph W. Clarke .....	New Bedford, Mass.
Thomas Higgins .....	New Bedford, Mass.
James Neild .....	New Bedford, Mass.
Elisha J. Gibbs .....	New Bedford, Mass.
Charles A. Clark .....	New Bedford, Mass.
James Kay .....	New Bedford, Mass.
Benjamin Graham .....	New Bedford, Mass.
Benjamin F. Smith .....	New Bedford, Mass.
John Waddington .....	New Bedford, Mass.
Edwin J. Butler .....	New Bedford, Mass.
Thomas Carney .....	New Bedford, Mass.
William Pinder .....	New Bedford, Mass.
James T. Shepard .....	New Bedford, Mass.
Joseph Hall .....	New Bedford, Mass.
John E. Dyer .....	New Bedford, Mass.
Edward T. Wilson 2d .....	New Bedford, Mass.
Edward W. West .....	Fairhaven, Mass.
Philip T. Quillin .....	Fairhaven, Mass.
William H. Dunham .....	Fairhaven, Mass.



William H. Ray	Fall River, Mass.
Alpheus Haskins	Marion, Mass.
Edward F. Smith	New Bedford, Mass.
William Gunning	New Bedford, Mass.
William Saxner	Blackstone, R. I.
Mason W. Page	New Bedford, Mass.
Joseph G. Braley	Freetown, Mass.
George McCulley	Freetown, Mass.
Samuel A. Hardy	New Bedford, Mass.
George H. Chadwick	New Bedford, Mass.
J. Augustus Wood	New Bedford, Mass.
Christopher C. Allen	New Bedford, Mass.
Edward Mitchell	New Bedford, Mass.
Philo L. Braley	Freetown, Mass.
William Greely	Germany.
Josiah W. Gardner	New Bedford, Mass.
John Langley	New Bedford, Mass.
James D. Allen	New Bedford, Mass.
[afterwards captain's clerk]	
Charles D. Barnard	New Bedford, Mass.
Lemuel A. Washburn	Freetown, Mass.
Michael Hewitt	New Bedford, Mass.
Ephraim B. Nye	New Bedford, Mass.
Edward Champlin	Westerly, R. I.
James Cox	New Bedford, Mass.
Samuel Clark	Smithfield, R. I.
John M. Canty	New Bedford, Mass.
Charles Jay	New Bedford, Mass.
William Hathaway Jr.	New Bedford, Mass.
James H. Paxton	New Bedford, Mass.
Frederick D. Alden	Fall River, Mass.
Charles H. Macomber	Fall River, Mass.
Benjamin West	New Bedford, Mass.
William Sweeney	New Bedford, Mass.
A. F. Milliken	New Bedford, Mass.
Patrick Doyle	New Bedford, Mass.

Henry Fitzsimmons .....	New Bedford, Mass.
Lorenzo D. Brownell .....	New Bedford, Mass.
John H. Hodgins .....	New Bedford, Mass.
George F. Healy .....	Rochester, Mass.
David McVey .....	New Bedford, Mass.
Robert King .....	New Bedford, Mass.
Joseph R. Hathaway .....	New Bedford, Mass.
Thomas Place .....	New Bedford, Mass.
Richard Heyes .....	New Bedford, Mass.
John F. Hathaway .....	New Bedford, Mass.
Stephen Donovan .....	New Bedford, Mass.
John H. Alton .....	Freetown, Mass.
Christopher B. Tripp .....	Westport, Mass.
William S. Wilcox .....	New Bedford, Mass.
Frederick W. Wood .....	New Bedford, Mass.
Peleg W. Blake .....	New Bedford, Mass.
Samuel Sanderson .....	New Bedford, Mass.
Joseph B. Alton .....	Sandwich, Mass.
James Robinson .....	New Bedford, Mass.
Thomas A. Cushman .....	New Bedford, Mass.
Michael Sullivan .....	New Bedford, Mass.
David B. Peirce .....	New Bedford, Mass.
Benjamin S. Kanuse .....	New Bedford, Mass.
Squire W. Butts .....	New Bedford, Mass.
James L. Warren .....	New Bedford, Mass.
William W. Caswell .....	New Bedford, Mass.
John A. Drew .....	New Bedford, Mass.
Francis P. Washburn .....	New Bedford, Mass.
Lot Tynan .....	New Bedford, Mass.
James H. Albro .....	New Bedford, Mass.
James W. Baldwin .....	New Bedford, Mass.
John H. Cole .....	New Bedford, Mass.
William H. Peacock .....	New Bedford, Mass.

## THE ORIGINAL COMMISSIONED OFFICERS.

From Lt. Hyde's Rolls.

Captain, Max Eppendorff, New Bedford, Mass.

Sen. 1st Lt. George D. Allen, Malden, Mass.

Jun. 1st Lt. John B. Hyde, New Bedford, Mass.

Sen. 2d Lt. Robert A. Dillingham, New Bedford, Mass.

Jun. 2d Lt. Charles A. Phillips, Salem, Mass.

## ORIGINAL NON COMMISSIONED OFFICERS.

Sergeant Major, George H. Johnson, Boston, Mass.

Sergeants:—

Frederick A. Lull, Cambridge, Mass.

Henry D. Scott, New Bedford, Mass.

Otis B. Smith, Boston, Mass.

Charles H. Morgridge, New Bedford, Mass.

William B. Pattison, Boston, Mass.

Peleg W. Blake, New Bedford, Mass.

William H. Peacock, New Bedford, Mass.

Quartermaster Sergeant.

Timothy W. Terry, New Bedford.

## Corporals.

W. G. Warren ..... Boston, Mass.

A. E. Ferris ..... New Bedford, Mass.

H. O. Simonds ..... Boston, Mass.

Mason W. Page ..... New Bedford, Mass.

William H. Baxter ..... Boston, Mass.

Ephraim B. Nye ..... New Bedford, Mass.

-----

The representative of the New Bedford *Mercury* at

Camp Schouler thus describes an unusual scene and a novel recruit :---

"We saw a day or two since a noble looking mastiff, a most intelligent brute, and thoroughly trained, which was purchased by certain gentlemen in the city, and presented to the Fifth Massachusetts Battery. He was taken to the camp by Ass't Engineer H. H. Fisher, who, we learn, made an appropriate presentation speech. As 'Jack's' loyalty was beyond all question, the usual oath was dispensed with."

The sentinel "Jack" was also called "Trusty."

---

October 28th, His Excellency Governor Andrew received the Twenty-Third Regiment and the Fifth Mass. Battery, at Lynnfield.

Corporal Thomas E. Chase refers to this in his Diary, and says there were fifteen guns fired in honor of His Excellency, and that on that day Captain Max Eppendorff took command of the Battery.

In relation to Lieut. Phillips' fitting himself for promotion, Private Louis E. Pattison says :—

"Chas. A. Phillips joined the company at Lynnfield as Junior Second Lieutenant, and immediately had Thomas Stantial, an artificer, make him a table on which, with the aid of blocks representing artillery, and a copy of the tactics, he familiarized himself with the movements of a battery, so that later he was competent to perform his duties successfully."

#### MEETING IN MALDEN TOWN HALL.

Malden, like New Bedford, had just sent out an infantry company, Co. K, of the Mass. 17th Regt., which was at Camp Andrew, Baltimore, Md., when on Monday evening October 28th, 1861, there was a Masonic celebration at the Malden Town Hall,—a public installation of officers of Mount Vernon Lodge, and a presentation to the retiring Master of the Lodge, George D. Allen.

In the centre of the hall stood the altar, draped with the American flag, and above the platform where were seated the officers of the Grand Lodge of Massachusetts, hung a portrait of Washington festooned with red, white and blue.

### SABRE AND EQUIPMENTS.

The installation of the officers was by the Grand Master of the Grand Lodge R. W. Wm. D. Coolidge, followed by a hymn written for the occasion by the Rev. T. J. Greenwood and sung by a choir of thirty voices, the closing verses of which were as follows:—

O'er our country in her sorrow  
Deign to hold thy mighty shield:  
Bring to us a bright tomorrow,  
Through the struggles of the field.  
Lo! our cherished brother leaves us,  
Dangers, for our Land, to brave:  
While the parting sadly grieves us,  
We for him thy blessing crave.

Shield him, by thy gracious power!  
Shield his comrades in the strife,  
And to life's remotest hour,  
Be his helper, God of Life!  
Guide us onward, all, and ever,  
'Till thou lead a world to thee!  
Let our trusting falter, never,  
God of Life, and Liberty.

Then came the presentation of a splendid sabre and equipments to the late Master of the Lodge, George D. Allen, the exercises commencing with the song "Comrades Awake to Glory":—

Comrades awake to glory,  
Know ye not the foe is near,  
Hear ye not the trumpet sounding,  
See ye not the glistening spear?

You'll awake on your graves,  
Already the torch is applied.  
And the blood of your comrades  
Is dyeing the turf at your side.

The presentation speech was made by Wm. H. Richardson Jr. Esq. who said in part:—

“The members of Mount Vernon Lodge . . . have called you here tonight to seal their approbation of a step which reflects equal honor upon you in the taking and upon them in their prompt recognition of its high importance.

A few weeks since we learned that you, in obedience to the promptings of an unselfish patriotism had offered your services to your country in her hour of darkness and trial: we learned also, that the offer had been accepted, and that in a few brief weeks you would exchange the quiet walks of life, the delights of home, and the society of cherished friends, for the distant and stirring scenes of camp and battle field. Spontaneously, as it were, the members of this Institution, with whom you have been so long and honorably connected, suggested the idea of a parting testimonial, which should be alike a substantial token of our appreciation of your labors with us, of our regard for you as a gentleman and brother, and as useful and appropriate symbols of the new profession in which you are about to embark. . . . It is no empty compliment, no formal act of courtesy—no enforced compliance with the fashion of the times that seeks this method to cover a heartless ceremony, but it is the warm expression of a hundred hearts that beat in proud sympathy with a step that evinces the noblest patriotism and the truest devotion to a sacred cause. . . . We do not forget that the name of Allen bears an historic glory, and a revolutionary memory that will never die, and may you emulate that sturdy patriotism and unflinching courage which make the name of Allen and Ticonderoga the watchwords of victory. . . . You are now to exchange the gavel for the sword, and thereby discharge the duties you owe to the laws under which you live; keeping steadily in view the allegiance due to your country.

These spurs, too, are emblems of honor, suggestive of that open eyed vigilance which is ever ready for the word of command, come when it may: requiring, as Napoleon used to term it, a sort of ‘two o’clock in the morning’ courage, and demanding great discipline and great enthusiasm to guard against surprise. It is said of Suwarrow that even in peace he always slept fully armed, boots and all, and when he wished to enjoy a very comfortable nap he used to take off one spur. Let his ready zeal be to you a lesson in fidelity.” . . .

#### MR. ALLEN'S REPLY.

Mr. Allen replied as follows:

“Brother Senior Warden, and Brothers of Mount Vernon Lodge: There are moments when even the lips of eloquence are held mute by the emotions that struggle in the



heart. And if to such souls emotions are sometimes unmastering, how much more so must they now be to me, who can lay no claim to eloquence or even common language, to speak what I feel. I cannot talk. Our country is in peril, and for her sake, I have ventured to say I was ready to fight. But even here I am reminded that profession is more becoming him who putteth off his armor, than he who putteth it on. I will then strive not to abuse the confidence you have manifested by these splendid gifts. I will endeavor to use them manfully in protection of our country and her laws, and for them so appropriate in the position in which I stand, as well as expressing the confidence of the Lodge over which I have had the happiness and honor to preside, as well as for the eloquent and appropriate manner in which they have been conveyed, my whole soul centres in an expression of grateful thanks."

In closing Mr. Allen invited the Rev. T. J. Greenwood to speak for him, which he did, portraying Mr. Allen's willingness to sacrifice his life for his country "which all true Masons are bound to love, and cherish, and defend," and as a personal gift presented him with a bible "The Word of God"—"The Great Light of Freemasonry, which we are all taught to heed." District Deputy Grand Master J. K. Hall presented Mr. Allen with the Diploma of a Past Master, in acknowledgment of the faithful performance of the duties intrusted to him, with a poetical allusion to Washington for whom Mount Vernon Lodge was named, and to the sabre and bible:—

"And may its hilt be blessed by faith in God  
While you seek succor from his holy word:

So shall you honor that masonic name  
Which he, our brother, cherished more than fame."

Reference was also made by the speaker. to those shining lights in Freemasonry the patriots Warren and Lafayette.

LIST OF MEN RECRUITED BY LIEUT. GEO.  
D. ALLEN.

As stated on the Muster Out Roll, at Boston and  
Readville from September 16th to December 25th, 1861.

Chase, Thomas E. ....	Boston, Mass.
Doherty, Bernard ....	Readville, Mass.
Dickerman, Joseph C. ....	Readville, Mass.
Lull, Frederick A. ....	Boston, Mass.
Spear, Joseph E. ....	Boston, Mass.
Smith, Otis B. ....	Boston, Mass.
Simonds, Harrison O. ....	Boston, Mass.
Peacock, William H. ....	Boston, Mass.
Morrison, John W. ....	Boston, Mass.
Pattison, William B. ....	Boston, Mass.
Newhall, William B. ....	Boston, Mass.
Stiles, Charles F. ....	Boston, Mass.
Newton, Geo. L. ....	Boston, Mass.
Proctor, George O. ....	Boston, Mass.
Tucker, John C. ....	Boston, Mass.
Johnson, George H. ....	Boston, Mass.
Burkis, James M. ....	Boston, Mass.
Brown, Warren W. ....	Boston, Mass.
Blanchard, Amos ....	Boston, Mass.
Brown, Edward A. ....	Readville, Mass.
Baxter, William H. ....	Boston, Mass.
Barry, William ....	Boston, Mass.
Cox, Henry A. ....	Readville, Mass.
Estee, William E. ....	Boston, Mass.
Freeborn, Geo. H. ....	Boston, Mass.
Grows, David H. ....	Boston, Mass.
Gale, Mortier ....	Boston, Mass.
Knox, Joseph L. ....	Boston, Mass.
Leach, Geo. H. ....	Boston, Mass.

Lapham, Frederick A., Jr. ....	Boston, Mass.
Mack, John F. ....	Boston, Mass.
Murray, John ....	Boston, Mass.
Phippen, Edward A., Jr. ....	Boston, Mass.
Poole, Geo. W. ....	Boston, Mass.
Pattison, Louis E. ....	Boston, Mass.
Rice, Edward E. ....	Boston, Mass.
Stantial, Thomas B. ....	Boston, Mass.
Story, Benjamin F. ....	Boston, Mass.
Shaw, Horatio E. ....	Boston, Mass.
Waugh, William A. ....	Boston, Mass.
Whitcher, Joseph ....	Boston, Mass.
Gustine, Edward F. ....	Boston, Mass.
Parsons, Henry C. ....	Boston, Mass.
Platts, Edward M. ....	Boston, Mass.
Warren, William G. ....	Boston, Mass.
Lapham, William H. H. ....	Readville, Mass.
Morrison, Joseph J. ....	Boston, Mass.
Prescott, Francis A. ....	Readville, Mass.
Cook, John G., Jr. ....	Boston, Mass.
Skinner, Charles E. ....	Boston, Mass.
Simonds, Warren ....	Readville, Mass.

---

New Bedford *Mercury* October 29, 1861 :—

"The company will today be provided with two 12 pound howitzers, two 6 pound smooth bore, and two rifled cannon.

There are twenty tents, including officers' quarters, those of the privates accommodating twelve men each. Since the Battery has been encamped, a park has been neatly laid out, and a Liberty pole erected in the centre. The company rations are satisfactory, and the Quartermaster is spoken of in the highest terms."

#### McCLELLAN COMMANDER-IN-CHIEF.

On the 31st of October, 1861, General Winfield Scott retired, and General George B. McClellan was made Commander-in-Chief of all the Armies of the United States.

## THANKSGIVING PROCLAMATION.

COMMONWEALTH OF MASSACHUSETTS.

HEAD QUARTERS, BOSTON,

General Order No. 28.

NOV. 5, 1861.

The soldiers who illustrate the fame of Massachusetts, and defend her cause with that of our Union and our National Flag, in military service remote from the homes where they have been wont to celebrate with their families the venerable and joyful New England Festival of Thanksgiving to God for the fruits of the season, and the bounty of His Providence, ought to be remembered and associated so far as may be in the celebration now at hand.

It is therefore ordered by the Commander-in-Chief that the Adjutant General cause copies of the Governor's recent Proclamation for a day of Public Thanksgiving and Praise to be sent to the colonels and chaplains of all the Massachusetts Regiments of Volunteers with the assurance of the grateful and sympathetic remembrance of them by the Government and people of Massachusetts, of their thankfulness for the many satisfactions and blessings with which even in war we are constantly attended, and of our fervent prayers for the welfare of our gallant and patriotic soldiers, and our undoubting faith in their fidelity and honor; and finally, with the expression of the hope that military duties may not be inconsistent with their observation in some fitting manner of the day annually set apart for the renewal and enlivening of the domestic affections, and for remembering the Giver of all mercies by the united consent of the people of our beloved Commonwealth.

Commanders of Regiments and Batteries of the Massachusetts Volunteers, will promulgate this Order in their respective commands.

By order of His Excellency

JOHN A. ANDREW,

Governor and Commander-in-Chief.

WILLIAM SCHOULER,

Adjutant General.

It was said that since the memory of the oldest inhabitant the country had not teemed with such abundant crops as the season of 1861.

## NOTE OF SERGEANT PEACOCK.

"CAMP SCHOULER.

LYNNFIELD NOV. 9, '61.

We move our camp to Camp Brigham, Readville, next

Wednesday, where there are stables for horses. Here we have none. We expect to remain there 6 weeks, certain. There has been any quantity of rain and wet weather, but we have very comfortable tents, so we keep dry and warm. There are three of us in a tent—the Sergt. Major, the Q. M. Sergeant, and myself, so we have plenty of room.”

It was said that this removal was in order to concentrate the forces remaining in the state, to the end that they might be more economically supported.

Nov. 11th the 23d Regt. Colonel Kurtz, left for the seat of war and Corporal Chase noted in his Diary: “5th Detachment of 5th Battery fired a salute of 6 guns on their departure.”

#### FIRST MARCHING ORDERS.

COMMONWEALTH OF MASSACHUSETTS.

HEAD QUARTERS, BOSTON.

Special Order No. 568.

Nov. 13, 1861.

Captain Max Eppendorff commanding Fifth Battery of the Massachusetts Volunteers now in camp at Lynnfield, will proceed with his command tomorrow to Readville and encamp there, under direction of the Quartermaster General.

By command of His Excellency

JOHN A. ANDREW,  
Governor and Commander-in-Chief.

WILLIAM BROWN,  
Ass't. Adj. General.

The Battery marched from Lynnfield to Readville, a village then forming a part of Dedham, now of Hyde Park, about 8 miles from Boston, on the Providence railroad. Here there were two camps, “Massasoit” and “Brigham.” The Battery moved Nov. 14th and camped at Camp Massasoit. Nov. 18th, 1861, the following order was issued:—

Special Order No. 579.

Captain Eppendorff, commanding Fifth Battery of the Massachusetts Volunteers, will report to and receive orders from Major Stevenson commanding Twenty-Fourth Regt. in camp at Readville.

By order of the Commander-in-Chief

WM. SCHOULER  
Adj. Gen.

Nov. 22d, Lieut. Robert A. Dillingham was presented with a full set of artillery equipments by Mayor Taber of New Bedford, on behalf of the Military committee.

"Nov. 25th. (Chase's Diary) Three inches of snow on the ground this morning. Very stormy day. No drill.

Nov. 30. Fired a salute of three guns on arrival of Co. I, 24th Regt. from Fort Warren."

### ORGANIZATION OF DETACHMENTS.

From Lieut. Phillips' Diary, Nov. 27, 1861.

- 42 Cannoneers, 7 in each Detachment.
- 36 Drivers, 6 in each Det.
- 6 Artificers, 1 in the 1st, 3d, 5th, & 6th Det. 2 in the 2d.
- 6 Cooks, 1 in each Det.
- 8 Wagoners, 1 in the 1st, 2d, 3d and 6th Det. 2 in the 4th and 5th.
- 2 Buglers, 1 in the 3d Det., 1 in the 6th.
- 2 Clerks, 1 in the 2d, 1 in the 4th Det.
- 22 Spare Men, 4 in the 1st, 2d, 3d & 4th Det., 3 in the 5th & 6th. Total 124.

### LETTER FROM ALDERMAN LADD.

NEW BEDFORD, MASS.

Dec. 13, 1861.

*Friend Hyde.*

Mr. Cowen [Conductor on the New Bedford and Boston R. R.] informs me that you leave on Monday next and that you would like to see me tomorrow. It would afford me much pleasure to come down were it possible, but we have a cargo of lumber at our wharf, which is to be discharged and loaded on to the cars, and I must remain to attend to it. I have persuaded Alderman Lewis to represent me on the occasion. I send by Mr. Lewis [Alderman Lewis] two hundred dollars [This was in gold] donated by your friends in this city, towards purchasing a horse and equipments which you will please accept with their kind regards for your future health, happiness, and success. We all take a deep interest in the Fifth (Mass.) Battery and shall watch its course with interest and with confidence that all, both officers and men, will be faithful to duty, and reflect credit and honor on themselves and on the city under whose auspices it was raised.



In relation to fares, you will please collect what you can of the men and hand it to Mr. Lewis, and the balance we will take care of.

In conclusion, allow me to utter an earnest prayer that yourself and all connected with you, may return, when this wicked rebellion shall have been utterly crushed out, in health and vigor, to your friends and families.

With respect,

Yours truly,

WARREN LADD.

### THE HORSE.

The horse which was bought in Washington, and was called "Black Charley," was coal black, with the exception of a white star in his forehead.

G. O. No. 108

HEAD QUARTERS OF THE ARMY.

ADJUTANT GENERAL'S OFFICE,

WASHINGTON D. C.

[Transfers]

Dec. 16, 1861.

General Orders

No. 108.

[Extract] III. The numerous applications for transfer of soldiers from one regiment or company to another, would, if complied with, cause confusion in the records, and be injurious to the future interests of the soldiers themselves. Such transfers will not henceforth be made.

By command of Major General McClellan.

L. THOMAS Adj't Gen'l.

---

That this order was wise in its intention, and would have been for the best interests of the soldiers if it had been carried out, has been amply proven by the confusion of many of the records in respect to the membership of different organizations.

---

The two old guns with which the Battery had been drilling were sent to Boston Dec. 17th. On the 20th the non-commissioned officers of the Fifth Battery went to Point Shirley in Boston Harbor to practice, and on the same day the Battery received orders to march.





From a letter of Lieut. Phillips to a little nephew written at the camp at Readville, Dec. 17, 1861 :—

“The whole cavalry regiment rode out two or three miles today. There were about 700 men on horseback. Col. Williams and Lieut. Col. Sargent rode in front. Col. Williams rode a dark horse and Lt. Col. Sargent rode his own horse. . . . One company in the regiment have all black horses and look very well.

The paymaster came down the other day and paid off all the men. He had his money in tin plates on the table in front of him. One plate was full of coppers, one of five cent pieces, one of halves and quarters, one of gold dollars and another of three dollar gold pieces. Besides he had a little pile of treasury notes.”

## ORDERED TO WASHINGTON.

HEAD QUARTERS,  
BOSTON Dec. 20, 1861.

Special Order No. 638.

Captain Max Eppendorff commanding the Fifth Battery of the Massachusetts Volunteers, is hereby ordered to proceed with his command on Tuesday next, to Washington D. C. and report for duty to Major Gen. McClellan U. S. A. Captain Eppendorff will apply to the U. S. Quarter Master in Boston, Captain McKim, (W. W. McKim Ass't Quartermaster U. S. A.) for transportation.

By command of His Excellency

JOHN A. ANDREW,  
Governor and Commander-in-Chief.  
WM. SCHOULER,  
Adj't. Gen'l.

“Tuesday next” was Dec. 25, 1861.

In the Adjutant General's Report for 1861, may be found the following relative to the equipment of the Battery :—

“This battery is the only one which has left the State without a full and complete equipment. Everything was furnished except the horses, which Quartermaster General Meigs U. S. A. preferred to supply at Washington. The company is well officered, and is composed of the very best material.

Captain Max Eppendorff, New Bedford, Sen. 1st Lieut. George D. Allen, Malden, Jun. 1st Lieut. John B. Hyde, New Bedford, Sen. 2d Lieut. Robert A. Dillingham, New Bedford, Jun. 2d Lieut. Charles A. Phillips, Salem."

## REPORT OF THE MASTER OF ORDNANCE.

Colonel Charles Amory, Master of Ordnance, reported :

"Dec. 26, 1861, there had been issued to the Fifth Battery 4 Bronze Field Guns, 6 pounders, rifled, 2 Bronze Field Howitzers, 12 pounders, 6 Gun carriages, complete with limbers, 6 caissons, complete, with limbers, 1 forge wagon complete, with tools and stores per U. S. Regulations, 1 Battery wagon, complete, with tools and stores per U. S. Regulations.

14 sets 6 Horse Artillery Harness, complete, 18 tarpaulins, large, 17 sets Horse equipments, complete, 17 non-commissioned officers sabres, 17 non-commissioned officers Sabre Belts and Plates, 44 artillery sabres, 44 artillery Sabre Belts and Plates, 90 artillery Short Swords, 92 Waist Belts and Plates with Shoulder Straps and Frogs, 1 Guidon, silk, with staff and socket, 1 national flag, silk, with staff and socket, 4 camp colors with staves, 4 Sponges and Rammers for 6 pounder Guns, 4 Bristle Sponges and Rammers for 6 pounder Guns, 4 Sponges and Rammers for 12 pounder Howitzers, 12 Sponge Covers, 4 Worms and Staves for 6 pounder Guns, 2 Worms and Staves for 12 pounder Howitzers, 18 Hand Spikes, 6 Prolongs, 6 Sponge Buckets, 12 Tar Buckets, 6 Gunners' Pincers, 18 Tow Hooks, 24 Thumb stalls, 12 Priming Wires, 12 Lanyards and Hooks, 6 Felling Axes with handles, 6 Shovels, long handled, 6 Pick Axes with handles, 3 Crow Bars, 2 Hammers, 2 Hatchets, 6 Tompions and straps, 6 Vent Covers, 12 Tube Pouches and Belts, 12 Gunners' Haversacks, 12 Screw Drivers, 6 Vent Punches, 6 Linstocks, 50 Slow Match—yards—, 3 Pole Yokes, spare, 4 Cannon Sights,—pairs,—56 Rubber Watering Buckets, 75 Feed Bags, 2 Bugles and Trumpets, 2 Sergeants Sashes, 1 Picket Rope,—coil—, 1 Picket Beetle, 2 Copper Scoops, 2 Copper Dippers, 2 Copper Tunnels, 20 Revolving Pistols with appurtenances, 2000 ball cartridges for pistols, 3000 percussion caps for pistols, 300 cartridges 1½ pounds powder each, 2000 Cartridge Bags, 2400 Friction Cannon Primers, 43 kegs Gun Powder, 300 Shot, 6 pounder Schenkle, 400 Shell 6 pounder Schenkle, 120 shell 12 pounder for Howitzers, 184 shell, 12 pounder Canister, for Howitzers, 4 Field Glasses, 25 pounds Twine, 105 pounds Tow in bags, 1 Emery Cloth,—ream—, 24 Chamois Skins, 12 Sheep Skins, 32 Linchpin Rings, 48 pairs Chest Straps."

## CHAPTER V.

### IN CAMP AT WASHINGTON, D. C., AND HALL'S HILL, VIRGINIA.

#### HOW THEY FARED. OFFICERS AND MEN.

"After we shall have made our last march, shall have answered our last roll call, then will some historian take in hand the story of the war, and fashion it into a goodly tale to tell our offspring what we did from '61 to '65 . . . and what will his story be?"

CLARENCE F. COBB.

Orator of the Society of the Army of the Potomac,  
Niagara Falls, N. Y., 1898.

LETTER OF LIEUT. C. A. PHILLIPS.

"CAMP DUNCAN  
WASHINGTON, Dec. 29, '61.

Wednesday forenoon we struck our tents at Readville, and packed up. After standing round in the cold for two or three hours, we took the cars at 12½ and started for New York. At Groton we went on board the Commonwealth, the men occupying the lower cabin, while we occupied state rooms. Arriving at New York about six in the morning, we had some more waiting to do while our baggage was loading. During the course of the forenoon, we sent our baggage to Jersey City; Lieut. Hyde taking charge of the baggage train.

At 9 or ten o'clock I marched the men into the ferry boat and across, and waited in the depot for the train. About 10 we started for Philadelphia, leaving a squad of men to take care of our baggage, which was to follow in the next train. We got to Philadelphia about two, and had a little more waiting to do. Our baggage got mixed with that of



the 10th N. J. Regt., got delayed, and did not get along till midnight. By this time the N. J. Regt. had arrived, so that we had some fellow travellers. During all this time our men were kept waiting in the depot, with nothing to do, and a guard placed at every door. The only redeeming feature in Philadelphia was the dinner which we got at the 'Union Volunteer Refreshment Saloon,' foot of Washington street. The whole Battery marched in and sat down,—that is, the officers sat down and the men stood up,—to a very good dinner of cold corned beef, coffee, bread and butter, pickles, and cheese.

About midnight we started for Baltimore and arrived there early the next morning: unloaded, and marched across the city to the neighborhood of the Camden St. depot, where we found an imitation of the Philadelphia arrangement, and rather a poor one at that. The breakfast was cold ham with considerable saltpetre, or something of the sort, bread, and coffee without any milk, and we had to wait about an hour to get this.

At three o'clock in the afternoon we started in a special train with the Jerseymen for Washington, and had a tedious time in finishing our journey. We stopped at every turnout to avoid a regular train, and succeeded in reaching Washington at 9 o'clock in the evening, without any accident, except that one member of the Jersey Regt., who had got off the train during one of our stoppages, was left by the train, and in running to catch up with it, refused to stop at the challenge of the sentinel, and was shot through the head. The sentinels are posted all along the road from Baltimore to Washington.

Arrived there we marched into the upper story of the 'Soldiers Rest,'—a large, wooden building,—where we deposited our knapsacks. We then marched into the lower story, and had some supper of regular army rations, bread, meat, and coffee.

The men slept here all night, spreading their blankets on the floor, while the officers went up to the National. The next forenoon we unloaded our baggage and marched up here to camp."

## JOURNAL OF PRIVATE GROWS.

DEC. 25 TO DEC. 28, 1861.

"Wednesday morning Dec. 25, 1861. Camp Massasoit. Pleasant and very cold. Turned out at 5 o'clock, and begun to pack our things, and at 8 o'clock 'struck tents' and had them ready for packing in the cars. At 11 went and drew two days' rations, then built a large fire to keep warm by. At 12 got dinner. At half past 1 marched to the depot, took the cars for Groton, stopped at Providence at 4 o'clock for wood and water, then started for Groton, arrived there at 8 o'clock, and went on board the Steamer 'Commonwealth,' and started 10 o'clock for New York. I had the ill fortune to be put on guard over the bar room. . . . Was relieved at 2 o'clock next morning. Turned in my berth No. 39, turned out at 5 o'clock in New York.

Thursday morning Dec. 26, was detailed for guard over the powder on the wharf. Stood till half past 8, then guarded the team with the powder till it was aboard the ferry boat for Jersey City. Left Jersey City for Philadelphia on the Camden and Amboy R. R., arrived at Camden, crossed the river in the cars on a ferry boat. The boat had three tracks with three cars and an engine. Arrived in Philadelphia at half past 2, and marched to the 'Volunteer Refreshment Saloon' and took dinner, and it was a big thing,—home made bread, coffee, meats, cheese, butter &c. We were honored by the presence of the Ladies of the Society. It is a great institution.

At half past 3 we marched to the Baltimore and Ohio R. R. and had to stay there till 11 that night, under strict

guard. I had the good fortune to get a 'pass,' so I took a look around the city. At 11 o'clock in the evening took the cars for Baltimore. It is of no use to try to sleep in the cars; some are singing, some talking, etc.

Friday morning Dec. 27, we marched through the street where the Massachusetts soldiers were fired upon. There are quite a number of 'secesh' here, but they have to keep quiet, because the city is under martial law. We marched to a place called the 'Soldiers Relief' where a scant lunch of bread and coffee was given to us. At 3 o'clock in the afternoon we were on our way to Washington, where we arrived about 5 minutes past 11. That night at 12 o'clock midnight got some supper, then went across from the depot to a large, wooden building called the 'Soldiers Retreat,' to spend the night.

At one o'clock Saturday morning we spread our blankets on the floor, and taking our knapsacks for pillows we turned in, and slept on the soft side of a pine board. I think I slept about 9 or 10 knots an hour. After breakfast got permission to see the Capitol building. It is a splendid edifice. Washington is not such a handsome city as I expected. At  $\frac{1}{2}$  past 1 'took knapsacks,' and took up line of march for our camp ground, which is at present on Pennsylvania avenue, about 8 or ten minutes walk from the Capitol. Arrived on our ground and without any dinner, commenced unloading teams, and at  $\frac{1}{2}$  past 3, to pitch tents. Had them all up and the park laid out at 7 o'clock, then had supper of hard bread and water.

Since leaving camp at Readville, we have passed through 8 different states: Mass., R. I., Conn., New York, New Jersey, Penn., Maryland, Delaware,—into the District of Columbia. There are a great many pickets thrown out at Newark, N. J. There are guards from there to Washington on the railroad, guarding bridges" (see p. 33 ).

TO REPORT TO MUSTERING OFFICER.

OFFICE OF CHIEF OF ARTILLERY.

ARMY OF THE POTOMAC

WASHINGTON D. C.

Dec. 28, 1861.

CAPTAIN MAX EPPENDORFF.

Company E, Mass. Art'y.

*Captain*

Major Chas. S. Wainwright 1st Regt. N. Y. Artillery, will muster your company on the 31st inst.

You will see that the muster roll of your company is properly made out, and in season, and will have your company duly paraded at the hour designated by the mustering officer.

I am, Capt. very respectfully

Yr. Obt. Servt.

WILLIAM F. BARRY,

Brig. Gen'l Chief of Artillery.

FROM LIEUT. PHILLIPS'

LETTER OF DEC. 29, 1861.

"By the way, I forgot to mention that yesterday, while we were pitching our tents we were inspected by General Barry, under whose command we are. The men were drawn up in line and inspected. He seemed to think they were very well, only they wanted their hair cut, and he told each of us that our posts were as responsible as that of a major of infantry, whereat we were much pleased, of course."

THE FIRST SUNDAY.

Journal of D. H. Grows: "Dec. 29, 1861. . . . After service I took a walk around camp. There are 4 batteries encamped here besides ourselves. They are mostly Germans, and are attached to batteries of very heavy calibre, mostly 24s and 32ds.

This afternoon got a 'pass' to go to the city. I am disappointed a great deal about Washington. The soil is rather clayey and of a reddish color, a great many of the streets are not paved, and the buildings are miserable looking, some of them would be a disgrace to Boston.

Returned to camp at 4 o'clock. At  $\frac{1}{2}$  past 5 had supper of raw bacon and hard bread.

Monday Dec. 30th, dug a cellar in the tent, put a box down to keep my tobacco and loose stuff, such as shoes &c. in, then went to work on the tent. Went to dinner. Hard bread and water.

Tuesday Dec. 31: At 8 o'clock formed in line and marched  $1\frac{1}{2}$  miles to a large building, and got a good breakfast of hot coffee, bread, and cold tongue. The reason of this was, the delay in receiving our provisions. Took up line of march to camp at 9, arrived there about 11. Fell into line for inspection of clothing and arms, were dismissed, went to dinner. In the afternoon our Guns came on the field. Went to work fixing carriages, and helped clean Gun. At 4 o'clock p. m. heavy firing heard across the River Potomac. At  $\frac{1}{2}$  past 5 roll call. Received a large loaf of bread to each man for three meals, also some coffee. Made our own coffee.

7 o'clock: Have got through supper, and the men are having a smoke and talking about home.

8 o'clock p. m.: Roll call is just through and we are talking about the firing across the river, which is still kept up. Lights are seen on the opposite side of the river, also signal fires along the river. Great excitement in camp. There goes the 'tattoo' for lights out, so I must turn in."

Chase's Diary. "Dec. 31, 1861. Received our guns: four rifled brass 6 pounders, and two brass twelve pound howitzers." (See p. 94 Ordnance Report.)

Notes of Sergt. Henry D. Scott: "Arriving in Washington we camped in the mud on Capitol Hill. Here we

heard the first guns in our experience, from the Rebel batteries at Acquia Creek, below Mount Vernon, on the Potomac."

## NEW YEAR'S DAY, 1862.

Journal of D. H. Grows: "Four o'clock a. m. (Wednesday Jan'y 1, 1862) was awakened by heavy firing across the river. We had a good breakfast of bread, meat, salt pork, and coffee. Some of the men have just got some milk. The men, most of them, are speaking of New Years gifts at home.

Thursday, January 2: Some of our horses for the baggage wagons have arrived. They do not look as nice as our northern horses, but they are very tough.

Friday Jan'y 3d: Detailed on the 2d Relief for guard from 11 a. m. to 1 p. m. Some of the men are cleaning their arms, some are asleep, some are writing, and two are playing cards. We detail two men every morning out of our tent to keep the tent supplied with wood and water for the day, next morning two other men take their places and so on. By doing this we have plenty of water to drink and to wash with, and wood to keep us warm.

7 o'clock p. m.: Have just come off from guard. It is hailing quite fast, and is very cold, but I am warm and comfortable, as I am provided with good and warm clothing. I had some hot coffee while on guard.

Saturday Jan'y 4th: The ground is just covered with snow, and it has frozen and it is quite slippery.

9 a. m.: It is snowing quite hard.

3 p. m.: About 30 more horses have just come in. We have now 46 horses in all.

Sunday Jan'y 5th: Got a 'pass' from  $\frac{1}{2}$  past 10 till 4 in the afternoon, to go to the city, the Sergeant and myself. First we went to the Treasury Building, a very large building of granite on Pennsylvania avenue. The celebrated



Washington monument is close to the building. It is about 175 or 200 feet high at the present time. Long Bridge is close to the monument. This part of the city is quite handsome. At every other corner on this avenue you will see mounted patrols, and on the sidewalks you will be stopped very often by the street patrol. If you have a 'pass' it is all right. If not you will be arrested and put to work white-washing or cutting wood, and you will be kept in prison until relieved by your Captain. Lieutenants have to have a 'pass' when they go out, just the same as privates. In the rear of the Treasury Building and bearing to the left, is the White House, a very handsome building. I had the pleasure of seeing 'Old Abe' (The President) a pleasant looking man. In front of the White House about 80 rods, is the celebrated equestrian statue of General Jackson, in bronze, as large as life. It is a splendid thing. I stopped about half an hour, looking at it. The parks here are nothing compared to our old Boston Common. At the upper end of Pennsylvania avenue there is another large statue, of Washington, on horseback. It is not so fine as that of Jackson. About every other person you meet in the streets are soldiers, you will not see many citizens. There are about 200,000 troops encamped around Washington, and it would seem to be impossible for the rebels to attempt to take the city. I went to Arlington Heights where Follett's (Afterwards Martin's Third Mass.) Battery is encamped. From there I visited the camp of the 18th Mass., the latter killed about 60 rebels 2 days ago. The rebels are a lean looking set. About 800 are in prison here. The 18th and other regiments and batteries expect to be home for good in a very short time. I hope so. The war cannot last much longer as the rebels are giving  $1\frac{1}{4}$  per cent on gold, that is, they give \$1.25 of scrip for \$1.00 in gold."

## LETTER OF SERG'T. PELEG W. BLAKE.

(The name of the Camp had been changed from "Duncan" to "Sumner.")

"WASHINGTON D. C.

CAMP SUMNER.

5TH BATT. MASS. ART'Y.

CAPT. MAX EPPENDORFF.

January 5, 1862.

We are encamped about a quarter of a mile from the Capitol east. There are 20 batteries around us, three or four batteries from Fort Monroe, regulars, that I was acquainted with when I was out there last spring. The city of Washington is nothing very alarming, the Capitol looks very well, but the White House where the President lives—I have seen a good many better looking houses than that is! I have seen the noted 'Uncle Abe,' and General Geo. B. McClellan. Last Monday I went down to the Provost Marshal's Office and got a 'pass' to go across the Potomac. I went through Georgetown, and then arrived at the river. I got stopped every few minutes by the patrols who I had to show my 'pass.' We went across the river on flat boats, had to pull myself across by lines extended across the river. I had to travel three miles to the river. After I got there I went about five miles further and arrived at Hall's Hill, where the 18th (Mass.) Reg't. was. The country was all lined with troops, all the way along. I stayed an hour and then I started back. I had to go about 17 miles. I think I sha'n't go again till we move over there. We have got a fine battery, and have drawn 50 horses, and are receiving horses every day."

FROM A LETTER OF THOMAS E. CHASE OF THE  
7TH IN RELATION TO SUNDAY JAN'Y 5TH

1862:—

“Last Sunday six of us crossed the Potomac and visited the Mass. 9th, 18th, and 22d, and Follett's Battery. I saw several of my old Boston friends, with others James Vaughan Jr. with the 22d. . . They are shut in by guards, pickets, and patrols, on every side, and are just as much prisoners as though within the walls of a penitentiary. We of the 5th are not very aristocratic, in our way of living, but I think we have more privileges than the infantry have.

The troops at Hall's Hill make their quarters in this way, viz., they drive slabs of wood down endwise around a circle, which makes a fence about three feet high, then the crevices are plastered up with mud, so that it is quite tight. On top of this circular fence the tent is set just as it would set on the ground. By this arrangement much more room is gained, and instead of having a part of the tent open all the time, they have a small wooden door. All the furniture of the tent is painted as follows:—The *ground work* is a smoke color, then on this three different shades viz. *dirty, more dirty, most dirty*. I do not say this of one company or reg't. alone for camp life is about the same with all of us, it cannot be otherwise. . . I wish I could write some news to you, but all I can write until we have a fight,—an awkward way of saying *never*,—are trifling things that the press will not notice. You get more war news than we do, for a Boston paper is better for news than any of the one-horse concerns here. Give my thanks to Mrs. T. and Fred for writing to me, and for the *mending materials*, which I find indispensable, especially the yarn.”

He closes his letter with an expression which shows how little these very young men were inclined to engage, of

their own accord, in warlike pursuits:—"If this government should become a monarchy and your humble servant crowned King of it, I should not be more surprised than to have known a year and a half ago, that I was to be in the Army this year of our Lord, 1862."

Journal of D. H. Grows: "Monday, January 6th. There has been quite a snow storm during the night. When I went out to breakfast there was about two inches of snow on the ground. The air is quite warm. Our stove broke down in the night.

I am detailed for Guard on the 2d relief. I went on at 11 o'clock and came off at 1 o'clock, then 5 to 7, then 11 to 1 at night, 5 to 7 in the morning. The water we drink here makes a person sick.

Tuesday, January 7th. Fourteen more horses have come in this morning. I went this afternoon with the Captain's clerk to the Senate Chamber in the Capitol. Sixteen more horses have come. We have now about 70 horses. This forenoon I, with five others, went out on a foraging party. We went about 4 miles from camp. It was a splendid sight to see so many camps. There are about 30 batteries around here.

Thursday, Jan'y 9. Was awakened this morning about 5 o'clock by hearing it rain very hard, got up and found about an inch of water all over the bottom of the tent. It had run in by the door. We dug two large holes in the ground, and took out five pails full of water. Our beds were wet. I got my blankets dried and got some straw, and spread down in the tent, and it has dried up the mud considerably. The mud is from about 3 to 5 inches deep, and the travelling is very hard as the soil is clayey. The bugle will soon sound 'Lights out.' "

Private Grows went to Washington to send some money by Adams' Express, and being detained four minutes over the time, four o'clock, allowed by his "pass," he was arrested within a short distance of the Battery guard line

by the provost guard, a beardless youth, and sent to the Louisiana Avenue jail.

"I was taken," he writes, "into a large room, where there were about seventy men, some for desertion, drunkenness &c. I was immediately saluted with the cry of 'fresh fish, meaning I was a new comer. I was detained till morning, when I was called into the office and given a 'pass' for twenty-four hours, also a line to my Captain not to have me punished, for had he been on the street he would not have arrested me, when I was so near my camp, and such a short time over my 'pass' viz. four minutes. I was a green and fresh soldier, and it taught me a lesson, not to look at the man, but to notice the uniform he wore, and to respect that, if I did not the man."

Resuming the Journal. "Jan'y 10, 1862. Word has just been received in camp, of the sailing of the 'Burnside Secret Expedition.' If it is successful,—and we all hope it will be,—this war will be settled in a very short time. (See p. 116).

The Pensacola sailed yesterday to run the blockade (of rebel batteries) on the Potomac. There is considerable excitement here at present in regard to her success.

The Roll Call was called in the tents tonight, it was so muddy outside, and this pleased the men very much."

#### THE BLOCKADE OF THE POTOMAC.

Preparations for the blockade of the Lower Potomac were commenced previous to the Battle of Bull Run, July 21, 1861.

From Alexandria the Potomac runs almost directly south to the mouth of Acquia Creek, a distance of 30 miles; then it runs directly east for 15 miles where it rounds Matthias Point, a very prominent projection northward into the stream, and almost entirely separated from the main land by Gamble's Creek.

In a letter addressed to the Secretary of the Navy,

McClellan expressed his apprehension that the Potomac might be rendered impassible to Federal vessels, and recommended the strongest possible naval force to be stationed in that stream, but it was found that new batteries interfering with the navigation of the stream could be built as rapidly as the old ones were destroyed, and that nothing could effectually protect the navigation of the Potomac except the military occupation of its entire right bank by our army, and this did not form a part of the plan of operations.

---

Chase's Diary. "Jan'y 11, 1862. Fifth Detachment hitched up today for drill for the first time."

Grows' Journal Jan'y 12. "Was called at 1 o'clock this morning. Stationed over the guns. Relieved at 3 o'clock this morning."

#### FROM SEVERAL LETTERS OF LIEUT. PHILLIPS.

DATE "CAMP SUMNER

Jan'y 12, 1862.

We have now 86 horses,—110 being our full number,—and shall get the rest this week. I have taken the horses out to exercise two or three times, and so far we have got along without accident, though a man occasionally gets thrown off and we have a loose horse to chase. We take our meals now in our tents, using a box cover for table. We bought a set of crockery &c. the other day, and now live in great style. We have roast beef, eggs, cranberry sauce, bread, crackers, coffee, with milk and sugar, cake &c. Our principal trouble is that we have no floors to our tents, and only a few loose boards to stand on, but then we have quite a field of grass growing inside, which is quite ornamental.



At present we have no stables; and the horses stand at the picket rope out of doors. . . We are living now in camp style. We have a boy to look after our things, and we i. e. the four lieutenants, take our meals in our tent. The Captain takes his meals with the officers of the Dutch batteries. . . Our carpenter is now busy making us a mess chest. . . encamped . . south of East Capitol street and east of North Carolina Avenue."

Grows' Journal. "Jan'y 13, 1862. It is blowing quite hard, and the mud is almost dried up. At 9 o'clock this forenoon took all our bedding, carried it out of the tent and left it out till noon, so the clothes would have a good airing. We always make it a practice every Monday when it is pleasant to air our bedding and examine our clothes.

Tuesday Jan'y 14. Two inches of snow on the ground. 9 o'clock in the evening: Have just come off guard, went on at 7. It is now hailing, a perfect gale. It is very hard for the horses to be picketed out in such weather, but it cannot be helped until we get the other side of the river. One of the men got a quart of oysters, some milk and crackers, and I cooked them in a stew style, and we sat down and eat them. I must now turn in for I will be called at one o'clock tomorrow morning to go on guard till 3 o'clock. The gale has not abated any as yet, and it will be an awful night.

Wednesday Jan'y 15. Got up and dressed at 1 o'clock this morning, put my rubber blanket over my overcoat, and went out into the storm. It is not blowing quite as hard as it has been, but it is hailing very bad. I am provided with tip-top underclothing, so I do not care much for the storm. Was relieved at 3 o'clock, came into the tent, sat down on my bed and took a smoke, and while sitting in this way I fell asleep. It is cold in the tent for the men let the fire go out. I had a good breakfast this morning. I went to the cook house and asked one of the cooks to give me some beef. I cut off about two lbs. of steak, broiled it

and went into it with bread and coffee. Milk is so high that I seldom buy any, so I drink my coffee without it, but we have plenty of sugar. Milk is worth 10 cts. a qt., butter 28 to 30 cts. a lb., so we give up these luxuries. Three times a week we get potatoes, twice a week we get rice with molasses.

It is raining quite hard, five o'clock p. m. Our tent is afloat and we are digging holes to drain the water off. We will have a wet and muddy floor to lay on tonight.

9 o'clock p. m.: I am going to turn in. I went out and took some rails off a fence and have laid them down on the ground so I can lay my rubber blanket on them, and then my bedding, and by this means keep out of the mud. We have a good fire in the stove and hope to have the mud dried up by morning. It does not look much like home with good bed and bedding, but as it will not last long we make the best of it.

Thursday Jan'y 16, 1862. Got a 'pass' this forenoon to go down to the city, and visited the Patent Office. Among the curiosities we saw General Washington's tent, his suit of clothes he wore when he resigned his commission at Annapolis in 1783, and most of his camp utensils; also fifteen silk robes presented by the Emperor of Japan to President Buchanan.

The health of our camp is very good. I was never in better health. We have heard this afternoon of the arrival of Burnside's expedition at Fortress Monroe."

### FORTRESS MONROE.

The Fortress encloses 75 acres of ground. It had in 1861, two tiers of guns, casemates and barbettes, and it was thought there were over three hundred guns within its walls.

It is situated a mile and a half from the main land, and completely commands Hampton Roads and the

entrance to the James River. It is of great importance in a military point of view. The peninsula on which it stands is about 100 yards in width and is commanded by the guns of the Fortress. It is surrounded by an outside wall of granite. Between this wall and the walls of the fort is a moat five feet deep, and 125 feet in width.

The garrison of 300 men was increased to 1100 by the reinforcements conveyed from Massachusetts by the steamers "S. R. Spaulding" and "State of Maine."

Grows' Journal. "January 17, 1862. I am detailed on the quarter guard that is over the Powder Magazine. The mud is almost ankle deep. The horses for our Detachment were matched off this forenoon and the drivers took them out this afternoon for exercise. I turned in at 9 o'clock and was awakened at 10 o'clock by the heavy firing of cannon, which lasted till 12 o'clock. It sounded in the direction of the Potomac and we have supposed it was an engagement with one of the rebel batteries. We shall hear in the course of a few days what it was for.

Word was received here by one of our men, Mr. Estee of Malden Mass., by his brother who is in the Treasurer's Office in this city, that this Battery would be at home in a few months, as the trouble would be over in a short time.

The mud is awful, owing to the clay which is from two to four inches below the surface of the ground, and it stops the water from soaking down."

#### SIGNALS.

OFFICE OF CHIEF OF ARTILLERY,  
ARMY OF THE POTOMAC.  
WASHINGTON D. C.  
January 17, 1862.

COMMANDING OFFICER  
BATTERY E. MASS. ART'Y.

Sir.

I am instructed by Brig. Gen'l Barry, to direct you to send to the office of the Signal Dept. of the U. S. Army, No. 158 F. st. between 19th and 20th streets, on Monday morning the 20th inst. at 11 o'clock, a

commissioned and a non-commissioned officer, for the purpose of receiving instruction in day and night signals.

I am, sir,

Very respectfully yr obt. serv't

ALEX. T. WEBB.

Maj. and ass't to Chief of Artillery.

---

Grows' Journal. "Jan'y 20, 1862, Monday: On guard at 7 o'clock p. m. and came off at 9. While on guard I felt hungry, so I went to the quartermaster's tent and got some potatoes, and dug a hole in the ashes of our camp fire and baked them. They tasted good although we eat them without salt or gravy.

Word was brought into camp this morning that the army on the other side of the river had made an advance today, and it was good news to us, for the sooner we advance the sooner the struggle will be over.

Turned in at half past nine but did not go to sleep on account of Joe Knox and D. McVey, for they commenced snoring, so I got up and took a piece of twine and tied their great toes together, for they sleep in the same bed. I then laid down and waited for the result. In about half an hour Knox went to turn over, when the twine on his toe brought him up, and then—they wanted to know who did it, but no one knew anything about it, for I had blown out the candle, and it was as dark as the grave. Some way they managed to get at the candle and light it and untie the twine. About half past ten I went to sleep to be called at 1 o'clock tomorrow morning."

#### LETTER OF LIEUT. PHILLIPS.

"CAMP SUMNER Jan'y 21, 1862.

The arrival of the mail has already come to be an event in our life. Our Quartermaster Sergeant leaves here every morning, and gets back about two o'clock with the letters,

and the men are generally so impatient that he has to deliver the mail before he can get off his horse. . . We were troubled at first with the water running in, forming mud puddles, but we have found a remedy for that. We dug a hole in the lowest part of the tent, so that the water collects in this hole, and when it gets full we bail out and start again. . . The men are very much exposed, some of the tents are very wet, the water standing in puddles all over the floor. Then the government boots leak like a sponge so that they have wet feet constantly, but still they keep in good health and spirits. Our horses too are very much exposed, only protected by a hedge of cedars to keep off the wind. . . Lieut. Dillingham and I went out with them today and I had rather a gay time of it. I happened to get on a horse of rather high spirits, commonly known as the 'peacock,' a very good horse in his way, but having some unpleasant peculiarities. If I touched him with the spur he stood on his forelegs, if I checked him with the rein he stood on his hind legs, if I did both together he went off sideways in the most unaccountable style. I expected every five minutes to take a seat in the mud, but luckily I managed to keep on during the hour's ride and arrived home safely. I made a mental resolution, however, to try a different horse next time. Our stable duties have already got to be a little burdensome. There are three feed calls during the day, at each of which the officer of the day is expected to be at the stable to oversee the feeding; one feed call comes at six in the morning,—then the officer of the day is expected to visit the stable during the night after twelve o'clock—. . .

For a table we have a bureau with two drawers and an extension leaf. . . Milk is abundant and crowds of milkmen, women and boys visit us every day."

In this letter Phillips speaks of "a few cedar boughs in front of the door to wipe our feet on."

From Letter of January 22d.—"Visiting the stables is

rather the worst job, as the horses are kicking and splashing the mud round all the time. . . The men have had great sport lately with the cows round the camp. Quite a number of these animals are straying round eating what they can up, and getting rather a scanty living. To their hungry appetites the hay which we have piled up for the horses presents quite an attraction, and our men have great difficulty in keeping it for our own use. So they think they might as well make something out of the cows in return, and most of them manage to have fresh milk for breakfast. Besides this they get a little amusement. Not content with horseback riding, they have taken to riding cows, and the result has been a series of ludicrous catastrophes.

The process is as follows: as soon as a cow is discovered in the vicinity, she is surrounded and captured by half a dozen men, some holding on to her horns and some on to her tail. Then somebody mounts the animal and off she goes; the length of time that her rider sticks on varying very much. The final result, however, is the same in all cases. The rider is pitched into the mud more or less summarily, and the animal leaves camp rapidly. . . Every day we take the horses out and exercise for an hour or so. We generally go over to the parade ground which begins a short distance from our camp, and extends to the shores of the East Branch. The Parade contains 40 or 50 acres, and the troops, mostly artillery, are encamped all around it. Eight or nine batteries of the 1st N. Y. Artillery are encamped on our side. Close to us are 4 German batteries, then there are two or three regular batteries, and on the farther side near the cemetery there is a regiment of cavalry,—regulars I believe,—so you see we have quite a force in our vicinity, and besides what I have mentioned several regiments of infantry, 57th Penn. and 10th N. J. among them, are encamped on the hills to the Northward. From our camp we can see our large encampment on the other shore, and several forts."



Grows' Journal "Jan'y 22, 1862. In conversation, one of the best informed officers we have on the grounds told me today that we could not be south long, for Massachusetts was the first to answer the call to arms, and therefore her troops will be sent home first. Word was received here today that as soon as the ground hardens up some, we will cross the river and go into winter quarters.

Friday Jan'y 24. Went to the Arsenal with the limber and caisson to have them filled with shot and shell. Was gone about three hours. It is now about 11 o'clock a. m., and I must stop to take an examination of the powder boxes, so I can report to the Commissary.

After dinner I was called into the Captain's quarters, and was shown how to cut the fuze of shell and spherical case shot, it being my place after doing the carpenter's work of fitting the boxes containing the shell and shot, to prepare them ready for the No. 5 man of the gun Detachment.

It is performed in this manner: On the outside of the shell there is a small dial about 2 inches in diameter, and marked from right to left (Like the dial of a clock) 1, 2, 3, 4, 5, for a five second shell. For instance, if you wish the shell to explode in three seconds after it leaves the gun, you take a small chisel and cut the thin lead covering off at the figure marked '3' and then remove all the covering to the right, but never cut to the left. Under this thin covering of lead is a deposit of fine meal powder which is ignited by the firing of the gun.

In a spherical case shot it is filled with musket balls and sulphur, and is used to fire into infantry and is capable of doing great execution. In a shell it is filled with powder, and the bursting of it causes the fragments to do a great deal of hurt. In a limber, that is the part to which the gun is attached, there are 39 rounds. In the left part are spherical case, in the centre are canister, and on the right are shell. In the caisson, that is the team that follows each gun, are three boxes, each one containing the same number

of rounds as there are in the limber. This kind of shot and shell is used only on the howitzers, as they can fire only shell and canister. We have two howitzers and four rifled guns. The rifle guns can only use rifle and solid shot. A part of the solid shot is composed of twine and grease so to fill the grooves in the gun, and they are capable of going a great distance.

There has been a change in the War Department in regard to artificers. They now only allow two regular ones, the blacksmith and harnessmaker, their pay is \$15 a month, and they must work about all the time. The carpenter and wheelwright receive \$13 a month for their regular pay, and every day they work they receive extra pay, so I shall do better than the two who get \$15 a month. This month so far I have not had anything of importance to do, but will soon have enough, I think.

Saturday Jan'y 25. After dinner I was called by the Captain to take charge of a gun Detachment and go to the Navy Yard and get the caisson and limber loaded, but as the shot was not ready we came back. Will have to go down Monday again. While waiting at the yard I met Sergt. Wright of Porter's Battery. (First Mass.) After coming back to camp we had to report to the officer, and then we commenced digging around our tent, for the sun had softened the mud considerably, and we needed a channel to drain it off. After this we went to roll call where we were addressed by General Schouler of Boston, Mass. He informed us that we would not be here long."

#### NOTES OF CAPTAIN MAX EPPENDORFF.

PERSONAL REMEMBRANCE FROM OCT. 23, '61 TO JAN'Y  
25, '62.

"On October 24th, 1861, I took charge of the Battery then in camp at Lynnfield.

There were present in camp 2 First Lieutenants Geo. D.

Allen and John B. Hyde, and 1 Second Lieutenant Rob. Dillingham.

The 2d Second Lieutenant Charles A. Phillips joined the Battery beginning of November. Next to these commissioned officers there was a full complement of non-commissioned officers and men.

Let me first say a few words about them. I cannot say too much in their favor. Of course there were some 'black sheep' among them, but they were soon transferred to other Batteries or regiments lacking men. The great majority of the men hailed from New England, and they were above the common standard of volunteers in regard to intelligence as well as morals. You soon could notice that these men had left their homes, not for any selfish purpose, but for the high cause for which each one of them was willing to sacrifice his life. It was a pleasure as well as an honor, to command them! In the early part of November the camp was moved from Lynnfield to more suitable grounds at Readville, near Boston, which afforded plenty of room for foot-drill, the then only possible way to keep the men in useful activity, their outfit being limited to side arms.

Some time in early December '61, General Burnside prepared his expedition against certain forts along the coasts of Maryland and Virginia recently erected by the rebels, and which were opposing the advance of the federal army toward Richmond. To manage the guns on board the ships attacking these forts from the sea, the 5th Battery was ordered to report to General Burnside. The little article here annexed, cut from a New Bedford paper, gives a correct statement of my doings after receiving the Order. Had I not succeeded in persuading Gov. Andrew, as well as General Burnside to have the order countermanded, the 5th Battery, Mass. Light Artillery might have been wiped out of existence."

## NEWSPAPER EXTRACT.

"The 5th Artillery, Capt. Eppendorff, is still in camp at Readville. It is under orders to join Burnside's expedition, but has not been provided with horses, and has had no drill in artillery movements. Capt. Eppendorff is too much of an officer to desire to take green men aboard a ship with green horses, to make an artillery company of after reaching some far off Southern point, where immediate action may be necessary. He has laid the case before the Governor, and the Governor has written a statement of the facts to Gen. McClellan, that he may decide upon them. Capt. Eppendorff only asks a fair chance, and then he will do credit to the state and to the army."

Notes of Captain Eppendorff continued:—"My desire to obtain the horses for the 6 rifled field pieces from New England remount, could not be granted by Governor Andrew, as he had been informed by the War Department in Washington, that there were for such purposes plenty of horses,—nearly 4000,—in Government stables at Georgetown, which in course of time had been returned from the front.

On the 25th of December, 1861, the Battery broke camp at Readville, and went by rail to Washington, where it went into camp on Capitol Hill to the East of the Capitol. Soon after Gen. Barry, commander-in-chief of Artillery in Gen. McClellan's Army of the Peninsula, sent the order to make out my requisition for horses needed for the Battery, informing me at the same time that I should take my pick from those horses returned from the front, as stated above. With two of my men, whom I knew to be good judges of horseflesh,—one of them either James A. or Charles M. Tripp,—I went to Georgetown, where we found the horses in half-open sheds, tied to the manger by leather straps or copes, without litter, and so close packed together as to make it impossible for them to lie down.

At the end of a few days I had to report to Gen. Barry that I had not found a single horse among the 4000, which I could conscientiously consider fit for artillery service. Laughingly he ordered me to make out my requisition, to

select the horses from the Remount, which was daily brought in by the farmers.

It was rather slow work, since I had to make an arrangement with a cavalry officer who had come there for the same purpose, to have the first pick of the fresh horses every other day. However, after a time I had the satisfaction of having an excellent collection of horses on the picket lines, —so excellent, indeed, that General McClellan sent his adjutant twice to pick horses for his private use from my stock.

This duty of completing the number of horses needed, requiring my chief attention and time, I ordered Lt. Phillips to draw from the Arsenal of the Navy Yard in Washington the ammunition for the Battery, which consisted exclusively of the Schenkle shell with Percussion and Time fuzes, which had recently been adopted by the War Department.

Unfortunately, before the Battery was fully equipped, my health broke down, and I had to resign. When I bade the boys farewell, it seemed to me as if many of them showed that they did not like the parting.

Some time in Winter '62, I met my old Q. M. Tim Terry. If he reported to me correctly that Gen. McClellan had declared the 5th Mass. Battery to be one of the best equipped, best mounted, and best disciplined in his Army, I was fully rewarded for what I had been able to do in the short 3 months of my activity, to bring it to that high standard. But I could not have accomplished it without the assistance of my men!

I cannot close my communication without referring to a pleasant incident in connection with one of the privates of the Battery, Patrick W. . . . He belonged originally to the 'black sheep' mentioned above. For some reason or other he was spared the fate of the others to be transferred, although he had to be punished repeatedly and severely for not leaving liquor alone.—One evening whilst the Battery

was in camp at Washington, the Orderly Johnson with,—if I recollect well,—Sergeant Morgridge, entered my tent and said:—

‘Captain! What shall we do with W. He got drunk again, and is in the prison-tent handcuffed. He sits on an empty box, pounding with his heels against it, and laughing at every word I say to him.’

In spite of their remonstrances, I went to see W. alone, the sergeants remaining outside the tent. I found W. as Johnson had said, sitting on a high box, pounding furiously against it and grinning at me.

After looking at him a few seconds I called out in rather a harsh tone:—

‘W. . . . ! Attention!’

He jumped down and stood before me, straight, not moving a muscle. Then I began to speak to him. What I said I do not remember, but soon he was on his knees before me, seizing my hand, and with the hot tears running down his cheeks, calling out with a solemn oath that he would change his life and never touch a drop of liquor again.

To my question ‘Is that true, W.?’ he called out, ‘Captain, as true as we both are living!’

I made him rise, had the hand-cuffs taken off, and sent him to his tent.

When I saw Terry in winter he told me that W. . . . was one of the best men in the Battery. I was much pleased to see by the ‘Soldiers Memorial’ that W. was promoted March 1, 1863 to be corporal.

After the close of the War, during a visit at New Bedford, in walking up County street, I saw a heavy wagon with flour coming towards me, the driver sitting on top of it. When the wagon came up to me, the driver reined in his horses, jumped down, ran up to me, and seizing my hand, called out: ‘Captain! I have kept my word!’ It was Pat. W. and we both of us felt happy to have met again. If he is still living and should read this little incident, he



would be pleased to see that his old Captain is still kindly remembering him—and if he is dead, it might not be out of the way to have the facts made known in order to honor the memory of a brave man.

MAX EPPENDORFF.

September 17th 1900.”

#### ROANOKE ISLAND.

Roanoke Island N. C. was the key to all the rear defences of Norfolk, and commanded the seaboard from Oregon Inlet to Cape Henry. It commanded the only entrance to Albemarle Sound, which connects with Pamlico by means of Croatan and Roanoke Sounds, on either side of the island.

With relation to the expedition of General Ambrose E. Burnside to the coasts of Maryland and Virginia referred to by Captain Eppendorff, official records show that on the 6th of September, 1861, General McClellan had requested the Secretary of War “to organize two brigades of five regiments each, of New England men, for the general service, but particularly adapted to coast service.” The expedition commanded by General Burnside, whose destination had been changed from the Chesapeake Bay and the Potomac to the coast of North Carolina, was not ready until the new year, and on January 7, 1862, after meeting with the fleet at Fortress Monroe under Flag-officer Louis M. Goldsborough, it was ordered to Roanoke Island. There were seven gunboats connected with Burnside’s Division. The expedition sailed out of Hampton Roads January 11, 1862. (See p. 106.)

#### VISIT OF ADJUTANT GENERAL SCHOULER.

The chief of staff of His Excellency the Commander-in-Chief of the militia of the State of Massachusetts, was Adjutant General William Schouler, and January 25th, 1862,

he made an official visit to Camp Sumner on Capitol Hill. The object of this visit was to ascertain the condition of the troops, and to verify Descriptive Rolls. In a letter to the Governor, he says:—

“Upon my arrival at Washington I ascertained that Captain Eppendorff of the Fifth Battery had resigned. I visited the camp and found the men in good health and anxious to have their guns.

By an order the Battery had been attached to General (William B.) Franklin's Division. For reasons not necessary to detail, they desired to be placed in General Fitz John Porter's command. Their case was presented to General William F. Barry, Chief of Artillery, by Hon. Messrs. (Thomas D.) Eliot (of New Bedford) and (Daniel W.) Gooch (of Melrose) congressmen in whose districts the Battery was raised, and by myself, and he consented to the desired change, if General Fitz John Porter, whose quarters were near Hall's Hill, Va., could find use for them. Subsequently, I had an interview with General Porter at his headquarters, and he asked me to say to General Barry, that he would be pleased to receive as many Massachusetts batteries as would be sent him, although he did not wish to interfere with any previous arrangements of the War Department. The result is that the order was changed, and the Battery is over the river in General Porter's Division. With a few weeks' drilling it will be very efficient.”

There is no date to this letter and the closing lines are a little in advance of the notes of the members of the Battery as arranged chronologically.

Grows' Journal “Jan'y 26, 1862. As it was a glorious morning we took our bedding and all our equipments, and carried them out into the park to give them an airing. It was a pretty, but odd sight, to see each man's bedding laying in front of his tent, with his knapsack, sword, canteen and haversack, on top.

#### THOUGHTS ON GUARD.

In the hours of the night, when you and my sweet child are in sweet slumbers, I am walking my 'beat' while on guard. I have often walked over my beat almost an hour at a time, and when I came to myself it would seem that I was just awakened from a dream.

Joseph Hall called in to the tent this evening. He has got his discharge. He was unfit for service when he enlisted. A more honest man never walked, but an oversight has caused him all this. He is only 23 years old.

A man in the 'Rocket Battery' was killed yesterday by a horse, he was kicked in the head. His body will receive a military escort to the Depot, to then be sent to New York where he belongs.

Monday Jan'y 27th. Went out and helped clean the Gun, after which I was ordered to look after the packing of some shot and shell. Was occupied till 12 o'clock. The escort of the man who was killed, passed by us this afternoon. He was in a walnut coffin, and it was placed on the carriage of the Gun to which he belonged. The coffin was covered with the American flag.

At the 5 o'clock Roll this afternoon: The Captain of our Battery goes home to New Bedford tomorrow. Lieut. Allen takes command till a new Captain is appointed. In all probability it will be Allen. We all want him very much."

Chase's Diary "Jan'y 27, 1862. Capt. Eppendorff informed the Battery, that his resignation had been accepted. First Lieut. G. D. Allen left in command until a captain is appointed."

This was at that important period when General McClellan was engaged in perfecting the organization of the Army of the Potomac and on this day, January 27th, President Lincoln issued his General War Order No. 1, directing a general movement of the land and naval forces.

Chase's Diary "January 28th. Captain Eppendorff left camp."

Grow's Journal "Jan'y 28. Tuesday. On account of new regulations we were called at 6 this morning, and at a quarter past 6 was Roll Call, and half past 6 was Feed Call, for the drivers to attend to their horses. At 7 was Water Call for the horses. At 8 o'clock we had breakfast.

I am very glad of this change for it is better for the men. We had dinner at one o'clock instead of 12."

The Officer of the Day attended the Roll Call. The drivers fell in at Stable or Feed Call with "nose bags" to be filled with grain. The Officer of the Day rode a horse bareback at Water Call to superintend the driving of the horses to water.

Grows' Journal "Jan'y 29, 1862. Tonight for supper we had tea, the first I have tasted since I have been here.

Friday January 31st. Had a drill on the Gun this afternoon.

Saturday, Feb. 1. After breakfast went out to see the horses, found one with a broken leg. He was kicked in the night by one of the horses and had his leg broken. He was killed by being knocked in the head. One Battery has been disbanded near to us, they were a New York company. One of our men was at the Capitol today, and the subject in the Senate Chamber was to have some of the batteries discharged. We will hear more about it soon.

Sunday, Feb. 2d, the 'drivers' turned out at 9 to clean their horses and harnesses, and the cannoneers to clean up their quarters &c. &c. I was detailed for guard at 11 o'clock to be on till 1 o'clock p. m. At 12 o'clock we were visited by Colonel Amory of Boston,—he is Master of Ordnance at the State House,—and also Colonel (T. Bigelow) Lawrence. The men were drawn up in line and were addressed by them. They were sent down here by Governor Andrew to see how the men were used, and if they were comfortable. They examined our quarters and our horses and guns &c. &c. and appeared highly pleased with the deportment of the men. They left us about  $\frac{1}{2}$  past one o'clock. At 2 o'clock there was divine service in the camp, and the men's voices singing did sound splendid while I was lying down in my tent. I did not have to go out into the line for I was on the guard list. Went on guard again at 5 o'clock p. m.

## BOX FROM HOME.

Monday Feb. 3, 1862. At 12 o'clock word came into the tent that the team had come with boxes from the express office. Went out and found Harry Simonds with the Detachment. He showed me the box. I carried it to his quarters and opened it. I received four immense pies, two splendid cakes, tea, coffee, sugar, pop corn, papers etc.

Wednesday Feb. 5th. Most of the Detachments had a drill on their guns. The order was in the morning, 'Empty beds!' In the afternoon the straw came, but it was wet and damp, so I could not fill my bed, and I had to turn in on the ground.

Thursday Feb. 6. Went out at  $\frac{1}{4}$  past 6 to Roll Call. Before we were dismissed to our quarters we were ordered to appear at 10 o'clock in full uniform with side arms; horses hitched in and cannoneers mounted, but a hail storm came up at 8 o'clock, and it has continued to rain, snow, and hail about all day.

Friday Feb. 7. All of the men besides myself except one, filled their beds with the damp straw, the consequence was they all got cold, while Carsley and myself are well. After breakfast we were ordered to appear at 10 o'clock in full uniform with side arms, for the Review. The drivers hitched in their horses at 10, and at  $\frac{1}{2}$  past the cannoneers were on the boxes. It was a splendid sight. Went through the drill of 'Mounting and Dismounting,' and at 11 o'clock, the gun Detachments were dismissed to their quarters, and the drivers had to turn out for Riding drill. They returned at  $\frac{1}{2}$  past 12, looking muddy enough.

Sunday, Feb. 9, 1862. The men were called into line at 11 o'clock for divine service. After singing two or three tunes, and reading a chapter in the Bible,—Matthew 4th chapter,—we were dismissed.

Monday Feb. 10th, got a pass to go to the city. Went into the Capitol to see the new painting of General (Winfield) Scott. It is a large and splendid thing. Saw the large paintings in the gallery viz., 'The Surrender of Lord Cornwallis,' 'The Resignation of Washington at Annapolis in 1783,' 'The Embarkation of the Pilgrims,' 'The Landing of Columbus,' 'The Discovery of the Mississippi River by De Soto,' 'The Baptism of Pocahontas,' 'The Declaration of Independence,' and 'The Surrender of Burgoyne.' "

Chase's Diary "Feb. 10, 1862. Hitched up and took guns from the park first time.

Feb. 11, 1862. 5th and 6th Detachments hitched up and drilled 'In Battery' under Lieut. C. A. Phillips, first time."

Grows' Journal "Feb. 11th. Was called at 1 o'clock this morning and went on guard. There is a circle around the moon. I think we shall soon have a storm. Am feeling tired and sleepy but I must keep my eyes open, and keep a sharp lookout. One of our horses is back of my tent dying with the Lung Fever and Horse Ail. He will die in a short time. It looks hard to see him suffer, and not be allowed to kill him and put him out of his misery, but that is military rule, unless a horse has a broken leg—then you are allowed to kill him."

Chase's Diary "Feb. 12, 1862. Exchanged our 6 pounder guns for 10 pounder rifled Rodman guns."

### GUNS AND PROJECTILES.

Our guns were exchanged for six three-inch rifled guns. The three-inch gun adopted in our field service, was made of wrought iron, having 7 grooves, .84 in. wide and .075 in. depth. The twist was uniform, and made one turn in 11 feet.

The Schenkle projectile was used almost entirely; composed of a cast iron body, the posterior portion of which



terminated in a cone. The expanding portion was a *papier mache* wad, which being forced forward on to the cone, was expanded into the rifling of the bore. On issuing from the bore, the wad is blown to pieces, leaving the projectile entirely unincumbered in its flight through the air.

Occasionally the Hotchkiss projectile was used. This was a compound shot consisting of two parts of cast iron, with the rear cap fitting over the forward portion. Around the joint was placed a band of lead so locked into both parts of the shot as to prevent its flying off after it leaves the piece. The explosion of the charge forces the rear part forward, expanding the lead, forcing it into the grooves, and cutting off windage. The amount of expansion is limited by the distance the cap is allowed to move, and the strain upon the gun is thus reduced to the smallest amount required to give the necessary expansion. The shot is the same as the shell, but left solid.

The 12 pounder Napoleon was of bronze, smooth bore, and muzzle loading. It was officially known as the "light twelve" to distinguish it from the old regulation 12 pounder, which was longer and heavier, though of the same calibre. Its principal dimensions were as follows:

Length over all, 6 feet.

Length of bore 5 ft.  $3\frac{1}{2}$  inches.

Diameter at breech 11 inches.

Diameter at muzzle  $8\frac{1}{2}$  inches.

Diameter of bore  $4\frac{5}{8}$  inches.

Weight of gun 1,220 pounds.

The round solid shot for this gun weighed 12 pounds. The common shell, with bursting charge [8 ounces] and fuze, weighed nine and one-half pounds. The shrapnel or spherical case, which was a thin shell filled with musket balls and a bursting charge, weighed with its "sabot"  $12\frac{1}{4}$  pounds. The canister, which was a tin can of the size of the bore and six inches long, filled with cast iron shot about an inch in diameter, weighed 14 pounds. The "sabot" was

a piece of wood turned to fit the bore, and was placed between the powder and the projectile, instead of the wads. It was used only in smooth bore guns firing spherical projectiles.

The rifled guns, which fired conical projectiles, did not use the "sabot."

By regulation the powder charges for shot, shell and case, were two and one half pounds, and for canister two pounds. The fuze at that time used for round shell and case shot was a metal disk one and one-half inches in diameter. Its outer surface was of lead, or an alloy of lead, soft enough to cut easily. Underneath this metal surface was a ring of "meal powder" or igniting composition. The exterior of the metal disk was marked like the dial of a clock,—three-quarters, one, one and one-quarter, one and one-half, one and three-quarters, two, and so on up to five. These figures indicated in seconds and fractions thereof the time at which the shell would explode after leaving the muzzle if the soft metal was cut out immediately over the desired figure on the dial, so as to expose the composition at that point to the flames of the powder charge (see p. 114. Grows.)

The carriage of the light 12 pounder complete weighed 2,600 pounds, which, with the gun made a total weight of 3,800 pounds, or nearly two tons.

The pattern of caisson remains now substantially as it was then.

The equipment of the rifle batteries was in general the same as that of the 12 pounders except in the matter of ammunition.

The 10 pounder Parrott was scant three inches in caliber, and was made of cast iron, with a wrought iron band shrunk on over the breech.

The three-inch Rodman was of wrought iron, forged solid, and then bored and rifled. Both these types of guns used conical projectiles, weighing, for solid shot, 10

pounds; common shell about eight pounds, and shrapnel about  $10\frac{1}{2}$  pounds.

They also had a special canister made for them.

The three-inch wrought iron rifle was generally considered superior to the 10 pounder Parrott, in consequence of the liability of the latter to blow up or break off between the fore-end of the reinforce and the trunnions. But so long as the Parrott gun held together it was as good as any muzzle-loading rifle.

The Parrott ammunition could be used in the three-inch guns if necessary, but the three-inch projectile could not be used in the 10 pdr. Parrotts, because the latter were one-tenth of an inch smaller caliber.

### ARTILLERY HORSES.

A letter from Fortress Monroe to the New York *Commercial Advertiser* in July, 1861, no name signed, thus described the trained horses of the Artillery:—

“It requires considerable time to mount the guns proper for an advancing army, to supply them with trained horses, and especially the right kind of harness. The horse must become accustomed to the gleam of arms, the roll of drums, the flaunting of banners, the flash and the smoke and the roll of cannon. When the war horse is drilled and disciplined, without a sign from man he wheels, advances, and retreats, with almost miraculous rapidity, often compelling riders and gunners to spring to keep their saddles, or escape his lightning like movements. They are made familiar with the guns by having their nostrils placed so close to their muzzles as to feel the heat and inhale the powder.”

### BREAKING CAMP.

It was on February 13, 1862, Thursday, that the Fifth Mass. Battery was ordered to report to General Fitz John

Porter, commanding the First Division, Army of the Potomac.

Chase's Diary of that date has the entry:—"Reveille at 2 a. m. Broke camp and left camp at 7 a. m. for Hall's Hill, Va., and arrived at our new camp about 2 p. m. Battery now attached to General Butterfield's Brigade of General Fitz John Porter's Division, Army of the Potomac."

Grows' Journal has the following:—" 'Reveille' was sounded at 2 o'clock in the morning, at  $\frac{1}{2}$  past 2 the 'Assembly' was sounded. We were then drawn up in line, and told to prepare to 'break camp.' At 6 o'clock in the morning every tent was down and packed away, our uniforms on, knapsacks lashed to the spare wheel, and our rations in our haversacks, and all were ready to start. At  $\frac{1}{2}$  past 7 the bugle sounded 'Forward,' and we took up our line of march. It was a most glorious morning, and the sun was very warm. We went through the city, the baggage and mule train bringing up the rear. We passed through Georgetown to the Aqueduct. After passing the bridge the order was 'Cannoneers Dismount.' On account of the mud, in some places it was almost over boots, we had to go this way for 4 miles when we arrived at our camp ground, and it is a nice place, with a large stream close by and woods in our rear which will protect us from the winds. There are about 6000 to 8000 men encamped around here. The 18th Mass., the 22d Mass., a Kentucky and a Michigan Regt., the 9th Mass. Regt., and Follett's Battery (Third Mass.). We arrived on this ground at 3 o'clock in the afternoon. Took a rest of about one hour, and then went to work pitching our tents, which we had up in good season. On our march we passed several forts and concealed batteries built by our troops.

This (Hall's) hill is so fortified that it is impossible for the rebels to get to Washington. After our tents were up

I took a walk around the camp. Saw a large body of cavalry coming, bringing 'secesh' prisoners. They go out scouting every morning, returning at night. We are encamped only about 8 miles from the rebels, who are at Fairfax Court House. Our pickets are thrown out for from four to five miles. In about two weeks there will be a grand advance made by our troops."

#### FORT CORCORAN, ARLINGTON HEIGHTS.

Forts Runyon and Corcoran commanded the Long Bridge and the Aqueduct. Fort Albany commanded the Columbia and the Aqueduct and Alexandria roads. After General McClellan assumed command of the Army of the Potomac the interval between Fort Corcoran at Arlington Heights and Fort Albany near Alexandria was filled by a series of works within supporting distance of each other.

#### THE REMOVAL, BY LIEUT. PHILLIPS.

"The morning was clear and bright and the moon had not set. By seven o'clock everything was ready and we started. Passing through Pennsylvania Avenue we kept on to Georgetown and crossed the Aqueduct. On the other side of that the Battery halted and one by one the pieces prepared to ford their passage. As the First piece went ahead I remained in the rear, and soon loud shouts of laughter from the surrounding soldiers informed me that something had occurred. At first I was afraid the piece was stuck, but I found afterwards that it was one of our men who was stuck in the mud, and who in being pulled out had left both his boots behind. The Second piece followed the First, and as it disappeared I ordered my section forward and on we went up the end of the bridge, then to the left and over a ditch on the right into the mud, and such mud! However, the horses pulled bravely, and on we went. A

little ahead came the hardest tug, up a little ascent, but we got well over it. The mules followed with the baggage teams, and though they stuck a little we all got through without any accident. Just after crossing the Aqueduct the road passes through an intrenchment for infantry, and then keeps on round Fort Corcoran."

Fort Corcoran he describes as a square, bastion fort three sides mounted with heavy guns, and the side toward the Aqueduct merely a stockade, loop holed for musketry, and defended by small swivel guns. "Beyond Fort Corcoran," he continues, "the road passes through another breastwork for artillery and infantry, and then keeps on through the mud and the camp of the 3d Penn. Cavalry. Passing through this we turned to the right down a new corduroy road which carries us straight to camp."

The engineers built the "corduroy" by felling trees and laying them across the road.

#### LETTER OF LIEUT. PHILLIPS.

##### "VICINITY OF HALL'S HILL.

Feb. 14, 1862.

We are just this side of Hall's Hill proper, on a little hill close by a large house. Our camp is on the right going from Washington, and our parade ground,—an excellent one,—on the left. . . .

We arrived at our camp at noon, and had everything fixed before dark. Everything is as good as can be. The ground is quite dry comparatively speaking. We have good water at the foot of the hill behind the stables, and wood growing in abundance all round. Two regiments of cavalry passed us this morning on a scouting expedition. We have not yet named our camp."

In another letter Lieut. Phillips thus describes scenes in camp:—



"This morning we had an inspection of blankets, harnesses, brushes, curry-combs, whips &c., and while we were at this Gen. Porter rode up accompanied by Lieut. S. M. Weld of his staff. I went up to Lieut. Weld's quarters the other night, and found him quite comfortably located. . . . Our camp ground is now quite dry . . . all the men have built bunks to sleep in. . . . We are very lucky in having quite a little forest behind us, which supplies us with as much wood as we want. Our stables are down in the woods and are floored with trunks of small trees, so that the horses keep very dry. Some of the camps round here are placed in very exposed situations. The 22d Mass. right on top of Hall's Hill, gets all the wind that blows, and it blows pretty hard here occasionally. Two nights last week we had a perfect hurricane, which tried the strength of our tents pretty effectually. Several went down, and for a time I was in doubt whether ours was going to stand up or not. However, we managed to keep the pole up, and the pins down, but could not succeed in keeping the wind out, so in spite of our fire we had to go to bed early to keep warm. Our tent has suffered a little from the perils of war. The top got burnt a little one day, and as if this were not sufficient for ventilating purposes, Lieut. Scott's horse put his foot through it yesterday afternoon. As we are getting to look at things in a philosophical light we do not trouble ourselves with small trifles. I have forgotten how to take cold or get sick."

---

Grows' Journal. "Friday morning Feb. 14, 1862. Orders were given that after breakfast all of the men clean up the Park. After eating we all went at it, and in about two hours there was not a large stone to be seen on the camp ground. Then we dressed our pieces and caissons and covered them, then went to our quarters. After dinner dressed up and went out. The men were drawn up in line to receive

Captain Griffin and Aide. (Captain Charles Griffin, Battery D, 5th U. S.) He is the man who lost a portion of his battery at Bull Run. He is a stern looking man, but a splendid artillerist. He will be our drill master. We were marched to our pieces and had a slight drill. We have now four three in. dia. long guns of iron, and two brass howitzers, twelve pounders. They are saucy looking dogs. After this we went to our tents. About 11 boxes have come this afternoon for men in the company, and they are very glad. We are encamped on the grounds once occupied by President William Henry Harrison. His mansion is very near us. It is now used for a Small Pox Hospital. There are now there six or seven cases. A slaughter house is on our camp ground where they kill cattle for the soldiers, so we have fresh beef quite often.

Saturday Feb. 15. Snowing. After breakfast I was detailed with Harry Simonds and others, to cut down some trees for a stable. Got the stable built and went to dinner, had fresh beef and bread and water. After dinner was detailed with three others to get water for the cooks, after which I went into my tent and had a smoke. Was called at 4 o'clock to fix some shovels for the snow which is now about 3 in. deep. It is snowing very hard. The guard were called out to salute General Barry and staff as they passed the camp."

## FORM OF PASS.

DIVISION HEAD QUARTERS  
HALL'S HILL VA. Feb. 15, 1862.

Pass Lieut. Allen Mass. Art'y. to Washington and return on important private business.

By com. of

BRIG. GEN'L PORTER  
G. MONTEITH.  
Lt. & A. D. C.

The signature "by com. of" &c. is in red ink, the remainder in black ink, plain and clear after forty years.

## THE ROLL AT HALL'S HILL.

NOTES OF JOSEPH L. KNOX, SEPT. 25, 1899.

"You will find a list of the men as near as I can remember them, and I think that it is just as it was called at Hall's Hill in 1861."

Allen	Flynn	Manchester
Agen	Freeborn	Nield
Alden	Groves	Newhall
Alton 1	Greeley	Newton
Almy	Grows	Olin
Alton 2	Gunning	Pinder
Burt	Gale	Poole
Butler	Gardner	Platt
Brown	Gustine	Parsons
Barry	Gilbert	Proctor
Burkis	Hart	Rice
Barnard	Hayden	Ray
Blanchard	Hall	Saxon
Clark 1	Hewitt	Shaw 1
Canty	Hathaway 1	Stantial
Cook	Hathaway 2	Shaw 2
Caswell	Jordan	Stiles
Carsley	Jay	Shaw 3
Chase	Kay	Tucker
Crapo	Knox	Townsend
Clark 2	Kanuse	Terry
Dunham	King	Tripp 1
Dyer	Leach	Tripp 2
Drew	Lapham	Whitcher
Dickerman	Mitchell	Washburn 1
Doherty	Murray	West 1
Estee	Morrison	Washburn 2
Fitzsimmons	Mack	West 2
	McVey	

---

"Sunday Feb. 16, 1862. (Grows' Journal.) Got up at the usual time feeling awfully stiff with the rheumatism.

The 9th Mass. Regt. and a Regiment of Cavalry went to Fairfax to disperse some rebels. They marched to Vienna but did not see anything. Five more 'Secesh' were brought in today. They were examined and sent to the Prison at Washington. I must stop now to cut up a chicken for one of the men, also some pies and cake which he had sent to him in a box. I have made some tea and shall have a glorious supper. So much like home. . . . After having a smoke we told stories, sang a little, went to Roll Call at 8, and turned in at  $\frac{1}{2}$  past 8."

Chase's Diary. "Feb. 17, 1862. Lieut. Allen announced to the Company that he had been commissioned as Captain, and the other lieutenants were promoted. Serg't. H. D. Scott promoted to 4th Lieut. Company called in line and the great victory of Fort Donelson announced by orders from Head Quarters. Hearty cheers for the great victory and new officers."

Forts Henry and Donelson were the centre of the Confederate line in Tennessee.

#### LETTER OF LIEUT. PHILLIPS.

"HALL'S HILL Feb. 18, 1862.

While I had my section out this morning, Captain Griffin rode up and drilled us a little. Our men do first rate considering what opportunities we have had. Captain Griffin says we have 'the finest set of men that ever were got together on the face of the earth'! Lieut. Henry W. Kingsbury of Captain Griffin's Battery has been assigned to this Battery as instructor, as General Porter wishes to push us forward as fast as possible, so that we shall not be much behind the rest of the Division.

The following changes have been announced to the Battery:—

Junior 2d Lt. Henry D. Scott.

Sergeant H. O. Simonds *vice* Scott promoted.

Corporal C. H. Macomber *vice* Simonds promoted.

Yesterday we received circular orders from General Porter announcing the glorious news from Fort Donelson, followed by permission to issue a ration of whiskey to the men, and an order to fire a national salute. As we are a temperance battery we did nothing about the whiskey, and having no blank cartridges we had to send to Captain Martin's (Third Mass.) Battery to get them. By the time we got ready it was dark, and we postponed the salute till this morning, when it was fired in good style."

Chase's Diary. "Feb. 18, 1862. A salute of 34 guns fired by Serg'ts Lull and Smith's Detachments."

Grows' Journal "Feb. 18, 1862. Tuesday. The assembly was sounded at 10. We all turned out in line and were informed that my friend Harry Simonds was to be the sergeant of the 6th Detachment. The men were very glad, for he is well liked both by men and officers. At 11 we went out to drill under the Drill Captain,—Griffin. He is very strict about drill. At 2 we went to drill again. I had to take No. 1's place on account of his being on guard. It is a rather hard berth, but if it is understood it is one of the best berths there is on the piece. Drill was over at 3 when we went to our quarters.

Wednesday Feb. 19, 1862. The rain held up a little this afternoon, and the Detachment went out to drill on the guns, for word has come that we must move in fifteen days with the Division. We expect to go to Manassas Junction. I want to go on with the Division and see what is to be seen and not be kept up here in camp like a prisoner.

Thursday Feb. 20, 1862. A splendid morning. About 1 o'clock Lieut. R. A. Dillingham ordered me to build some feed boxes for the horses, so I went to work on them. At  $\frac{1}{2}$  past 2 Lieut. Kingsbury of the Regulars came over to drill the men, and he did 'put them through a course of sprouts' they never saw before. Knocked off work at 5 and went to Roll Call, had 8 boxes made 16 ft. long. Had supper at  $\frac{1}{2}$  past 5 of bread and coffee; the coffee was fair, but the bread was black and very hard.

A change has been made in the hours of the day in regard to drill. The preparatory call is at 10 minutes of 6 in the morning, the Reveille at 6, giving the men 10 minutes to dress and be out in line. After Roll, breakfast call, at  $\frac{1}{4}$  to 7 stable call, at 7 the 'Sick Call.' At this last call all that are sick fall into line, and are marched to the Hospital.

It is a good idea, for the men cannot play off sick.

Instead of mounting guard at 9 in the morning as usual, it is now at 5 in the afternoon."

#### FROM A LETTER OF LIEUT. PHILLIPS.

"Feb. 20, 1862: The officers, commissioned and non-commissioned have daily recitations in Artillery Tactics, and Lieut. Kingsbury has the general oversight of the drill and interior economy of the Battery. This morning he took charge of the drill on the guns, and this afternoon he introduced several changes in the working of the Battery. He is a gentleman, and a well drilled officer, and a brother-in-law of General Buckner,—lately captured,—who married his sister. Captain Griffin has been here several times. Gen. McClellan and staff rode by here this forenoon on a tour of inspection. Our guard was turned out, sabres presented, and the General touched his cap.

We exchange our two howitzers in a few days for two three inch rifled guns, so that my section will be like the rest. Our ammunition will come in a few days, and we shall commence target-shooting."

Grows' Journal: "Friday Feb. 21st. At 9, went to see about some pickets being cut for the feed troughs to be put on for the horses to eat out of. Worked till dinner time. A new rule has been made: the guard of one day will do the police duty of the camp the following day. Today I was stationed over the quartermaster store tent, and I did not want for good things to eat."



## WASHINGTON'S BIRTHDAY 1862.—A NOTABLE ANNIVERSARY.

By General Orders No. 16. Head Quarters of the Army, Washington, Feb. 18, 1862, in compliance with concurrent resolutions of Congress that the President should direct that Orders be issued, copious extracts from the Farewell Address of George Washington were read to the troops by command of Major General McClellan simultaneously with the performance of a similar ceremony before the two branches of Congress in joint session assembled.

In these extracts were emphatic utterances in regard to the unity of government, which might have been spoken in the light of actual events by the orator had he been still at the head of the Army of the United States:—

"But as it is easy to foresee that from different causes, and from different quarters, much pains will be taken, many artifices employed, to weaken in your minds the conviction of this truth,—as this is the point in your political fortress against which the batteries of internal and external enemies will be most constantly and actively,—though often covertly and insidiously,—directed, it is of infinite moment that you should properly estimate the immense value of your national union to your collective and individual happiness; that you should cherish a cordial, habitual, and immovable attachment to it: accustoming yourselves to think and to speak of it as a palladium of your political safety and prosperity, watching for its preservation with jealous anxiety: discountenancing whatever may suggest even a suspicion that it can in any event be abandoned: and indignantly frowning upon the first dawning of every attempt to alienate any portion of our country from the rest, or to enfeeble the sacred ties which now link together the various parts."

Chase's Diary: "Feb. 22, 1862. Gun drill in the afternoon under Lieut. Kingsbury of the Regular Art'y, in the presence of Gen'l Porter. First and Second Detachments hitched up and practised with shells, and a misdirected one went through a house occupied by a family; shell burst, but no one hurt."

AN ACCOUNT OF THE TARGET SHOOTING BY  
LIEUT. PHILLIPS, IN A LETTER DATED

Feb. 23, 1862:—"Lieut. Kingsbury has not yet fairly commenced operations. He has drilled us once or twice. Tomorrow, however, he will pitch his tent and move into camp. The terms upon which we consented to have him come here were that he should act as instructor 'until such time as we were able to take the field alone'; Captain Griffin's own words. But I do not know whether Lt. K. quite understands this. He talks of commanding the Battery, and of taking us into the first action, but he can hardly do this against the consent of Captain Allen, his ranking officer. The conclusion I come to is that we can dispense with his instructions whenever we choose. However, I am very glad to have him here as we all need to learn a good deal. He has assigned lessons in the 'Instruction for Field Artillery' to the commissioned and non commissioned officers and has had two recitations. Hyde, Dillingham, Scott and I recited together, and I believe I came out best, not having yet got out of my college practice.

Lieut. K., without troubling himself about the lesson assigned, skipped all over the book from Battery manœuvres to harnessing a horse, but did not succeed in catching me, so I think I am all right in that quarter.

Yesterday afternoon Captain Griffin and Lieut. Kingsbury came here and ordered out the Right section for target shooting, so taking 40 rounds of ammunition, we started across the country, taking two fences, and a man's back yard on the way, till we got to the top of a hill, and came into battery.

The mark was a stump on an opposite hill, distance 800 or 1,000 yards, as we afterwards ascertained. The day being foggy and misty, Captain G. and Lt. K. who directed the firing, put the pieces at an elevation of 3 and 4 degrees, corresponding to a range of 1300 and 1600 yds. With these

elevations changing to  $2^{\circ}$  and  $4\frac{1}{2}^{\circ}$ , we fired about 20 shots, some percussion fuzes and some time fuzes, but could not see where any of them burst.

At first Captain G. laid this to the fuzes, but finally we tried an elevation of  $1\frac{3}{4}^{\circ}$  and landed a shell half way between the stump and the top of the hill, so we came to the conclusion that we must have been firing over the top of the hill.

Finally, disgusted, and without hitting the mark, we limbered up and returned. On our way to camp we met two men on horseback, looking rather frightened, who informed us that we had been shelling their houses. Lt. Scott went over with them to the scene of operations, and found half a mile beyond the hill a bunch of houses where most of our shell had burst, and he picked up quite a number of fragments lying round. One shell went through the door of a house, knocked out the underpinning on the other side and was picked up in the mud. Another whistled close by a woman's head, and some of the shrapnel scattered bullets among some children playing round. As soon as the shells began to whistle round the house the inhabitants cleared out, and when Scott got there he found only two dogs left. Altogether it was a pretty narrow escape, and we feel thankful that nobody was hurt. We told the man that we knew nothing about the country, but the shooting was under the direction of Captain Griffin, and General Porter was present, and we supposed that they knew what was in range of our guns."

Carefully preserved in Lieut. Phillips' desk (see p. 441) is a brass instrument for sighting a Gun, showing elevation &c., length  $9\frac{1}{2}$  inches.

#### LIEUT. SCOTT'S VERSION.

Lieut. Henry D. Scott remarks relative to the drill in tactics at this time, and the target shooting episode:—

"Kingsbury was a gentleman, and treated us very handsomely. He was afterwards killed at Antietam while making a charge with the 10th Conn. as its colonel. While the Battery remained here it was ordered out for target practice. It was supposed that the principal object was to try the efficiency of the men with rifled guns. The Battery was placed in position on a hill some distance away from Hall's Hill, on our right towards Chain Bridge up the Potomac, an open valley in front, with a wooded hill some 12 to 15 hundred yards distant.

No house was in sight, and the trunk of a large, dead tree on top of the hill was to be the target.

All the general officers of the 5th Corps with staffs were present to witness the practice. After several shots had been fired in which all seemed to have something to say, the target was not hit, nor could any one tell where the shots struck or went. In fact no one of the Battery had ever fired the guns before, and could not have acquired the experience which came to them afterwards in which some fine practice was done.

The firing was kept up, slowly, until towards night, when a citizen rode into the company, his horse all of a white foam, and said: 'Stop firing. You are shelling the village beyond the woods!'

I had only been a spectator up to this time. Of course the practice was ended, and I was ordered to go with the citizen and report the damage, if any had been done. Following the rider a roundabout way of two miles or more, we struck the scene of the excitement in the town of Union. It was a collection of pretty houses, well kept and painted, with one street running parallel to the direction in which the shots had come, and which had been well ploughed by the shots from the Battery. I saw no one at first, but the people soon came out of cellars and other hiding places, and were soon quieted. They were told that the commander of the Battery could not have known of the village or its nearness, but

he had sent me to inquire into and report any damage to life or property. It was found that several shots had struck one house, one passing through a door and lodging in a cellar; another passing through a kitchen. However, no great damage had been done. They claimed to be union citizens, and I saw nothing that led me to suppose to the contrary. They certainly could not be blamed for being frightened out of their wits. Returning to camp alone in the darkness, I reported what the result of the firing had been and nothing more was heard about it. It was singular that no one knew of the close proximity of the village. It must have been outside the picket line."

THE DAY IN CAMP.—ANOTHER SHOOTING EPI-  
SODE. THEY KNEW HOW IT WAS  
THEMSELVES.

Grows' Journal: "Saturday, Feb. 22, 1862. Washington's Birth Day. Was called at 1 o'clock this morning to go on guard. Went out to my post and found I had more duty to do. I had to look after six teams loaded with powder and fixed ammunition. I had to see that there were no lights or smoking, within fifty feet of them. Was relieved at 3 this morning, went to my tent and turned in on my bed, for I now have a bedstead. Yesterday four of us cut some trees and built us some bedsteads. They are tip top, but they are not feather beds by any means. After turning in I had some hot coffee, which one of the men made for me while I was out. It warmed me up first rate. Called again at 7 in the morning. It began to rain like fury but I did not mind that, for I had a good post, where I could keep clear of the rain. The Quartermaster gave me some rice and sugar. Relieved at 9 and went to my quarters. At 12 . . . cooked my rice and had a tip top dinner. At 1 o'clock I went on guard. In a few minutes after I was surprised by seeing James Tuttle of Boston. He is in the 22d Mass. Regt. He looks well. He stayed a short time and left for his camp.

Shortly after we were visited by General Porter, Captain Griffin, and their aides. They ordered two of our pieces to be taken out for target practice. They went off over the hill, and were soon out of sight. I was relieved at 3, and went to my tent. Stayed in about one hour, when I went out to see Harry Simonds and C. C. Allen take a ride on horseback. Harry took the lead, and Allen after him on a slow trot. He had not gone more than thirty feet, when Allen's horse slipped on a stone, and broke his nigh hind leg short off in the thigh. Word was immediately sent to the Captain:—he was off with the pieces on practice,—about the horse, for we are not allowed to kill a horse, unless it is done in the presence of two commissioned officers. He did not come till most 6 o'clock, and that poor horse lay there all that time, in awful agony. When Captain Allen came, the horse was instantly killed, dragged off, and buried. It was one of the best horses we had.

During the time the men were out on practice two of the shells went into a house of a Union man and one exploded in the yard. The house was over  $1\frac{1}{2}$  miles from where the firing was. The poor man thought the rebels were coming, and taking his wife and six children he came into our camp almost frightened to death. They were informed that it was an accident, and they went to their home, happy enough. It was a great wonder that some of them were not killed.

A Minie ball passed through our cook house close to the head of one of our men. Some of the infantry were firing at a target, when, it is supposed, some one carelessly pointed his gun in the direction of our camp. They are bad things to trifle with.

Sunday Feb. 23d. At 4 this afternoon, we were all called into line, to have the Articles of War read to us, it being the duty of the commander of any Reg't. or Battery in the service of the United States to read them to the men under



their command once in three months. We were dismissed to our quarters at  $\frac{1}{2}$  past 4."

### THE ARTICLES OF WAR.

The Articles of War were rules and articles by which the Armies of the United States were governed. They were established by Act of Congress, and were one hundred in number. They embraced every department of the service in every part of the country, and provided for the regulation of the conduct of officers and soldiers in every contingency and capacity, from the rulings of courts martial to the destruction of private property.

### THE OATH OF ALLEGIANCE.

In Article 10 is the Oath of Allegiance:—

"I, A. B., do solemnly swear or affirm (as the case may be) that I will bear true allegiance to the United States of America, and that I will serve them honestly and faithfully against all their enemies or opposers whatsoever; and observe and obey the orders of the President of the United States, and the orders of the officers appointed over me, according to the Rules and Articles for the government of the armies of the United States."

The words "So help me God" are not added to the oath of the non-commissioned officer or soldier as given in this Article, but they appear in the Articles devoted to the members of the courts martial, as part of the oath. The Act which contained these Articles of War was approved April 10, 1806.

---

Grows' Journal: "Feb. 24, 1862, (About 9 a. m.) it began to blow a gale. In a short time the next tent to ours was blown down, then the one opposite. We jumped up

and hung on to our tent pole. In a short time our stove pipe was blown down, and the lashings of our doors were torn off, but we made out to save our tent. Trees were torn up, and chimneys blown down and there is considerable damage done. After considerable work we got our tent secured, our stove up again, and a fire going. It is an awful cold evening and I expect it will be a howling night. The mud has dried up considerably in consequence of the wind blowing so hard all day. It is now freezing quite hard."

Chase's Diary: "Feb. 25, 1862, the Third and Fourth Detachments went to the Washington Arsenal, and exchanged the two Howitzers for two 3 inch ten pounder Rodman guns."

Grows' Journal: "Wednesday, Feb. 26, 1862, ½ past 8, went out to drill for one hour. After drill got permission to go over to the 4th Michigan Regt. to change some bread for tobacco, for I was getting short of the weed. All the bread we have left over we sell to them for five cents a loaf, and get sugar, molasses, cheese, butter, and other articles. I had twelve spare loaves, so I got twelve heads of tobacco, which will last me some time. At 10 o'clock the drivers were called out to drill on the pieces, and it was amusing to see how awkward they were, for they never handled a sponge staff before, and we could see by *their* actions how green *we* looked the first time we began to drill. They will have to drill, as well as the cannoneers, so that in case of action men should be killed on the gun, they will be able to fill their places.

At 1 o'clock I went out to work on the pickets, and worked till 5. At 3 in the afternoon the Battery was called out for drill, and stayed out till ½ past 4, when they returned to camp; the 18th Mass. and 44th New York were also out on drill. They made a splendid sight. A sergeant from Captain Griffin's battery has come over to drill the drivers in regard to harnessing and hitching out horses. He will probably remain with us for a week or ten days."

Letter of Lieut. Phillips, Feb. 27, 1862:—"This afternoon the Left section went off target shooting, and did rather better than the last time we went. The Right and Centre sections went out in Battery drill under Captain Martin, and had a first rate drill. The 18th Regiment and Captain Martin's Battery are expecting marching orders tonight to go up the river to reinforce General Banks. Tattoo has just sounded, and we can hear a great cheering from their camp, so I suppose the orders have come. They leave their tents and carry 7 days' rations. I hear postal communication is stopped."

Grows' Journal: "Feb. 27, 1862. After dinner was called out to go with a piece and act No 6 to cut the fuze. Took out two pieces with ten rounds of fuze shell and ten rounds of percussion shell in each limber box. Went out under the charge of Lieut. Kingsbury of Captain Griffin's regular battery, to Martin's Battery formerly Follett's (Third Mass.) and fired at a tree one and a half miles off. It being the first time I ever had an opportunity of seeing the effect of shell I took great interest in watching it. When they struck the ground they tore up large furrows in the dirt. The tree was struck two or three times, which stove it up considerable. After firing all our ammunition we started for home, most of us feeling rather tired, for the cannoneers had to walk both ways. It was some six miles to and from our camp. Got back to our quarters about  $\frac{1}{4}$  to 5. After supper sent five spare loaves of bread over to the sutlers (He was eating rice instead of bread.) and got sugar for it. They charge 15 cts. a lb. for it so we got almost two lbs. of sugar.

Friday Feb. 28. After breakfast an order was given to be ready at 8 o'clock to go, all hands, with the horses harnessed in, the guns all ready, to Captain Griffin's Battery, to see if our names on the Pay Roll were all right, so we can be paid off.

We left camp at  $\frac{1}{2}$  past 8, cannoneers dismounted, and

we had to walk all the way, about six miles. On our way we passed Martin's Battery. It is a splendid battery. They have a new battery of six heavy guns of brass. Also passed through the 18th Mass., the 44th New York, 22d Mass., and the 9th Mass., Col. Cass's. After we arrived on the ground we were drawn up in line, and our names called off, upon which each man stepped three paces to the front. After the Roll was through we formed columns and, thank heaven, the order was given soon, 'Cannoneers Mount!' but those six miles were rough riding. I shall remember it for some time. At 3 in the afternoon went out for a mounted drill, stayed out one hour, then came in feeling awfully cold. It blows a perfect gale, and has for two days. A report in the camp that Gen. McClellan has the telegraph under his control so no news from the North can reach the South. (It had been the report until corrected, that letters could not go or come from the North for a week.) The mud is now most all dried up so in all probability there will be an advance made soon.

Saturday March 1. After breakfast went into the woods and cut some poles for a cook house, was called in at 9, and got ready for drill. After getting in the ranks I was informed that I must not turn out for I had been to work. This pleased me very much. It is quite cozy inside, but outside it blows a gale.

A news boy has just passed through the camp crying out: 'Another Fight! General Banks' Division Cut to Pieces!'—It went through me like a shudder, but I hope it is not true. . . . Now see how we are deceived. One of our men bought a paper, and in it was stated that the rebels were not within twenty-five miles of General Banks's pickets. So the boy made a good thing out of his papers, sold them for five cents a piece, and then left the camp.

I saw for the first time since we have been on this side, a white woman. Lieut. Kingsbury with his wife and two

other ladies, passed through our camp. They were all on horseback and looked splendid.

Got through working on the pickets about 4 in the afternoon. The men came in from drill about half an hour after. They were drilled by Captain Martin. We have lost another horse this day by lung fever."

Diary of Lieut. Phillips: "March 2, 1862. Orderly G. H. Johnson resigned. . . . Sergt. F. A. Lull promoted Orderly *vice* Johnson. W. H. Peacock promoted Chief of Piece *vice* Lull., Geo. H. Johnson appointed wagoner *vice* Peacock. Corp. M. W. Page promoted Sergt. *vice* Pattison. Corp. J. E. Spear promoted Gunner *vice* Page. Private C. C. Allen promoted Chief of Caissons *vice* Spear."

The Battery had four sergeants capable of handling it, viz., Johnson, Lull, Wm. B. Pattison, and O. B. Smith; they having served in the First Mass. Battery see p. 56 with the three months' men, and when the Battery commenced drilling under the tutelage of Lieut. Kingsbury and Sergt. Thomas Broderick, there was naturally a good deal of adverse criticism among the non-commissioned officers and many officers, see p. 528 where Captain Phillips appoints new privates. Non-commissioned officers are appointed by com-sergeants and corporals, and as a punishment they may be reduced to the ranks. In this case, for criticising the appointment of drill officers, Sergt. Wm. B. Pattison and Orderly Serg't. Geo. H. Johnson were reduced to the ranks.

February 9th, 1863, Wm. B. Pattison was again made sergeant in the place of Serg't O. B. Smith, promoted to Orderly Sergeant, and at Gettysburg, see p. 639, was in charge of No. 1. gun of the Right section commanded by Lieut. Scott.

Grows' Journal: "March 2, 1862, at 10 o'clock turned out for inspection of clothing. After the drivers' articles were examined viz. two red blankets, one curry comb, brush, sponge, watering bucket, bridle and halter, next came the cannoneers' turn.

After waiting an hour General Porter passed through the camp. Then we were dismissed to our quarters, and we were glad, for it had commenced to snow. After dinner orders came to clean up our tents, for they will be inspected tomorrow forenoon by the Captain. I expect it will be rough on account of the mud. We could not very well go out on account of the storm, so we all sat down around the fire, smoking and talking about different things, home, etc.

Monday March 3d. It is raining and hailing at times, making the travelling bad. Our wood being out we started for the woods and took some rails from a fence, broke them up, and they make a very hot fire. For the first time for a great while sat down to a game of euchre; played about an hour then went to work darning stockings. It was the first time I ever attempted it and I did make a dreadful job, but there is the first time for everything, so I took courage and on the second pair I did better than on the first; still they were sorrowful looking stockings, but we must put up with anything in war times!

After supper a box came for one of the men in the tent. In it were pies, cake, meats, &c., and, my goodness, how we put into them, and had a most glorious time. The pies were immense, and the cakes huge.

It is raining outside in torrents and it will be an awful night.

At Roll Call this afternoon at 5 o'clock, we were informed that our gunner Mason W. Page is appointed sergeant of the 3d. Detachment, Corporal Spear will take the place of Page, and C. C. Allen standard bearer of the 6th, will take the place of Spear. On account of its being so stormy there was no 8 o'clock Roll Call, and we were glad enough, for our tent began to leak awfully: so we pinned up our rubber blankets over our heads to keep from getting wet, and then we turned in. There is about an inch of water in our tent, but as most of our beds are built up from the ground we shall get along very well. Those who lie on



the ground will have rather wet quarters. There is a great difference between having a good roof over our heads as we have at home, and the thin covering of canvas which we have here. After all there is no place like home, no matter how humble."

Letter of Lieut. Phillips, March 4, 1862: "My section went out target shooting today. The guns were placed on the top of Hall's Hill, right in front of Captain Martin's camp, and we shot a little to the right of Falls Church.

This village consists of 8 or ten houses, and a little white meeting-house. We fired 77 shots at trees and stumps, at distances of 500, 700, 1700, and 2000 yards. Most of the shots were very good."

Grows' Journal: "Tuesday March 4th. Splendid morning. Ground frozen solid. Nice travelling. Called out at  $\frac{1}{2}$  past 9 for drill on gun. Stayed out one hour. Orders came after dinner for the drivers and cannoneers to turn out for a mounted drill. Went out and drilled one hour, and came in. The sun is out quite powerful and has started the mud so the travelling is quite bad, as the mud is about three inches deep and in some places it is a great deal worse.

We received orders this afternoon to prepare ourselves for a start inside of five days.

Wednesday March 5th. After breakfast I got a box and packed all my loose things that I did not need, and gave the box to the teamster to carry into the city, to be sent by Harnden's Express. We have had orders to have all the stuff that we cannot carry in our knapsacks sent home. We expect to make an advance to Budd's ferry to shell out two rebel batteries that are there.

A portion of the cannoneers were detailed to pack their ammunition chests, to be prepared so to turn out for drill. Was visited by John Mann the Hospital Warden of the Mass. 9th Regt. Had a pleasant time talking over our school-boy days. He stopped and took dinner with us of fresh beef and soup.

We were ordered out for drill at  $\frac{1}{2}$  past 3, with 10 rounds of blank cartridges in our chests. After we were mounted it began to blow and snow like fury and continued for about half an hour, then the clouds broke away, and the air began to be quite sharp. Went out on to the field and began to fire. Had considerable trouble with the horses on account of most of them never having been under fire before, but before we had fired all our rounds they began to cool down to their work considerable.

Came in at 4 o'clock. Helped the drivers unhitch, and then went to quarters. Sent ten loaves of spare bread over to the sutler, and received one pound of butter and five heads of tobacco. Had a good supper of bread and butter and coffee.

Two of the Detachments will go on to Vienna tomorrow or next day, for the purpose of protecting the Rail Road, which is being built. The rebels ripped up the track and built a large fire, and then heated the rails and bent them out of shape. The 9th Mass. Reg't. are out there on the same errand."

Letter of Lieut. Phillips, March 6, 1862:—

"We had a drill with the horses in the forenoon and afternoon, making considerable progress in artillery tactics. This afternoon while we were out drilling, General (John H.) Martindale's Brigade were drilling in the next field, making quite a show. They finally formed each regiment in a square with two guns,—Captain Martin's 12 pdrs.—in the intervals, and began shooting with blank cartridges in our direction. It struck me at the time that they looked very much as the enemy will when they begin shooting at that distance—1200 yards.

We fire with blank cartridges nearly every day, and the horses are getting used to the sound, though they jumped and kicked a great deal, when they first had to face the music. We have a few balky horses, that give us a little trouble once in a while, but they are gradually breaking in,

as they have to go along with four horses ahead of them, and it is of no use trying to break an artillery harness by kicking round. We get the news here in a very irregular manner. Some days we buy the New York papers at 5 cts. of some persevering newsman who makes a tour through the camp, but most of the time we have to trust to what is sent to us."

Grows' Journal: "Thursday March 6, 1862. Went to Roll Call at the usual hour. Am detailed for Rider on the Caissons, the swing team. Fed and watered the horses soon after. Went out to drill at 9, on the gun. After drilling one hour we were ordered to grease up and be ready for a start out. At  $\frac{1}{2}$  past 10 we were all harnessed, the cannoneers mounted, and the drivers standing 'To horse.' The order was given 'Mount'! and I did, and out we went for drill. As it has been some time since I was in a saddle, it seemed quite odd. Came in at 12. After dinner order was turn out for drill at 2 o'clock, so I got ready to turn out again. At 2 we started, and instead of being the swing team I was put on the lead of the caisson.

The off horse being a dangerous one I had to look out for him. After drilling about an hour, we began to fire blank cartridges. My team stood well. We limbered up, and in a short time the off horse began his airs, which means rearing up and throwing himself on the rear horse and by this means he can throw the Rider out of the saddle. On account of his actions I changed then into the swing team, in which he worked a great deal better. We then stayed out till 4, when we came in. On carrying our horses into the quarters, we found one of our horses dead. Had him opened, and found it was disease of the heart.

Harry Simonds was detailed to take some men and bury him.

Went to supper, and found that I was detailed for guard on the first relief, to go on immediately after the 5 o'clock

Roll. Went on my post, came off at 7, and turned in to sleep till 11 when I shall be called again.

Friday March 7th. Was called this morning at 5 to go on guard. At 6 the bugle sounded for the men to dress and come out for Roll. The time slipped away quite rapidly till 7 when I was relieved. By the new order that has been made, those that are detailed for guard are clear from all drill or other duty. So I pulled down my bed and turned in.

Saturday March 8th. The Battery went out for drill this forenoon, and came in at half past eleven. The men are rapidly improving in drill and the horses are becoming more used to the firing. Our pickets were driven in last night, and the 18th Mass. have gone out today. They expect to have a brush. We have heard today that we will have to move from here in a few days, but we cannot put much dependence on what we hear in camp."

Letter of Lieut. Phillips:—

"March 9, 1862: This has been the pleasantest day we have seen so far, warm and bright like a May day in Massachusetts. Under foot there is a little mud, though this is slowly drying up. In the forenoon we had an inspection of the Battery teams hitched, knapsacks packed, &c. The whole of General Martindale's Brigade are encamped on the top of Hall's Hill, in the following order:—

22d Mass. on the right, 2d Maine in the centre. 18th Mass. on the left, 3d Mass. Battery on the left of the 18th." . . .

#### A RIDE TO FALLS CHURCH.

"After this visit [a call on Captain Lewis E. Wentworth of the Sharpshooters attached to the 22d Reg't.] Hyde, Dillingham, and I started off on a ride to Falls Church, striking into a cart path in front of Captain Martin's Battery. After a long and crooked journey we struck into the Alexandria and Leesburg turnpike, just beyond the village

of Falls Church. This road we found in excellent condition, so we indulged our horses with a gallop through the village.

Falls Church, on our right, is a large square brick church, without steeple or anything to denote its character. There is also a little white church built just as they build them in New England. The village itself is quite a pleasant little place, particularly from its contrast with the fenceless, treeless, desolate region round our camp, and is the nearest approach to civilization we have seen for some time. After leaving the village we kept on over Upton's Hill, passing Mr. Upton's house on our left: on our right was a redoubt armed with some heavy siege guns, and some field pieces.

The 20th N. Y. S. M. are encamped around Mr. Upton's house.

From here we struck across country and soon came to what had once been a house but now nothing was left but the cellar. From appearances there must have been quite a place here once. We could still trace the bounds of the orchard and garden with walks and borders, flowers still growing, but all tangled and overgrown with weeds.

The well was choked with stumps as if somebody had played the part of the dog in the manger. After moralizing a little while on this, we kept on our way towards Hall's Hill, where we arrived in time to witness the Dress Parade of the 18th Mass."

Grows' Journal: "March 9th. A glorious morning. After breakfast took a walk around the stables. Found one of the horses dead, this making six we have lost since we have been here. Had 'inspection drill' with our knapsacks, canteens, and haversacks, and we got enough of it for about two hours. When we went into park we were dismissed for service. Had some singing and reading from the 8th chapter of Matthew.

When we were dismissed I immediately got a 'pass' to leave camp, and went to the 18th Mass., the 22d Mass.,

and the Irish Reg't. the 9th. Visited the spot where some soldiers were buried, took portions of the head stones and brought them along with me to camp.

Turned in at the usual hour, was called at 10 o'clock, and we were informed that we must get ready to make an advance in the morning. So we began to pack our knapsacks, fill our canteens, and clean up our 'boarding knives.' The cooks began to cook our rations for three days. The men all seemed anxious to go."



## CHAPTER VI.

### THE ADVANCE UPON RICHMOND.

"The despatches of a general . . . the safest sources from which the historian of a campaign can draw."

—GEORGE MEREDITH.

"Military despatches are often excellent reading—their very dryness and literalness in dealing with life and death, give them a special place in our literature."

—*Illustrated London News.*

It was expected that when the Division made a forward movement the Battery would go with it, but instead of that, Captain Allen received the following order:—

HEAD QUARTERS PORTER'S DIVISION  
HALL'S HILL VA.

March 10, 1862.

CAPT. ALLEN

Comd'g Battery E.

Mass. Artillery.

*Captain.*

The commanding General directs me to inform you that your Battery will not move with the Division, but will be held in readiness to move at a moment's notice.

Very respectfully

Yr Obt. Serv't

FRED T. LOCKE  
ass't adj. Gen'l.

Notes of Lieut. Scott:—"About the 9th of March the Army moved on to Manassas. The Fifth Mass. Battery was not ordered out on this movement. The men of the Battery were in an excited condition. The Battery was of no account, would never see any fighting, might as well go

home. The commander, Captain Geo. D. Allen called the men into line, and said he would show them what to do, and they would get all the fighting they wanted before they were out of it."

Grows' Journal:—"Monday morning March 10, 1862, a report came into camp for us to unpack our things, for we would not go with this advance. Oh how mad the men were! There were our horses all ready, bedding done up, and tents ready to strike the first thing in the morning. So, we unpacked our things and made up our beds again. I laid down, but could not sleep on account of the passing of baggage teams, cavalry, and regiments of infantry by our camp; gathering together so as to start early in the morning. There will be a smart fight when they meet the rebels. After breakfast went on to the hill to see the regiments and batteries start. It soon began to rain like fury, but the brave men did not heed it and cheer after cheer went up, as they passed.

Poor fellows! all of them will not return.

In a short time John Mann of the 9th came on horseback through our camp, on his way to Arlington for some ambulances for the wounded and sick. It now rains in torrents, the boys will have a hard day to march in, and when they get to their destination, which is supposed to be Manassas, if the rebels stand they will have a hard time there.

After dinner took rations in our haversacks, packed our knapsacks with one shirt, 1 pair drawers, 1 pair socks, a blanket—on the outside my rubber and other woolen blanket.

At precisely 2 o'clock the 'Assembly' sounded, and we turned out with knapsacks and equipments, marched to our pieces and lashed them on. The drivers hitched in and we stood 'cannoneers to posts,' and the drivers 'to horse,' and in this way we waited for three long hours for the order

to advance on Manassas, but the order did not come, so we were all dismissed to our quarters.

After supper went to the ammunition chests to see if they were packed right. Found everything in its place. Was told to get all the sleep I could, not knowing at what time I might be called, and to sleep with my arms, and what I had to carry, handy. The men all feel anxious to start.

Thursday, March 11. Found out that we would not be wanted to-day. At 8 o'clock we were called out for one hour's drill on the piece. Came in at half past 9. At 2 o'clock we hitched out and started out for drill. Stayed out till 5 o'clock, and the men were "put through a course of sprouts" that was astonishing to some of them, but it showed the men and officers that they had a great deal to learn. Artillery drill cannot be learnt in a month, or three months. The drivers have to understand their horses, the men on the piece their part, and the horses have to get accustomed to the firing, which some never get used to.

After supper news came into camp that our troops found Manassas evacuated. If this is true we will all be home in about a month."

#### THE PRESIDENT'S ORDER:

EXECUTIVE MANSION

WASHINGTON, March 11, 1862.

PRESIDENT'S WAR ORDER

No 3.

Major General McClellan having personally taken the field at the head of the Army of the Potomac until otherwise ordered, he is relieved from the command of the other military departments, he retaining command of the Department of the Potomac.

Ordered, That all the commanders of Departments, after the receipt of this order by them, respectively report severally and directly to the Secretary of War, and that prompt, full, and frequent reports will be expected of all and each of them.

ABRAHAM LINCOLN.

By Order of the Secretary of War,

L. THOMAS  
Adjutant General.

The next day General Porter telegraphed the following advice:—

UNITED STATES MILITARY TELEGRAPH

Received March 12, 1862.

FROM F (FAIRFAX) COURT HOUSE.

To Capt. Allen.

Improve every moment for instruction of your company. I expect soon to call for it. Get your supplies of Capt. Cole, at Ft. Corcoran, who is ordered to provide you.

F. J. PORTER

B. G.

### LETTER FROM LIEUT. PHILLIPS.

“HALL’S HILL March 12, 1862.

Last Monday morning the Army of the Potomac commenced its grand progress to Richmond, and at last accounts has passed over 25 miles or so of its journey. For some unexplained reason, but in obedience to orders, the Fifth (Mass.) Battery remained behind and are now supreme on Hall’s Hill. The tents are all left standing, and but for the unusual quiet we would suppose the army still here. The stillness which pervaded the air after the first bustle of departure, was quite startling, but at the same time quite pleasant. Yesterday was very warm and pleasant, the frogs and bluebirds have commenced to sing, and it looks as if spring had come at last.

Porter’s Division are now occupying Fairfax Court House, and expect,—so the postmaster of the 2d Maine told me,—to be ordered back.

The first to occupy Manassas, as I hear, were the 3d and 5th Penn. Cavalry who have been encamped between us and Fort Corcoran.

The latest rumor is that General Porter’s Division is to join General Burnside. Our Quartermaster reports a number of gunboats and passenger steamboats at the Arsenal in the City, so that it looks as if this were the case. The rebels have done pretty well at Norfolk. The attack of the

Merrimac shows more dash than I had given them credit for, though I do not see why they did not make a dash for the open sea where they could have done so much more harm."

---

Grows' Journal: "March 12, 1862. After breakfast I re-packed the shot and shell in the ammunition chests, and found that everything about the Gun was all right, then went to quarters. In about an hour went out to drill on the piece. Came in about 11 o'clock. Laid back for a smoke and a read. At 2 o'clock the call for the Battery to turn out was sounded, and as I thought a horse-back ride would do me good, I took a pair and went out, but I had to dismount and take my place on the Gun on account of the off horse being ugly. He is a condemned one and will be changed soon. Came into camp at 5 o'clock. After supper we were ordered to be ready at a minute's notice to go on to Fairfax to guard it, as it has been taken from the rebels. Five prisoners passed through our camp today on the way to Washington. They were taken yesterday. They were a sorrowful looking set. Our men are all in good spirits and first rate health. Two of the men were put on guard for three days for disobeying orders by laughing and talking after lights were out, it being the rule of the camp to have no noise in camp after the 'Taps.'

Thursday March 13, 1862: After dinner all the men turned out and cleaned up the Park. Had a good time collecting the brush and loose stuff together in large piles and setting fire to them. Stayed out about two hours."

---

The first formation of the Army of the Potomac was by "Divisions," under an order of October 15, 1861, but before active movements began in the spring of 1862, it was divided into Army Corps in accordance with the following General Order:—

HEADQUARTERS ARMY OF THE POTOMAC  
FAIRFAX C. H. VA. March 13, 1862.General Order  
No. 101

In compliance with the President's War Order No 2 of March 8, 1862, the active portion of the Army of the Potomac is formed into Army Corps as follows:

- 1st Corps. Major General Irvin McDowell to consist for the present, of the Divisions of Franklin, McCall and King.
  - 2d Corps. Brig. Gen. E. V. Sumner, Divisions Richardson, Blenker and Sedgwick.
  - 3d Corps. Brig. Gen. S. P. Heintzelman, Divisions F. J. Porter, Hooker, and Hamilton.
  - 4th Corps. Brig. Gen. E. D. Keyes, Divisions Couch, Smith and Casey.
  - 5th Corps. Maj. Gen. N. P. Banks, Divisions Williams and Shields.
- By command of

MAJOR GEN. McCLELLAN.  
A. V. COLBURN,  
A. A. G.

March 13, 1862, a council composed of Corps Commanders McDowell, Sumner, Heintzelman and Keyes, determined upon adopting Fortress Monroe as the base of operations for the movement upon Richmond. General Fitz John Porter's command was assigned to the Third Army Corps, and placed first in the order of Divisions.

The artillery attached to this Division was Battery D, 5th U. S. Captain Charles Griffin, Third Mass. Battery, Captain Augustus P. Martin, Battery C, 1st R. I. Captain William B. Weeden, Fifth Mass. Battery, Captain Geo. D. Allen.

Lt. Col. Wm. H. Powell says in his history of the Fifth Corps:—"Captains Weeden, Martin and Allen were able pupils and co-workers under such a chief as Griffin," and Lt. Charles A. Phillips said at the time that Rhode Island shared with Massachusetts pre-eminence in Volunteer Artillery.



## THE GUNS.

Captain Griffin had six 10 pdr. Parrotts.

Captain Martin had six Light 12 pdrs.

Captain Weeden had six 3 in. Rifled Iron Guns.

Captain Allen had six 3 in. Rifled Iron Guns.

Each Division had the same artillery.

In the organization of the Army of the Potomac the Regiment was the unit. Four Regiments constituted a Brigade, and three Brigades a Division. Each Division had four batteries, three served by volunteers and one by regulars; the captain of the latter commanding the entire artillery of the Division. The regulars were not distributed, but were kept together in Divisions by themselves.

It has been said that in the constitution of this Army McClellan's intimate acquaintance with European tactics became of very great value and assistance. General Wm. F. Barry in his report states that the whole of the field artillery of the Division of the Potomac July 25th, 1861, when General McClellan was appointed to the command, was comprised in nine imperfectly equipped batteries of 30 guns, 650 men, and 400 horses. In March 1862, after an interval of seven months it consisted of 92 batteries, 520 guns, 12,500 men and 10,000 horses. Of the whole force 62 batteries belonged to the Volunteer service.

## McCLELLAN'S ADDRESS TO THE ARMY.

HEADQUARTERS ARMY OF THE POTOMAC

FAIRFAX COURT HOUSE, VA.

March 14, 1862.

*Soldiers of the Army of the Potomac:*

For a long time I have kept you inactive, but not without a purpose. You were to be disciplined, armed, and instructed. The formidable artillery you now have had to be created. Other armies were to move and accomplish certain results. I have held you back that you might give the death-blow to the rebellion that has distracted our once happy country. The patience you have shown, and your confidence in your

General, are worth a dozen victories. These preliminary results are now accomplished. I feel that the patient labors of many months have produced their fruits. The Army of the Potomac is now a real Army, —magnificent in materiel, admirable in discipline and instruction, excellently equipped and armed. Your commanders are all that I could wish. The moment for action has arrived, and I know that I can trust in you to save our country. As I ride through your ranks I see in your faces the sure presage of victory: I feel that you will do whatever I ask of you. The period of inaction is passed. I will bring you now face to face with the rebels and only pray that God may defend the right. In whatever direction you may move, however strange my actions may appear to you, ever bear in mind that my fate is linked with yours and that all I do, is to bring you where I know you wish to be, —on the decisive battle field. It is my business to place you there. I am to watch over you as a parent over his children, and you know that your General loves you from the depths of his heart. It shall be my care, as it has ever been, to gain success with the least possible loss, but I know that if it is necessary, you will willingly follow me to our graves, for our righteous cause.

God smiles upon us, victory attends us. Yet I would not have you think that our aim is to be attained without a manly struggle. I will not disguise it from you. You have brave foes to encounter, foemen well worthy of the steel that you will use so well. I shall demand of you great, heroic exertions, rapid and long marches, desperate combats, privations, perhaps. We will share all these together; and when this sad war is over, we will all return to our homes, and feel that we can ask no higher honor than the proud consciousness that we belonged to the Army of the Potomac.

GEO. B. McCLELLAN,  
Major General Commanding.

## THE PENINSULA OF VIRGINIA.

The Peninsula of Virginia lies between the James and York Rivers; which, running nearly parallel from the northwest, empty into Chesapeake Bay.

Fortress Monroe occupies the extremity of the Peninsula, and is connected with the main portion only by a narrow sand beach. See p. 109. The extreme length, from the fort to a line drawn between Richmond and West Point, is about 60 miles, the average breadth about 12. At Yorktown, twenty miles up the river it is narrowed to 8 miles, which width remains the same as far as Williamsburg where the

rivers begin to diverge. The land is flat and low, covered with swampy forests.

Yorktown was a dilapidated village of about 50 houses. The only tavern in the place, situated on a bluff, the highest point of land on the Peninsula below Richmond, was called the Nelson House and was originally owned by Governor Thomas Nelson. The bulk of the Confederate force lay at and near Centreville and Manassas, drawing its supplies mainly from Richmond by way of the Orange and Alexandria railroad. On hearing of the order for the Federal forces to move upon Richmond by the way of the Peninsula, the Confederate general Beauregard called back his corps of observation, who occupied the works at Centreville, destroyed the bridges over Bull Run, and falling back on Manassas which he evacuated on the 10th of March, burned everything which he could not carry away.

The Army of the Potomac commenced its march on the 10th as stated, but they went no farther than Centreville, General McClellan with his escort fording Bull Run and riding on to Manassas, found it as anticipated an abandoned ruin.

### THE PLAN OF CAMPAIGN.

In the plan of the Peninsula campaign, Richmond was to be reached by the way of Yorktown and West Point. The first object was to capture Yorktown by a combined naval and military attack, then to establish West Point, about 25 miles from Richmond, as the new base.

Centreville was a village of a few straggling houses built along a ridge at the confluence of the Warrenton turnpike, which runs west and crosses Bull Run at the Stone Bridge, and another southwest crossing Bull Run at Blackburn's Ford, leading direct to Manassas Junction three miles beyond Bull Run, and connecting by cross-roads with the different fords above and below.

The works at Centreville and Manassas were laid out by the Confederate general Beauregard. At Centreville they consisted of two lines. One faced east, a mile and three-quarters long, the other, two miles long, faced north. In both were 13 distinct forts connected by "infantry parapets," double caponnières (covered lodgements) and "redans" (portions of the fortification included in single salient angles). There were embrasures for 71 guns. On a high hill commanding the rear of both lines, was a large "redoubt" (an isolated fort defensible on all sides) with 10 embrasures. Manassas was defended in all directions by a system of detached works, with platforms for heavy guns, arranged for massive carriages and connected by "infantry parapets"; the system being rendered complete by a very large work with 16 embrasures commanding the highest of the other works by about 50 feet. The works at Manassas had been mounted with guns. Those at Centreville had been merely laid out; but no heavy artillery had been placed in them, and for weeks they had been occupied only by a corps of observation ready to fall back upon any alarm.

### MANASSAS JUNCTION.

The Orange and Alexandria Railroad runs southwest through the flat Potomac region for 27 miles, when it meets the Manassas Gap Railroad which runs west for 50 miles to Strasburg in the valley of the Shenandoah River, then south for 20 miles down the valley. The place where these two roads, the Orange and Alexandria and the Manassas Gap Railroad meet is high ground, and is called Manassas Junction. There was a station, merely, with a few scattering houses. From Manassas which was considered the key of the direct route to the south, the distance to Washington was about 30 miles.

Southwest of Manassas Junction at Warrenton Junction

a branch road run to Warrenton. At Rappahannock Station the train crossed the Rappahannock River on the way to Culpeper Court House, passed over the Rapidan River to Orange Court House and still farther southwest to Lynchburg via Gordonsville and Charlottesville.

---

Grows' Journal: "Friday March 14, 1862. At  $\frac{1}{2}$  past 8 went out for drill. Came in at 10, and then went to work packing ammunition chests, so if we are called we will be all ready to start. I do not think we will go until we are better drilled. If we do it will be to guard the place. Had dinner of 'Duff' and molasses with water to drink. It tasted first rate, but there was not enough of it, so we have been promised some for dinner tomorrow. At 2 o'clock we went out for drill, the men on the guns dismounted. Had a good drill. A slight accident happened to Harry Simonds. While we were firing his horse reared up and fell over on him, jamming his side, but in a short time he was able to mount his horse again, and take care of his Detachment.

Came in after drilling about two hours. We fired 17 rounds of blank cartridges. The men are improving in drill very fast. Am detailed for guard tonight on the 3d relief the worst one there is to be on. Laid down to get some rest but could not sleep there was so much noise. Was called at 9 o'clock to go on guard. It began to rain. It is a rough night. While on guard about 8000 cavalry passed our camp. It was a splendid sight. They were returning from Manassas and Centreville. The rebels have left the place in a hurry. They had wooden guns mounted in place of cannon, to deceive our troops. Came in at 11 from guard, made a fire in the tent and turned in."

#### MARCHING ORDERS.

Friday night at 12 o'clock March 14, 1862, the Fifth Mass. Battery received their orders.

"We are ordered to move on Sunday, tomorrow," wrote



Lieut. Phillips on the 15th, "to Cloud's Mills, near Alexandria, with three days' cooked rations. We shall have two wagons and as little baggage as possible. One tent is allowed for the officers, the men sleeping under the tarpaulins which cover the guns and caissons. I saw Adjutant Sherwin [Thomas Sherwin Jr.] of the 22d Mass. last night, and he said that they were breaking up camp and expecting to move this morning. Part of their baggage is on the steamboat at Alexandria. Sherwin reports that the whole of Porter's Division embark at Alexandria for some unknown destination perhaps to reinforce Burnside. A long train of wagons went by here last night bound to Washington. All the sick have been sent to Washington. The two Pennsylvania Cavalry regiments which were the first to enter Manassas returned to their camp last night, and expect to leave soon in some other direction. After receiving our marching orders it set in for the hardest rain storm of the season, and we have been making our preparations with a most dismal prospect ahead. Rations were cooked, knapsacks packed, tents, camp equipage &c. invoiced and turned over to the U. S. Quartermaster at Fort Corcoran.

I sent my trunk home, packed my knapsack and saddlebags, hung my feed bag on my saddle, and made all my preparations.

In the mean time the rain continued, the park was all afloat, and our tent nearly so. Somehow the water found an entrance at our front door, and soon we had a small brook running across the floor, and out at the back door. To prevent this making it too muddy, we confined it to a narrow channel, and Scott and I by way of variety whittled out some water wheels which were soon running merrily. Meanwhile both night and rain were falling, and the rations were all cooked, and their delivery commenced. Before this was completed, however, up rode an orderly with new orders to delay our departure till further orders, as the roads were impassable." At the close of this letter Phillips



refers to being "the other day out target shooting" with his "revolver."

---

Grows' Journal: "Saturday March 15, 1862. Was called at 3 this morning to go on guard. Made out after a fashion to worry out the two hours till 5 o'clock when I was relieved and went to my quarters and laid down, but could not sleep, as the Bugle sounded at 6 the 'Reveille.' Went on again at 9, was relieved at 11 o'clock. At 3, was called to go on my beat. I stayed on about an hour, and then I had to knock under and go to my tent. Stayed in and packed my knapsack, for we have been ordered to break camp at 4 tomorrow morning, to start for Alexandria. . . . The men were called into line soon after and told to have their knapsacks ready and fill our haversacks with two days' rations, and fill our canteens with water. We had just got all our things ready when word came that we would not start tomorrow on account of the rain. We were pleased, for it would be a rather disagreeable march in the rain, but we expect to go Monday or Tuesday. After putting our things away, we began to see how we could fix our beds so that we could sleep. About three inches of water in our tent and the canvas leaks like fury. We pinned our rubber blankets up over the beds, made them up, turned in, and then laid rubber blankets over them, and in this way we went to bed, the rain pouring in torrents on our beds.

Sunday March 16. We now think we will not start before Tuesday. We expect to go to Sewall's Point off Fortress Monroe. About  $\frac{1}{2}$  past 4 a message came, informing us that we will not start tomorrow. About 5 the Battery were called together for Sunday services. The singing sounded splendid. The Captain (Allen) read the 9th chapter of Matthew and then closed the service.

Monday, March 17th. Our Orderly Sergeant went at 4 o'clock this morning to Fairfax Court House to receive

some orders, but as yet we do not know what they are. At Roll Call at 5 o'clock we were informed that we would break camp in the morning to proceed to Alexandria and there take boats to go somewhere, but where we do not know."

### THE EMBARKATION.

On March 17th, 1862, the Army of the Potomac commenced the embarkation, leaving 70,000 men for the defense of Washington.

On the 18th, the Fifth Mass. Battery left camp at Hall's Hill, and marched to join Porter's Division which after making its advance on Manassas had turned back to Alexandria Heights.

They marched via Ball's and Bailey's Cross Roads, and arrived about 2 p. m. at "Camp California," near Alexandria, Va., and midway between Fairfax Seminary and Fort Ellsworth. Here they pitched their camp with only one tent, all outside of that depending for shelter upon rubber blankets, and prepared for embarking, destination unknown. Troops were all around them and Griffin's and Martin's Batteries were close by. The 83d. Penn., which was next to them at Hall's Hill was next them there.

Grows' Journal: "Tuesday March 18, 1862. A fine feeling morning. Had a light breakfast of coffee and bread, then lashed our knapsacks on the pieces, leaving our tents, and other articles such as stoves, behind, for we cannot carry them.

At 9 o'clock this morning the order was given, 'Forward!' and the first step was taken in the march, for we had to walk all the way, 9 miles. We took the road to Alexandria, and by mistake went some four miles out of the way. . . . On the way we had in some places to build up parts of the road where it had been washed away. The roads here are in a very bad state, but are a great deal better than they

have been. At 3 in the afternoon we struck the ground where we are to stop tonight, about  $1\frac{1}{2}$  miles from the city of Alexandria.

After eating a little, and getting cleaned up, for we were very dusty, we began to make some preparations for sleeping, but as we have no tents, we stuck one covering of the gun up on poles, crawled in under, laid on the ground, and soon got to sleep.

Wednesday, March 19. Got up feeling quite sore and stiff. As we had nothing to eat, I went over to Martin's Battery and got some fried potatoes, some good white bread and about a quart of nice, hot coffee. About  $\frac{1}{2}$  past 9 our quartermaster got some coffee for the men. Soon after we were called out to drill. Stayed out about an hour, and then we had to wash the carriages and pieces, which took us till dinner time. Had dinner of hard bread and water. This afternoon began fixing for a place to sleep; arranged a bed for a fellow named Joe Knox and myself. Had supper of hot coffee and hard bread. Was put on guard to take care of one of our drivers' horses."

#### FROM LETTERS OF LIEUT. PHILLIPS.

"The hills and valleys are covered with camps, most of them, like our own, supplied with very scant equipage. We have one tent for the officers, which at the present moment contains all five, getting along very comfortably. Scott is writing a letter on the same box as I, and the Captain (Allen) is cutting a quill preparatory to doing the same thing. The men have pitched the tarpaulins between the carriages, making three tents to hold fifty apiece, so that they get along as well as we do. We expect to embark within two days for some great expedition. General Sumner's Division went down today, and several more are waiting to go. Where we shall bring up I do not know, but

from the preparations going on the expedition must be intended to finish the Rebellion.

Large quantities of provisions have been sent lately to Fortress Monroe, which would look like an attack upon Richmond up the James or York River, or we may be going to join Burnside.

Last night we went on a serenading excursion. The 44th N. Y. [Ellsworth Avengers] to which we have been assigned for hospital purposes, have taken great interest in our Battery. The hospital is in a house close to our camp owned by a Mr. Osborne. In the evening we got together the musical crowd, and went up to the house with a band of an accordeon and a banjo. We were invited in and got some apples and cakes. Then we had a little music and adjourned to the kitchen for a clog dance by Mr. Joseph Clark, banjo player and clog dancer for the Battery.

After a few jigs and breakdowns we went home and went to bed.

Mr. Osborne is quite a brick, a very strong union man. At one time the rebel pickets occupied the bushes across the road in front of his house, and used to blaze away at him at every opportunity. He offered to sell his hay to the government, but they thought it too dangerous to send wagons after it, so he carted it himself, exposed all the while to the rebel fire. His wagon was hit several times but he escaped.

Thursday evening March 20, 1862, Alexandria Heights: The 3d Michigan moved up close by us yesterday being ordered to get as near Alexandria as possible. Fort Ellsworth, as near as I can make out, is a square bastioned fort like Fort Corcoran, rather larger, constructed strictly according to theoretical rules.

We are encamped on a little hill, the one tent being pitched on the summit. For this purpose we picked out the tightest tent in camp, the one which I have always had, and inside of this are the jolliest crowd of officers that can be found. Our baggage is limited, but we get on without.

Captain Allen occupies the back of the tent on a bedstead which we have managed to bring so far, Hyde and Dillingham make up their bed on one side, while Scott and I make up ours on the other.

Two rubber blankets constitute the foundations, then come our bed sacks filled with hay, and our blankets finish off. We get along first rate though we pull off the blankets a great deal. The principal article of furniture is the company desk which was put in here as there was no other tent to put it in: coats, sabres, haversacks, canteens, dishes, valises, knapsacks, boxes, saddles, opera glasses, &c &c. On the whole we are pretty full. The men have quite a variety of substitutes for tents. Some take the tarpaulins which cover the guns: each of which is large enough to accommodate 10 or 15 men; some use their rubber ponchos [rubber blankets with holes in the middle] which make a very good pleasant weather tent. Each poncho is about 5 ft. by 4, and four of them make a tent large enough to hold four men lying or sitting. This is the prevalent style of tent round here: the 83d Penn. between us and the Fort, are quartered in them, also the 3d Michigan on the other side of us. The 17th New York are encamped just beyond the 83d Penn., with the same accommodations. We received yesterday the news of the capture of Newberne.

Lt. Kingsbury seems to have left us. When the advance was made last week he was ordered to join his Battery and has been with them ever since. When we came here he was over here for about five minutes and that is all. It rained all last night and all today, and the General Commanding has authorized us to issue a ration of whiskey to the men, which has accordingly been done, without any bad effects as far as I have seen.

Martin's Battery have been encamped with Martindale's brigade, Weeden's with Morell's, and we have had most to do with the 44th N. Y. (Ellsworth's Avengers) a fine regiment who led the advance at Manassas.



Captain Griffin has been appointed Chief of Artillery for the Division. I hear that Porter's Battery [First Mass. Lt. Art'y] in Franklin's Division, and McDowell's Corps (1st) are to embark today, and the General Order No. 101, ordered the whole of a corps to be kept together, so at least two corps are going on the proposed expedition. The number of troops right round here is estimated anywhere from 20,000 to 150,000.

At present we are living not very luxuriously, making up our beds on the ground, and eating hard tack and salt pork."

---

Grows' Journal: "Thursday, March 20, 1862. Was awakened by the rain this morning. Found my hair quite wet from the rain falling on my head during the night. Some of the men had to sit up all night on account of the rain, for all the tents we have is a piece of canvas laid upon two poles, and the water runs under like a sluiceway. Had dinner of fresh beef and potatoes, after which I went to Porter's Battery."

About 8 a. m. of Friday, March 21st they marched to Alexandria Va., and waited in the street until 3 p. m. for the Fourth R. I. Battery to embark, then commenced putting their guns on board the same propeller, the "A. H. Bowman." About six p. m. they were ready to load the horses on the schooners "Louisa Reed" and "Ida De la Torre." This was accomplished about 10 o'clock and after taking on some of the horses they were to have from the 18th Mass. Regt. to complete their number, they found quarters for themselves on board a canal boat which was loaded with the baggage of the two batteries.

Grows' Journal: "Friday March 21, 1862. Were called at 6 and ordered to pack our knapsacks and be ready to start at 8 o'clock. Went to work on empty stomachs. Got two days' rations in our haversacks. Marched on foot 9



miles to that nest of secession Alexandria. Waited till 2 in the afternoon before we got aboard. While here I visited the Marshall House, where Ellsworth was killed by Jackson. This is a hard looking place. Our Battery was joined by Griffin's, Martin's and the Rhode Island Fourth. We all got aboard and I turned in under one of the guns, using the sponge staff for a pillow, and the deck for a bed. Was called at 11 o'clock to go on guard on the barge which had all our stores on. How it did rain! Stood up against the mast. On account of the corporal being sick I called my man at 1 o'clock."

## THE SAILING OF THE FLEET.

### NOTES OF LIEUT. PHILLIPS.

"March 22, 1862, at 4 a. m., Scott and I had to get up and look after some new horses which we have received from the 18th Mass. Regt. By daylight we got them all on board, and with the rest of the fleet dropped into the stream.

Captain Allen and Lt. Hyde went on the propeller, Lt. Dillingham on the 'Ida De la Torre,' Scott on the canal boat, and I on the 'Louisa Reed.'

After a good deal of backing and filling the fleet got ready to start. There are some 96 vessels in all. About 12 o'clock we started, the flagship 'Daniel Webster' leading the way.

We had been assigned a place near the head of the column, but the 'A. H. Bowman' being unable to keep it, soon fell behind. The 'Bowman' towed the two schooners, the 'Ida De la Torre' on the starboard, the 'Louisa Reed' on the larboard side. The 'Hero' took the canal boat, with our baggage, and went out of sight in a very short time. Dillingham has charge of one schooner and I of the other, Captain Allen and Lt. Hyde look after the steamer, and Scott has gone off in the canal boat. The 'Bowman' is so

slow that we have dropped behind everything. I quarter in the captain's state room and the men sleep on the hay in the hold. The fare on board is good and we have a jolly time.

At night we anchored in the Potomac river. The next day all went well, beautiful weather and the whole fleet ahead of us.

Before daylight on the 24th we anchored off Fortress Monroe. While waiting to disembark I took the schooner's boat and rowed round the Monitor. As soon as we came in sight of the fort I commenced looking for the Monitor, and pretty soon I espied a puff of smoke, and a box on a raft, lying up in the Roads among the fleet.

We rowed round close to her and I counted some 20 shot marks all over her, five or six in the turret, some of them very near the portholes, and the rest along her sides. The one which had made the most impression struck about three feet from the bows near the upper edge of the side, and dented in the side plate about two inches, started the rivets and knocked up the deck plate. The other shots had made more or less impression: those which struck the middle of the plates merely denting them an inch or so, and those which struck near the edges, driving in the plates and starting the rivets, breaking the heads off. However, no serious damage was done.

About noon we had our Battery landed and took up our line of march. Passing by Fortress Monroe we kept on over the bridge to the main land, and on through what was once the main street of Hampton, but now only a road between ruined houses. For half a mile the road was lined with walls and chimneys, but only two whole houses were in sight. Just beyond the village we came to General Porter's Head Quarters; then we passed the camp of General Porter's and Hamilton's Divisions. Still on we kept, till we came to Captain Martin's battery encamped in a large field on the right of the road. Here we turned in and pitched our camp. A deserted and ruined house furnished

us with firewood and flooring and soon our camp fires were blazing merrily.

Nims Battery, (Ormand F. Nims) Mass. Art'y, is two miles back, but nobody is in front of us, save a few pickets. We start again tomorrow, to fight or not, who knows?

Captain Griffin's Battery arrived soon after we did, and Captain Weeden's has just come. We have a pleasant camping ground, level as a barn floor. The camp fires and the variety of tents give quite a picturesque appearance to the scene. The rest of the Division is a mile back of us."

The little village of Hampton referred to by Lieut. Phillips, was burned by Magruder, on seeing in a northern newspaper that the Federal forces contemplated occupying the town as winter quarters, to prevent its falling into the hands of General Benjamin F. Butler.

From his Head Quarters on the Back River road he designated four companies, two of infantry and two of cavalry, to proceed there at night. Each company fired one-quarter of the town as divided at the cross streets, and it soon became one mass of flames.

The Monitor was launched on the 30th of January 1862, and was lost in a gale off Cape Hatteras the 30th day of December, just eleven months after she was launched.

Grows' Journal: "Saturday March 22, 1862. Went into the wheel house and tried to get a little sleep but could not, the roof leaked like a sieve. I was about wet through. At last daylight came and I was very hungry. I went aboard a barge alongside and got the cook to give me a cup of coffee, which put new life into me. At 9 in the forenoon we were under way. The men were on the steamer 'A. H. Bowman' having two schooners with the horses aboard in tow. They lead the way. Myself and 8 others were left to guard the barge as all the provisions are on this boat. So I shall live well enough.

It was a sight to see. Thirty-thousand men embarked and sailed down the river together. The 'Nellie Baker' of

Boston, is one of the boats carrying troops. As soon as we got well under way we began to look around for something to eat. I got some sugar, bread, coffee, and beans, and we had a glorious time, 8 of us, sitting down to a breakfast of stewed beans, hot coffee, bread and butter.

I went down between decks, and made up a splendid place to sleep when night came.

On the trip down the river we passed several old rebel batteries, also Mount Vernon the home of Washington. The view on the Potomac is splendid. Also passed Fort Washington and were loudly cheered by the men. . . . The freight boats were the 'Herald' one barge and schooner in tow, 'Savage' one schooner, 'Hero,' one boat, one barge, 'Propeller' two schooners, 'Curlew' one schooner and one barge, 'A. H. Bowman' two schooners in tow. Four U. S. gunboats and one tug accompanied the expedition.

Sunday, March 23d. We are anchored in Hampton Roads in sight of Fortress Monroe. The celebrated iron steamer 'Monitor' is near us. She is being repaired. She was some hurt in the conflict with the 'Merrimac.' Had hot coffee and hard bread and 'scouse' for breakfast. We can see with a glass the rebel flag on the other side. Had hot biscuit, flap-jacks, and hot coffee for supper.

Monday, March 24th. About 9 this morning, our men in the steamer began to land. Some of them came aboard, and they told us that they were about starved. Made some coffee for them, and got some raw salt pork, and, my lord! how they did eat. Three more boat loads came alongside and we fed them.

Some of us took a boat and went alongside of the 'Monitor.' She is a very peculiar looking craft being only 15 inches out of water but drawing 9 feet of water. She is cased with steel plates five inches thick. She carries two guns, 184 pounders, in a revolving tower on deck. There are several more vessels of the same kind under way and will soon be completed.

At half past one I landed on the wharf at Fortress Monroe, and began to help unload the guns. At 3 o'clock the Bugle sounded 'Forward!' and we began our march for our camp ground for the night. Passed through the once flourishing place of Hampton. There is nothing left now but blackened walls and ruins. . . . Some of the ruins left show marks of once being splendid buildings. We are quite near the enemy, and our orders are to advance to Yorktown. The Division I am in consists of 125,000 men. Arrived at our camp ground about sundown, and began to make and pitch our tents for the night. We take two 'poncho' rubber blankets and put them together, and make a tent large enough for two to sleep in; Joe Knox and myself sleeping together.

Tuesday morning March 25th. About  $\frac{1}{2}$  past 8 the order came to advance. Struck our little tents, and at 9 were ready to start, but had to wait for 5,000 infantry to pass. At half past 10 we began our march forward, and arrived at our destination in about an hour. We are now stationed to guard the bridge connecting Hampton and Newmarket. This bridge has been the bone of contention between the rebels and our troops for some time. In case our troops are driven back we can shell the enemy back. There are now five rebel Regiments within  $2\frac{1}{2}$  miles of us. We have received orders not to leave our camp ground, but be on the lookout all the time, for on the sight of any armed men coming down the road, we are to fire on them. Our pieces are all loaded, and when we turn in at night, we are allowed to take off only our jackets and boots, so we can be ready, in case of an alarm in the night. One of our men left camp this afternoon, and was fired upon by one of our pickets for crossing the line; the way he came into camp was a caution. Have heard considerable firing during the day. It has been a glorious day. Have had to throw off jackets and go around in our shirt sleeves, it has been so warm. Went to Roll Call at 8, and a more splendid sight



I never saw than the camp was, lit up with large fires. We have plenty of wood and water. There was a large 'Secesh' house near by when we arrived here this morning, but to-night there is nothing left but the chimney. The men and officers have used the lumber for tent floors and fuel."

#### LETTERS OF THOMAS E. CHASE.

Of the fleet and the march Chase wrote at Hampton, Va., in letters of March 25th and 26th 1862:

"The scene on the river on Saturday morning was a grand spectacle; to see such a *monstrous* fleet of steamers and transports, all laden with troops and munitions of war is a rare sight. Guns of every calibre were snugly stowed on board, whole deck loads of horses packed together as snug as they could stand, and thousands of infantry and cavalry were crowded together on the decks, and in every nook and corner of the vessels. When I used to go down to the end of Liverpool wharf to see the trim little 'Nelly Baker,' and the 'Nantasket,' crowded with passengers on a pleasant excursion, little did I think that I should ever **see** them steaming down the Potomac loaded with soldiers bound for active service, and your humble servant Tom in the same fix, but it was so, and she looked as gay and trim as ever. We passed the deserted fortifications of the rebels on the Potomac, but saw no one except a few men from Hooker's Division who now occupy the forts. On our way to camp, we passed through the town of Hampton, which was burned by the rebels last summer, and truly it is a sad sight, to see nothing but the chimneys and charred ruins of a large and well built town. All, or nearly all, the houses were built of brick, and the town has the appearance of a small city, I should think nearly as large as Haverhill, Mass. I have read and heard of the destruction of property that this war has caused, but never realized it before. Here we see it. This morning we were ordered to pack up and



prepare for a march with the Division. We all packed up and wrote home, and expected to meet the rebels. We did not go more than half a mile, when we were ordered 'in Battery' near a turn in the road, and but a few rods from the Newmarket Bridge. Our guns command the road and bridge, and we are to guard it until further orders. Captain Allen told us that we might remain here only three hours, or we might stop here three days, and possibly three weeks. We are to await further orders whether sooner or later. The weather is delightful here. Some of the plants and the peach trees are in bloom, and the trees and shrubbery are fast leafing out, the spring birds have come, and 'the voice of the turtle is heard in the land.' Every move that we now make gains new comforts for us. There are a number of secesh houses which we have kindly volunteered to 'clean out,' and all our tents have good board floors. We have this day torn down and carried away a whole house. Of course it had been deserted, and it did not take us but a few hours to confiscate it: 150 soldiers make short work of tearing down a secesh house. A part of our supper was cooked tonight over the burning remains of the house that we commenced on in the morning, and every tent has a separate fire-place made of the brick thereof. . . . They are putting up a new line of telegraph as fast as the Army moves. (26th) We are ordered to pack up again this morning. . . . What a way to live! not to know one day where we are to 'board' the next, and only 'take rooms' for one night, but when the weather is fine I rather like it, it is not so monotonous as lying in camp in a mud hole, with nothing to do. Now we have to build and furnish a new house every day. . . . I hope you will excuse my bad writing and paper, for I have been in every position, while writing, except standing on my head, but I am going to practice at that."

## FROM THE DIARY OF LIEUT. PHILLIPS.

"Tuesday March 25th, 1862: In front of the enemy at last. About nine o'clock Captain Weeden's Battery and ours advanced half a mile to the edge of the river. Butterfield's and Martindale's brigades are encamped close around us.

Our guns are 'in Battery' commanding Newmarket Bridge. I went over the bridge this forenoon. Our outside pickets are between our Battery and the river, about 30 yards in front of our guns."

## PICKET DUTY.

It was one of the prescribed rules to be strictly observed, that an army in camp or on the march should always throw between itself and the supposed position of the enemy an advanced guard for the purpose of observing his movements and position, as well as keeping him in ignorance of the state of our own forces.

General Order No. 69, Head Quarters Army of the Potomac, dated Washington Feb. 25, 1862, has the following sketch of duties in camp:

"Each Brigade will furnish daily the guard for its own front, connecting with the guards of the Brigades on its right and left. Each guard will be under the direction of a Field Officer of the Day, to be detailed at Brigade Headquarters. Senior Captains may be added to the roster of field officers for field officers of the day when necessity requires.

The guards of each Division will be under the direction of a General Officer of the Day, who shall receive his orders directly from the Division Commander. Colonels will be added to the roster of General Officers for this duty.

Brigade commanders may be excused from serving on this detail.

## SUPPORTS AND RESERVES.

Each guard shall consist of a line of sentinels called Pickets, of a line of Supports, from which the sentinels are furnished for the front

of the Brigade, and of a Reserve, posted in the following manner:—The Reserve will occupy a commanding position, and be stationed about a mile or a mile and a half in front of the main body of the Brigade.

The Supports, two or more, as the nature of the ground and the length of the lines may require, will be thrown about one mile further to the front. They will be placed in such positions as easily to communicate with each other and with the Reserves, and as near the avenues of approach from the front as practicable.

From these Supports the line of Pickets is thrown out about two hundred yards to the front.

As, upon the position of this line, and the manner in which the Pickets perform their duty, the safety of the entire Army depends, no pains must be spared to ensure their being properly posted and instructed in their duties: and the utmost vigilance must be observed to enforce a proper performance of them.

The line will be formed by posting groups of three men each: these groups to be not more than 150 yards apart, and much closer when the nature of the ground or the attitude of the enemy requires. These groups will keep up constant communication with each other: which will be readily accomplished by one man of each group walking half way to the group on his left; another half way to the group on his right, thus always leaving one of the three at the original station. None of the men stationed on this line will be allowed to sit or lie down on their post, nor will they quit their arms, or relax the vigilance of faithful sentinels, by day or night. These Pickets will be relieved every two hours, and being furnished by the Supports, the latter will be divided into three reliefs for this purpose. The Supports will be relieved from the Reserve every six hours.

The Reserve will also furnish a line of sentinels to communicate with the Supports, as well as a line communicating with the Headquarters of the Brigade. The sentinels on these lines will be posted within easy call of each other, so that intelligence may be passed from the Pickets to the Camp with the utmost celerity. They are to be relieved every two hours, and while on post must keep constantly on the alert, never being allowed to sit or lie down.

The duties of the Pickets are to keep a vigilant watch over the country in front, and over the movements of the enemy, if in sight: to prevent all unauthorized persons from passing in or out of the lines, and to arrest all suspicious individuals. In case of an attack, they will act as a line of skirmishers, and hold their ground to the last moment. If forced to retire, they will slowly close their intervals, and fall back upon their Supports.

The Supports, being placed in strong positions, will hold themselves in readiness to receive the Pickets, and repel an attack, retiring in good order upon the Reserve, when unable any longer to hold their ground.

One relief of the Supports will be allowed to sleep. One must constantly be on the alert. One commissioned officer must also be up and awake at all hours.

No fires will be allowed on the line of Supports, or outside the line of Reserves. Any fires found burning will be promptly extinguished.

The Reserves, stationed in a strong position, and one which commands, as far as practicable, all approaches to the camp, shall be of sufficient strength to check the advance of the enemy, thus affording the main body of the Army ample time to form and prepare for attack. It will give a rallying point for the Pickets and their Supports, if driven in, and, being reinforced by them, will hold its ground until ordered by the Division Commander to retire. At least one commissioned officer and one-third of the men of the Reserve must be on the alert at all hours. Fires may be built on this line in such places as are screened from the view in front by the nature of the ground. The position of the Reserve should be strengthened by the use of all such defences as the country affords. When near the enemy abattis should be constructed whenever practicable. The Reserve shall, in addition to the lines of sentinels already mentioned, send out patrols between the lines and a short distance to the front of the line of Pickets, to examine such portions of the country as are not fully in view of the Pickets.

A detachment of Cavalry shall be attached to each Reserve, which shall send several mounted men to remain with each of the Supports, to act as messengers in case of necessity. These men shall be relieved every six hours, and while on duty with the Support shall keep their horses saddled and bridled. The detachment with the Reserve shall keep one half of their horses saddled and bridled, prepared to mount at the command. This Cavalry is to be used for mounted patrols, and such other duty in connection with the guard as the Field Officer of the Day may direct.

Field Artillery may sometimes be used to strengthen the position of the Reserves whenever the nature of the ground gives it an effective range. In all cases when artillery forms a portion of the guard, it will be constantly in readiness for immediate use. The horses will never be unhitched, and their drivers will remain within reach of them.

As a general rule, the Advanced Guard will consist of about one-tenth of the effective strength of the command. But this, of course, varies with circumstances. The Reserve,—with the sentinels and patrols it furnishes,—will comprise two-thirds of the entire guard. The other third being subdivided for the Supports and their Pickets. The positions of Pickets, Supports, and Reserves, will be designated by the Field Officers of the Day for each Brigade, under the supervision and control of the General Officer of the Day for the Division.

Each Commander of Division will have an understanding with the Commander on his right and left, as to where they are to unite with the adjoining Guards.

On arriving at the position to be occupied by the Reserve, the Commander of the Guard will advance with and station the Supports and point out the position of the line of Pickets. The Commander of the Supports will, accompanied by the non-commissioned officers of the reliefs, post the Pickets of the first relief, and explain to them their duties. They will be careful to observe that the whole ground is covered; and that perfect connection is made with the lines on their right and left. After the Pickets are posted, the Commander of the Guard, will himself visit them, see that they understand their duties and occupy proper positions, and connect with the lines to the right and left. Should the position of the Pickets be changed, the order must pass through the Commander of the Supports to which they belong.

The Commander of the Guard will make himself thoroughly acquainted with the ground which his Guard occupies, with the approaches and communications. He will keep up constant communication from front to rear and from right to left by means of lines of sentinels and patrols. In case of alarm he will promptly investigate the cause, and be careful not to exaggerate the danger. Should the enemy advance, he will, by personal observation, endeavor to discover whether they are in force, and *beware of causing unnecessary alarm*. He will communicate all important intelligence to the Field Officer of the Day, who will report the same to the General Officer of the Day, and if the case be urgent, directly to Division and Brigade Headquarters. He will see that all the duties of his Guard are performed in a prompt and soldierly manner, and enforce the strictest discipline. The Field Officer of the Day will visit the Reserves, Supports and Pickets soon after they are posted, and at least once during the night. . . . At nightfall the line should be drawn somewhat closer to the Supports, and should pass through the lower ground, and just within the front of any timber or brush. . . .

All sentinels of Advanced Guards must be given the countersign [see p.797 April 2, 1864] *before sunset*, and commence challenging immediately thereafter. At night care and vigilance must be redoubled by officers and men of the Guard."

## GREAT BETHEL.

The bridge having been repaired on March 26, 1862, the 22d Mass., Infantry, went over on a reconnoissance marching to within a mile of Great Bethel. After a seven mile march they only saw a few pickets.

The Fifth Mass. Battery were ordered to hold themselves in readiness to support the 22d if attacked. During the night the lieutenant of the picket was shot at. It was proposed to take possession of Great Bethel on the 27th and



about seven o'clock our troops began to march past in the following order:

Griffin's Battery, Hancock's Brigade, Smith's Division.

1st N. Y. Battery, Butterfield's Brigade, Porter's Division.

Martin's Battery, Ayres' Battery, Brooks' Brigade, Smith's Division.

Morell's Brigade, Porter's Division.

3d N. Y. Battery, Davidson's Brigade, Smith's Division.

In all about 15,000 men; 30 guns.

Martindale's Brigade was held in reserve.

Grows' Journal: "Wednesday March 26, 1862. Turned out for drill. Came in, in about an hour. About 10 o'clock we hitched up, and were ordered to cover the rear of the 22d. Mass. Remained 'in Battery' about an hour, and seeing no signs of the rebels we went to our quarters. Was much pleased by seeing a number of men from Nims' (Second Mass.) Battery. They are ordered to leave tomorrow for Ship Island at the mouth of the Mississippi River. We are waiting for an advance to be made. There is a rebel for whose capture \$300 will be paid at the Fort. He is a great shot, and has killed off several of the infantry pickets. There is a house near by and we have received orders to shell it out this afternoon. Spies have been lurking around our camp today. Arrested one of them and sent him to the Fort. It has been a glorious day and as warm as it is at home in the summer, but the nights are heavy with dew, and if we are out we have to wear our overcoats.

Thursday, March 27th. The same old drill and such like."

Lt. Phillips in his letter of March 27th 1862, Thursday evening, wrote:—"We were ordered to report to General Martindale as soon as we heard firing, so we waited with horses harnessed ready to start at a moment's notice, but as the day passed on we gave up all hopes of an engagement.



Once or twice we heard the report of a field piece, but no orders came and we unharnessed.

Pretty soon a cloud of dust appeared on the road, and back came Griffin's Battery all covered with dust and dirt. but his sponges as clean as if they had never sponged a gun. Then came infantry, General Porter and his staff and Martin's Battery. They had been 5 miles beyond Great Bethel and seen hardly a rebel.

Smith's Division remained behind, and it is very likely that we shall push on tomorrow.

The remainder of the Division was encamped along the left hand road. Until today the pickets were on outside picket, and as the brook is not more than 100 yards in front of our guns, we were pretty well up to the front. Last night the officer of the picket was fired at while at the fire in front of our park 30 yards off. The bullet whistled near enough to be uncomfortable. The first day we came there was quite an excitement firing at somebody in the old house 900 yards off. After he disappeared a lot of pigs made their appearance, and the pickets kept popping at them all day. They did not hit any and strict orders had been given to allow no one near the old house. Today, however, as the advance of our forces had removed all risk, Hyde and Scott took their revolvers and went foraging round the house, and succeeded after an exciting chase in bringing home two pigs. Martin's Battery brought home six pigs, one on each caisson. We have also gained a colt,—secesh of course,—which by some means or other strayed into our camp, and was forthwith caught and appropriated. We fare rather better than most of the troops round us, owing to the superior cuteness of our quartermaster. Our Battery is in first rate order; good horses, guns and carriages well kept, and men in good health. We have received a good many compliments on our appearance, and venture to hope that it is not entirely undeserved. Our

drill is now quite good and I think we shall do pretty well in a fight.

The 'Vanderbilt' and another large steamer are now in the Roads, and it is proposed to run them full tilt at the rebel steamer. Probably it would settle the Vanderbilt, but the Merrimac would be likely to go down too.

Friday morning March 28. I see the campaign is opening as I expected; General (Nathaniel P.) Banks advancing up the Shenandoah, and the rebels falling back on the Rapahannock. Is Burnside going to take Weldon?"

Grows' Journal: "Friday, March 28, 1862. After breakfast went and sat down by the side of the road, which is very near my tent, and stayed there till  $\frac{1}{2}$  past 10, looking at the regiments of infantry, batteries of artillery, and squadrons of cavalry pass by on their way to capture Great Bethel. There was a vast number of men and horses with teams, and in the rear the mournful looking ambulances for the wounded if there should be any. We soon received orders in case we heard heavy firing, to advance as soon as we could, but we did not hear any, so we still remain in the same place. . . .

About 4 this afternoon a large portion of the troops that went out this morning, came back, and will make a still farther advance in a few days. They told us that the rebels left in a great hurry when they saw our troops coming on to them at Great Bethel, in some cases leaving their dinner on the table, and leaving all their goods behind. Only four 'Secesh' were killed. Our troops came back well laden with hams, eggs, dead hogs and live turkeys. I do not blame them, poor fellows. Had some 'Secesh' curiosities given me, such as a fan, some buttons &c."

March 29th the rebels held Great Bethel and our pickets extended only half a mile beyond Newmarket Bridge. Mr. Whittemore of the New York *Times* dined with the officers of the Fifth Mass. Battery on fried pork, bread, and tea. General Porter had been heard to say that they would have

some fighting soon, that the Battery would be in the front, and he hoped it would be the first to open fire on the enemy.

Sunday March 30th the men had a good dinner of *baked* beans which were cooked in an oven that they built themselves.

#### LETTER OF LT. PHILLIPS.

“NEWMARKET BRIDGE,

Sunday Morning, March 30, 1862.

If marching 20,000 men ten miles and back again constitutes a great general, we have talented commanders round here. Twenty thousand men marched out to Great Bethel with flying colors, and, as I supposed, left some few behind to occupy the place, but in this I was mistaken, for I have since ascertained that all returned. Why on earth a reconnoissance in such force could not have ended in a real advance I do not know. The Army of the Potomac waits till the rebels have evacuated Manassas, and then advances with a grand hullabulloo to occupy deserted intrenchments, and this is military strategy!

The army at Fortress Monroe advances to Great Bethel to find it deserted and march back again, and this is military strategy!

Dillingham and I rode down to Newport News Friday afternoon, and passed through Smith's Division on our way. The regiments were camped close together, and the camp fires cast a brilliant light on the road. Fences and woods are rapidly disappearing before the Army of the Potomac, and the country will soon be stripped as bare as the hills round Alexandria.

At Newport News I found a redoubt on a hill armed with heavy guns, and outside of this an intrenchment defended by two or three field and siege guns. The space inside of the intrenchment is filled with barracks, offices, and all sorts of log and frame houses.

Dillingham found a friend of his in the commissary department, who showed us round.

The 'Cumberland' was lying close in shore, her hull below water, but her masts and rigging all standing.

A few burnt sticks farther down was all that was left of the 'Congress.' Holes in the buildings showed where the Merrimac's shot had struck, and the only wonder is that a single building was left standing. The Merrimac lay within point blank range, and either her practice was very bad or her ammunition poor. Most of her shells did not burst, which looks as if the trouble was in the ammunition. . . .

Having the countersign and parole we had no difficulty in getting outside of the lines: but in the darkness took a different road from the one we came, but as luck would have it, a shorter one.

Pretty soon rang out in front of us—'Halt! who comes there?' 'Friends with the countersign.'

'Advance! one with the countersign.'

So Dillingham trotted ahead, and I could hear a short conversation with the sentry. Pretty soon Dillingham told me to come on, and I found we had arrived at a place where the countersign was different. (See p. 797 Countersign.) So the sentry passed us on to the next, and so on till we came to the officer of the day on his rounds.

It seems we had come to Couch's Division, which had just landed and had the countersign which was put on by General McClellan on the Potomac. So he took us in charge and passed us along for about two miles, till we reached the last picket. We could not understand this great display of caution till the officer told us that his Division lay outside of everything. We concluded that he was laboring under a slight mistake, as some 30,000 men lay between him and Great Bethel.

March 31, 1862. Our Battery is at present in position commanding Newmarket Bridge. . . . Hamilton's Division 3d Corps and Casey's Division Keyes's Corps, are here.

The Naval Brigade Colonel (David W.) Wardrop, the Dutch Brigade our neighbors on Capitol Hill, and others of the Artillery Reserve, are strung along between Hampton and Fortress Monroe. On the whole I think you may set the effective force here at 75,000 infantry, 150 pieces of artillery, and a lot of cavalry; enough to do something when they get started. It is said that General McClellan arrived here yesterday. A salute of 13 guns was fired from the Fort yesterday. Two squadrons of cavalry and 400 or 500 infantry, rode by here today over the bridge on a reconnaissance.

Our cat, imported from Massachusetts, has taken up her quarters with us, (in the tent) as being the warmest to be found. The country here is quite different from the banks of the Potomac, the soil is sandy so that we are not troubled with mud, and the ground is very level, with here and there a brook and wood. A better field for infantry to manœuvre in could not be found. The Division parades are all large enough to review the whole Division, and 100,000 men can be handled here easier than 25,000 on the Potomac. Our artillery is splendid, and Porter's Division is equal to any in this respect. Griffin's Battery (D, 5th U. S.) is equal to any regular battery; Martin's (Third Mass.) is as good a battery as Massachusetts has sent.

We also come from Massachusetts, and Weeden's (Fourth R. I.) is a Rhode Island battery, which state shares with Massachusetts the pre-eminence in volunteer artillery. Captain (Stephen) Thomas of the Mass. 18th dined here yesterday on fried pork and tea. Colonel Wardrop was up here when we were lucky enough to have fresh meat. Today we have made a ten strike and got hold of some fresh meat, potatoes, dried apples, and sugar. Milk we have given up for a long time."

Lieut. Phillips thus describes a shell thrown from the Merrimac:—"6 inches diam., 12 inches long, weighing filled about 60 lbs. The packing, of some soft metal, was

all stripped off, and it looked as if there had been a cap on the rear end. 'The fuze was percussion.'

---

Tuesday, April 1, 1862, was observed as April Fool's Day. Grows notes in his journal being awakened by one of the men informing him that an acquaintance from Boston was on the ground from the 20th Regt. and wished to see him. Grows began dressing, but before he went out thought what day it was, and told him to tell the man to come into the tent. He did not come. At 'Reveille' many were the jokes played upon both officers and men.

Grows' Journal of the 1st: "After dinner about fifty of us went into the woods near by to catch some rabbits. They are very plentiful here. Came in about an hour after with five large ones. If we had had guns we could have had more, all we had were clubs and stones. Cooked them for our supper. Went this afternoon with the team about two miles from camp to help get a load of rails for our fires. Got back into camp about 5 this afternoon, feeling tiptop. Went to Roll, then had supper and a small piece of rabbit. The air is quite cool this evening, so we all sit around our fires with overcoats on."

That the men made the best of what they had is shown by Grows' Journal where he refers to making rice cakes for his supper. He says, "Soon after breakfast I got some rice and cooked it, also got some hominy and cooked that, then mixed them together and let them cook awhile, took some hard crackers and pounded them fine and put them in to thicken the rice, and then put the stuff away to make cakes for my supper, to be fried in pork fat."

He thus describes the building of the oven for his Detachment:—"We went to work and built an oven and it is a nice one. We have plenty of bricks and water, and dirt for mortar, after which we covered the whole over with dirt, except the door."



## LETTERS OF LIEUT. PHILLIPS.

"April 2, 1862. Newmarket Bridge: The roads are getting so bad that we shall have a repetition of the immobility on the banks of the Potomac unless we move soon.

We have rumors of moving every day, but we are as much in the dark about things here as we are about things at home.

The first night we camped here all our pickets were on this side of the creek, one being posted at the bridge. Since the reconnoissance to Great Bethel they have been extended about half a mile up the road. Still as the enemy is not in force anywhere near us we have not much to fear.

Our fare so far has been the toughest we have seen, hard bread such as Uncle Sam furnishes to his troops being the only thing attainable. Most of the sutlers got left behind, and it is almost impossible to buy anything round here. Everything has to come from the vicinity of the Fort, the "city" as we call it, and waiting for orders that may come at any moment we can hardly communicate with this. Still we get along without any detriment to our health, and keep cheerful. The Division mail arrived at the Fort but by some mistake was given to the wrong person, which makes it rather doubtful how soon we shall get our letters.

P. S. Evening. Just received. P. P. S. The Postmaster General desires that all letters for the Division be directed to Washington. The weather is chilly, with a northeast wind. Professor Low has arrived with his balloon."

## THE SITUATION.

General McClellan on April 2d, 1862, had made his headquarters at Fortress Monroe.

Two new departments: those of the Shenandoah and the Rappahannock had been created. April 3d an order was

issued by the Secretary of War discontinuing the recruiting service. Troops offered by Massachusetts were peremptorily declined. General McClellan had no control of the naval forces upon which he depended for co-operation in the reduction of Yorktown, and his command of forces in the field was restricted to the limits bounded on the west by the Fredericksburg and Richmond R. R. and on the east by the line defining the sixty-mile limit from Fort Monroe, and lying between the Potomac and James Rivers. His department included the states of New Jersey, Pennsylvania, Delaware, Maryland, the District of Columbia and Virginia east of the Alleghanies and north of the James River, with the exception of Fortress Monroe and the country surrounding it, within a distance of sixty miles. The rebels had constructed several lines of fortifications between Fortress Monroe and Yorktown, the first of which was at Big Bethel. At Big Bethel there was a very crooked little brook about 20 feet wide. On the southern side there was a level plain, about large enough to hold a Brigade. The northern bank was very steep and rolling, and was defended by rifle pits and artillery "epaulements." (Demi-bastions in fortifications. A "bastion" is a bulwark.)

The rebels on the advance of our reconnoissance of March 27th, retreated beyond this line, to their second fortified line at Howard's Mills, where our scouts reported a large force of cavalry and infantry drawn up behind the ramparts.

The third line of defense was right around Yorktown.

General Order No. 33, dated War Department Adjutant General's Office, Washington, April 3, 1862, contained the following paragraphs:—

"II. In order to secure, as far as possible, the decent interment of those who have fallen, or may fall, in battle, it is made the duty of Commanding Generals to lay off lots of ground in some suitable spot near every battlefield, so soon as it may be in their power, and to cause the remains of those killed to be interred, with head-boards to the

graves bearing numbers, and, where practicable, the names of the persons buried in them. A register of each burial ground will be preserved, in which will be noted the marks corresponding with the headboards."

It was a wise forethought which dictated this, but what of the next?

"III. The Recruiting service for volunteers will be discontinued in every state from this date. The officers detached on Volunteer Recruiting Service, will join their Regiments without delay, taking with them the parties and recruits at their respective stations. The Superintendents of Volunteer Recruiting Service will disband their parties and close their offices, after having taken the necessary steps to carry out these orders. The public property belonging to the Volunteer Recruiting Service, will be sold to the best advantage possible, and the proceeds credited to the fund for collecting, drilling, and organizing volunteers.

By Order of the Secretary of War.

Official:

L. THOMAS,  
Adjutant General."

### COMPANY ORDERS.

On this day Company Orders were "Three days' cooked rations: three days' uncooked." The Battery was to march the next morning at daybreak.

Grows' Journal: "April 3, 1862. Had cannoneer's drill one hour this forenoon. Had dinner of our baked beans. They were done just right. We were informed this afternoon that we would break camp at 2 in the morning, so I began to pack the loose things I had, so I could be on hand early. Had quite a good supper of coffee and hard bread, after which we drew three days' rations, consisting of thirty hard bread and three or four lbs. of meat, then filled our canteens with water. Our destination is to be Richmond, having to pass through Bethel and Yorktown."

## BANKS' FIFTH CORPS.

April 4, 1862, the Corps designated as the "Fifth Corps," under General N. P. Banks, was discontinued by general orders from the War Department.

## HOWARD'S MILLS.—THE FIRST GUN FIRED.

The historian of Martin's Third Mass. Battery says of the incident at Howard's Mills:—

"Friday April 4, 1862, reached Big Bethel. At about twelve o'clock resumed our march. About three miles farther on we reached the Halfway House, once a hotel of some importance. Two companies of rebel cavalry had left there only an hour before. While we were at the Halfway House, cannonading was heard in advance, and a march of a mile brought us to two rebel intrenchments. Berdan's Sharpshooters, at the head of the column, had been fired on by the enemy, but one of our batteries, the Fifth Massachusetts, coming up, the rebels were shelled out and our troops occupied the works when we reached them. . . . Our advance secured two guns in the fort, and some commissary stores. Another fort near the first had been previously abandoned."

HYDE'S NOTES. NEW YORK, MAY 23, 1900.

REVISED JUNE 26, 1901.

"We landed at Fortress Monroe, and, working our way with Butterfield's Brigade up the peninsula, through Hampton which had recently been destroyed by the enemy, we encountered formidable earthworks thrown up by them.

Several batteries were ahead of us, but General Griffin sent back for the Fifth Mass. Battery. The troops opened to the right and left, and we passed through to the front.

Captain Griffin, chief of artillery, ordered Captain Allen to send a section of his battery into the field to attack the enemy behind the earthworks.

Accordingly my section [the Right] was ordered to take position in the field and open on the enemy. This order was immediately carried into effect by taking my section out of the road and across the field, and we commenced firing into the fortifications, receiving the fire of the enemy in return.

During this engagement the first piece that was discharged was my right piece in charge of Serg't. O. B. Smith.

My second piece was in charge of Serg't. Wm. H. Peacock.

We had only fired a few rounds when my second piece (Peacock's) became disabled by the trail being broken in two directly where the elevating screw goes through, and notwithstanding the shot and shell were flying about us promiscuously, the butt of the gun having gone down and the muzzle up in the air, Serg't. Peacock jumped up and down, and says—'For God's sake look at my piece!' As we were thus disabled parts of other batteries were sent in to finish the work, the enemy was driven out, and our troops took possession, capturing several guns.

After we were all through, Captain Allen asked Captain Griffin if it would be best for us to sling our piece and take it into the fortification, as he thought we could make a new trail during the night. His reply was that he did not think we could do it, and it would have to be sent back to Washington. I then spoke to Captain Griffin, and said I enlisted those artificers, and I knew that I had men competent to do it. He said,—'Well, if you wish, you can try it.'

We accordingly slung the piece, took it into the fortification, and during the night made a new trail out of a tree which had been cut down; many of us taking part in the work, using the axe, holding the light &c. &c.

We completed it: and in the morning Captain Allen reported to Captain Griffin that we were ready for action with our six pieces, and were ready for his inspection. He came to look at it and laughed a little, saying it was not so elegant, or words to that effect, but it would do for service.

This was one of the pieces that was lost at Gaines Mills, and retaken by Union forces at Chancellorsville three years later."

FROM CAPT. GEO. D. ALLEN'S NOTES.

APRIL 19, 1900.

"When our forces halted within the fortification, Captain Allen, after consulting with the artificers, concluded to remount the gun that night, and directed the broken trail to be replaced.

The artificers found a tree of solid live oak, which had been cut down by the rebels, and made a new trail with the old one for a pattern. This was done in the darkness of the night, while Captain Allen and other officers held the tallow candles for them to see to work by.

Just after daylight next morning, when General Fitz John Porter sent his aide to see if they could get the gun along on the march that day to Yorktown, Captain Allen invited the aide to look at the gun which had been mounted the night before and was all ready. He seemed not a little surprised to find the gun mounted and ready for action, and Captain Allen remarked to him that he did not believe there was a better gun trail in the Army of the Potomac, and to give his compliments to General Porter, and invite him if he passed us that day to look particularly at the gun trail. He did pass us, and paid the Battery a high compliment for its Yankee ingenuity in cutting out a new gun trail from solid live oak wood, and mounting the gun in so short a time."



D. Henry Grows who helped make the new trail, said Sept. 3, 1900, that in it "there were 27 pieces of iron, taken off the old one. It was broken off at the cap squares, just where you elevate the gun." See p. 204 "Grows' Journal."

#### FROM LETTERS OF LIEUT. PHILLIPS.

APRIL 4, 1862.

"On this morning agreeably to orders 'reveille' was sounded at 2 o'clock, and the Battery marched between five and six, near the head of the column, preceded by Morell's Brigade. After a short halt at Big Bethel to build a bridge, we kept on and again halted about two. After stopping about 15 minutes the bugle sounded 'Forward,' and the regiment ahead opened to give us a passage.

Things began to look a little suspicious, and we soon came in sight of two regiments formed in line of battle in a field by the road side, head of column to the right.

'Forward into Line!' 'Left Oblique!' 'In Battery!' came in quick succession, but soon our guns were in position pointing rebelwards.

One regiment deployed in front as skirmishers, and another on our right supported them. Slowly the skirmishers advanced, and in five minutes we heard quite a lively fusillade. Then we advanced through the fence into the next field, and the Right section (Commanded by Lt. Hyde) went forward to shell out a rebel battery (2 guns) distance 2000 yards. Bang! went the first gun and a shell burst directly over the fort. Half a dozen more times and the rebels 'skedaddled' in a hurry, but one piece, just as the order was given 'Cease Firing,' tumbled over in the most extraordinary manner with a broken trail. So Griffin (Battery D, 5th U. S.) brought up his Right section and finished the job. In half an hour the stars and stripes waved in the fort at Howard's Mills. Then we advanced over a crooked road, across a swamp, up a hill, into these intrenchments. We quartered in a log house,—rebel's

guard house or something of the sort. A camp bedstead was in the room and a fire blazing. Dr. Rawlings correspondent of the *New York Times*, will quarter with us."

From Phillips' Letters: "The creek at Howard's Mills lies at the bottom of a deep ravine, and the rebel lines extended along the brow of the hill on the North. The defences consisted of a parapet for infantry following the lay of the land with irregular projections on the spurs of the hill, pierced with embrasures for field pieces.

When we made the advance we expected a fight, and made our calculations accordingly. As soon as we came in sight the rebels opened with two field pieces from the fort, but our Right section soon shelled them out of that and we took up our quarters in the lines, the officers of the Fifth Mass. Battery occupying a log house."

#### NOTES OF LIEUT. HENRY D. SCOTT.

REVISED JAN'Y 24, 1901.

"As Junior Lieutenant, Chief of Caissons, I was not with the Sections much. The weather was intolerable. When we passed through Big Bethel the advance found a rebel battery at Howard's Mills, behind earthworks. The column came to a halt, and as the 5th Battery had the lead it was ordered up to brush them away. The Battery found the troops resting on the ground on each side of the road. They cheered us and sang out 'Go in, Boys. Give 'em fits!'

As Chief of Caissons I halted them short of the position of the Battery, which after a short duel the battery in front left, and the column went on its way. As I passed with the caissons after the 5th, I saw one of their Guns on the ground. After reaching the ground where the rebel battery had been, the Army parked for the night, and I was sent back with men and horses, to sling the Gun and bring it to camp. It was dark when we returned. I said as the trail had been broken, we could make a new one. Finding

a timber of suitable size, with the artificers we worked all night, and in the morning the Gun moved with the rest of the Battery. The same Gun was lost at Gaines Mills, June 27th, and was not seen after, until, the war over, it was found parked at Richmond, Va."

#### NOTES OF SERGT. WM. H. PEACOCK.

JULY 18, 1901.

"Before we came into Battery one of my men had taken a shell and cartridge out from the chest, getting ready for a quick shot. I recollect quite well that seventeen rounds were fired by the two guns, and none were fired by either after our trail broke, as the 400 or 500 Rebel Cavalry on the opposite bank from us, had run before we quit firing. They fired some shell at us, but it seemed to go to the left of us, striking in the bank of the hill. I have always said that our Gun of the Second Detachment fired the first shot at Howard's Mills. Comrade Chase also wrote to this effect in his Diary at the time it occurred. On firing the ninth round the trail of my gun broke at the elevating box, dropping to the ground, while the gun pointed skyward. We slung the gun under the limber with the prolonge rope, and hauled off the broken parts by hand that night. Our position was in a cornfield. The corn rows prevented our gun from getting the proper recoil, and this caused the trail to break at the elevating box. That night our artificers made a new trail for the gun, and had it completed before morning so it was as useful as ever, and I was with it until its capture at Gaines Mills fight. We used to frequently look up captured rebel artillery in hopes to find it again, but I never heard of its being recovered. I recollect as some of my Detachment at the time, John F. Mack, David McVey, Wm. B. Newhall, G. W. Poole, B. F. Story, C. M. Tripp,—I think,—P. Welch, Henry Fitzsimmons."

From Chase's Diary. "April 4, 1862. Two miles from

Great Bethel. 'In Battery,' 'Action Front,' to be ready for the enemy!

The Right section advanced about 1000 feet, and commenced shelling a rebel battery.

Serg't William H. Peacock of the Second Detachment of the Right section of the Fifth Mass. Battery Light Artillery fired the first gun, and it was the first gun of the Army of the Potomac to be fired. After a few rounds the left piece of the Right section had the trail of the gun broken off squarely."

#### FROM LETTER OF CORPORAL J. E. SPEAR.

APRIL 13, 1862.

"Came upon the rebels about 3 o'clock p. m. Our Battery being in the advance, Gen. Porter sent out with a regiment of skirmishers a section of the Battery. When about half a mile from the entrenchments a squadron of cavalry was seen to leave very hurriedly. Our skirmishers fired upon them, but as they were some distance away the shots did not take effect. While our guns were being fired one carriage in recoiling was broken; the trail coming back upon a rock with such force as to break it. The rebels having left their encampment, and entrenchments, nothing remained for us to do but to march into them, which we did at a double quick. Remained all night. The place was called Howard's Mills."

#### NOTES OF CORPORAL WM. H. BAXTER.

REVISED OCT. 15, 1900.

#### BUILDING NEW TRAIL FOR GUN NO. 4.

"We went into Battery several times approaching Yorktown. I think it was the second day out from Fortress

Monroe, that we were 'in Battery,' firing at the fast retreating Johnnies, when the trail of the 4th Detachment Gun broke squarely in two pieces, causing the muzzle of the Gun to point skyward. The accident put the Gun out of action, and upon arriving at camp that evening, the writer was ordered to make a detail to build a new trail. The job seemed insurmountable, but a detail was finally made, which proved equal to the occasion. Being a non-com. my part in the building of that trail was to do the heavy standing around, and I did it to perfection. We started for the woods near camp, and cast about for a tree suitable for the purpose. The writer can recollect but two of the boys who were in this detail 'Uncle Dudley' Blanchard, now passed away, and sterling Lem. Washburn. The tree was dropped, a length measured off suitable for the trail, and the boys went to work shaping it; nothing but axes being used. After getting it well roughed out, we hauled it to camp, and it was taken in hand by that Knight of the Hammer, Mike Hewitt and his assistants, who proceeded to put the finishing touches to the wood and fitting the iron work. My recollection of the time taken to build it is that we had that tree felled at about 9 o'clock in the evening, and were ready to start with the trail completed at 8.30 next morning, overtaking the Battery, which had marched early in the morning, between 11 and 12 o'clock that noon.

That the work was well done no better evidence can be had, than that some of the Boys, after the surrender, saw the old Gun in park with the trail intact, just as we had 'donated' it to the Johnnies at Gaines Mills, with the exception that the ground end of it had warped nearly one half way around, the effect of the sun upon the green wood of which it was made.

This is one of the many evidences which occurred during the war that the Boys of '61 were always found equal to every occasion where necessity demanded brain or brawn."

## FROM PRIVATE BENJAMIN F. STORY.

OCT. 8, 1900.

"In regard to the first shot at Howard's Mills,—We were in the advance in that action, and were in the advance ordered by Captain Griffin of the 5th Regulars U. S. A., as he had charge of the 4 Batteries—to place the guns and fire on the Rebels who occupied a hill to the front—which we did—and Capt. Griffin told Capt. Allen, that he had the honor of firing the first gun on the Peninsula, and I heard it distinctly.

My duty at the time was head driver on the Caisson 2d. Detachment, and I know whereof I speak."

After recalling the same circumstances of the broken trail he says:—

"That gun, with three others, was lost in action at Gaines Mills, and was recaptured by us at the Weldon R. R. fight, and turned in at the U. S. Arsenal at Washington D. C. when our Battery was mustered out. All of which I can certify to having come under my own personal observation at the time."

---

Grows' Journal: "Friday April 4, 1862. Was called at half past two this morning by the Bugle. Packed all my things together. Lashed my knapsack and overcoat on the limber of the piece. At half past four we had breakfast of hot coffee and hard bread. At a quarter to six we took up our line of march with the Corps which numbered some 30,000 men. The morning was very warm and close. After marching a few miles I saw plenty of overcoats, blankets, and knapsacks by the roadside, which our troops had thrown away on account of the heat. Arrived at Great Bethel at half past 10 in the forenoon. Stopped long enough to feed and water the horses, then took up the line

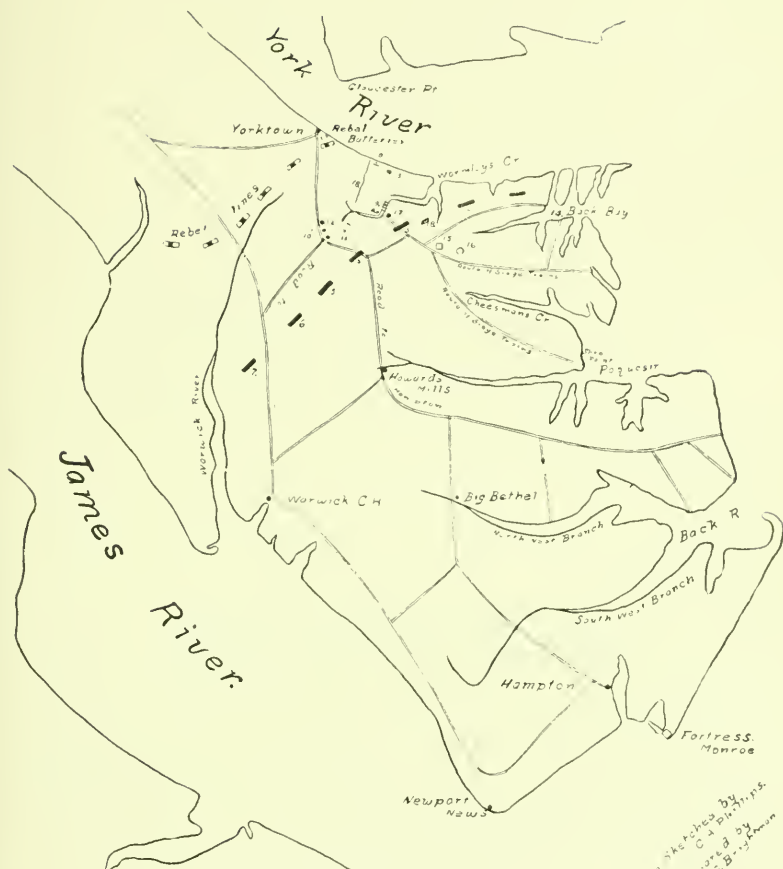


of march for Bethel: arrived at one o'clock. Our scouts brought in word that the Rebels were in their entrenchments, and that we would have to shell them out. At half past one the Right section opened fire upon their works, and the sharpshooters the same upon their cavalry, killing two. The enemy then left their works. We pushed on, but they were gone, so we began to pitch our tents here in their breastworks. If they had had more pieces they could have held it against our force, for some time.

There were about 800 rebels in the works when we first came upon them, but they retreated very lively."

Josiah W. Gardner, referring to his journal of April 4, 1862, says, "Archie Waugh (W. A. Waugh) drove the swing team of No. 1 gun, and fired the first shot. This was Peacock's gun which had the trail broken."

# YORKTOWN



From sketches by  
C. A. Phillips.  
reproduced by  
S. B. Brishman

1 & 2. Sumner's Corps. 3 Porter's Division. 4 Hamilton's Division. of  
Heintzelman's Corps 5, 6, 7 Keyes Corps 8 General McClellan's  
Headquarters. 9 Bridges over Wormley Cr. Guarded by the 5<sup>th</sup>  
Mass. Battery. 10 Peach orchard. 11. First position taken by the 5<sup>th</sup>  
Mass. Battery on April 6<sup>th</sup> 1862. 12. Houses burned by Rebels. 13 Moore's  
house. 14. Back River Landing. 15 Redoubt. 16. Lunette. 17. House built  
by 5<sup>th</sup> Mass. Battery. 18. Advanced line of Porters Division. 19. 5 100 pdr  
Parrots A. Mortar Battery.



## CHAPTER VII.

### YORKTOWN,

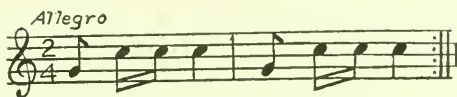
April 5 to May 3, 1862.

"Let others hew from marble the grand forms  
Imprisoned there . . .  
For thee the tragedy of daily things,  
By firesides placed amid our work and books  
How every group the war before us brings!"

THOMAS G. APPLETON.—*Sonnet to Rogers.*

### THE ADVANCE.

Bugle Call.—"In Battery."



Porter's Division on the Right, led the advance of the Army of the Potomac.

### FROM LETTERS OF LIEUT. PHILLIPS,

OF APRIL 6, 1862.

"Sunday forenoon. Yesterday morning we left our comfortable quarters, and started as we supposed on a reconnaissance, but we have not yet returned. After we had proceeded a short distance on our way it commenced to rain, and poured down till noon. We marched on, and about twelve o'clock we heard firing ahead, and marched into a field.

The Rhode Island Battery and Griffin's were shelling the rebel intrenchments. Pretty soon Martin's Battery was sent off to the left, and commenced shelling. About 4 o'clock, Martin returned, having lost 2 killed and 3 wounded, and we were ordered to relieve Captain Weeden, who had lost one, killed. So our pieces started off and formed in battery in front of the rebels about 2000 yards distant.

Just as we were coming into battery, a little smoke puffed out from the fort, then the report, and a few seconds later, a 32 pdr. shell struck in the dirt 50 yards on our left. The fuze had not ignited, so we picked up the shell and carried it home.

We blazed away once or twice in return, and pretty soon we heard two reports from them to the right and left, and then bang, bang! two shells burst right in front of us 50 feet from the ground; one piece striking an infantry soldier in the woods to our right. We fired a little more, but, not accomplishing much, we soon stopped, and after dark returned to camp.

Early this morning, 3 o'clock, the Right and Centre sections took position in the same place, and are at present,—12 m.,—there. The men are mostly asleep and I am lying on my overcoat writing this letter. The rebels have been making embrasures in front of their guns, probably to keep off the bullets by our skirmishers, who are scattered round pretty thick. The enemy's gunners are quite good, and they have got our range very well."

Grows' Journal: "Saturday, April 5, 1862. We are about 9 miles from Yorktown, and there are about 30,000 rebels encamped there in strong breastworks. Owing to the bad state of the roads we did not arrive at Yorktown outside of the enemy's works till half past one. The rebel works are in sight and about  $1\frac{1}{2}$  miles to two miles off. About half an hour after we arrived the Rhode Island 4th Battery were ordered to open fire upon them. In a short

time one of the enemy's shells struck one of their men, and he died in half an hour. At  $\frac{1}{2}$  past 3 this afternoon Martin's Battery was ordered to relieve the Rhode Island Battery. As soon as they came in sight the enemy opened upon them a murderous fire killing Charles Lord and Edward Lewis, both of Charlestown, wounding 3 men, and killing 6 horses. After firing about two hours they silenced one of the enemy's batteries. At 8 o'clock that evening we were ordered back to camp. Just as we were leaving they threw a shell which knocked down one of the infantry about 100 yards on my right. We came into camp feeling well, but tired.

Sunday April 6th. Was awakened at 4 o'clock this morning by the noise caused by the Right and Centre sections going down into the field. About 3 this afternoon, went a short distance to Martin's Battery to witness the funeral ceremonies over the bodies of Lord and Lewis. It was a very affecting sight. The pictures of their wives, which they had with them were opened, and laid, open, upon their breasts, and in this way they were buried."

In the "History of Rhode Island in the Rebellion" may be found the following in relation to these first shots:—

"During the advance on Yorktown April, 1862, Battery C, R. I. Captain Weeden, went into battery in a cornfield on the right of the road leading to Yorktown. Griffin's Battery came up on our right and peppered away in fine style. Martin's did similar execution on our left. In advance, and about 750 yards from the nearest rebel entrenchment, Berdan's sharpshooters were posted. . . . At 3 o'clock p. m. Randolph's Battery was ordered to relieve Griffin's. He was engaged two hours. [This was Battery E, 1st R. I. Captain George E. Randolph afterwards chief of artillery of Division and Corps, Third Corps.] The 3d and 5th Massachusetts batteries took an efficient part in the fight. Butterfield's and Martindale's Brigades reclined on their arms within range of the enemy's guns during the day.



The roar of cannon shook the earth like a subterranean convulsion and the sharp crack of Berdan's rifles told how busily they were employed. . . . Two men belonging to Martin's Battery were killed and five reported wounded. Thus Rhode Island and Massachusetts share the honor of shedding the first blood in this preliminary engagement."

FROM LETTERS OF LIEUT. PHILLIPS.

"Monday morning. (April 7, 1862) We had a little target practice yesterday. We waited during the forenoon without firing, and while we were sleeping away as comfortably as possible, bang, whiz, bang! came a shell from the Fort, bursting very near, and waking us all up. The enemy then hoisted a new and handsome flag on our left, and brought a field piece into position, out of sight from where I was, but visible from the Right section, and let us have a shell from it. It burst close to and the pieces flew all round us. . . . This fun did not particularly suit us, but soon we got orders from General Porter to reply, so the Right section blazed away at the field piece on our left, and soon silenced that, while my section went to work pitching shells into the Fort and camp. We fired two shots at the Fort, one of which struck the sandbags in the embrasure, and then we pitched into the camp. After a while down went one tent in a cloud of dust, and the shells began to fly pretty thick round the rest. Still the distance was too great, and we stopped after a while.

Monday afternoon. Captain (Ormand F.) Nims has just arrived, and is going to the Fort. We have been in camp all day, and it is raining hard. Griffin occupies our yesterday's position, intrenchments having been thrown up last night. Some 30 batteries of light artillery have arrived, and as soon as the siege guns arrive we shall be ready for a second siege of Yorktown, which will be pretty sure to result as the former siege. It is said that the Right of the

enemy's lines was carried last night. I don't know how true the report is."

Chase's Diary: "April 6, 1862. . . . Found fragments of a shell fired at us. But one good shot from the enemy today. Balloon reconnoissance by the generals today. None of the Battery injured today."

## TO PREPARE FOR ACTION.

HEAD QUARTERS ARMY OF THE POTOMAC,  
CAMP NEAR YORKTOWN, VA.

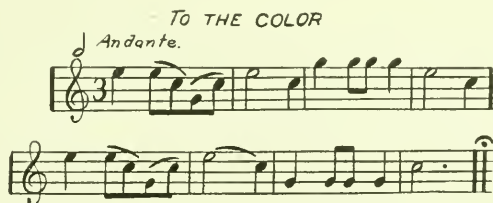
April 8, 62.

General Orders

No. 113

Extract.

VIII. "To the Color" sounded on the march, will be the signal to prepare for action.



At this call (80 steps to the minute) the trains will draw, as far as possible, to one side of the road and halt. The ambulances will be prepared for service: the men will close their ranks without further orders, and preserve perfect silence.

By command of Maj. Gen'l. McClellan.

S. WILLIAMS A. A. G.

## FROM LETTERS OF LIEUT. PHILLIPS.

"CAMP NEAR YORKTOWN, VA.

April 9, 1862.

For the last few days we have been exchanging shots at long range, but without accomplishing much. Earthworks

have been thrown up in the field, and the Left section (Lieut. Dillingham's) are now out. The rebels have got some field pieces in position, and are trying to shell him out. Quite a lot of regiments are up in line round our camp, and it is said they are going to capture something."

Phillips' Diary: "April 9, 1862. Dillingham's section went into the earthworks to dig, and the rebels tried to shell him out with a ten inch mortar in the hospital fort. One of the shells which blew out, was dug up 6 ft. deep, and carried to General Porter. The Division, except Butterfield's Brigade, Martin's and Allen's Batteries, have moved one mile to the rear and during the night we were alarmed several times, harnessed and unharnessed, but nothing came of it."

Chase's Diary: "April 9, 1862. The Left section exchanged shots with the enemy today, and brought to camp an eleven inch shell, which 'blew' without exploding; weighing 86 lbs. and having 80 bullets in it. Infantry regiments taking new positions."

Grows' Journal: "Wednesday April 9, 1862. Our section, consisting of two pieces, was ordered out into the field to protect the encampment of the 9th Mass., 62d. Penn., and our own camp. Soon after arriving on the field it began to rain like fury. The orders were for us to only answer the rebels' shot. They fired about ten heavy shell at us, four of which burst over our heads, but none of us got hurt. We fired in return at them, and by means of glasses saw several fall, but could not ascertain how many of them were killed. About 3 this afternoon the regiments near us were ordered to fall back about a mile, as they were in the direct range of the rebels' fire. At 6 this afternoon we were ordered back to camp. . . . Orders came about midnight to be ready to fall back about one mile to the rear, so the mortar and siege guns can work without our being in the way."

## FROM LETTERS OF LIEUT. PHILLIPS.

"Thursday Evening: (April 10, 1862.) It seems the rebels have been using a 10 inch mortar to silence our 3 in. guns. Several shells burst in the neighborhood of the Battery, but no damage was done. . . . Today Lieut. Hyde and I have been in the field, but not a shot was fired on either side. The rebels have struck the camp that we shelled the other day. Last night we had several alarms and harnessed several times expecting an attack, but nothing came of it. If the rebels don't shoot better than they have done, they may fire at us as long as they like."

Chase's Diary: "April 10, 1862. Ordered out at 11 o'clock last night and hitched up 'double quick' both guns and caissons, and the infantry called in line: waited half an hour in line, then ordered to camp for the night without further excitement. Two sections of the Battery left camp and took position about a mile to the rear of the enemy, and joined the Division in a new position, leaving one section in front of the enemy."

Grows' Journal: "April 10, 1862, we took up our line of march, and very soon arrived at this place. It is a very pretty place. The river is near by. Pitched our tents in a corn field. There are plenty of troops around us, and lots of gunboats to be seen on the river. General McClellan's quarters are on this ground. April 11th. At 9 o'clock this morning our section (Left, Dillingham's) were ordered to go about  $\frac{1}{4}$  of a mile to protect the 'pioneers' of the 18th Mass. who are building a bridge across a creek, (Over Wormley's Creek, between the camp and Yorktown) for the purpose of conveying troops and field-pieces across for the intrenchments that are going to be built by our troops. Arrived at the spot and pitched a large tent for us to sleep in at night, after which we cruised around, dug

some mussels and oysters (The far famed York River oysters described by the historian Lossing in 1848) which are very plenty here. Had them for dinner. Had our supper sent to us of coffee and hard bread. I am detailed for guard tonight from 8 till 9, one hour; after 'standing it' I sat down by the fire with Harry Simonds and some others, till 12 o'clock. Turned in soon after."

FROM LETTER OF LIEUT. PHILLIPS.

"CAMP NEAR YORKTOWN, VA.

April 12, 1862.

You need not imagine there was anything very terrible in the fight; there was some little popping away of muskets and some banging of artillery, without amounting to much. Martin's Battery got into a pretty tight spot, hotter than anything at Bull Run, so said Griffin. The R. I. battery got down in a field and blazed away at an earthwork mounting four 32 pdrs. at 2500 yards. Griffin was alongside of them, but he did not silence their guns, or anything of the sort. Both sides might bang away till doomsday, at that distance, without doing any injury worth speaking of. We have been down on the same ground and fired at the enemy, and had them fire at us, till it has become rather ridiculous. One day we fired into a fort on the right to oblige General Porter, who was up in a balloon and wished to see what the effect would be. We blazed away with our 3 inch popguns till the rebels seemed to get a little excited, and bang went a big mortar, and a 10 inch shell whistled several hundred yards over our heads. We rather enjoy this amusement as they cannot afford to waste much valuable ammunition of the sort by throwing it half a mile over our heads. Our sharpshooters appear to bother the rebels a great deal and yesterday they sallied out and drove them in, burning down a house close by their lines which has given them a great deal of trouble. . . . We are now encamped within sight

of York River, and of our gunboats lying in it, below Yorktown, in a corn field, by a house formerly owned by a Secesh doctor, now used as a General Hospital. Behind us is a large field in which General McClellan has his Head Quarters. For the last week there have been all sorts of rumors about a large siege train which was somewhere or other, and for which everything must wait. Today I hear they are landed somewhere or other, and will soon arrive. I hope so. At present we have nothing to do, and are afraid to stir out of camp lest the Battery should move while we are out. For the last 24 hours our Left section has been guarding a bridge which is building, and which is supposed to be absolutely necessary to the success of operations. But at the present rate of construction the bridge will be finished in the course of 6 months. General Porter went up in a balloon alone yesterday morning and got adrift. After floating about a little while he came down in safety: the wind, fortunately for him, blowing from the north."

Phillips' Diary: "April 12, 1862. Yesterday Dillingham's section went into a masked battery in our front to protect a bridge. . . . Weeden sent one section into the old earthwork and had quite hot work. The rebels rallied at 3000 strong: burnt the houses by the peach orchard and threatened Dillingham's section, but nothing came of it. This morning I relieved Dillingham. The rebels fired 3 shells at a tug which tried to come up the river. Griffin this morning concluded it was too dangerous to occupy the earthworks above."

#### NOTES OF CORPORAL J. E. SPEAR,

who, besides acting directly with the Fifth Mass. Battery as sergeant and lieutenant, was at one time assistant adjutant general for Major Freeman McGilvery; at one time



assistant adjutant general for General A. P. Martin; also ordnance officer for Artillery Brigade 5th Army Corps:—

“ARMY OF THE POTOMAC

NEAR YORKTOWN, VA.

Sunday, April 13, 1862.

The stillness of the day has turned my thoughts towards home and the dear friends there. It is very quiet in the different camps. Nothing of importance save the arriving of more troops. Whilst I am writing I can hear the sounds of bugles from the newly arrived troops. I have just finished my dinner, fresh meat and broth, no more ‘salt junk’ for a spell, as long as ‘Secesh Cattle’ hold out, which I think will be for some time, and I am glad that we have advanced so that we can get fresh meat, for it has been nothing but salt junk and salt pork for some time past, and many of the boys were sick on rations of pork.

I will give you a description of our march from Hampton to our present encampment:—One week ago last Friday, we left our pleasant little camp at Hampton, for Richmond, expecting, of course, to be brought to a standstill at Yorktown, and we are, and no mistake. The first day, Friday, we advanced about 3 miles beyond Big Bethel, coming to a rebel encampment of about 400 cavalry, the infantry and artillery having left the day before for Yorktown on hearing that Porter’s Division was advancing towards them. (See p. 201 Howard’s Mills.)

At 5 o’clock the next morning (After the fight at Howard’s Mills) we were routed up and ordered to move onward, and after partaking of a good breakfast consisting of salt junk, hard bread, and some good coffee, we hitched up our horses and were soon moving onward, but our day’s march was not as pleasant as that of the day before. Friday the roads were in tip top condition and the day pleasant, but Saturday we had to pass through a swamp of 5

miles length. and we hadn't gone more than a mile or so, before it commenced raining real old Virginia style, drops as large, nearly, as cherries, and it was not long before the mud was ankle deep. On this day we found that we could not advance as readily as on the day before, and on coming to the end of the swamp, we began to hear the booming of cannon. Saturday there were 2 batteries with us in the advance, and leading us, so that we didn't have a chance to commence the firing as we did the day before. We finally came in sight of Yorktown, and we saw before us, forts, entrenchments, rifle pits, strongly guarded. The Rhode Island and 5th Regular batteries were ordered out to commence firing upon the forts, but as they were of small calibre could not do much service, yet did considerable towards silencing the batteries.

Our sharpshooters did about as much as any towards silencing the Confederates, keeping the gunners from their guns. In the afternoon Martin's Battery was ordered out to endeavor the silencing of a battery on the left of the entrenchments, and was successful, but with a loss of two men and 3 horses; they also had 3 men wounded. About 4½ o'clock we were ordered into the field and remained until about 8 o'clock, when we were ordered back to camp. None of us were wounded, although the shell flew around us fast. On arriving at camp, the clerk of the company came to me with a piece of paper with names on it, and called it the guard detail. I felt very tired, don't know as I ever felt more so, but being detailed for guard I must attend to it. Was about  $\frac{3}{4}$  of an hour putting on the relief, the men being very tired and would not go on readily and I couldn't blame them, having marched for two days. About 1 o'clock I was relieved by Corporal Wilson, turned in, under my piece, and slept until morning. Sunday morning we were routed up very early. The Right and Centre sections were ordered into the field to guard our pickets, so as not to allow

the rebel cavalry to charge upon them as they had attempted to on the day before. Bill Baxter is in the Centre section, and I am in the Left, so he went in, and I remained in camp. When they returned, about 8 in the evening, I found out that they had been exposed to a pretty hot fire from the rebel siege guns, but thanks to God, none were injured.

Captain Martin's Battery being encamped near us, I witnessed the burial of the two men killed in action, and it was a hard sight to see so many brave and courageous men clustered around their dead comrades, not, as on the day before, facing the din and smoke of battle, but bowed down in grief, the tears streaming down their manly cheeks.

Monday was a stormy day, and the Left section was ordered out. As soon as we had reached our position at the entrenchments, which had been thrown up during the night, the cursed rebels commenced firing upon us, and our Captain returned the compliment. They shelled us for about an hour, but as their fuzes were cut too long the shells went beyond us, and burst in the air. None of us were hurt. About 2 in the afternoon it commenced raining, not drizzling rain, but a tough old Virginia rain storm. Tuesday returned to camp.

Wednesday we moved back about a mile, as Gen'l McClellan thought we occupied too conspicuous a position, into a cornfield, and the stalks and husks make a very good bed.

Friday the Left section was ordered to guard a party of men building a bridge across the river which separates the Right of the Army from Yorktown. We had only one alarm during the day: were relieved by the Centre section yesterday morning, and came back to camp.

Yesterday afternoon I received permission to go with a party of two for oysters, so last night had an oyster stew. All that was needed to make it rich was *butter, milk, pepper*, and a few little extras that we must not expect in the Army.

Sunday night, 6 o'clock: I have just finished my supper

of 3 hard breads and a cup of coffee. Oh! I am getting used to High Living. . . .

State musters are nothing to be compared with the encampments here. General McClellan and his body guard are encamped about a quarter of a mile from ours. The guard consists of Duryea's Zouave Regiment, a Regiment of Regular Dragoons, and an infantry regiment.

Billy Baxter and Charlie Jameson have been over to see Major Wood. He is on McClellan's staff with the rank of major.

The gunboats that are going to do the mischief are in York River, four miles from us, and the Signal Corps have been signalling all day to them.

I believe the ball will roll pretty soon, and if nothing is wanting save the number of men, why the place is ours. Who knows but what there will be another surrender at Yorktown!"

Note: "At Yorktown on the first day, Corporal T. E. Chase was seen when under fire, studying the Manual of the Gun—'*Serving with reduced numbers.*'"

---

The Fifth Mass. Battery guarded the new bridge over Wormley Creek by sections on certain days, as follows:—

The Right section, Lieut. Hyde, April 13th, 15th, 18th, 21st, 24th, 27th, 30th, and May 3d.

Centre section, Lieut. Phillips, April 16th, 19th, 22d, 25th, 28th and May 1st.

Left section, Lieut. Dillingham, April 14th, 17th, 20th, 23d, 26th, 29th and May 2d.

#### FROM LETTERS OF LIEUT. PHILLIPS.

"CAMP NEAR YORKTOWN,

Sunday morning April 13, 1862.

Yesterday morning I relieved Lieut. Dillingham. . . . As there were a lot of planks lying round intended for the bridge, we set to work and built a house, 12 ft. by 18 ft.

roofed with slabs which accommodated about 20 very comfortably. General McClellan is encamped in the field behind us, and close to him is a regiment of some sort of Zouaves with red breeches and white turbans, altogether too conspicuous a uniform for comfort in war. . . . I am getting dreadfully tired of loafing around here doing nothing. No drill, no bugle calls, no stirring out of camp lest orders should come in our absence, and meanwhile we are waiting, waiting, doing nothing. . . . Oysters are plenty. Our cook is opening about half a bushel now for our dinner."

Grows' Journal: "April 13, 1862. The view where we are encamped is splendid, the river is near us. In front, in our rear, and either side, are woods and ravines, with nice, cool springs of water.

Monday April 14. This forenoon at 9 we got our ration of hard bread for one day, so as to be ready at 10 to go on picket and relieve the section which is guarding the bridge. Soon after, we fell in and went over and relieved them, after which I made me a little house of boards to sleep in. I then dug a hole in front of it to put wood in so I can have a fire. We only stand guard of one hour, and are off eight, so it comes very easy on us. The rest of the time we dig oysters and mussels, and go fishing, or lie down on the grass in the shade. At one o'clock the cooks came over with our dinner of stewed beans. About five o'clock the coffee was brought over to us. I built a fire in front of my tent and with Serg't. Harry Simonds, and a few others we sat down to chat and smoke. At 8 I went on guard for one hour, coming off at 9."

#### FROM LETTERS OF LIEUT. PHILLIPS.

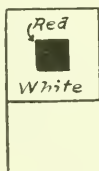
"CAMP WINFIELD SCOTT

NEAR YORKTOWN, April 14, 1862.

I give a short journal to show how much time I have to myself: Sat'y April 5th marched at daylight. Halted and kept in line till 4 p. m., then went into the field and stayed

till 8 p. m. Sunday, April 6th, Right and Centre sections in the field from 3 a. m. till dark. Wednesday, April 9th, Left section in the field. Kept in continual alarm all day and routed out at midnight for fear of an attack. Thursday, April 10th, Right section in the field,—Lieut. Phillips accompanying. Moved camp in the afternoon. Friday, April 11th, Left section guarding the bridge 24 hours. Sat'y, April 12th, Centre section guarding the bridge 24 hours. Sunday, April 13th, Right section at the bridge. Monday, April 14th, Left section at the bridge, Centre section on picket.

Last night Martin's and Weeden's batteries were turned out by a little skirmish in front. The rebels sallied out and cut down the peach orchard and burnt the houses on the left and front of the field in which our guns were placed Sunday April 6th. . . . Today I marched my section at 7 a. m. into the field where we encamped for the first few days, came into Battery, unhitched the horses, watered them, picketed them, posted a guard and went to work to pass away the time. The picket reserve were close by. This consists of about 200 men . . . and is intended to support our pickets in case they are driven in. . . . Pretty soon up rode some officers curious to look at the enemy but there is no passing pickets, so back they go. Next come some officers of the Signal Corps and they keep on wherever they choose, and pretty soon we see the signal flag waving ahead where



*Signal Flag.*

it keeps going all day, occasionally shifting its position. Then we see a section of artillery coming along the edge of



the woods on our left, and pretty soon they come into battery and shell away at a rebel earthwork. Towards afternoon we hear heavy reports on our right, and conclude that the gunboats are trying their hand in the rebel batteries.

So gradually the day wears on till sunset, when we limber up and go home. I shall probably go down to the bridge tomorrow. . . . Shipping Point is important as a place where we can load heavy stores instead of carting them over the roads between us and Fortress Monroe. Porter's Division is encamped well in sight of York River in one large field, i. e. it may have been several fields, but fences are among the things that were. In the same field is the Artillery Reserve, with guns too numerous to mention. . . . One side of our camp is sheltered by a fence, saved by our energetic efforts, which appertains to a large house distinguished as 'the house with blinds on it.' This house is a large two story edifice . . . used as a General Hospital for our troops. In front of the house is a large peach orchard, and the hopes of a speedy reduction of Yorktown are saddened by the thought that we must leave so many unripe peaches behind us. The siege guns have at last been heard from. Lieut. Dillingham rode down a couple of miles toward Shipping Point last night, and saw in a field several 30 pdrs. Rifled Guns, one 8 inch Columbiad, and several 8 or 10 inch mortars. The engineers are at work prospecting all round, and I suppose we shall now start some trenches. The bridge over the creek which lies between Porter's Division and Yorktown, progresses slowly, and I think the attack will be made in that direction. I just hear that General Hooker is at Shipping Point, General Sumner in the neighborhood of the Severn."

Phillips' Diary: "April 14. Some of our heavy howitzers on our left trying to shell out a rebel battery. Small fight between the gunboats and rebel batteries."

Grows' Journal: "Tuesday April 15, 1862. After breakfast we laid ourselves out on the grass to wait till we should be relieved at 10 o'clock this forenoon. There are about 300 men here at work building bridges. There are to be three of them. There was a pontoon bridge of boats thrown across the creek last night. These bridges are fine looking ones. . . . About 10 a. m. were relieved, when we went to camp. All that I need the most is something to read, and that is almost impossible to get, for when a paper does get here it is spoken for by most every man that sees it."

Phillips' Diary: "April 15th, 1862. One bridge finished, and a pontoon bridge put on the creek."

#### FROM LETTERS OF LIEUT. PHILLIPS.

"CAMP WINFIELD SCOTT,

Wednesday, April 16, 1862.

The Centre section is guarding the bridge today, Lieut. Hyde having had it yesterday. Nothing momentous has occurred. The gunboats have been throwing a few shells at the forts and the forts have been throwing a few shells at the gunboats. This morning there was a considerable heavy firing on the left.

Hooker's Division came up today, and have encamped somewhere in our neighborhood. They are now building four bridges here. The floating bridge is rather a failure, as the logs sink as fast as they are put in. 1 and 2 were built by General Morell, and are about finished; 3 and 4 by General Martindale. No. 1 was laid yesterday in 2½ hours. No. 4 was commenced this morning, and is nearly finished. The width of the creek is about 60 yds. Across the river the banks rise up steep, and then there is a level plain to the enemy's lines. As soon as the bridges are finished the siege

guns and mortars will probably be carried across, and put in position, and the Secesh will have an unpleasant time. Yesterday afternoon I rode about  $1\frac{1}{2}$  miles towards Ship Point, and found part of the siege train, twelve  $4\frac{1}{2}$  inch Rifled Guns, eleven 8 inch mortars, nine 10 inch mortars."

Chase's Diary: "April 16, 1862. Centre section sent to guard bridge. Alarm at 7 p. m. when a shell struck in the camp of the 22d Mass. Reg't,—General Miles's old regiment,—but doing no damage. Captain Griffin ordered 'every man to his post,' and to be ready to load with shrapnell. Heavy cannonading and sharp musketry firing on the extreme left to-day, and occasional shots through the night."

Phillips' Diary:—"April 16th. . . . Occasional shells from gunboats."

#### FROM LETTERS OF LIEUT. PHILLIPS.

April 17, 1862.

"Thursday morning. The firing on the left was kept up all day, and at supper time the rumor was that we had dismounted several pieces of the enemy. Towards evening the reports became heavier and I thought I could distinguish the boom of a mortar, and the whistling of a heavy shell. This morning the firing still continues, having been kept up all night. About five o'clock yesterday afternoon the enemy appeared to have become excited, and threw several shells in rapid succession, into the creek, just below us, rather disturbing one of my men who was fishing on the lower bridge. Some of their shells fell among the pickets across the creek and the officers of the Signal Corps who were over here were obliged to retreat double quick, without time to carry away all their things. In a few minutes up rode Griffin in a very excited state.—

‘Every man to the guns. Load with shrapnell when you load, and fire right at them!—Two regiments of infantry and one of cavalry have just appeared outside of the Fort.’

So we got all ready, but nobody appeared. Pretty soon, however, two of our regiments crossed over and deployed in front of us, and just as I was thinking that the commander of them had better keep me informed of their movements if he did not wish a shell amongst them, General Martindale rode up and suggested the necessity of my using some discretion in firing at the other bank. I have just returned from the bridge.”

FROM LIFE AND LETTERS OF THE REV. WARREN H. CUDWORTH, CHAPLAIN 1ST MASS. INFANTRY.

“CAMP WINFIELD SCOTT,

April 18, 1862.

MY DEAR PARISHIONERS.

. . . Here, in 1781, before the United States became a nation, were encamped the regiments of our Revolutionary ancestors and their French allies, and on the very ground where now are quartered the soldiers of the loyal North, the British laid down their arms, and the independence of the United States was practically established. The very house where Lafayette had his headquarters is within a few steps of my tent, and the site formerly occupied by his seven thousand troops is freshly consecrated by the presence among the forces of two batteries from Massachusetts. The 1st Reg't. occupies an advanced position about a mile in front of General McClellan's headquarters, and only two from the strong earthworks which defend Yorktown.”

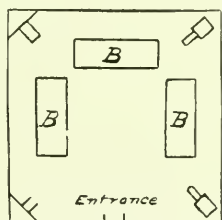
## FROM LETTERS OF LIEUT. PHILLIPS.

"CAMP WINFIELD SCOTT,

April 18, 1862.

There is so much firing now around here that we don't get up to look out unless a shell comes in our neighborhood. The guns which are in plain sight directly in front of our tent, and the enemy's water batteries blaze away at each other once in a while, but without accomplishing much. We can hear the shells whistling through the air, and an inexperienced individual would imagine them directly over our heads, though they do not come within a mile of us. . . . I do not know whether General McClellan was deceived in the character of the works to be encountered, but General Porter, who stands as high in McC.'s confidence as any General of Division had no idea that the rebel fortifications were as strong as they really are. The first day was only a reconnoissance, as it would be as useless to throw stones at a brick wall as to oppose field batteries to earthworks armed with 32 pdrs. and 10 in. mortars. Our generals soon found that out and are now preparing for an extended siege. Nothing can be done without the siege train, and this moves slowly. There are now in a field about a mile from here,—a kind of depot,—some fifteen 4½ inch Rifled Guns, five 100 pdr. Parrott guns, and twenty 8 and 10 inch mortars, besides three or four 8 in. Howitzers. The 4½ in. guns and the Howitzers are mounted on siege carriages,—something like a field carriage,—the Parrotts on wrought iron barbette carriages with chains and traverse circle. Nothing has yet been done towards opening the trenches, but about 400 men are at work across the creek in front of our two guns, in making gabions, so you see we expect to do some shovelling. . . . Meantime the rebels are not idle, but are working like bees, shovelling

dirt, that is to say, they are making the negroes work, for Lieut. Colonel Alexander, chief of engineers, told me the day I was out on picket, that he had just been inspecting them, and he could see nothing but negroes. . . . A deserter who came in told the sergeant who had charge of him, and the sergeant told one of our men, that our shots the first Sunday we were here caused a great commotion in the rebel camp, bursting right in the tents. As the Centre section of the Mass. 5th was the only one that fired at the camp, you will see this story gives some satisfaction. At the same time mind I do not vouch for its correctness. [See p. 208] . . . This afternoon I took a ride towards the various landings,—Ship Point, Crab Point, Cheesman's Point, Back River Landing, Melville Point &c. all in the same general direction. . . . Close to the siege train in the field afore-said is a square redoubt, intended to defend an attack from Back River Landing and Ship Point. The redoubt is very well built, with a barbette in each corner for a gun, and would hold about 300 men. The ditch is full of water. [Barbette guns fire over the parapet and have a free range.]



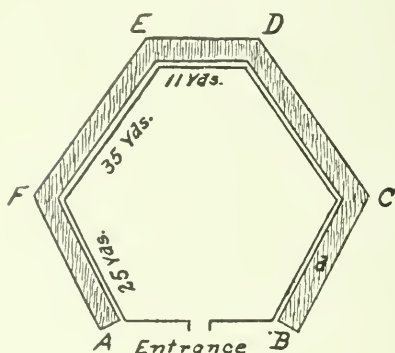
B. Barracks

*Redoubt.*

The magazines are under the ramparts, and are very well protected. The barracks are very comfortable, like all rebel barracks in this neighborhood, being well built log houses. At present the redoubt is occupied as a magazine for the ammunition for the siege train, and holds quite a



pile of shells. Farther down the road is what would be called in military language a lunette, with a *pan coupe* (The short length of parapet, by which the salient angle of a work is sometimes cut off.) at the salient, and the gorge stockaded in this shape.



*A.B is a mere stockade with no ditch.  
Barbettes for guns at C & F. and at the pan coupe D & E.  
d. Ditch.*

### LUNETTE.

This work was fitted for three guns, and say 200 infantry. The ditch was full of water. There were no barracks. The platforms for the guns had been laid and taken up again by the rebels, or by us. . . . The fortifications at Ship Point are said to be very strong. . . . The country round here is very flat and dusty. We are encamped in a cornfield which is by no means as pleasant as grass land. Peach orchards are very abundant, but I am afraid if we stay here till they are ripe there will be more men than peaches. . . . We have built up an extensive arbor in front of our tent, where we sit in arm chairs made out of barrels and enjoy our '*otium cum dignitate*' in true military style. The powers that be seem to have repented of their reduction of baggage, for tomorrow the officers will once more have three tents,—wall tents."

Chase's Diary: "April 19, 1862. . . . Roar of musketry on extreme left at 9.30 p. m."

Grows' Journal: "Saturday, April 19, 1862. Was called at 1 o'clock this morning to go on guard. After going on my post my attention was taken up till 3 o'clock by the passing of troops with gabions made of wicker work. They are filled with earth, and in this way our intrenchments and breastworks are built by our troops. Was relieved at 3 this morning."

Phillips' Diary. "April 19. . . . Towards evening an easterly storm set in, and rained all night. A great many gabions moved across the bridges to this side. A great many men with shovels &c. crossed to the other side."

#### FROM LETTERS OF LIEUT. PHILLIPS.

"CAMP WINFIELD SCOTT NEAR YORKTOWN,

Sunday Forenoon, April 20, 1862.

We arrived here two weeks ago, expecting to march right into Yorktown and have been waiting here ever since without apparently getting much nearer our object. . . . Our principal business now is to guard the bridges across Wormley Creek. We have 2 guns posted on a bluff just this side of the creek, commanding four bridges, and raking the opposite shore. The Battery is well masked with bushes, and I doubt whether the enemy know of its existence. The three sections relieve each other in this duty, each taking it 24 hours at a time, so that I am down there one day out of three. The duties are not very laborious. We have built up a house out of slabs, roofed with a tarpaulin, and we get along very comfortably. Yesterday while I was down there, I devoted my energies to building a chair, calculating on a prolonged stay. We have built up an arbor in front of our tent and rigged up a settee, so that we can sit in the shade in the hot days to come. As the said settee, however, is rather hard, I thought I would

get up something a little more comfortable, and yesterday I set to work to put my plans in execution. The result has fully answered my expectations. I have now a chair, which



*Camp Chair.*

I consider a triumph of genius and in which I can sit with great comfort. My chair is likewise a bedstead, and can be made to occupy any intermediate position between these two extremes. You may judge of its attractiveness by the following incident:—Just after it was completed Major (Albert J.) Myer, Chief of the Signal Corps passed by and was so struck with it that nothing would satisfy him, but he must have one like it, so the man that made mine is going to make one for him. . . .

The siege,—so called,—of Yorktown progresses slowly. The siege train is coming up slowly; some 20 guns and 20 mortars having reached the depot about a mile from here. A large force have been at work making gabions, and a thousand or two went over the creek last night, with shovels and intrenching tools. . . . We have splendid artillery here, and ought to drive them out of their position in 48 hours after our guns are in position. Our siege train is made up mostly of 4½ inch Rifled Guns, a very accurate and long ranged piece of ordnance, and a half dozen 100 pdr. Parrott Guns, which seem to have knocked Fort Pulaski to pieces. [Fort Pulaski commanded the entrance to the Savannah River on the eastern coast of Florida.] The enemy have some heavy ordnance e. g. the 10 inch Mortars with which they practice at us, and some heavy Columbiads in their water batteries, but old smooth bore 320 and 240

form the most of their armament, while they use still smaller pieces a great deal. . . . The military commission to Europe,—Major Delafield, Major Mordecai and Captain McClellan,—found great fault with the allied generals, because they attempted to besiege Sebastopol without surrounding it and cutting off its supplies. General McClellan marches his army 200 miles to besiege Yorktown, and places it in this position. (See Plan of Operations.) I have not yet been able to discern the difference between the two situations. And considering the fact that the rebels can throw up as many intrenchments as they please between Yorktown and Richmond, the siege does not seem to promise any very satisfactory results. . . . Referring to the Revolutionary map, our general hospital is at Lafayette's Headquarters. We are encamped where the Virginia militia were. Our bridges are built across Wormley's Creek where the old road crossed it to Moore's house or rather a little above. [A frame building with a brick foundation about a mile and a half south of Yorktown, and a quarter of a mile from the banks of the York River. The commissioners of the two armies met here when Cornwallis surrendered, to agree upon terms of capitulation. At that time it was occupied by a widow of the name of Moore, and was known as "Moore's house."] The enemy's works extend in a curved line from the British redoubt on the shore of the river to the Virginia quarters, our first camp, half way between Moore's house and the Adj. Gen's Quarters. Our guns placed in position the first two days a little farther up the road to the right: Martin's Battery the first day to the right of the field where the British laid down their arms. . . . The peach orchard to the left has been cut down, and the houses close by it burnt by the rebels to prevent them from sheltering our sharpshooters. The Battery to which we directed most of our attention when we were in the field is the one nearest the road."

## FROM ANOTHER LETTER OF THE SAME DATE.

"Our three tents for the officers arrived yesterday, and as soon as the easterly storm, which is the order of the day at present, stops, we shall move in. . . . I will allow General McClellan 5 weeks to take the place, and I think by the end of that time the soldiers will capture Yorktown. . . . The rebels occupy one line across the peninsula and we occupy another parallel to it, and allowing that both sides can throw up dirt equally fast, they have the advantage of us, as they have one pile of dirt all thrown up. As far as I can see there is nothing to prevent them from throwing up a new line in the rear of their present intrenchments, and so continuing the process, and even supposing we could drive them out of their fortifications without difficulty by the slow process of a siege, it would take considerable time to trench from here to Richmond. . . . As things are now working, the event will be decided by engineering skill, and artillery practice. . . . In the point of artillery practice our army has shown itself immensely superior to the rebels. At Hilton Head, Fort Henry, Fort Pulaski, our heavy guns were so well manned that the result was inevitable, and here it must be the same. Our siege train consisting of the best Rifled Guns ought to dismount every rebel gun in 48 hours, and I have no doubt will do it. At 2,200 yards the first Sunday, one of my guns was aimed at a rebel gun, and at the second shot landed a shell in the embrasure. This from a 3 inch gun. A 4½ inch gun of course ranges a great deal farther and more accurately at the same distance, and the first parallel is generally placed at 600 yards from the work attacked. . . . We have also six 100 pdr. Parrott Guns which I see went clear through the brick walls of Fort Pulaski. . . . In the meantime the main body of the army will lie back out of danger, unless the garrison make a sortie, when we shall drive them back without much difficulty.

April 21, 1862. Mr. Schenkle the inventor of the only percussion fuze now in use, who was here to-day, says that a 200 pdr. Parrott gun has been mounted on the Point across Wormley's Creek, intended to silence the water batteries of the enemy. . . . Mr. Fay, allotment commissioner for Massachusetts, has been here to-day."

---

The Roll in charge of this officer has been thus described:—

"It is a new kind of pay roll made out by the State of Massachusetts for her soldiers, and is called the 'Allotment Roll.' Each man that wishes to allot a part or whole of his money to his parents, friends, or any one, can do so by signing the roll. Then after each company has made out its roll, and it has been signed, by the company, the Captain endorses it and gives it to the Paymaster. The Paymaster then sends the money to the State Treasurer, and he sends it to the city or town treasurer. Then the city or town treasurer notifies the persons to whom the money is sent, and they call and get it. The object is to insure safety and to save paying the percentage on the money which would have to be paid if it was sent by express."

---

Phillips' Diary: "April 22, 1862. . . . Set to work and built a frame house 18x13 ft., 4 ft. high at the eaves, 8 ft. high at the ridge."

#### THE TRENCHES.—YORKTOWN.

HEAD QUARTERS ARMY OF THE POTOMAC.

CAMP WINFIELD SCOTT NEAR

YORKTOWN VA. April 23d, 1862.

General Orders. [Extracts.]

The following orders for the construction of batteries and trenches



during the operations before Yorktown, will be strictly observed, viz.—

Night working parties will be double the size of day parties, one-half forming a support to the guard.

(IN CASE OF AN ATTACK.)

The buglers and drummers,—of whom there should always be some in the parallels with the officers commanding the firing parties and supports,—immediately sound “to arms” or beat the “long roll,” which will be repeated all along the lines, and as far back as the reserves. . . .

The utmost silence and order must be preserved in the trenches, and in marching to and from them. All working parties for the trenches will go equipped for action.

To prevent the glistening of the bayonets and arms betraying the movements of the troops, bayonets will be carried in the scabbard, and the gun slung while going to and from the trenches.

An officer will be sent with each relief of the guards and working parties to the batteries and trenches, who will return to his camp to escort the next relief to their proper position.

No officer, soldier, or citizen, shall be allowed to enter the trenches, or to approach their vicinity, unless specially detailed on duty there. The only exception to this rule, will be in the case of General Officers, the staff of the Major Gen. Commanding, and the staff officers of the Generals near the trenches.

[All officers or men who unnecessarily exposed themselves to the view of the enemy, with the above exceptions, were to be arrested and sent to the nearest Provost Marshal.]

By command of Major General McClellan

S. WILLIAMS Ass't Adj't. Gen'l.

---

FROM A LETTER OF LIEUT. PHILLIPS.

“Thursday morning, April 24, 1862. The 5th Battery now can bear comparison with any battery in the service, and does not fall below the average standard in this Division. Griffin's Battery is of course well drilled. All regulars are.”

Phillips' Diary: “April 25, 1862. . . . Built a turf chimney and fireplace in the house: cold, easterly storm all day and night.”

Grows' Journal: "Friday, April 25, 1862. This forenoon I got some 'laurel root,' a very pretty wood, and made a pipe. It looks very neat and nice. The wood grows quite plenty around here. There is the usual amount of heavy firing from the large guns. We hear it so much that I have got used to it."

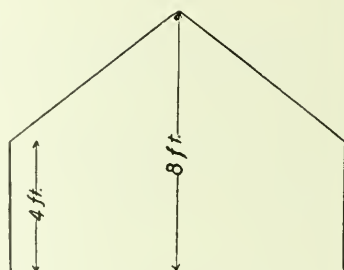
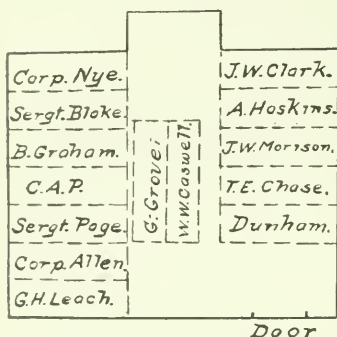
#### FROM LETTERS OF LIEUT. PHILLIPS.

"April 26, 1862. The Doctor of the N. Y. 44th occasionally drops in with a New York daily, and Mr. Whittemore reporter for the N. Y. *Times*, brought in this morning's *Times* and *Herald* of the 23d, still as I received Boston papers of the 22d, last night, I keep posted as well as anybody. . . . The house which we first built was soon carried off, to build the bridges, and nothing was left behind but a few slabs and joists. The other sections got along with a patched up arrangement which lets in wind, rain and cold, and kept everybody pretty uncomfortable. Last Tuesday, however, when the Centre section got down there, I set to work to see what we could do, and the ingenuity of the section soon planned an edifice, which I consider one of the wonders of the war. This building is 13 by 17 ft., gable ended, all framed together, and all pinned together with oaken pins. The sides are made of slabs put on clapboard fashion, one end being built of oak timbers 14 inches square. The roof is made of a tarpaulin, full as light as canvas. It is 4 ft. high at the eaves, and 8 ft. at the ridge pole, so that we can stand up and walk around with great comfort. . . . During the last three or four days an easterly storm has prevailed, and we found that our hotel would be uncomfortable without a fire, so yesterday the Centre section again took hold and built a fireplace and chimney of turf on one side of the house, cutting a hole in the side. The chimney draws beautifully, and all yesterday and last night we kept up a roaring fire. The floor is made of oak

slabs, smooth side up, pretty well levelled, but with occasional cracks three or four inches in width. We spread our blankets on the floor, put a sloping board down for a pillow, and turn in.

The following plan will give you an idea of how we pack.

*5 ft. fireplace.*



*House near Wormleys Cr.*

We have got our wall tent, Scott and I having one, but as the Captain's tent is the only one with a stove in it, we have no chance yet to enjoy it. I like the tent much better than a Sibley. It is 9 ft. square, and about 9 ft. high, four feet high at the eaves. It is not so large as the Sibley tent, but the room is so disposed that it can all be used. The beds are placed on each side, leaving a clear space in the middle with a table, looking glass, &c. opposite the door. The only trouble is that the tents are not new, and ours has got a hole ripped in the end opposite the door, which we find it difficult to stop up. . . . A N. Y. Lieut. Colonel and Major deserted day before yesterday and went to Yorktown. How much information they can carry I do not know. Two batteries have been established by our side in the woods to the right of the field where our Battery was placed the first Sunday, and four  $4\frac{1}{2}$  inch guns have been mounted in one of them. The mortars will be placed on the opposite shore

of Wormley's Creek, at the end of the bridges which we are guarding. The bank has been cut away. . . . In this position they will be completely sheltered and out of sight of the enemy, while they can be fired with perfect ease, it being of no consequence that the mark should be in sight from the mortar.

April 26, 1862. Two batteries we have built and four guns we have mounted. These are so near the rebel fortifications that the men at work on them are not allowed to speak a loud word. The trees are still standing in front of them, so that the rebels cannot ascertain their exact position, though they know we are doing something in the vicinity; accordingly they amuse themselves by shelling the woods but without doing any particular damage to anybody. The floating bridge which I mentioned in one of my letters as being rather a failure, has been taken up, and the materials used to build a bridge still lower down the creek. . . . There is now great fault found with the artillery ammunition, and I do not think that McC. can shift all the blame on the Ordnance Department. Take one instance: before we left Hall's Hill, every artillery officer in the Army knew that the percussion ammunition furnished to us was utterly unreliable. The percussion fuze universally adopted is Schenkle's, the best yet invented, but the shot preferred by the Ordnance Department was found to be unreliable. Of all the percussion shell which we fired at Hall's Hill, only two proved at all satisfactory, and these were fired at the very short range of 200 yards. The rest turned over, burst in the air, and flew round in all sorts of ways, the greater number not being seen or heard of after they left the muzzle of the guns. Still knowing all this, half the batteries in the Army were supplied with the Dyer shot. The consequence was that in the first day's fight at Yorktown, the percussion ammunition exploded pretty much everywhere, at the muzzle of the gun, and everywhere else, except the right place. As soon as the news of this reached

headquarters there was a great hullabaloo. Mr. Schenkle (see p. 125) was sent for post haste, and new ammunition was ordered, and the Ordnance Department blamed generally and particularly. . . . Again the 4½ in. siege guns it is said proved to be a failure before we left Washington, and yet McClellan accepts a train of them though greatly inferior to the Parrott gun, and the bombardment of Fort Pulaski has demonstrated that the James projectile is immensely superior to either. Then I don't know but what it shows generalship to draw up our Army in front of the rebel lines without any chance to outflank or surround them. . . . We can storm the works, of course, but this we might have done a great deal better the first day when the enemy were surprised and before they were reinforced.

Sunday evening, April 27th. . . . Our bridge builders seem to have changed their plans. They have taken up the upper pontoon bridge and the floating bridge, and carried the materials of the latter a short distance down the stream to build a pier bridge, which sank into the mud as soon as it was finished, so that now about 50 feet of the centre are under water. The lower pontoon bridge is at present defended, in addition to our Battery, by a pine log and a barrel mounted on wheels! Our house at the bridge still continues in excellent condition, the Right section today actually did a little work on it, raising the chimney a few feet. Sergt. Peacock says that the rule of the section is to put under arrest any man who does anything more than what is absolutely necessary to sustain life. . . . Staunton and Weldon are turning out to be important. Perhaps McClellan's plans are deeper than anybody thinks. . . . The whole siege train has all disappeared, and I presume guns and mortars are all mounted somewhere, ready to open when the word is given.

At present there is quite a rage for pipe making here. At least half of the men in the Division are carving pipes out

of laurel root, and I am not sure but I shall take to it myself, though whether I shall make a pipe, salt cellar or toothpick I have not yet decided. . . . Five Parrott 100 pdrs. have been mounted near a large house between Wormley's Creek and the river . . . one from which a very good view could be obtained of the rebel fortifications. Very extensive works have been erected on the other side of the creek, and the rebels occasionally try to shell out our workmen. This morning there was quite a noise for a few minutes as they threw out a field battery, and fired as fast as they could load for about 15 minutes. The gunboats have been firing a few shots today, and seemed to have got the range better."

On this day General Fitz John Porter was appointed Director of the Siege.

Grows' Journal: "Sunday, April 27th. I spent a very pleasant forenoon and portion of this afternoon reading the *American Union* and the *Herald*."

Letter of Corporal Spear: "Monday, April 28, 1862. . . . Every day thousands and thousands of men are at work throwing up entrenchments and digging rifle pits for the use of our Army in the coming battle; the infantry regiments do the fatigue duties, while batteries do guard duty. Yesterday there was considerable firing between the rebels and our gunboats, and several times during the day a battery of field artillery would come out and fire upon our fatigue men."

Grows' Journal: "Tuesday, April 29, 1862. Was called at 1 o'clock this morning to go on my post, which I did, coming off at 3, when I was relieved. There has been some awful heavy firing by the rebels and our gunboats all night. I can plainly see the flashes of their guns every time they fire. I went to my tent and laid down and read the *Herald* and the *Journal* that I had borrowed. I had read about half an hour when the camp was awakened by the call Hitch up. I had not more than got to my place, when an



order came into camp—‘Un Hitch,’ so we all went to our tents again. It was expected the rebels would make a sortie out on some of the regiments and if they had they would have been cut to pieces.”

Later in the day he saw 15 rebel prisoners who had been taken that morning.

### LETTER OF THOMAS E. CHASE.

“CAMP NEAR YORKTOWN VA.

April 29, 1862.

We were paid off yesterday, and all is lovely again. For the last two months our standard currency has been hard bread: five hard breads for a sheet of paper, and a whole day's ration for a postage stamp. We have eaten hard tack so long that now it is second nature to us, and I believe that if worst came to worst we could masticate flint. We live on hard tack; hard tack is our money; we use them for dipper covers and candlesticks, and if they were large enough we should make them into ‘spare wheels’ for our gun carriages, but hard tack are of no account now for money, which is the one thing needful, is plenty.

We are in camp today, but the Right section is at the Bridge, and while I am penning this I can hear the enemy's shells bursting very near the Battery. They are nervous about something today, for they have blazed away quite brisk this a. m. Their firing is all guess work, and has not yet done any harm. They cannot see the bridges or workmen, but fire as near as they can judge, and try to shell the men at work on the bridges and siege guns.

You say your business is dull. Well, our business out here is ‘looking up.’ . . . All the canvas we have on hand is what makes the roof of our house, iron remains quiet, but there is a prospect of an upward tendency, as we have a big contract to fill in Yorktown. We are doing something in

lead, and expect that trade in this line will be very active soon.

You say that Easter Sunday was observed as a day of Thanksgiving and prayer for the recent victories of our army. I attended divine service that day with the 17th N. Y. Regiment.

There is so much confusion in the tent that I hardly know what I have written or am writing."

At the close of this letter reference is made to the lint which was prepared by individuals and by the ladies of the Soldiers' Aid Societies (see p. 2) at the North, meeting at their own houses or in the church vestries to "scrape lint" and roll linen bandages. He says:—

"I have the package of bandages and lint, which you kindly gave me, and before Yorktown is taken they will be needed, if not by me they will by others. When you gave them to me I did not realize that they would ever be needed for the purpose for which they were so carefully prepared, but the stern reality is fast approaching."

---

#### FROM A LETTER OF LIEUT. PHILLIPS.

"April 30, 1862. Our preparations go on gradually: they are now building the mortar beds, having taken a lot of oak timbers which were lying round our Battery at the bridge for that purpose. One of the pontoon bridges was taken up two days ago, and the pontoons are being used to bring planks, shot and shell, up the creek. The gunboats fire 15 or 20 shots a day, make a great deal of noise and accomplish very little. We want an ironclad gunboat to sail up York River past the water batteries, and take the rebel lines in the rear . . . the 'Galena' is an iron clad steamer of 6 guns . . . she is now at Fortress Monroe. . . . 5 p. m. We were mustered this afternoon at 2 o'clock, in

the midst of a rain storm, by Captain Griffin. As a muster for pay includes a parade, inspection, and roll call, you can imagine the pleasure of the thing. About noon the rebels seemed to have a new idea in their heads, for they suddenly threw 3 shot towards the battery by the house. . . . Five 100 pdr. Parrotts sent back our answer, and have been banging away ever since. We can hear the whir-r-r-r of the shell as it flies through the air, the *thud* as it strikes, and then the explosion. Two shells upset after leaving the gun, as we could tell by the irregular sound they made."

Phillips' Diary: "April 30th. The rebels continually shell our intrenchments across Wormley's Creek, and Monday killed one man in the N. Y. 44th."

RELATIVE TO RECRUITS see p. 194.

WAR DEPARTMENT  
ADJUTANT GENERAL'S OFFICE,  
WASHINGTON, May 1, 1862.

General Orders  
No. 49.

Upon requisition made by Commanders of Armies in the field, authority will be given by the War Department to the Governors of the respective States to recruit Regiments now in service.

By Order of the Secretary of War.

L. THOMAS  
Adjutant General.

#### FROM LETTERS OF LIEUT. PHILLIPS.

"May 2, 1862. We have established batteries of siege guns and mortars,—11 batteries at least,—but as yet they are not ready to open. The only exception to this is Battery No. 1 of five 100 pdr. Parrott guns, which now fires once in a while through the day and night. Last night when I was down at the bridge the noise was incessant all night, and I could hardly get a wink of sleep. Their principal attention seemed to be directed to our earthworks, and as most of the shell exploded within 500 or 600 yards of

our guns, the noise was rather disagreeable. This forenoon the performance has been kept up, and Battery No. 1 has had quite a duel with the rebels. . . . We can see the rebels' shots strike in a large field where they are pretty sure not to hurt anybody. One of their shots struck close by a large barn, and with our glasses we could see our men running to pick it up. During the forenoon the rebels appeared to get a little excited, for they elevated their gun and sent a shot whirring clear over our camp towards Gen. McC.'s headquarters. Last night our guard at Wormley's Creek reports that they sent one shell right into the camp fire of the heavy artillerists encamped across the creek. Our house at the bridge we extended yesterday, making it now about 25x13 feet. Our quarters there are altogether the best we have, although my tent is pretty comfortable.

### THE PROVOST GUARD.

One of the institutions round here is the Provost Guard which makes itself particularly obtrusive. The guard is stationed all over the Division about half a dozen at each post. They pitch their shelter tents and keep one man on the lookout all the time: and then woe betide civilian or private soldier, who attempts to cross their beat without a pass. There are three posts down by the bridge, and one about 50 ft. from our tents, and many more, scattered all around the lot.

### THE SUTLER.

Another institution, rather more popular, is the sutler's, which is now exceedingly well patronized. One is in sight from our camp, and I should think at least 50 men have been standing outside the door ever since pay day, three days ago. Prices run rather high and change is not to be had. The unlucky wight who has nothing but a

\$5 treasury note,—and this includes most of the army,—and wants a pound of tobacco, must take his change in sutlers' tickets, or go without his tobacco. . . . P. S. Our Quartermaster Sergeant, just returned from Fortress Monroe, says that the 'Galena' will be here in a few days."

### THE EVACUATION.

Chase's Diary: "May 3, 1862. Yorktown was evacuated today by the enemy. The Right section was withdrawn in the evening. Terrific shelling by our gunboats."

### LETTER OF LIEUT. PHILLIPS.

"Sunday Morning, May 4, 1862.

The American Flag waves over the fortifications of Yorktown, and McClellan can again advance to occupy the deserted intrenchments of the enemy.

For the last week there have been rumors that the enemy were leaving, and last night they took their final departure, burning up what they could not take with them. We were awakened in the night by the firing of the outposts, and a bright light was seen over Yorktown, and this morning our troops took quiet possession. The gunboats have been signalled to move up the river. We are ordered to march tomorrow with two days' cooked rations, forage &c."

---

Grows' Journal: "Sunday, May 4, 1862. Went on my post at 2 this morning. I had not been on more than an hour when I heard heavy cannonading in the direction of Yorktown. In about ten minutes it was almost deafening. In a short time I noticed quite a fire which soon increased to a tremendous large one. I first thought the fight on the

Right had begun but I soon found that the rebels were destroying their stores and some of their works. The reports of the large guns and the rattle of musketry were both awful and sublime. Shortly after 7 o'clock word was received in camp that the rebels had evacuated Yorktown. During the night if Pandemonium had been let loose it would not have caused more excitement than did the leaving of Yorktown! Drums that they have not dared to beat for the last four weeks; bugles that have not sounded since we have come here, now opened their music, and never was a Fourth of July at home equal to it. It is a beautiful morning and the bands are playing the 'Star Spangled Banner,' 'America,' and 'Hail Columbia.' Soon the different camps take up the cheering, and it can hardly be described, for from the throats of 100,000 men cheer after cheer went up, and thanks that the place is ours and without the loss of blood. Divine service was held in the different camps in commemoration of the event.

This place has been for the last four weeks one of dread both to our officers and men, and now that the place is ours our feelings can hardly be described. It does look good to see our old flag flying over the rebels' rag. Some of our men have gone to the city. They found about 1000 barrels of flour and a large quantity of stores. I have a piece of the house where Gen. Washington was at the surrender of Cornwallis. We have had orders to pack our knapsacks, and be ready to start at any moment. Went to Roll at 6. It did seem good to have our old bugle again."

Chase's Diary: ". . . Reconnoissance by balloon 'Intrepid' this morning. Whole company in camp to-day; (May 4th) first time for three weeks."

Diary of Lieut. Phillips: "May 5th 1862. Still at Camp Winfield Scott. Heavy firing all day towards Williamsburg. Rumors of all sorts round camp. Hitched up at 5 p. m., unhitched 15 minutes after, and unharnessed at 1 in the morning."



## LETTER OF PELEG W. BLAKE.

“YORKTOWN, May 5, 1862.

Saturday night (May 3d) there was ‘right smart’ hot work here. The shells were bursting in all directions, and our big siege guns were ‘giving them Hail Columbia.’ The old original Duryea’s Zouaves, the red breeches, charged on the right fort, and the rebels left Yorktown without eating their breakfast. We took all of their big guns and two thousand prisoners, and General Smith on the left wing took nine thousand prisoners, two batteries of light artillery, all hitched up ready for a start. On the Right, in front of where we are, they cut the traces from their guns, and left with their horses in double quick time.

Our troops are chasing the rebels up. While I am writing we are having a big battle close by. The rebels set all kinds of traps to kill our troops when we went into the streets of Yorktown. You could not tip over a barrel, or anything else, but what had a string attached to a big shell or some kind of torpedoes, that would kill five or six men every time they did anything or moved anything. Wherever you could see the dirt thrown up loosely, look out for your feet, or else they would be catching in some string an inch under the dirt, and then shells would explode.

Our folks got plenty of tobacco.”

FROM THE HISTORY OF THE THIRD MASS.  
BATTERY.

“At Yorktown the rebels buried shells underground which exploded when our forces entered the Fort. The gate of the Fort stood open. A heavy shell was planted there which the opening of the gate would have exploded. Our Army declined to enter there. A man who made a hole for a telegraph pole was terribly mangled, and 6 cavalry men and 2 horses were killed in that way.”

## NOTES OF LIEUT. HYDE MAY 21, 1900.

Accompanied by Lieut. Dillingham and Lieut. Daniel Tompkins of the Signal Corps, Lieut. Hyde on the morning succeeding the evacuation of Yorktown, rode into the city on "Black Charley," passing circuitously by the marks set up to indicate the presence of buried torpedoes, placed there for the purpose of blowing up whoever might step upon them. They rode round and examined the fortifications for a half hour, and then went back to camp.

Grows' Journal: "Monday, May 5, 1862. Was awakened about 6 this morning by the rain. I should think by appearances that it has rained hard all night. Heard heavy cannonading at a distance. The rebels have done all that human ingenuity could desire to fix traps for our men. In some places you will see an overcoat laying on the ground, but it will not do to pick it up, for to it is attached a string leading to a fuze containing powder, so when the garment is picked up it causes the powder to explode and by this means destroy our men. Torpedoes are covered with dirt in the street and should horse or man step upon one it is death. In fact the whole place is mined, and so, to prevent accidents, small red flags are placed near these infernal articles, to give a person warning. One of the 22d stepped upon one which killed him and wounded five others. I saw them when they were brought into the Hospital."

Phillips' Diary: "Tuesday, May 6, 1862. Visited Yorktown with Captain Allen and Dillingham, Scott and Terry. Fort quite formidable. Visited the redoubt which was engaged the first Sunday."

## LETTER OF LIEUT. PHILLIPS.

"CAMP WINFIELD SCOTT,

Tuesday, May 6, 1862.

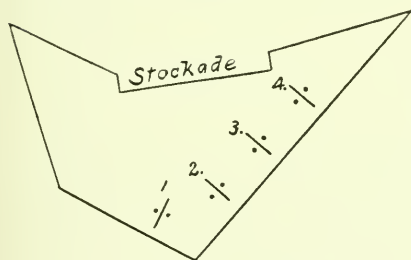
My writing materials have been packed up for the last two days. . . . Day before yesterday we kept receiving orders about every ten minutes, each one contradicting the

one which preceded it. Finally, however, we remained behind, Porter's Division being placed in the Third Reserve, while others pushed on ahead. The gunboats left and went up the river. Yesterday . . . we could hear heavy firing up the river, lasting through the day. . . . In the afternoon Lieut. Hyde went into Yorktown with an officer of the Signal Corps, but did not bring back any trophies. The houses were completely stripped. The streets of Yorktown are filled with ten inch shell, with percussion caps buried just below the ground, and several of our men have been killed by them. Last night about eight o'clock, just as we had made up our minds that we should not move, came an order to hitch up. The night was pitch dark, but in less than 15 minutes we were ready for a move. I was looking after the Captain to report my section all ready, when there came an order to unhitch and leave the horses at the picket rope. So we turned in and at 1, came an order to unhar-ness. Today is very pleasant and the bands are going all round.

Tuesday Eve: I have just returned from a visit to Yorktown. . . . The works are well built, with traverses and blindages in the most approved fashion: [Traverses were masses of earth, thrown up at short distances, to screen the troops from shot and shells fired in ricochet, that is, by the rebounding of a shot which strikes in more spots than one. Blinds were covers of timber, bundles of brushwood or earth, under which guns were secure from projectiles reaching them at the top or in flank.] heaps of sandbags seem to present an obstacle to a shell in whatever direction it should come. The guns, some 40 or 50 in number, are mostly stolen from Uncle Sam: old pattern 32 pdrs. and 24 pdrs., some few 42 pdrs., two 9 inch, some 8 inch,—64 pdrs.,—one 8 in. mortar, and a number of 32 pdr. Howitzers or carronades. They had had six guns of their own manufacture,—Richmond, 1862,—one 10 inch Columbiad and five Rifled Guns of 4 or 5 in. calibre. Four of these Rifled

Guns are now burst: the fragments being thrown round promiscuously, one 32 pdr. is burst also. Very few of the guns are spiked. The guns of rebel make are rough cast, not turned, and probably never tested till tried here. The 10 inch gun was mounted in the eastern corner of the works, and commands nearly  $\frac{3}{4}$  of a circle. This is the place where the shots of Battery No. 1 were directed and the traces of our shots are plainly visible. One struck in a traverse, knocking the sandbags right and left, two ploughed deep furrows in the parapet, and another went through the rebel barracks, knocking down the chimney in its path. The water batteries were very well built and kept. There were four on the bluff, armed as follows, from east to west:—

No. 1, two 32 pdrs. No. 2, three 32 pdrs. No. 3, four 32 pdrs. No. 4 four Columbiads. Each battery was provided with magazine and furnace for heating shot, and sandbag traverses. Down on the beach were two more batteries, which I did not go into. Grape, [Large shot, usually nine, sewed together in cylindrical bags, made to fit, like cartridges, into cannon.] canister shot, and shell were lying round in great profusion. [Canister shot is a tin cylinder with iron heads, filled with balls packed in with sawdust.]



1. 42 pdr.
2. 24 pdr.
3. Rifled Gun (burst)
4. 32 pdr. Howitzer

### *Rebel Redoubt.*

I brought away some canister shot. The work which we engaged the first Sunday is a redoubt about half a mile in advance of the main line, armed with one 42, one 24, one 32 Howitzer and one Rifled Gun burst.

A bloodstain on the ground where a man was blown up by one of the rebel infernal machines, and a little red flag about ten feet from it, admonished us to be careful in walking, and so we did not extend our investigations very far. The rebels have shown great ingenuity in constructing infernal machines for our especial benefit, but since the first day no accident has occurred. They all consist of a ten inch shell with percussion cap hidden in various ways. They are buried all round the top just level with the ground, ready to go off as soon as stepped on. One house seems to have been the particular object of their ingenuity, shells being placed in all convenient spots. Under a table in the corner of the room was placed a coffee pot which most persons would naturally seize as soon as they saw it, but the coffee pot was tied by a small thread to a weight hung directly over the cap of a 10 inch shell, so that the weight would fall as soon as the coffee pot was moved. Then the cellar floor was paved with similar machines at the foot of the stairs, all ready to be stepped on. In this same house there is one room which no one has yet dared to enter, for a ten inch shell is lying on a table in the middle. Nothing can be seen to touch it off, but still people are suspicious here. Two of the magazines have not yet been opened, and we shall have to be careful. . . . We searched in vain to find some trophies, such as pipes, buttons, etc. The guns as yet have not been much meddled with, as they are loaded with—the Rebels only know what. One little rifled piece, the one which has fired so much in the direction of our guard at the bridge, had a shell sticking out at the muzzle, which I looked at but concluded to let remain. In another place I noticed a heap of shell and cartridges half buried in the sand, and I thought that prudence would dictate that they should be touched off with a very long 10 foot pole."

## FROM A LETTER OF LIEUT. PHILLIPS.

WRITTEN MAY 10, 1862. ON BOARD STEAMER NEW HAVEN, YORK RIVER, ABOUT THE FORTIFICATIONS AT YORKTOWN.

"The works are well constructed as far as the details go, of the general plan of the works I don't know enough to speak. I have learned this,—that it is not the quantity of dirt in a fortification that makes it strong, as much as the manner in which it is arranged. There was a great pile of dirt shovelled here, but the dimensions of the ramparts are nothing more than those of an ordinary field work. The height of the rampart and the depth of the ditch are perhaps 12 ft. on an average, or 24 ft. from the bottom of the ditch to the top of the rampart, but this would soon be diminished under the operations of breaching batteries. The batteries which we have already planted would probably have dismounted most of the rebel guns in the first 12 hours of the bombardment. Battery No. 2 in the few scattering shots fired lately, had planted 3 shells within 30 feet of their 10 inch Columbiads, and was placed to enfilade all their water batteries."

## NOTES OF CAPTAIN ALLEN.

After the evacuation Colonel Stephen W. Stryker, of the 44th New York Regiment Infantry, garrisoned Yorktown, entering the city the next morning. He sent a note to Captain Allen inviting him to dine with him that day, and, taking an orderly with him, Captain Allen rode in from camp. After dinner Colonel Stryker said:

"Come with me. I want to show you something."

They went round to several places, finally bringing up at the building here described by Phillips and saw everything as here stated.



This note is added,—after reading the letter as here transcribed,—by Captain George D. Allen, April 19, 1900.

A few days later Corporal Spear made his visit to the fortifications at Yorktown while the Battery was waiting for the infantry to go on board the steamer. He says:—

“Having nothing to do the Captain gave permission to go and view the enemy’s works. At the main entrance, which we entered, there were laid quantities of torpedoes for the purpose of destroying our soldiers should they attempt to enter the fortifications. I, in company with my sergeant, went all about the works and viewed the guns &c, which the rebels had left behind in their retreat. Many of the guns mounted in the fort were good, and some very poor: their magazines splendid and well stored with ammunition, but their quarters were far different, everything in disorder and confusion and very filthy. I managed to find several relics.”

#### REPORT OF GENERAL PORTER.

Of the services of the Division of Artillery under his command during the thirty days of the siege, General Fitz John Porter says in his report:—

“I desire also to express my gratification at the gallant and efficient service of the Division of Artillery, under the immediate direction of Captain Charles Griffin, 5th Artillery, whose reports of service rendered and losses in respective batteries were forwarded in proper time. Often exposed to a hot fire from the enemy, and meeting with some losses, these batteries were examples of superior discipline and instruction, and the conspicuous coolness, gallantry, bravery and skill of the officers and men, merited the highest commendation. These batteries were: D. 5th Artillery, Captain Charles Griffin; C. Rhode Island Artillery, Captain

Weeden; C. & E. Massachusetts (Light) Artillery, commanded respectively by Captain A. P. Martin and Captain (Geo. D.) Allen."

Grows' Journal: "Thursday, May 8, 1862. Struck my tent at 5 and began our march. Arrived in Yorktown at 7 this morning, found that the transports were not ready, so we went 'into park' and set our picket rope, then the men were dismissed except the guard. Harry Simonds and myself then went into the town. The rebels could have held it against awful numbers. There are not many buildings in the place, but the fortifications are equal to a Sevastopol or a Gibraltar. I passed into the Water Battery and examined it, a most splendid work, then passed into the lot where the dead were buried.

There were in all about 60 graves in this lot, and 25 in another. Had quite a stroll through the place. At 3 this afternoon we hitched out again and went to the wharf, and had to get the guns ready to go aboard. We had to wait till half past eleven at night before we could load, then we commenced in good earnest."

Chase's Diary: "May 8, 1862. Turned out at 2 a. m. and packed up, hitched up, and left Camp Winfield Scott at sunrise and marched to Yorktown; halted just outside the village and unharnessed the horses. At 8 p. m. embarked on steamer 'New Haven' and lay moored in the stream all night."

## CHAPTER VIII.

### THE BATTLE OF HANOVER COURT HOUSE.

MAY 27, 1862.

"And many a brave man from the war  
Came feeble and maimed of limb.  
Bullet-scar and sabre-scar  
And fevered weakness, sadder far,  
Were Glory's marks on him!  
These living martyrs of the war—  
Who tells us where they are?"

—ROSSITER W. RAYMOND, Captain U. S. V.

—*Vision and Duty.*

The latest plan of the Peninsula campaign would have been successful, General McClellan asserted in his report, if supported with appreciation of its necessities, but which failed because of the repeated failure of promised support at the most critical, and, as it proved the most fatal moment. "The illustration of the heroism of the Army in the abandonment of one plan and the originating of another," he says, "must be left for the pen of the historian in times of calm reflection, when the nation shall be looking back to the past from the midst of peaceful days."

### THE POINT OF ATTACK.

The James River was open to the Union fleets. This had been made possible by the destruction on March 9, 1862, of the rebel ram "Merrimac" by the U. S. "Monitor."

The historian of the Fifth Army Corps observes that "May 11, 1862, McClellan's military instinct demanded the immediate movement of his Army to the James River as a

base." General John E. Wool telegraphed him on May 12th.—"Your flank will be protected on the James River, etc. etc.," and this "military instinct" which was not allowed to sway the wisdom of the controlling powers, was proven to have been founded on the best judgment, for before the close of June it was demonstrated to the world that a strategic movement resting on the Chickahominy, such as was then on foot, was but the "baseless fabric of a dream."

Two main roads run down the Peninsula from near Williamsburg, one following the York River goes to Yorktown, the other following the course of the James, crosses the Warwick at Lee's mills.

A mile east of Williamsburg where these roads come together, was Fort Magruder the centre of the enemy's works, 13 in all, which stretched across the intervening space between the two rivers.

Williamsburg, the seat of William and Mary College chartered in 1693, is built on the ridge of the Peninsula, 3 miles from the James River and 4 from York River. It is distant from Richmond 60 miles, Hampton 36 miles, and Yorktown 12 miles.

#### BY MEMBERS OF THE BATTERY.

Grows' Journal of May 9th has the following entry:—"At 2 o'clock this morning I came aboard the steamer New Haven, spread out my blankets on deck and turned in. We got underweigh at 3 this afternoon with two schooners in tow, having our horses on board. At 6 this evening we arrived off West Point but finding the tide low we did not unload.

Saturday, May 10, 1862. Had breakfast of hard bread and water, then went on deck to look around. This is a very pretty place. The beach extends for miles, very hard and smooth. I should like to live here, and it seems hard to have this place disturbed by war. The water as far as I

can see is covered with boats and vessels, conveying our troops and ammunition."

### LETTER OF LIEUT. PHILLIPS.

"ON BOARD STEAMER, 'NEW HAVEN,'

YORK RIVER, Saturday, May 10, 1862.

Once again we are afloat to find a new point of attack, and the sooner we get landed the better. Going to sea is all very pleasant, but when it comes to embarking a battery and one hundred horses, I beg to be excused.

Thursday morning we were ordered to be in Yorktown by daylight, prepared to embark, so we had 'reveille' at 2 a. m. and started. We arrived at Yorktown about 6, only to find that there was not the slightest chance to get aboard for some hours to come. So we marched into a field and came into park about 50 yards from the walls of Yorktown. The day was very pleasant and the road was very dusty, and the wagons were very thick. The roads were a perfect chaos of mules and mule drivers, one about as stupid as the other.

Meantime, we waited and waited.

Martin's battery came into park alongside of us, and the day slowly rolled on. I managed to buy a loaf of bread, not very large for 25 cents, and made a decent dinner. About 4 o'clock the steamer 'New Haven' hauled up to the wharf, and we put our guns, caissons and baggage wagons on board. This took us till 3 in the morning when we hauled into the stream to give Martin a chance, and turned in. The next day we had to wait till afternoon when we got some schooners into the wharf and loaded our horses. By 4 o'clock this was completed and we fastened the schooner alongside the 'New Haven,' and managed to get a good night's rest.

This morning we are waiting for orders. A schooner

loaded with Griffin's horses has just come alongside. . . .

P. S. Sunday evening. We have landed at West Point on York River our Battery and baggage wagons, and shall land our horses tomorrow. In good health and spirits.

C. A. P."

---

## LETTER OF T. E. CHASE.

ON BOARD STEAMER NEW HAVEN,

OFF WEST POINT VA.

Sunday, May 11, 1862.

. . . I have been all over Yorktown and examined all the enemy's fortifications, and it was an immense work. Two thousand negroes were at work on them for nearly a year, and all their work is thrown away. . . . They had great furnaces to heat shot red-hot to fire at the gunboats to set them on fire; the shot were in the furnaces all ready to be heated, shot and shell piled up alongside of the guns ready at a moment's notice. There lay the sponge staves and everything in complete readiness. All the guns were spiked, and some of the buildings burnt. I saw the ruins of one large building, and in the ashes there was a great lot of shot and shell, and I should think about five barrels of meat laid in a pile, all burned, and about a cart load of fine salt and the iron-work of a lot of cartridge boxes.

The rebel officers had first-rate barracks, good, nice, cot beds, and they are now used for hospitals, and there are already quite a large number of sick and wounded soldiers there.

We are now about a day's march from Richmond, some 28 miles, and where the disheartened rebels will next make a stand we know not. Banks and McDowell are on the other side of Richmond and the flower of the army here chasing and penning them up. . . . The Captain sings out



'fall in' to help unload and I must close for the present. . . .

P. S. Stuck again! We are ashore again on the flats and must wait until 9 o'clock this p. m. before we can finish unloading. Our horses are ashore and a part of our pieces, and I suppose Richmond will be taken and the rest of the army home before we get ashore. . . . I slept on the hurricane deck last night until 12 o'clock, when the wind began to blow so hard that I was afraid of being blown overboard so I *engaged rooms* in the engine room for the rest of the night and slept first rate. I have got so now that I couldn't sleep on anything but boards, cedar rails, or a pile of chain cable. . . . Perhaps you will see by this time that it is useless to worry, for I have chewed my hard tack in Yorktown unmolested by any of the chivalry, and have squinted into the very muzzle of their biggest gun!

My writing desk is my knapsack resting on the muzzle of our gun."

Sunday and Monday, May 11th and 12th were occupied in disembarking, and they got into camp at 7 p. m. on the 12th.

Grows' Journal: "May 12th. We had to go ashore at 9 this forenoon. It is a very hot morning. Had some coffee and hard bread, after which we went into a barge and laid down to get rid of the sun. After dinner visited the scenes of the late battle at Williamsburg. It looked bad to see the mounds of earth over our brave men that fell here. The fight was day before yesterday. . . . At 4 this afternoon our horses arrived. We got them ashore and set our picket rope. Turned in under the gun to get some sleep for we start in the morning again."

May 13th they started on the march. The Divisions of Franklin, Smith, Sykes, and Porter advanced to Cumberland by way of the New Kent Court House, 14 miles; the Battery marching with Porter's Division at 4.30 p. m."

## FROM LETTERS OF LIEUT. PHILLIPS.

"The day was very pleasant, the roads very dusty and the woods through which we passed, beautiful; so on the whole, the march though tiresome was not so bad as it might have been.

Shortly after leaving West Point, we passed through the woods where Franklin's Division had a fight the other day. From appearances it must have been an unpleasant spot to be in. The trees were perfectly riddled with bullets, some having three or four holes in them, but I suppose like most bullets they injured more trees than men. We kept halting all along the road, which was blocked up by wagons, mule teams and troops, but finally reached the camp about five p. m. . . . It was in a large, dusty wheat field on a level plain right on the shore of the Pamunkey River."

Grows' Journal: "May 13th 1862. At 6 we took up the line of march for a place called Cumberland, about 15 miles. We got along very well till 9 o'clock, when we had to wait five hours for two other Divisions to pass. Built a fire by the side of the road, and made some coffee. On account of stopping in the road so long we did not arrive at our camp ground till late this afternoon. Every house we passed had a white flag hung out to show they were peaceable. After pitching my little tent I dropped on the ground and fell asleep. Awaked at 7 this morning and was told that I must go on guard, as one of the men was sick, and it being my next turn I had to go. I offered several \$1.00 if they would take my place, but could find no one, the men being completely worn out by the heat and the march."

General McClellan's Head Quarters were close by, and at 5 p. m. of the 14th the Battery was called in line to salute the General and Secretary Stanton.

Grows' Journal: "Wednesday, May 14th. On my post I did not dare sit down for fear I should get asleep. Both men and horses are pretty well tired out. We march again in the morning."

Those on guard of course could not rest on the march, even when the column stopped.

### FROM SPEAR'S LETTERS.

#### REVIEW OF A WEEK.

"May 14, 1862.

Well, we waited in Yorktown until 7 o'clock at night before we could commence the loading of our Battery and its accompaniments, and all was aboard the transport, by 2½ o'clock the next morning, which was about the size of the 'Nelly Baker.' Laid off in the stream until 3 in the afternoon, when all went ashore and commenced the loading of horses on schooners. This took about two hours, and then steamer, schooners and all, hauled out into the stream, where we remained all night and the next day until 2 o'clock, when orders were received to proceed up the York River. Reached West Point at dusk. Monday was a hard and tough day for the boys, as it took nearly all day to unload the horses and guns, and at night all were very tired, but managed to retire about 9 o'clock after a good supper of coffee, hard bread, and salt 'horse.' Not much sleep for that night, however, as we were routed out at 2 o'clock to be ready to move by sunrise. At sunrise were on the road from West Point to Cumberland Creek. We advanced readily until the sun came out so hot, and the roads became very dusty, and as there was but little air stirring, it was oppressive to us. Reached Cumberland Creek at dusk, and for supper coffee, hard bread and salt pork.

Wednesday night rain, and continued heavy fall all night and the next day and night. About 12 o'clock Wednesday

night the boys of the tent in which I am, awoke and found the water standing 3 inches deep inside of the tent. Everything was wet through and through. At 3 o'clock were routed up same way as usual, ordered to pack up, and at 6 o'clock had everything ready to move: tents struck, horses harnessed, and hitched in, but owing to the heavy rain, and the bad condition of the roads, we did not leave the encampment until about 12 o'clock. Proceeded well until we came to a swamp, and then one of our caissons got stuck fast in the mud, and we were obliged to remain there all night. As soon as we found that we should have to remain in the middle of the swamp, we went to work, built a blazing fire and prepared some coffee. After partaking of our frugal meal, some went to work and pitched a tent to sleep in during the night, and at 10 o'clock everything was ready for sleep. On awaking the next morning found it pleasant and were ordered to move on, so struck our tent, hitched up our horses and pulled out of the swamp, and by 9 o'clock reached the place where the Division was encamped."

---

FROM CHASE'S LETTER OF MAY 14, 1862.

"Cumberland Va. 14th May, 1862. . . . The trip up York River was a pleasant one,—or rather the scenery,—and the country looks more civilized than it does on the Potomac. There are many splendid residences and fine plantations, and some of the houses had white flags flying in front of them. At West Point in a small enclosure there are nineteen graves of men who were killed near there when Franklin's Division arrived, and belonged to the 31st N. Y. Regt. They were buried in a trench, but their graves appear to be separate on the surface, and each one has a board neatly marked with their names, age, &c. . . . I must close for we have been standing in line for the last hour to salute

General McClellan and the Secretary of War. . . . I will send Fred a few seeds which I took from a deserted secesh house. I do not know what they are, but perhaps he would like to plant them. We are to march again tomorrow at 6 a. m. and we expect to help clear out some masked batteries between here and Richmond. . . .

P. S. Passed a guide-board yesterday with the following curious inscription on it, viz. 'Richmond 31 miles.' "

#### FROM LETTERS OF LIEUT. PHILLIPS.

"CUMBERLAND, BANKS OF THE PAMUNKEY,

Wednesday Forenoon, May 14, 1862.

Things look very different when seen by a newspaper correspondence subjected to a military censorship and when seen here. The Rebels left Yorktown because they had to, but the compulsion might have been stronger. . . . Our guns were better than theirs and would have knocked their works all to pieces. . . . Our nearest batteries were some 1800 yards from the enemy's works. . . . They commenced an evacuation which lasted three days . . . but our generals with balloons, spies, pickets, gunboats &c. knew nothing of it till every man had left the intrenchments. Then General McC. . . . pushed on with artillery and cavalry. The enemy retiring in perfect order, left a rear guard at Williamsburg to hold us in check, while the main body pushed on to the Chickahominy, and in this they succeeded. Hooker's Division attacked them and were driven back, losing three out of four batteries, and were about surrounded when reinforcements arrived. These reinforcements sufficed to drive the enemy back to their works, which they abandoned soon after, as their design was merely to hold them for a time. . . . General McC. rode through our camp on his way to Williamsburg between 4 and 5 o'clock in the afternoon, so that he could not have got there

very early. We have not been in any fight yet, though the event may come off any day. . . .

We are encamped on a large level plain right on the shore of the river. Our own camp is in a wheat field, very dusty. Gen. McClellan with a long string of generals, aides, French Princes . . . officers and escort, passed us and camps close by. It is now raining and we are all blue and growling. Nothing to eat but hard tack and coffee without sugar. The President is here today.

Evening: It still rains. We managed to get some fresh bread for supper, and are in rather better spirits; also we bought two hams, one of which has been boiled for tomorrow."

---

The next morning, May 15th, the Division was ordered to move at 6.30 a. m. as follows:—

1. Berdan's Sharp Shooters. 2. Artillery. 3. Butterfield's Brigade. 4. Martindale's Brigade. 5. McQuade's Brigade. About 5 o'clock, however, Franklin's Division commenced passing and the Battery had to wait. The roads ahead were apparently very bad, for Franklin's Division advanced slowly, but by ten o'clock the last baggage wagon disappeared, and Porter's Division started on its slow progress toward White House Landing.

---

#### FROM LETTERS OF LIEUT. PHILLIPS.

"Our march was very intermittent,—now we advanced a few hundred yards, then we came to a long halt, and so we kept on. Our first stick was in a field. The grass looked very fine but underneath was all quicksand. With some difficulty half the Battery got through, but one piece cut through and two horses tumbled over. So we went to work to unharness, unlimbered, and pulled it out.



We kept on, up and down, through sloughs corduroyed by pioneers, halting every half hour. Our mule team got stuck and broke the pole, so we left it in the mud. Then we passed Captain Martin's battery wagon.

The day was slipping away, it began to grow dark and the roads grew worse. About 5 o'clock I rode ahead to see to the teams passing over a difficult place, and found 12 horses hitched on hauling our carriages through the mud. Three of my four carriages got safely through, and I yelled out 'Forward with the Fourth Caisson!' Promptly came back the answer from the rear,—'Fourth Caisson stuck in the mud.'

I rode back and found the caisson (Page's) stuck fast, and 10 horses tugging at it without starting it.

We tried it a little while, but it was growing dark, and we concluded to give it up for the night; unhitched, left our carriages in the road, built fires, opened our haversacks, spread tarpaulins and pitched in."

Grows' Journal: "Thursday, May 15, 1862. Got up at 3 a. m. It rained all night but has held up now for a while. At 5 this morning we received orders not to march till 9 o'clock, and we were in a nice fix, our tents all down, and it began to rain like fury. Three hours' rain in this country spoils the roads for travelling till the sun dries up the mud, but our journey is to be a short one, only five miles. We started at 9 this forenoon, and at 7 this evening we had come  $3\frac{1}{2}$  miles!

The 15th of May, 1862, will be a day ever to be remembered by those who marched today.

It has rained hard all day. Sometimes our guns would go almost out of sight, and we would have to pull them out by hand. It was a hard sight to see the poor infantry fall down, completely worn out. I thought at one time I should not hold out much longer, but I am thankful for one thing: I am in good health, and I have reason to think it

was this that carried me through. Several of our men and officers dropped.

No pen can describe nor language express the sufferings of today. It would have been a very nice and pleasant march if it had not rained.

So here we are stuck in the woods, dark as coal. We cannot go any farther tonight, so after building large fires we made a little covering to keep the rain off. The cooks made us some hot coffee, after which Harry and I were talking about home, when I heard a man behind me ask 'Is not that Dave Grows?'

I looked round and there stood Cornelius Smith, an old schoolmate of mine.

So we talked over old times and how he liked soldiering, till 9 o'clock; then Harry Simonds, Joe Knox,—poor little boy,—and I, turned in with a large fire to our feet. But before doing so I had a change of wet clothes to dry ones, thanks to a good wife's care.

Friday, May 16, 1862. Got up at 6 a. m., nice morning, and began to build a road. At 10 this forenoon we were in camp."

On this march they had not lost a horse. The pioneers and infantry helped to pull out the mired guns. The night of the 15th, Allen, Dillingham and Phillips slept under a tarpaulin all night in a pouring rain. The camp ground which they reached on the 16th, was White House Landing where Head Quarters had been established. It was a beautiful place, a large clover field, near a fine house, the grounds covering 35 acres. The Landing is on the Pamunkey River a tributary of the York, 30 miles north of Williamsburg, and 25 east of Richmond with which it is connected by the Richmond and York River railroad. It derived its name from the white wooden house near it, occupying the site of the residence of Mrs. Custis, afterwards the wife of Washington, and had been recently occupied by General Lee, the Confederate general. The water at this

point on the river being of sufficient depth, it became a great supply depot for the Union army.

Lieut. Phillips wrote the night of their arrival:—"I have just cut enough clover to make a bed, and expect to sleep comfortably." Later in the movement he refers to it again: "We remained there Saturday and Sunday, eating Colonel Lee's clover and wheat, and burning up his fence rails. Sunday evening, Hyde, Dillingham and I went down to the Pamunkey and took a swim."

Grows' Journal: "Sunday, May 18, 1862. The evening is enlivened by the singing of the 'whip-poor-will'!"

### McDOWELL COMING SOUTH.

Information was received May 18th, 1862, from the Secretary of War that General Irvin McDowell, with his command of 40,000 men had been ordered to move southeast from Fredericksburg to a connection with the Right wing of the Army of the Potomac, which was ordered to be extended to the north of Richmond in co-operation with the movement.

### FIFTH PROVISIONAL ARMY CORPS.

By General Orders No. 125, Head Quarters Army of the Potomac, May 18, 1862, the forces commanded by Maj. Gen'l Fitz John Porter were designated as the Fifth Provisional Army Corps, and by General Porter's promotion the Division came under the command of Brigadier General George W. Morell.

General Orders

No 125.

II. The attention of the General commanding has been called to the publication of letters from officers and others connected with the Army, containing information which must have been of much value to the enemy should it have reached him. To communicate precise intelligence of the strength, position, or movements of the army in private letters not designed for publication, is itself highly improper, and liable

to prove of serious disadvantage to our operations, but when such intelligence is allowed to pass into the public prints, the proceeding deserves grave censure, if indeed the offense does not become one demanding the exaction of the penalty denounced by the law for giving information to the enemy.

Henceforth the communication for publication of any intelligence likely to prove of advantage to the enemy is prohibited, and the utmost circumspection is enjoined upon correspondents in their private letters.

#### FROM A LETTER OF LIEUT. PHILLIPS.

“CAMP NEAR THE WHITE HOUSE,

Sunday morning, May 18, 1862.

By a Special Order just issued, Porter's Division is temporarily detached from the 3d,—Heintzelman's,—Army Corps, and together with Sykes's Infantry Reserve,—Regulars and 5th N. Y.,—forms a Provisional Corps under command of Brig. Gen. Fitz John Porter. This places us in the Reserve. Porter's, Franklin's, and Smith's Divisions are now here, but will probably move tomorrow.”

Grows' Journal: “May 19, 1862. At 6 we were on the road again for Richmond. It looked lowery when we started, and we had not marched more than one mile when it began to rain. I put my blanket over my shoulders, and it kept me dry on the march. Berdan's Sharpshooters halted near us, and I had a good chance to see the ‘Old Californian,’ the man who killed so many of the rebels at Yorktown.

Instead of seeing a young man, I found a little old man bowed down with age, with long hair, and a staff in his hand, but a pair of the brightest eyes I ever saw.

After marching seven miles we went into park at 3 o'clock this afternoon on one of the most beautiful places I ever saw. No pen can describe the beauties of this place. In our rear is a railroad track and the ruins of a large bridge burnt by the rebels in their retreat. After we arrived here it stopped raining and the sun came out. I then pitched

my tent for the usual three, Harry Simonds, Joe Knox and myself. . . . This place is called Tunstall's Station."

It was also called "Station 20" and was on the Richmond and York River R. R. They crossed the railroad here and were on the northern side.

#### FROM LETTER OF LIEUT. PHILLIPS.

MAY 20TH, 1862.

"About 200 yds. to the east of us, and in plain sight through the back door, as I sit writing, our men are repairing a railroad bridge. General McClellan's Head Quarters are directly to the west on top of White's Hill.

This is the pleasantest camping ground we have had yet, but like every other place the soldiers are a little too thick. When we arrived the woods were very thick on the hill side between us and the railroad, but they have been disappearing very fast, and although we have had a guard over there to preserve some shade for us, it is about as hopeless a task as to keep off a flock of locusts. . . . The sutlers are rather scarce and their prices run rather high; butter 40 cts. a pound, eggs 50 cts. a dozen &c &c. We consider ourselves lucky if we get anything, even at their prices. People who are accustomed to beating down prices, would be rather astonished to get into a sutler's establishment. As soon as his wagon is unloaded, a grand rush commences, which lasts till everything is gone. Nobody stops to ask the price. As a general thing a sutler will not sell to anybody outside of the command to which he is attached, which places us at a disadvantage. As far as the officers are concerned, a sutler is a useful man, but with the men I think their advantage is questionable. Hardly any man can withstand the temptation of patronizing the sutler and \$13 lasts a very short time. The men get on just as well, are as healthy, if they confine themselves to Government rations. But with

the officers the case is different. No provision is made for feeding them, and they have to look out for themselves. As long as they remain in a civilized neighborhood there is no difficulty about this, but as soon as we begin to march provisions get rather scarce. Hard tack and salt junk are plenty enough, but there it ends. Nothing else can be had for love or money.

May 21, 1862. At eleven o'clock [p. m. of the 20th] orders came to march at 5. Reveille was sounded at 3, and as I was officer of the day I got the Battery ready at 5 minutes before five. Our baggage went on ahead, and our Battery ahead of the others. Just as we started my unlucky Fourth Caisson broke a trace: a new one was put in and the caisson resumed its place in the column. All went well for half a mile when we came to a very steep hill, when right in the middle, snap went the new trace, and again we had to stop till this could be replaced. After we got to the top of the hill we found an excellent road for several miles and got along rapidly, till we stopped at 8 to allow Franklin's Division to get out of the way. We halted several hours in a wheat field and watered the horses. The morning was misty but now the sun came out very hot. We found here the best spring of water we have yet seen in Virginia: the water hitherto having been full of clay and very poor. . . . The negroes round here are running off very fast in one direction, while their masters are running in the other. . . .

Evening: We arrived at this camp at 11 o'clock a. m. having marched 6 or 8 miles. The country here is quite well cultivated, there being many large wheat and clover fields. The roads for most of the way were bordered by hurdle fences. We are encamped, I believe, in Hanover County. The road upon which we came goes to Richmond through Newbridge Church, which is about 5 miles from the city. We are now about 18 miles from Richmond. The nearest route from West Point, the old stage road,



which passes over Bottom's Bridge is south of us. . . . A squadron of cavalry passed here this evening, having been within 9 miles of Richmond, 500 yards beyond our pickets, and in sight of the enemy's camps. Our camp is very pleasant: the four batteries are encamped on the left of the road in a wheat and grass field bordered by a beautiful oak woods. Our tents are pitched under a large oak behind a log house, which appears to have been a grocery store kept by Mr. Brown. The account books of the concern were scattered round and furnished evidence of the temperate habits of the country . . . a leaf of the ledger . . . will do to go with Falstaff's bill of bread and sack."

Grows' Journal: "May 21, 1862. . . . During our march we passed some beautiful plantations, each one guarded by our troops, and most of them with a white flag hung out. Arrived at our camp ground at 12 o'clock (noon). It was a rebel camp just deserted, so I took one of their tents and used it.

Thursday, May 22d. Was called at 4 this morning to strike tents and be ready to march. At 6 we were on our way. On account of guard yesterday I am on the 'fatigue' today of the Baggage teams. On the way I passed some splendid places of planters. One in particular had no flag flying, the owner was a rank 'secesh.' The boys coaxed the officers to allow them to go in and clean him out, but they would not, and instead, posted a squad over his place and house to protect it. We marched 13 miles. Got into camp at 3 this afternoon and then pitched my tent."

The march of the 22d. took them to Parker's Mills, 14 miles from Richmond, one mile in a straight line east from the Chickahominy River, and 6 miles from the bridge across that river. The camp was in a meadow bordered by a pine grove, and below in the valley lay the grist and saw mill and a village of at least 6 houses.

Nothing was to be seen of the enemy who had disappeared over the Chickahominy. Firing was heard in the

direction of Richmond. They might have been McDowell's guns,—but they were not,—for whom Porter was to receive orders to open a way from Hanover Court House, but who was to be turned in another direction and his forces spread out between Luray and Fredericksburg.

The 18th Mass. Infantry were on picket duty on the 23d, at the railroad bridge over the Chickahominy, and found our scouts two miles ahead of them.

#### FROM LETTER OF LIEUT. PHILLIPS.

SUNDAY MORNING POSTSCRIPT TO LETTER OF MAY 24,  
1862.

#### "CAMP IN THE FIELD.

There is a great deal of fever and ague, bilious fever, intermittent fever, &c. We have several men sick, seven absent, at hospitals or at home, and some sick here in camp whom we shall have to send back the next time we move. It is my opinion that more men have died of fever than of bullets, and I thought and still think, that it would have been a saving of life if we had taken Yorktown by assault the first day, and pushed right on to Richmond at whatever cost. People would have heard of a few bloody battles and ten thousand killed and wounded, but what is this to two months exposure and hundreds dying every day. Lieut. Scott has been pretty sick for a week, but is a great deal better. I have not had a sick day yet. My appetite is always good, and the demand generally exceeds the supply."

The Battery remained at Parker's Mills Friday, Saturday and Sunday. In camp Sunday the 25th May, 1862, in the evening there were religious services by the chaplain of the New York 44th. Text, 6th chapter of Romans, 1st verse.—"Shall we continue in sin?" [The entire verse is "What shall we say then? Shall we continue in sin, that grace may abound?"]

Letter of Lieut. Phillips: "Sunday morning, May 25, 1862. Of late we have been living on sweet potatoes. We tried to buy some strawberries but did not succeed, so we bought a bushel of potatoes at \$2.00 and have lived on them for the last three days, good living too."

Grows' Journal: "Sunday, May 25, 1862. Heavy firing has been heard during the night on our right. The Rhode Island 4th Battery has been sent out to see what is the matter. Had a good dinner: a pork stew of potatoes, onions, pepper, pork &c.

Monday May 26th. Broke camp soon after 4 o'clock, and at 6 o'clock we started on our march. At noon time we arrived on a large plantation and went into park."

This was the famous Dr. Gaines Plantation near Gaines Mills. It was nearly due west of Cold Harbor on a broken plateau between the bottom lands of the Chickahominy and the Pamunkey rivers. It was east of north from Richmond, on the road leading from Bottom Bridge up the Chickahominy via Cold Harbor to Mechanicsville, thence to Hanover Court House. The camp of the Battery was in the edge of an oak wood.

The Army was disposed as follows:—

On the Right wing Franklin's Corps was stationed, three miles from New Bridge on the Chickahominy. Porter's Fifth Corps supported him in the rear. Across the railroad was Sumner's Corps, holding the centre near Turner's Mills, and Keyes's Corps held the New Kent Road near Bottom's Bridge. Heintzelman's Corps was in support of Keyes, and was supposed to guard the Left wing.

#### HANOVER COURT HOUSE.

From the direction of Fredericksburg, the news had come that the enemy had fallen back, and a considerable force was near Hanover Court House to the right and rear

of our army, threatening our communications. This town was north of Richmond on the Virginia Central railroad. Porter was ordered to disperse the enemy's forces, while guarding the approaches to the rear guard of the Right wing of the army. It was also expected that the enemy's communication with Northern Virginia by the line of the Virginia Central railroad should be cut off, and General Porter received orders to move at daylight on the 27th to Hanover Court House. Assurances were received that McDowell would co-operate without fail. The Fifth Mass. Battery in camp at Dr. Gaines's Farm was ordered to march at 4 a. m. with McQuade's, formerly Morell's, Brigade.

General Porter moved from camp near New Bridge by the most direct route to Hanover Court House, expecting to engage the enemy at or near that point. At noon of the 27th in the neighborhood of the town, he encountered a brigade commanded by General Branch and composed of the 18th, 28th and 33d North Carolina Regiments which held the road, but after an hour's fighting they were dispersed and the main body of our troops moved on intending to pursue the enemy northward. But instead of taking that direction he passed around to our Left, with the intention of surrounding our forces while covering his own retreat, and appeared in our rear. Having found this out, Porter faced his whole column about and fell upon the enemy's flanks while Martindale's Brigade was holding him at bay. A sharp battle ensued. The rebels were routed and fled in confusion, and General McClellan wrote the President that General Porter had entirely "relieved his Right flank which was seriously threatened" and had "routed and demoralized a considerable portion of the rebel forces." It was called one of the handsomest things of the War, both in itself and its results.

One of our hospitals was captured, two guns were taken from the Third Mass. Battery but they were afterwards retaken. Our loss was reported as 56 killed, 173 wounded.

## THE ACTION OF THE BATTERY.

The Fifth Mass. Battery followed the advance for two miles, and when the column turned, it hurried back to where our progress had been disputed and the enemy had been overcome. Now the rebel and Union forces had changed positions.

## FROM LETTERS OF LIEUT. PHILLIPS.

"NEAR HANOVER COURT HOUSE

Wednesday Morning,

May 28, 1862.

Nobody hurt in the 5th Battery.

Porter's Division had a little brush with the rebels yesterday and licked them. We have taken a great many prisoners. Martin's Battery 2 wounded, 3 missing, 25th N. Y. cut up. . . . We have got the railroad. The rebels tried to surround us, and did get in our rear so that we had to go back two miles, and lick them a second time.

Afternoon: Yesterday we had a pretty hard day's work. We were ordered to march at 4 o'clock, and were ready to march at that hour, but did not start until 7 or 8. Meantime it was raining furiously. We brought up the rear of the Division with Morell's Brigade, Colonel (James) McQuade commanding. We left the tents standing, carried two days' rations in the haversacks, no knapsacks or anything of the sort. About noon it stopped raining, and the sun came out. After marching say 18 miles, we heard firing ahead. It ceased as we came up, and we found the enemy had retired. Soon we passed two of Captain Martin's pieces waiting at some cross roads. We marched on over the battle field, a wheat field, and kept on for some two miles. A few dead and wounded men were along the road, and a great many dead horses. We passed a large white house

belonging to Mr. Winston, a prominent Secesh, who, like many others, had gone to Richmond. After marching two miles we heard firing in our rear, and the whole Division were ordered back.

The enemy it seems had passed round our left and got in our rear, capturing one of our hospitals and driving Martin's men away from his pieces, Lieut. Dunn commanding. We hurried back to where the battle was first won. Back came Griffin's orderly.—

'Caissons halt on the side of the road!' then—'Cannoneers mount!'—'Trot!'—'March!'

Griffin came into battery, and threw a few shells into the woods, but the infantry had most of the work to do. They deployed [Opened the order of troops from column into line of battle] and soon got to work in the woods. The 9th Mass. fired one volley, gave a yell and charged. The firing was quite lively, and was kept up till 6 o'clock when it gradually died away, and the wounded began to come to the rear pretty fast. . . . From the accounts I hear the 25th and 44th N. Y. did most of the work in the forenoon. The rebels advanced firing upon the 25th, and routed them completely, so that one captain could only find 5 men. The 44th did very well. The rebel force consisted of one Brigade under General Branch, 18th, 28th and 33d N. C. We passed 150 today. They are a poor looking set and are half starved. General (George) Stoneman (cavalry) cut off the railroad track last night, capturing a train loaded with provisions. By six o'clock the rebels were pretty well cleared out, and we began to think of camp. Lieut. Dillingham had captured a Secesh tent, almost new, so we continued to get under cover. A few inches of straw from a neighboring stack made a very good bed and we slept soundly. The next morning we lay abed till 8 o'clock.

We camped last night where the rebels made their first stand. . . . Today we have been skylarking round doing



nothing in particular. We are six miles from Hanover Court House and 14 from Richmond. I am now 6½ p. m. sitting on the ground with my back against a hen coop. Our infantry are round taking prisoners."

Grows' Journal: "Tuesday, May 27, 1862. Raining awfully. At 5 we were on the march. After stopping at times to build roads and help the guns along, we arrived and stopped for a while in a large field to feed the horses and water them. At 9 this forenoon we took up the march again. It stopped raining and the sun came out. Occasionally stopping to rest, at 2 this afternoon we were within 8 miles of Hanover Court House. Here we heard heavy firing. There was a fight going on, so we were pushed ahead, and in a short time came in sight of a house with a red flag. (See p. 21.) It was a hospital for the sick and wounded. In passing it I saw some wounded being carried in. On my left in a wheat field lay two dead.

Our troops had started the 'Secesh' to running just before we came up. Alongside the road were strewn knapsacks, clothing, arms, &c., of the rebels in their retreat. The firing had now almost died away. We stopped in a large field to rest, and I went to see where the fight began. At 3 this afternoon we were on the road again. We had not marched more than a mile when we heard firing in our rear, and the whole Division was ordered back double-quick.

Louder and nearer grew the noise of musketry and cannon, as we drew near. It seems that a body of rebels, some state the number as 10,000, had come around in our rear with the intention of cutting us off, but they were mistaken.

Arriving on the field I found that two of the pieces of Martin's Battery were mired in the mud, and that the men had been driven from them.

Griffin's Regular Battery opened upon the rebels with four pieces, which soon drove them back.

We were stationed on the Left flank, held in readiness in

case they should show themselves out of the woods to open upon them, but we did not have to fire, for they soon began to fall back. From where we stood I had a great view of the battle. On our right the 22d Mass., 2d Maine, 25th N. Y. and 44th N. Y. were stationed. The Mass. 9th and 62d Penn. made a splendid charge on the 'Secesh,' driving them before them. About 8 or 10 rods from where I stood was a building, and it was quickly put in use for a hospital.

Oh, the sights I saw there were awful! There lay friend and foe, sometimes side by side!

At 7 this evening the firing almost ceased, except, now and then, the discharge of a musket in the woods. Up to 10 this evening our troops had buried most 300 of the rebels.

About half past ten, I laid my blankets down on the battle ground, where were dead and dying and wounded, and laid myself down to sleep."

Porter's command pushed the pursuit of Anderson's forces, who were falling back upon Richmond, until dark, and then bivouacked on the field.

Chase's Diary: "Saw the enemy's dead for the first time today. Encamped in a wheat field with the dead and dying all around us.

Picked up several trophies, such as cartridge boxes, belts &c. Met several squads of rebel prisoners coming in.

May 28, 1862. Large numbers of prisoners brought in this morning. Saw twenty-four of the rebel dead beside a fence this morning and 12 of the 25th N. Y. Regt. dead."

Grows' Journal: "Wednesday, May 28, 1862. Was called at 5 this morning. Got up, had some crackers and coffee, after which I took a walk over the battleground. The dead of the rebels were lying in every position and posture; some with hands extended as though they were using a gun, others drawn up as though they died in great distress, among them a boy not more than 14 years old.

I saw 314 rebel prisoners go by our camp in one lot. It

is estimated we have taken 1000 rebels. Most of them appear glad to be taken by our troops.

About 9 this morning we were ordered to report to General Stoneman. After marching about 5 miles we found his encampment and waited some time before we found out whether we were wanted or not. We found out, at length, that we were not wanted, so we marched five miles back to where we slept last night, arriving late this afternoon."

While they were waiting, General McClellan passed by.

Grows' Journal: "Thursday, May 29, 1862. One on the field our troops are still burying the dead of the rebels in large trenches, and ours in graves with boards put up.

Horses are on the field, in some cases with awful wounds, more of them are dead.

About 10 this forenoon we were told to strike our tents and hold ourselves in readiness to march at a minute's notice. So we lay around in the hot sun till 3 this afternoon, when we took up our line of march for our old camp ground, (Dr. Gaines' Farm) 20 miles, that being the distance we came on Tuesday, to this place. It is a very hot afternoon, but on account of the good state of the roads we rode most of the way. Owing to stopping for baggage trains to pass, darkness overtook us, and still we were not in camp.

At 12 o'clock, midnight, we got into our old camp. Found my old tent frame still up; put the covering on, and soon after we had fires going to make some coffee."

In the three days they had been gone they had travelled 60 miles.

#### LIEUT. J. B. HYDE'S NOTES.

"We did not have much shooting to do there because we could not use artillery to good advantage, but the firing of musketry all day was the worst I ever heard. After the battle was over, General Butterfield said to us officers who were all there together, 'Having accomplished the object for which we came here, we will now return to camp.'

On the way back there was a small church, and seeing a large gathering outside, I rode my horse up to it and looked in at the open door. I saw a great many soldiers lying around on the seats; some singing and having a great time, and I think it was Lt. Colonel (James C.) Rice of the 44th New York Regt. said,—‘Go right in, Lt. Hyde,’ so I touched the spur to my horse and rode him up the low steps and straight up the aisle to the altar. Then I began to think, what if the floor should give way, but I rode out in safety and came down the steps just as the Battery was passing. They set up a tremendous cheer to see me riding out of a church on horseback.”

## LETTER OF CORPORAL SPEAR.

WRITTEN IN PENCIL ON THE BACK OF A CERTIFICATE  
BLANK FORM.

“ARMY OF THE POTOMAC  
ENCAMPED 8 MILES FROM  
RICHMOND VA.

Saturday, May 31, 1862.

Last Tuesday morning (May 27th) at 3 o'clock we were awakened and ordered to pack, strike tents, get breakfast, and be ready to move by daybreak. Tents were ordered to be packed, tents on caissons, and we to carry only a rubber blanket and an overcoat, as we were going out for a brush with the rebels. About 7 o'clock started, in the rain, with a little hard bread and salt pork for rations, and an overcoat and rubber blanket for covering.

After advancing 15 miles, we heard frequent volleys of musketry, and, now and then, the booming of a distant gun.

At 2 o'clock we came up to where the advance of our Division had had a skirmish, and two or three regiments of infantry with 2 pieces of artillery, were left behind to guard a road, while the rest of the Division advanced in the direction in which the rebels were supposed to have moved, and after advancing 3 miles the order came for the whole Division to turn about, as the rebels were trying to flank us.

and then such an excitement as there was! Artillery, cavalry, and infantry, going on the double quick, back to where the regiments and pieces of artillery were left to guard the road, and when we reached the place found that two of the regiments had been nearly destroyed and the men with the artillery forced to leave their guns on the field; but not long, for as our infantry and cavalry came up, they made a charge and took possession of the pieces again.

Our Battery was not engaged, although we were on the field of action during the fight, ready to take part. One battery was engaged, and that was the 5th Regular.

At dusk they began bringing in the dead and wounded on our side, and such sights! Oh! they were awful, and frightful. Some were pierced with bullets, others only slightly wounded.

That night we lay down on the battle field for rest, with only the broad heavens above us for a covering. When morning came received orders to retire about 2 miles to support infantry. So we went back. On arriving ascertained that they needed no assistance, so returned to the battle field, pitched our tents, and stopped all of the remaining day and part of the next, when we received orders to go back to our present encampment, at which place we arrived at 1 o'clock Friday morning, tuckered out and mighty hungry, our rations gone the day before. But now we are all right again. Today there has been considerable firing in the direction of Richmond."

#### THE SICK AND WOUNDED.

"Captain Allen," wrote Lt. Phillips, "is sick, and came back ahead of us in an ambulance. He is now quite weak and keeps to his bed."

#### NOTES BY CAPTAIN ALLEN, APRIL 19, 1900.

"This was the beginning of my first illness of malarial fever, and I was sent back to camp in an ambulance as it is said here. After a few days I made application for

leave of absence. I was examined by the three senior surgeons of the Brigade, and was granted leave of absence for ten days.

It was six days before that leave of absence was approved at Head Quarters and returned to me. When I was examined it was to see whether I was to be sent to Fortress Monroe or beyond.

The surgeons approved of my going beyond the hospital at Fortress Monroe, which meant home.

After the furlough got round to me I had only four days left for leave of absence.

General Porter sent me a four mule ambulance, and, accompanied by Serg't Terry, I started about three o'clock in the afternoon for a station on the railroad running to White House Landing. There had been a battle in the vicinity of the station the day before and the trains were very uncertain. After waiting several hours a train of a few flat cars came along. Serg't Terry helped me on to one of these cars, which were filled with wounded men lying on the floor. He put my valise between two wounded men. I sat down on it and he stood at my back supporting me. We rode that way to White House Landing, reaching there the next morning. Serg't Terry went down to the Landing to see if there was any steamer to take me to Yorktown. He returned shortly and reported that the Nahant boat 'Nelly Baker,' Captain Calder, then a Government transport, was laying at the wharf. He helped me on board and as he was returning to camp I bade him good bye.

Captain Calder gave up his stateroom to me, and made me as comfortable as possible on my way to Yorktown, where I took the steamer for Baltimore and New York.

On board the Baltimore steamer I made the acquaintance of Lt. Colonel, afterwards Colonel, Moses B. Lakeman of Maine, who had been wounded and was also on leave, and he rendered me a great deal of assistance on my way home, for which I desire most heartily to thank him.

At New York being very anxious to get the three o'clock train to Boston, we explained the circumstances to



the captain, and he very kindly gave us all the time he could possibly make for us, by running the bow of the steamer directly to the wharf allowing us to go ashore,—no others were permitted to land, before he docked his steamer.

I wish I remembered the name of the steamer and of the captain, so that I might again thank him for his generous kindness in allowing us to land as we did, for we caught the three o'clock train and in due time we arrived at our homes in Malden, Mass. Colonel Lakeman, though a Maine man was then, with his family, residing in Malden. Surgeon General Dale sent out the next day a surgeon to examine me, and extended my furlough thirty days. At the expiration of that furlough I was still unable to return to my command, and Surgeon General Dale extended it thirty days longer. In a very short time after my several extensions of furlough, I received an Order from Secretary Stanton, through his adjutant general, stating that all officers who were unable to rejoin their commands in six days must resign. This order forced my resignation, for I was still unable to rejoin my command. Following is the copy of the Order."

WAR DEPARTMENT  
ADJUTANT GENERAL'S OFFICE  
WASHINGTON, July 31, 1862.

General Orders.

No. 92

The following Order is published for the information of all concerned:

WAR DEPARTMENT  
WASHINGTON CITY D. C., July 31, 1862.

The absence of officers and privates from their duty under various pretexts, while receiving pay, at great expense and burden to the Government, makes it necessary that efficient measures be taken to enforce their return to duty, or that their places be supplied by those who will not take pay while rendering no service. This evil, moreover, tends greatly to discourage the patriotic impulses of those who would contribute to support the families of faithful soldiers. It is therefore ordered by the President:—

I. That on Monday, the 11th day of August, all leaves of absence and furloughs by whomsoever given, unless by the War Department, are revoked and absolutely annulled, and all officers capable of service are required forthwith to join their respective commands, and all privates capable of service to join their regiments, under penalty of dismissal from the service, or such penalty as a Court Martial may award, unless the absence be occasioned by lawful cause.

II. The only excuses allowed for the absence of officers or privates after the 11th day of August, are:

1st. The order or leave of the War Department.

2d. Disability from wounds received in service.

3d. Disability from disease that renders the party unfit for military duty. But any officer or private whose health permits him to visit watering places or places of amusement, or to make social visits, or walk about the town, city, or neighborhood in which he may be, will be considered fit for military duty, and as evading duty by absence from his command or ranks.

III. On Monday, the eighteenth day of August, at 10 o'clock a. m., each Regiment and Corps shall be mustered. The absentees will be marked, three lists of the same made out, and, within forty-eight hours after the muster, one copy shall be sent to the Adjutant General of the Army, one to the Commander of the Corps, the third to be retained; and all officers and privates fit for duty absent at that time will be regarded as absent without cause, their pay will be stopped, and they dismissed from the service, or treated as deserters, unless restored; and no officer shall be restored to his rank unless by the judgment of a Court of Inquiry, to be approved by the President, he shall establish that his absence was with good cause.

IV. Commanders of Corps, Divisions, Brigades, Regiments, and detached Posts, are strictly enjoined to enforce the muster and return aforesaid. Any officer failing in his duty herein will be deemed guilty of gross neglect of duty, and be dismissed from the service.

V. A commissioner shall be appointed by the Secretary of War to superintend the execution of this order in the respective States.

The United States marshals in the respective districts, the mayor and chief of police of any town or city, the sheriff of the respective counties in each state, all postmasters and justices of the peace, are authorized to act as special provost marshals to arrest any officer or private soldier, fit for duty, who may be found absent from his command without just cause, and convey him to the nearest military post or depot. The transportation, reasonable expenses of this duty, and five dollars, will be paid for each officer or private so arrested and delivered.

By Order of the President:

E. M. STANTON.  
Secretary of War.

By Order of the Secretary of War:

E. D. TOWNSEND  
Assistant Adjutant General.

On the day designated in this Order for the revocation of leaves of absence the following was promulgated:—

WAR DEPARTMENT  
ADJUTANT GENERAL'S OFFICE,  
WASHINGTON, August 11, 1862.

General Orders,  
No 102.

All leaves of absence and furloughs, by whomsoever given, unless by the War Department, are, from this date, null and void, and all officers and privates capable of service will immediately rejoin their respective commands. The commanding officer of each corps, regiment, military post, or other command, will see that the muster directed in General Orders No. 92, current series, be made on the 18th instant, and that all absentees be marked as therein directed. All persons so marked as absent will be considered as absent without proper cause until they shall adduce evidence before a military court or commission to show that such absence was occasioned by one of the three causes specified in General Orders, No. 92; and until the action of such court or commission they will receive no pay.

By Command of Major General Halleck:

E. D. TOWNSEND,  
Assistant Adjutant General.

---

### CAPTAIN ALLEN'S RESIGNATION.

A letter from Lieut. Phillips explains why Captain Allen's resignation did not take effect until October 17th, and a copy of the discharge found in Lt. Phillips' army desk, regularly endorsed by Gen. McClellan and the Division commanders, is here added:—

[FROM LT. PHILLIPS' LETTER.]

"CAMP NEAR SHARPSBURG, MD.

Thursday Evening

Oct. 16, 1862.

I have received a letter from Captain Allen and several official documents. Among the latter was Captain Allen's resignation, which has been wandering around some time after me. He sent it in to the Adjutant General's office August 20th. It left the Adjutant General's office August

26th, respectfully referred to the commander of the Fifth Mass. Battery. Somehow or other the Post Office was a long time in bringing it to me, and it only reached me this morning. I respectfully referred and forwarded it to Captain Martin, he will do the same to General Morell, he to General Fitz John Porter, who will accept it."

## SPECIAL ORDERS NO. 284

HEAD QUARTERS ARMY OF THE POTOMAC,  
CAMP NEAR KNOXVILLE MD.

Oct. 17, 1862.

Special Orders.

No. 284                      Extract.

6. The following named officers, having tendered their resignations, are honorably discharged from the military service of the United States.

Captain George D. Allen, Battery E. Mass. Artillery.

By command of Major General McClellan

(Signed) S WILLIAMS  
Ass't Adj't. General.

HEAD QUARTERS 5TH ARMY CORPS

October 18th, 1862.

Official:

(Sd.) J. KIRKLAND  
Maj. A. D. C.

HEAD QUARTERS MORELL'S DIVISION.

Oct. 19, 1862.

Official:

(Sd.) FRANCIS S. EARLE  
Ass't Adj't. General.

Official:

A. P. MARTIN, Capt.  
Commanding Division Artillery.

## CAMP ON THE GAINES FARM.

To continue Phillips' letter from the old camp ground, May 29, 1862:—

"One of the camoneers, Alpheus Haskins, had his left foot badly bruised by being run over by a gun carriage. A stout boot saved the bones though it ruined the boot."

All of Morell's Division returned on the 29th to their camp on the Gaines Farm.

This was the end of the battle of Hanover Court House, but not of the casualties. While quietly resting next day in camp, at 5 o'clock in the afternoon, there arose a violent thunder storm. The thunder was loud and continuous, and the sky a sheet of flame. One of the N. Y. 44th camping near by was killed by a stroke of lightning, and another stunned. They were sitting on a box of ammunition. Scott and Phillips generously gave up their tent and home-made bedsteads to two sick men, and occupied the "secesh" tent through which the water ran in a continual stream.

On one occasion Phillips wrote of the situation, after the battle of Hanover Court House, sickness, "secesh," and the rest:—"I regret that Dr. Gaines is allowed to keep his house, though not allowed to leave it,—when so many better men than he are lying on the damp ground sick with fever. After the battle of Hanover Court House some twenty wounded men lay in his barn on the floor crowded together, while he was allowed to occupy a comfortable bed. First look out for the comfort of our soldiers, say I, and then look out for secessionists. At this very moment we have in our Battery men sick with fever lying on the wet ground in poncho tents,—dog kennels you would call them at home,—while Dr. Gaines's large house close by is almost empty. These men can be cured if we send them home where they can get comfortable beds under a dry roof, but keep them here exposed as they now are, and in a month they will be in their graves. We have nearly 20 men unfit for duty, and the regiments in this Division will not average more than 500 men. The New York 25th went to Hanover Court House with 300 men and lost half; the New York 44th had 550 and lost 120; the Mass. 22d is as full as any in the service. The Maine 2d is pretty full and is a splendid regiment, and to them as much as to any single regiment we owe the victory at Hanover.

The New York 44th fought splendidly. They were opposed for some time to 4000 rebels and held them at bay till the 2d Maine came up."

## FROM A LETTER OF T. E. CHASE.

"HANOVER CO. VA.

May 31st, 1862.

Dr. Gaines is a noted rebel and tried to escape, but was caught by our pickets, he has a fine residence, a large plantation, and 87 slaves, all of whom seem to favor the confiscation of all rebel property. I have often visited the log cabins of the negroes on hoe-cake speculation, and quizzed them some, and I have had 'Uncle Tom's Cabin' from their lips."

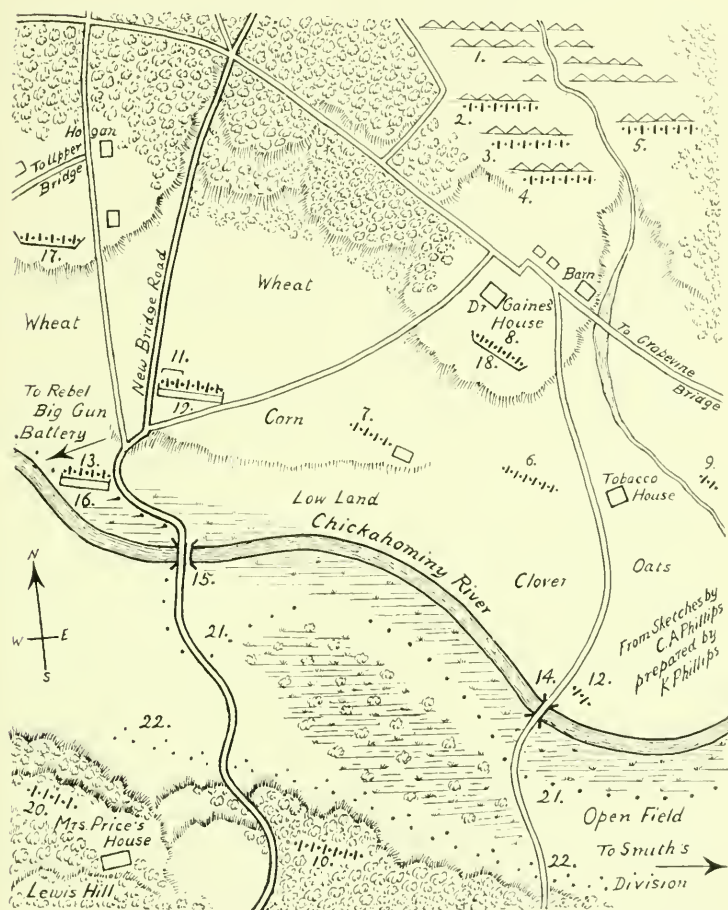
Of the march to Hanover Court House he says:—

"We passed the direct road to Richmond—which was seven miles distant—on the left. When we had marched about 18 miles we heard firing ahead, and about a mile farther on we saw that the enemy had been surprised and routed. Several acres of land were strewn with clothing, belts, knapsacks, haversacks, &c. which the gallant southrons were too proud to take with them—or they were too heavy—on a foot race with the 'mudsills.' The roadside was lined with infantry resting, and some of them were wounded. It was a strange spectacle to see them lying in all positions; some talking, some writing, many asleep, and others tying up slight wounds. In a field at our right lay the body of one of the cannoneers of Regular Battery M, who was killed by a shell. The back part of his head was shot away, and his brains and fragments of his skull were scattered in every direction. He was a No. 3 man and, had a thumbstall still on his thumb, which was peculiarly suggestive to me, but I had but little time to borrow trouble about that then. Several dead horses were lying there that were shot from under their riders. As the Battery went round a corner, I cut across a wheat field to save distance, and but a few rods from the road I saw for the first time one of the enemy's dead. He fell on his side.



His knapsack was strapped to his shoulders, and at his side lay his gun, haversack, and canteen. His eyes were partially closed. I raised the bosom of his blood-stained shirt, and saw the fatal wound. He was shot through the heart and must have died instantly. I took some cartridges from his cartridge box and ran to our piece. I found the cartridges were made of good fine powder and a round moulded ball and three buck-shot each. On the road I picked up a cartridge box marked inside 'C. S. Arsenal, Baton Rouge, La.' . . . We marched about a mile farther, and were very suddenly ordered to countermarch, as the enemy had flanked us, but we went as fast as possible, and when we had regained our wasted mile, we took equipments, and mounted the caissons, and prepared for quick movements and hot work, and it had already commenced, for we heard the rattle of musketry in front of us, and saw the smoke."

# VALLEY of the CHICKAHOMINY



Camps.—1. Infantry of Division.—2. Martin's Battery.—3. Weeden's Battery.—4. Griffin's Battery.—5. Allen's Battery. Positions, June 5<sup>th</sup>.—6. 5<sup>th</sup> Mass. Battery.—7. Maryland Battery.—8. Carlisle's Regular 20 pdr Battery.—9. 32 pdrs.—10. Rebel Battery. 11. June 9<sup>th</sup>.—Right Section. 12. June 11<sup>th</sup>.—Centre Section. 13. June 13<sup>th</sup>.—Centre & Left Sections. 14. Out Bridge. 15. New Bridge, two bridges. 17. On Batteries, June 25<sup>th</sup>.—16. Right of New Bridge, 4 Guns.—17. On hill back of New Bridge, Five 30 pdrs.—18. On Gaines Hill, Five 30 pdrs.—19. 5<sup>th</sup> Mass. in No 4, Six Guns.—20. June 16<sup>th</sup> to June 25<sup>th</sup>.—Rebel Guns. 21. Our Pickets. 22. Rebel Pickets.



## CHAPTER IX.

### THE VALLEY OF THE CHICKAHOMINY.

BATTLE OF MECHANICSVILLE, June 26, 1862.

"Often times an indifferent action, a short saying, or a ready jest, opens more intricacies of the true character than a siege or a battle."

—PLUTARCH'S *Alexander*.

"The slight circumstances of Plutarch are not mere anecdotes, inserted for the sake of amusement. They are traits of feeling and disposition: short lines from a page of the heart put into italics."

—REV. ROBERT ARIS WILLMOTT.

Lieut. Henry D. Scott in his Notes describes the course of the Chickahominy as "from northwest to southeast, a treacherous stream, from 30 to 50 feet wide at this point. "Its banks," he says, "are low, and after a few hours' rain would overflow, and the country in its course would have the appearance of one vast lake."

The military operations on the Chickahominy embraced that part of the stream between Bottom's Bridge on the south where it is crossed by the Williamsburg road, and Meadow Bridge, fifteen miles to the north, where it is crossed by the Fredericksburg railroad.

Richmond lies nearly opposite the centre of this line, about 6 miles from the Chickahominy at its nearest approach.

The swamp and stream had been crossed by several bridges. All of those in front of Richmond had been destroyed by Johnston when he fell back from Yorktown and Williamsburg, and the approaches to them were commanded

by batteries on the southern side. Other points had to be chosen for building new bridges, which on account of the soil had to be laid upon trestles; the approaches being corduroyed.

In moving from Williamsburg the Right wing of the Federal army had kept to the north, striking the Chickahominy at New Bridge directly in front of Richmond, the Left wing, keeping to the south, had reached the river at Bottom's Bridge, 13 miles below. This bridge had been demolished on May 20th, but close by was a ford which had been seized. On the 22d of May, Head Quarters were established at Cold Harbor just in the rear of the head of the Right wing. The bulk of the enemy were across the Chickahominy on the main road from New Bridge to Richmond, but a detachment had been left at Mechanicsville on the north bank 4 miles above. This was dispersed on the 24th by the artillery and the bridge was destroyed.

The rebel general Johnston had destroyed the bridge by which the York River railroad crossed the Chickahominy, but no other damage was done, and after the bridge was repaired the railroad was in operation up to the river.

On May 24th, 1862, McClellan received a despatch from the President, announcing that in consequence of General Banks's position having been made critical by the line being broken on the day previous at Front Royal, with a probable loss to us of a regiment of infantry and two companies of cavalry, he was compelled to suspend General McDowell's movement to join the Army of the Potomac.

Then General McClellan ordered the construction of a series of bridges across the Chickahominy, but Bottom's Bridge and the Railroad bridge, a mile apart, were his main dependence, as the Railroad bridge, as it proved, was above the reach of the highest water; these he protected in order to render his communications secure between the Left wing on the south side of the Chickahominy composed of the two corps of Keyes and Heintzelman

covering six miles of the Williamsburg road in order to guard the approaches to White Oak Swamp, and the Right wing fifty miles away on the north bank of the river composed of the Corps of Sumner, Franklin and Porter, extending north for 18 miles.

This was the situation on the 28th of May. The rise of the river on the 30th carried away all but the Railroad bridge, which was the only means of communication between the two wings of the Army. During the afternoon and night of the 30th a storm more violent than had been known for many years, swept over Richmond. The rising of the Chickahominy which was already full would overflow the swamp, preventing the forces on the south side from communicating with those on the north. The Left wing of the Army of the Potomac thus placed upon its own resources for its defense was thought by the rebel rulers to be at their mercy. But the rain fell alike on the just as on the unjust. The storm which swelled the Chickahominy impeded the movements of the troops of the rebel general Huger, and in the summing up of these events it has been sagely observed (see Harper's "History of the Great Rebellion") that if Huger had come down upon the Left at any time, or if Smith had moved only an hour earlier on the Right, Heintzelman and Keyes must have been utterly crushed. Or, had the full flood of the Chickahominy come down, as was expected, four hours before, instead of four hours after noon, Sumner could not have crossed, and the Union forces on the south side of the river would have been annihilated in plain sight of the whole army on the opposite bank, utterly powerless to give any aid.

There is another period in the history of the world where an army passed from one bank to another in just the most convenient time. See chapter and verse in the Bible.

#### THE BATTERY AT THE BRIDGE.

It was hoped that the next move would be direct for Richmond, and until that order came the weary soldier would rather rest in camp, but at 9 o'clock in the evening



of Saturday the 31st of May, the repose of the Battery was broken by orders to go down and protect the building of a bridge half a mile from camp, and about the same distance below New Bridge, across the Chickahominy. In the darkness Lieut. Hyde rode over a bank about five feet high, bruising his arm so that he had to go back to camp.

### A MISS-STEP IN THE DARK.

NOTES OF LIEUT. HYDE REVISED MAY 22, 1900.

"Ordered by General Griffin to take my Battery in the night as quietly as possible to a point under a cliff where the enemy had a strong fortification, at daylight as soon as it was light enough to discover their works we were to commence firing in that direction; the object being to draw their fire to ascertain what they had,—and we found out!

We were moving along on what seemed in the darkness to be hard ground, and I was riding in company with Captain A. P. Martin, when before I was aware of the danger, my horse went down a steep bank carrying me with him, and falling upon my leg and right arm, injuring me considerably, and I was compelled to leave the Battery in command of Lieut. Dillingham, and go back, Captain Martin kindly accompanying me, to the surgeon of the 44th N. Y. Regt. He examined my arm, putting it apparently in the best shape possible, placing it in a sling, and I returned to the Battery, having been absent only half an hour. I carried my arm in the sling for a week or ten days after. To this day (1900) it is sensitive to the touch, very crooked and two inches shorter than the left arm; the hand being much smaller."

The Battery was stationed in a large low-level clover field, about 500 yards from the river, and disposing themselves as comfortably as possible on the limber boxes, officers and men slept all night in the mist and rain, with

the Battery in position just on the line of our advance pickets, though skirmishers were across the bridge on the left bank of the river. Porter's Fifth Corps of 20,000 men was alone upon the right bank.

Grows' Journal: "Saturday, May 31, 1862. At 2 this afternoon sharp musketry and heavy firing was heard. Across the creek our troops and the rebels are at it again. [This was the attack by Johnston on the Left wing of the Army of the Potomac commanded by General Silas Casey at Fair Oaks, when the Union forces were driven back.] The more they fight the sooner it will be over. The balloon, which is near us, went up this afternoon, and discovered our forces at Bottom's Bridge. We have orders that we may be called before morning. At  $\frac{1}{4}$  past 9 this eve, we were called to hitch out Guns and Caissons to go to a bridge about one mile from camp, and guard it. At 10 we started, leaving all our things behind except blankets and overcoats. We got on to the wrong road and got lost, and did not strike the right and get to the bridge till  $\frac{1}{4}$  past 3 in the morning."

June 1st, 1862, the Battle of Fair Oaks was renewed and resulted in the repulse of the rebels.

### GUARDING THE BRIDGES.

In the valley of the Chickahominy the engineers labored under great disadvantage owing to the rising of the river, which overflowed its banks until the meadows were all afloat, and the completion of the bridge anticipated on Sunday morning June 1st was not so soon accomplished. The Battery, however, was relieved at dark, twelve 32 pdrs. having come out during the day, and Colonel Alexander chief of engineers being of the opinion that two companies of infantry and two pieces of artillery were enough to protect the bridge.

The day was hot, and very "close" and "muggy," but

there were mitigating circumstances in a barn near by containing several tons of tobacco, which the men carried back to camp on the Gaines Farm, each carrying as much as could be transported in his arms.

Grows' Journal: "Sunday, June 1, 1862. 'As dark as pitch,' not a star to be seen. Unlimbered and went into Battery. This is the Chickahominy swamp, and a bridge has got to be built in order for our troops to cross. At  $\frac{1}{2}$  past 4 this morning I laid my blankets on the wet grass and clover and laid down. There was a very heavy dew and then rain. Got up at 6. We soon moved our guns farther back so we can get good range. A queer business for Sunday!

Soon after, several regiments of infantry came down to protect the batteries and to help on the bridge. They soon got themselves to work and then we were dismissed for the rest of the day, to make ourselves as comfortable as we could but not to go too far away,—to be within hailing distance.

This is a beautiful place, a large plantation. The owner's name is Dr. Laws. He is under arrest being one of the very rankest 'Secesh.' He raises mostly tobacco; has a large barn about 100 ft. from our piece, and in it is about \$5000 worth of cured tobacco in the leaf. It has not been pressed. Our officers told us to help ourselves. It is far superior to that which we buy at home. All the men who smoke have plenty of cigars, for it is very easy to roll one out. The tobacco is packed in the barn all over the floor, about 5 ft. thick.

The sun is awful hot today, but I have kept myself in the shade of the Barn most of the time. This afternoon I was surprised to see Witcher, who formerly belonged to the old Battery. He is now a lieutenant in the 1st Maryland Battery. We have not had any occasion to fire, as yet. The battery on our right,—there are 8 of us,—has fired about 20 shots today. Small bodies of rebel troops keep showing themselves during the day, along the edge of the

woods, but a shell or two soon scatters them. Our supper was brought over to us in good season, and about an hour after we got orders to go back to camp. Arrived soon after dark."

June 2d, Monday forenoon, about 10 o'clock, the Battery went down again to guard the bridge.

The officers had fried pork, and hasty pudding and molasses, for dinner, over which they discussed the situation, while heavy firing both of musketry and artillery resounded on the left of the line. It was confidently asserted in the privacy of camp circles, that if Porter's Corps had crossed the Chickahominy on Sunday, June 1st, 1862, it could have marched straight to Richmond. The enemy's forces were then coming round on our right wing, which was held by Porter's Corps.

"This continual moving" [back and forth to the bridge] wrote Lt. Phillips, "is a terrible strain on sick men, and there are plenty of them here. Not a great many very sick, but a large number troubled with slight disorders, enough to render them unfit for duty. The country is not so healthy as New England, by any means, leaving out the exposure. Yesterday [3d] we remained in camp all day. We were ordered to go out into the field, but in consequence of the storm, I suppose, General Morell ordered us to stay in camp."—A heavy rain flooded the road, and still the bridge was impassable. A regiment passed down with shovels and axes. The road was to be corduroyed.

Grows' Journal: "Wednesday, June 4, 1862. We are only 5 miles from Richmond, and we will have to fight, I expect, every foot of the ground, before we can get into the place which is expected to be the winding up place of this war.

Thursday, June 5. An order came this morning about 8 o'clock to go on picket. About noon the firing on the rebel works by our Battery and four others began."

On June 5, 1862, Captain Allen went home sick, on leave

of absence, and the Battery left camp with pieces only, about 7 a. m., and went down to the clover field to protect the bridge. Carlisle's regular batteries 20 pdr. Parrotts, were on a hill in the rear, and a Maryland battery was on the right of the Fifth Mass. Battery, guarding New Bridge.

At 8.15 a. m. the Marylanders commenced firing at a rebel battery on the other shore and unmasked the battery. The Fifth Massachusetts from its position could not see the enemy, and only fired two test shots. These were fired by the First Detachment. They both fell short as did the solid shot of the enemy.

At 9 a. m., a brisk fire was kept up on both sides, which lasted about two hours. Carlisle's batteries threw an occasional shell over the river [This was the Fifth Brigade of the Artillery Reserve, Capt. J. Howard Carlisle commanding, composed of Battery E, 2d U. S., and Batteries F, and K, 3d U. S.]

Shortly after dinner a light battery on the other shore supposed to belong to Sumner's Corps, which crossed lower down the river, commenced operations.

In the latter part of the afternoon a few shells were fired from the twelve 32 pdrs. brought down on the left to guard against contingencies.

#### LETTER OF LIEUT. PHILLIPS.

"June 6, 1862: Lately I have had a chance here to witness the practical effects of confiscation. Near by the position of our Battery is a tobacco store house belonging to Dr. Gaines. . . . When we first came here this contained several tons of tobacco, but now it has all disappeared, and I am afraid Dr. G. will have some difficulty in finding any one to pay for it. Yesterday, as if not content with this, the engineer officer building the bridge came up for material, and with the help of four men tore the boards off one side and end and took out a lot of the joists. We told

him if he wanted the whole we would soon have it down for him, but he had got all he wanted, so the building still stands, though I think its existence will terminate within a few days. Dr. G. will begin to experience some of the suffering which he and those like him have brought upon the country, but not so much as I would like. His clover is all being eaten by Union horses, and pretty much everything growing on his farm will be consumed or trodden down by Porter's Division. Fence rails have long since disappeared from our vicinity, and the oak woods have lost much of their beauty: 15000 men of the Army of the Potomac will do a great deal of mischief."

---

## GENERAL ORDERS JUNE 7, 1862.

WAR DEPARTMENT  
ADJUTANT GENERAL'S OFFICE

WASHINGTON, June 7, 1862.

General Orders  
No. 61

The great number of officers absent from their regiments without sufficient cause, is a serious evil which calls for immediate correction. By paragraph 177, General Regulations, the power of commanding officers to grant leaves of absence is limited to a "time of peace." In time of war, leaves of absence will only be granted by the Secretary of War, except when the certificate of a medical officer shall show, beyond doubt, that a change of location "is necessary to save life, or prevent *permanent* disability." [*Paragraph 186, General Regulations.*] In such case, the Commander of an Army, a Department, or District, may grant not exceeding twenty days. At the expiration of that time, *if the officer be not able to travel*, he must make application to the Adjutant General of the Army for an extension, accompanied by the certificate of a medical officer of the army, in the usual form, and that he is not able to travel. If it be not practicable to procure such a certificate, in consequence of there being no army physician in the place where the officer resides, the certificate of a citizen physician, *attested by a civil magistrate*, may be substituted.

All officers of the regulars and volunteers, except those on parole, now absent from duty with leave, will be considered "absent without leave" [*paragraph 1326, General Regulations.*] unless they are found at their post, within fifteen days from the date of this order, or are



authorized by orders from the Adjutant General to be absent, which orders will in all cases be based on a certificate as above described, and must be exhibited to the paymaster before payment is made them.

All invalid and wounded officers who are able to travel, although their disability may not have been removed [*paragraph 187, General Regulations*] will repair, without delay—those from the East to Annapolis, to report to the General Commanding the Camp of Instruction: those from the West to report to the commanding officer of Camp Chase, Ohio. At those points they will remain until able to proceed to their regiments, or until an examining board may decide adversely on their ability to return to duty within a reasonable time, and orders may be given by the President for their discharge.

Their Excellencies, the Governors of States are requested to make known this order, and to contribute to its execution, as may be in their power. Mustering and Recruiting Officers are directed to do the same. Extra copies of the order will be furnished them for distribution.

Failure to comply with the above regulations will be reported to the Adjutant General by Regimental Commanders.

By Order of the Secretary of War.

Official:

Assistant Adjutant General.

L. THOMAS  
Adjutant General.

---

Sunday, June 8, 1862, the Battery was in camp all day: Lieut. Dillingham with the Right Section going down to New Bridge at sunset to be relieved the next evening.

June 9th, in the afternoon, the Fifth Corps was reviewed by General McClellan and General Fitz John Porter, accompanied by General Prim [Gen. Juan Prim, Count de Reuss] commander of Spanish forces in Mexico, who was on a visit to the Army of the Potomac; a host of officers of lesser rank being attached to the reviewing party.

The review took place in an open field on the right of the road from Gaines Mills to Mechanicsville.

"We hitched up four pieces" wrote Lieut. Phillips, "two (the Right section) being out on picket, and marched out into a large field where the rest of the Division were drawn up. We formed in line with the other batteries, and waited for the great individual for whose satisfaction we were there.

Pretty soon—‘Attention. Present sabre!’—and we presented sabre, while General Porter and General Prim rode by. General Prim had on a smoking cap very much like the royal diadem which you see on the stage. What it was made of I cannot say: otherwise he was dressed in a plain, dark coat, with one cross and star on his breast. In the crowd following came some more Spanish officers, with the same style of caps, made out of plaided material, and with coats befrogged in every possible place and style.”

#### THE ARMY.—STRUCTURAL UTILITY.

Still the confiding army, in ignorance of the suspension of McDowell’s orders, were looking for his reinforcements.

Lieut. Phillips wrote in this letter of the 9th of June:—

“I have just heard that General McDowell has landed at White House with reinforcements, and though we need them, it will not do to wait long in this swamp for more men, when the men we have are dropping off like dead leaves in autumn. The popular idea is that soldiers even when suffering the most are provided with good tents, but our soldiers have not seen the inside of a tent since we left the Potomac. The infantry have shelter tents,—the French *tentes d’abri*,—and our men make tents for the occasion out of tarpaulins and rubber blankets. The shelter tents are three feet high and some of our tarpaulin tents four or five feet high, but they are all low and consequently dark and wet. Add to this the natural carelessness of a soldier, the hardships, and hard fare, and a swamp full of miasma, and you will be able to understand the sickness which prevails here. We have our share of it. This morning 23 men were reported unfit for duty. Captain Allen is home on sick leave, and Lieut. Dillingham temporarily laid up with a cramp, which came on this forenoon while he was out on picket, owing probably to the coldness of last night. I hear of companies who turn out twelve or fifteen men on

parade, and the Doctor of the N. Y. 44th told me that he thought half this army were unfit for duty. Our numbers are fast diminishing, and it will not do to wait much longer. Not that I think numbers make much difference, for the rebels suffer as much or more than we do, and I will risk our men against any reasonable odds, but I like to spare our men. I do not know but it is more terrible to read of 500 killed in battle than of 2000 dying of disease, but as this is somewhat a matter of taste, I had rather, for my part, have my head shot off by a cannon ball, than shake to death with fever and ague. It is more glorious, besides being more comfortable."

In relation to organization he wrote June 10th, 1862. Tuesday evening:—"It seems to me that we have enough regimental organizations and officers, and the best plan is to recruit up to the maximum standard the regiments now in service; and to discharge as fast as possible the sick and disabled men who increase our strength only on paper. . . .

It has now become quite useless to estimate the strength of an army by the number of regiments. In our Division the strength varies very much. The 22d Mass. 800 men; 9th Mass. [infantry] as much or more; 18th Mass. 700 men; 25th N. Y. 200 men; 44th N. Y. 350 men &c., the average being perhaps 450 effective men to a regiment. Massachusetts, you see, comes out ahead. So this Division, which numbered 15000 men is really reduced to an effective 6000 or 7000. The situation and weather here are very bad, the ground is damp and miasmatic, and it rains as a general thing. Luckily our tent is water proof and an elaborate system of outside drainage constructed under the pressure of a former storm, keeps the floor dry. Then I have an elegant bedstead constructed of four crotches, two fence rails and a secession bed sacking,—confiscated. Scott has a regular camp bedstead, but it is not half so warm and comfortable as mine. The principal trouble about this

kind of living is that you have to get on the bed to undress, and hang up your clothes on top of you after you have got to bed. In fact the bed is a universal repository for everything, saddle, sabre, pistol, spurs, newspapers, and everything else which it will not do to put on the ground."

June 11, 1862, the Centre Section was on picket at New Bridge; on the 12th, the Left Section.

It was understood that the rebels on the opposite shore were firing the guns they captured May 31st at Fair Oaks. When they did any good shooting they were always using our guns. Their practice was to bring a gun down into the woods, fire a few shots, and as soon as our batteries replied they would limber up and retire or open in some new position. Whenever they made their appearance they met with a lively reception. Every day a balloon went up and it was supposed the occupant kept a good lookout.

With the pleasant weather the flood in the Chickahominy was rapidly falling, and about half a mile below the bridge the Battery had been guarding, Smith's Division, by the 13th, had thrown up a very respectable earthwork, much stronger than a mere parallel or rifle pit and as strong in the estimation of Lieut. Phillips as many of the defenses of Yorktown. "From a tall flagstaff," he wrote, "in the centre of the work a large American flag floats defiantly, in sight, I should think, of Richmond."

## IN THE EARTHWORKS.

McClellan's Head Quarters crossed to the left bank of the river. Our pickets were over on that side, and Berdan's Sharpshooters in front of them within, in some cases, 25 yards of the rebel pickets. Lieut. Phillips was ordered Saturday morning, June 14th, to take his section down to New Bridge to reinforce Lieut. Scott and the Right Section. The route, as described, followed various turnings and twistings until out of the field, when the Battery moved

down a hill, across a brook, up a hill by Dr. Gaines's "gate posts," the fence and gate having disappeared some time since, on a half mile, then a turn to the left and straight ahead for a mile. Lieut. Scott's two pieces were in a new earthwork a little above New Bridge close by the edge of the swamp.

The line was 120 ft. long, 2 ft. 6 inches high, 20 ft. thick. There were beds for four pieces, on each side of which was a depression 3 ft. deep, into which the limbers were backed.

The swamp was full of trees, so that nothing could be seen from their position.

Instructions came from General Porter to be very careful and wide awake. The enemy had made a demonstration in the rear—a cavalry attack—cutting off a wagon train, and fears were entertained for one of the wagons with George Shaw. They had also driven in the pickets at one bridge. The Division was in great excitement all day and night. Martin's Battery starts out of camp three times and remains harnessed, ready to move. Lieut. Phillips was relieved at 9 p. m. on the 13th by Captain Weeden and returned to camp, but was ready to move all night.

Lieut. Hyde with the Right Section stayed in the earthworks.

Captain Griffin had been promoted. He was now Brigadier General.

#### THE FIRST DEATH IN CAMP.

Saturday, June 14, 1862, Corporal Henry C. Parsons died in the hospital, in the afternoon, of typhoid fever. Grows helped bring him into camp. He left a wife and three children.

The next morning there were funeral services for the first time, and the body was sent to White House Landing on the way home to Malden, Mass. The camp had grown

dreary and disagreeable. The grass was all worn off, and old boxes, barrels and the other debris of a camp were strewn around. The place was called Gaines Hill and the owner Dr. Gaines was under arrest in one of the buildings. He owned about 150 slaves. George Shaw, who started from White House just in time to meet the rebels on their raid, and who ought to have arrived with his wagon load of horse shoes &c., besides provisions for the officers' mess, was detained, and the officers' diet was salt junk and hard bread and hasty pudding, with on one occasion a few cherries, and at others a glass of lemonade, but on Sunday afternoon the 15th, George Shaw with the wagon rolled into camp. He left White House all right, and had got seven miles out on the road when he met a company of cavalry retreating full gallop, so he turned and kept his horse on the gallop till he reached his point of departure. Then he took a new start and came through safely. There was a train of 50 other teams and only 5 men escaped with their lives. Infantry and cavalry were ordered out in pursuit. The officers that night dined on boiled ham and string beans.

#### FROM LETTERS OF LIEUT. PHILLIPS.

"June 16 1862, Monday, at 6 p. m. the Battery left camp with the six guns only. The Right section under Lieut. Scott and the Centre section under Lieut. Phillips in the earthwork at New Bridge, Lieut. Hyde and the Left section at the bridge above. Fourteen hundred yards in front of our earthworks was Lewis Hill covered with trees from which we were fired upon, our men in response aiming at the flash of their guns which alone was visible.

Four of Griffin's pieces were in the battery and the Fifth Mass. delayed its approach while they limbered up and came out, then ran the guns behind the breastworks, the enemy's shot and shell flying at them; the fragments of the



shells striking under the horses which were hurried out of the way. Their guns were one 12 pdr. and one 3 inch Rifled Gun. For two hours the firing was incessant with no casualties on our side. One piece of shell broke the sponge staff on the 4th piece and another rolled over the parapet on to Leach's back, but did no harm."

"We used." [Chase's Diary] "4° elevation, and 3¼ second fuze while firing."

Phillips wrote "Corporal Nye, 3d piece, made some very pretty shots. The rebels had the range perfectly. As far as the proximity of shells was concerned it beat Yorktown all to pieces, but there was in reality almost no danger, as we were sheltered completely by the friendly pile of dirt in front of us. The rebels fired first rate, but if we had had as fair a sight at them as they had at us, somebody would have got hurt at their guns."

In the night the rebels cut down the trees that masked their earthwork, and all the next day our men could hear the music in the enemy's camp.

Grows of Charlestown celebrated the anniversary by buying some lemons and making some lemonade.

At eight o'clock, after dark, on the 17th, the Battery was relieved by Captain John R. Smead, Battery K, 5th U. S. artillery, and it went back to camp, leaving it after supper for a position on the hill by Dr. Gaines's house, where were two 20 pdr. Parrotts; sending the horses back to camp.

In the morning of the 18th, Martindale's Brigade and Griffin's Battery had marched to Mechanicsville and returned in the evening. Throwing up earthworks was the order of the day on both sides; the rebels shovelling dirt on Lewis Hill, and the Union soldiers piling it up on their side of the river.

The Battery was in position on Gaines Hill where it had been since the evening of the 17th, Lieuts. Phillips and

Scott in charge of the guns, "turning in" under a tent fly. when at noon of the 18th, General Fitz John Porter desired to have some 3 inch Schenkle percussion shell of a new pattern tested, which process Lt. Phillips thus describes:—

"We aimed one piece at a pile of dirt which the rebels were at work on, close by Mrs. Price's house; distance 2400 yards, elevation 7 1-20, and blazed away. The shots went first rate, all bursting.

The first shot fell a little short, the second struck right in the earthworks, burst beautifully, and five more gave a similar good account of themselves.

When we stopped, the rebels commenced firing at us with a ten pounder Parrott, using no fuzes. Their shots went first rate, one striking just eighteen yards in front of the Right piece—for I paced off the distance.—Another struck about 20 feet in front of a large crowd, who had gathered to witness the sport, whereupon they 'skedaddled' in lively style, but before General Porter and his attendant crowd could get off the hill, they sent a dozen shots whizzing round our heads from one of our own ten pdr. Parrotts captured at Fair Oaks.

During the afternoon General McClellan and staff rode up to our Battery, took a look at things and rode off. [See p. 310 McClellan's new base.] Toward sunset a lively engagement commenced between the rebels and our battery at New Bridge and I thought the rebels had rather the best of it, putting every shell just where they wanted it, but our 20 pdr. Parrotts on the hill in the rear of the New Bridge battery, took it up and made some great shots.

The balloon went up to do the observing, and the enemy fired two shots at it from their 10 pdr. Parrotts. One went sailing over our heads into the woods near our horses and ricocheted into the infantry camp, and the other, fired while the balloon was descending, passed close to it and

struck the bank between the balloon and Captain Griffin's camp. The distance must have been 5000 yards."

### REINFORCEMENTS.

On June 19, 1862, the Fifth Corps, still on the north bank of the Chickahominy, was reinforced by the 10th N. Y., the 1st Michigan, McCall's Division, and the cavalry commands of Generals Cooke and Stoneman.

Grows' Journal: "June 19, 1862. About 10 this forenoon some new shell of Schenkle patent came, and we were ordered to fire on the rebels who are in easy sight. Throwing up breastworks we fired five rounds, which caused them to 'skedaddle' and then they commenced firing at us, but did not do any hurt or good, and they soon 'dried up.'

After dinner Harry Simonds and I went into one of the slave cabins to get some water, and had quite a chat with the old woman of the shanty. They are a very peculiar class, and make a great deal of money by this war, selling hot cakes, and such things, to the soldiers."

On the 20th, one shell fired by the rebels struck in Captain Weeden's camp, and others went an indefinite distance over the woods. Some were fired at the 20 pdr. Parrotts on the hill, in the rear of New Bridge, but missed the mark.

Eleven bridges had now been built across the Chickahominy and seven were available, viz., Bottom's Bridge, the Railroad Bridge, the Foot Bridge, Duane's Bridge, Woodbury's Infantry Bridge, Woodbury and Alexander's Bridge, and Sumner's Upper Bridge or the Grapevine Bridge, the one over which Sumner had crossed to win the battle of Fair Oaks.

All of the Army of 100,000 men had passed over to the south side, except Porter's Corps and McCall's Division. While McClellan built bridges the enemy constructed earthworks.

## LETTER OF LIEUT. PHILLIPS.

"Friday morning, June 20, 1862, the picket relief, returning, waked up the rebel 10 pdrs., and they banged away in our direction. At the first shot, which fell short, the men looked a little astonished, not knowing what to make of it. At the second shot which went over their heads a loud laugh went up from the whole picket. The third shot struck close to them, and instantly came the order 'Double Quick. March!' and off they went. The rebels have at present two guns mounted in this battery of 4 and 5 inches calibre respectively, throwing shot weighing 30 and 40 pounds. The 40 pdr. is the heaviest rifled gun they have, and is the same as the guns which burst at Yorktown.

A deserter who came in, says, I am told, that they have four or five more 40 pdrs. which they are going to mount, and that the 30 pdr. is a Parrott gun which they took at Bull Run.

Our position is a splendid one for artillery practice. The meadows on the banks of the Chickahominy run back without rising much on each side about half a mile. A narrow belt of trees lines the banks of the river, and beyond the low plain on each side rises a line of wooded hills, with clearings and openings here and there. These hills are from 1500 to 4000 yds. apart, and batteries are planted along their whole length.

The rebel guns that I know of are as follows:—

First a 10 pdr. Parrott near Mrs. Price's house, then comes a long, wooded hill, stretching a mile perhaps to the westward. Hidden in this we can just discern the outlines of a breastwork apparently running the whole length of the hill in a continuous line. How many guns they have here we do not know, but as yet they have fired only three, a 12 pdr., a three inch Rifled Gun and one gun near the western limit of the hill, whose calibre I do not know. Then

still farther to the west comes their large gun battery situated on the top of a bare, sandy hill, and sweeping the whole valley of the Chickahominy from Mechanicsville to Gaines Hill.

These comprise the rebel defenses of the Chickahominy, but only a short distance from the end of *our* bridge lies Smith's Division and the right of our intrenchments, whose high parapet and deep embrasures give warning of what is coming. And on our side we are not idle. Our light guns, placed as a temporary protection to bridges, have been withdrawn, and the rebels may console themselves with the empty satisfaction of having driven us out of sight: but to do it they have disclosed to us their own strength, told us the calibre and position of their guns, and wasted their precious ammunition in a useless game of random shots. We are shovelling dirt diligently and when we open, the rebels will find that they have something more than light field batteries to contend against.

When it comes to artillery practice the odds are so tremendously in our favor, that the result will not long be doubtful. In nothing have the rebels shown themselves so inferior as in their management of artillery. They have good gunners, but their artillery officers show a frivolity altogether inconsistent with the gravity of this arm of the service. Here, as at Yorktown, instead of husbanding their resources in order to be ready at the decisive moment with that concentration and continuity of fire which alone makes artillery useful, they use up their ammunition in a kind of worrying game, which might be useful in a guerilla war, but is not likely to have much effect upon a large army. It is very irritating for a solitary individual to find himself a target for a 40 pdr. gun, merely because he walks across a field in front of the enemy, but, inasmuch as it is next to impossible to hit him, it is rather a waste of powder and shot, and will not be likely to drive us away from Richmond.

For the last few days they have been firing away at the battery at New Bridge. They have made good shots, struck the parapet almost every time, and half stifled the men inside with smoke, but what damage have they done us? Broken a sponge staff and a few spokes to a wheel, and at any time we choose, we can put a battery in there again. If they intend to demolish the battery why don't they go to work in a business like way and hammer away for eight or ten hours without stopping, and finish up the job? Instead of this they fire forty or fifty shots and then stop, leaving our men at liberty to repair damages."

Of the firing of the 20th Lieut. Phillips wrote at another time:—"For half an hour this battery was the hottest place I ever saw! Our men kept well under cover, and though the rebels hit the parapet almost every time, I have not heard of anybody's being hurt."

In Chase's Diary it is stated that the enemy used all sorts of shot and shell, both round and conical: twenty, thirty-two and forty pounders.

Grows' Journal: "June 20, 1862. Friday. About 8 this morning the rebels opened upon us with 3 in. 10 lb. shell and 5 in. 32 lb. shell, but they did not hurt us any for our little tents were in the woods out of the way, and were well protected by large oak trees. The second shot they fired went over our heads and struck one of the 2d Maine, killing him instantly. The poor fellow was asleep in his tent at the time, and he never awoke again in this world.

We soon opened upon them and in a short time they stopped firing. We could hear their drums beat, and see them at work. They are about  $1\frac{1}{2}$  miles from us. The infantry throw up works most every night. Our Battery is held back to protect the rear; a good position, but we have to keep in the woods, out of sight. We have been ordered to move to the splendid lawn in front of Dr. Gaines's house. It is well shaded with large oak trees. . . . After supper moved our quarters to the Gaines house."



On this ground there was a well which gave the only good water they had had for some time.

Grows' Journal: "Saturday, June 21, 1862. On the farm are some thirty slaves: all the rest have run away. They are a smart looking set. After supper I met, and talked a little with Dr. Gaines. He is quite an old man. His wife is a strong Union woman. He has two daughters who are 'secesh' to the backbone.

Sunday, June 22d. About 7 the balloon went up and the rebels began shelling it, but could not hit it. Then they commenced firing where we were stationed on picket. After throwing five or six shells they stopped. It is a beautiful morning and everything around looks nice. Took all the things out of my tent and laid them on the grass to air."

This lawn did not hold the Battery but a very short time, for the enemy constructed a battery of six 30 pdr. Parrotts in such close proximity as to make their position untenable, and they moved nearer to the river. The same day Dr. Gaines's wife and one of his daughters with what few slaves they had left, moved to Gaines Mills.

Grows' Journal. "Monday, June 23, 1862. Was called at 4 this morning and went on post. At 5 I called the Bugler to sound the Reveille. Soon after heard the rebels beating their drums to call the men. The air is very clear this morning. Got orders to pack up immediately after breakfast, so as to move our camp out of the range of shells; two others with myself were left behind to guard camp—to look after the stores till the teams came to carry them to our new camp. Soon after dinner the ambulance came over and began taking things over to camp, as the teams will not be up before night. . . . After supper I went to see the new intrenchments the infantry are throwing up. They are splendid works.

A short distance from here and almost back of Dr. Gaines's house, are eleven fresh rebel graves, mostly North

Carolina men who were wounded at Hanover Court House. About 6 feet from our cook house are five graves of our men of the 22d. Mass. One died of fever, the others of wounds.

About half past 6, I went over to our new camp, about 10 minutes' walk, in a delightful place,—a cleared space surrounded by thick and tall woods. There is a spring near by of beautiful water. Found my tent all ready. It had been pitched by Joe Knox out in the Park. All the rest of the tents are in the edge of the woods, and the little road they have cut leading to them is beautiful."

The Battery was alone in the new camp, and had all the room that could be desired. Chase makes the note in his Diary:—"Changed camp to a delightful grove of young trees, and begin to be happy." But the very first night there was a gale and heavy rain.

The officers' tents were on top of a hill where they could get the benefit of whatever breeze was blowing, and the first evening there was a terrific thunder storm. At midnight the tents blew over. The next day they were obliged to build a bridge "to connect the camp with civilization," which they accomplished, having the usual thunder storm in the afternoon.

### THE SITUATION.

General Porter's command had been distributed as follows:—Meade's Brigade at the Gaines house near a siege battery; Sykes' and Morell's and McCall's Divisions with a part of the Cavalry Reserve camped on the Gaines Farm conveniently located for a movement in any direction their presence was required.

Opposed to these Union forces were the Divisions of Jackson, Ewell and Whiting, at least double their number.

Information was received that our connection with

White House Landing was threatened by the rebel general Jackson, and the commander of the Army of the Potomac began planning for a new base of operations on the James River to which he had secured a safe passage over White Oak Swamp, and commissary, quartermaster, and ordnance supplies had been sent to the new base. [See p. 253 McClellan's choice.] It will be remembered that on a previous occasion McClellan's judgment as to the base had been overruled.

The Centre and Left of the Army were now instructed to move to the relief of the Right wing in case of attack.

There were ten heavy guns in battery on the banks of the Chickahominy; five 30 pdr. Parrotts on Gaines Hill and five 4½ inch Rodmans in the hill battery in the rear of the New Bridge battery.

"June 25, 1862, (Chase's Diary) the whole Battery went on a junket in the morning near New Bridge with pieces only. Left camp about 2 a. m. Dedicated the second fortification by shelling the enemy early a. m. The enemy replied to our fire with well directed shots, throwing 6 and 10 pounder shots and shells at us, but as we had good fortifications they did us no injury. Heavy cannonading all day; two batteries of 32 pounders and two batteries of 10 pounders shelling the enemy with short intervals of cessation, all day. Fired 97 rounds from the whole Battery today, elevation 4½° and 7¼ second fuze; best shot 4¾° 6½ second fuze. Picked up five conical shells and two solid shot fired at us, and started a bowling alley with them in the afternoon. Left for camp at eight p. m. The 7th Georgia Reg't was on rebel picket line today."

Of "Battery No. 4" Lieut. Scott has written:—"Lieut. Hyde was in command of the Fifth Mass. Battery, Lieut. Dillingham had been transferred from the Left Section to the Right Section; Lieut. Phillips commanded the Centre Section; it devolved on myself to take the Left Section. The

rebels had their earthworks opposite New Bridge, which had been rebuilt, to oppose any crossing by our forces. Our pickets held the Bridge and earthworks were thrown up to shield our batteries which also did picket duty. The Fifth Battery was placed behind these works at different times, and had duelled with the enemy. We took good care to go into these works before daylight and leave them after dark, when relieved. We remained there the entire day, subject to an incessant fire from the rebel guns opposite. We only fired our guns occasionally, to let them know we were still there. Of course horses were kept at a safe distance in the rear."

Lieut. Phillips wrote of the same date, June 25, 1862: "The weather had become settled and we passed into the earthworks covering New Bridge, a new 6 gun battery No. 4. The work is quite strong, with embrasures and traverses to protect us from the flanking fire from the big gun battery. Four pieces from some battery are down in the old earthwork at New Bridge which has been strengthened and made quite secure; the parapet having been raised and embrasures cut. All our batteries have been blazing away, more or less. One gun is reported burst near Mrs. Price's house, and the hill battery think they have dismounted one of the rebel big guns. They put quite a number of shot into the embrasure. The rebels have answered rather feebly, making a few good shots in our vicinity. They have fired 3 inch shot. . . .

Kearney's Division I hear attacked the rebels today, driving them a mile.

At night we arrived safely in camp and went to bed. We have received 200 rds. Schenkle 3 inch shell, which we are now packing. . . .

Our pickets report that we made excellent shooting, and that after a few shots the rebels skedaddled out of the battery into Mrs. Price's house. We struck the house twice."

## THE ARMY OF VIRGINIA.

The Army of Virginia was inaugurated June 26, 1862, and placed under command of General John Pope, for the protection of Washington, and for aggressive movements in the direction of Charlottesville, and the relief of McClellan.

This army was composed of three corps under Sigel, Banks, and McDowell.

McClellan wished to allow Porter, who was to give battle to the enemy and enable McClellan to hold his own for a few hours, and insure the safety of his trains during the change of base to the James River, all the reinforcements which could be spared from the south side of the river, and asked each commander of a corps for all he could spare and sufficiently protect his own position for twenty-four hours, but they believed the enemy still to be in force and threatening their positions on the south side and held on to them, so Porter fought it out alone.

Thursday, June 26, 1862, in the afternoon, the enemy crossed the Chickahominy in several columns in the vicinity of Mechanicsville and Meadow Bridge, flanked the Right wing of the Army of the Potomac, and attacked McCall's Division at Beaver Dam Creek just north of the Mechanicsville turnpike. The expected had happened and supplies were cut off in that direction.

The morning was passed in quiet, but about half past 4 p. m. the Fifth Mass. Battery broke camp. They sent their baggage across the river at a bridge lower down held by our forces. With the wagons went Lieut. Dillingham, a sick man and unfit for duty. They marched with full battery in support of Cooke's cavalry and General Butterfield's Brigade, according to the orders, to repel attack at Cold Harbor.

This was the first intimation they had of an impending

battle, though they had been expecting an attack at Mechanicsville for some time. They had heard firing all day but had taken no notice of it, as it was nothing unusual.

After marching two miles in the direction of Cold Harbor, they turned and marched towards Mechanicsville to the assistance of McCall and Sykes. In their march they had made the complete circuit of their camp and bivouacked with Butterfield's Brigade in a large field  $2\frac{1}{2}$  miles short of Mechanicsville, and  $\frac{3}{4}$  of a mile in front of the Gaines house. They could see the shells bursting over the tops of the trees, and from 5 p. m. until dark they could hear heavy cannonading and sharp musketry firing towards Mechanicsville where McCall's Pennsylvania Reserves were closely engaged.

Grows' Journal: "June 26. . . . We were thus moved about till dark when we were sent near to our old camp, but did not unhitch till about 11 o'clock at night. Had some supper and got ready to lay down, but was told I would have to go on guard at 2 in the morning. Laid down but could not sleep."

Perfect silence was ordered, and officers and men lay down on the ground, every man spreading his blanket alongside his piece to be ready at a moment's notice.

They had three days' rations in their haversacks. General McClellan was with General Fitz John Porter at the front until the contest at Beaver Dam Creek ceased at 9 p. m. with our troops in possession of the field, returning to his headquarters at one o'clock in the morning.

At 3 a. m. of June 27th, orders came to Porter to withdraw the Fifth Corps to the vicinity of Gaines Mills, with both flanks resting on the Chickahominy covering the bridges.



## CHAPTER X.

### THE BATTLE OF GAINES MILLS, JUNE 27, 1862.

"And now I come to speak of the real fighting of the Peninsula. To my mind, nothing that came after exceeded it in the valor and tactical merit displayed, or in reckless charges or losses in a given time."

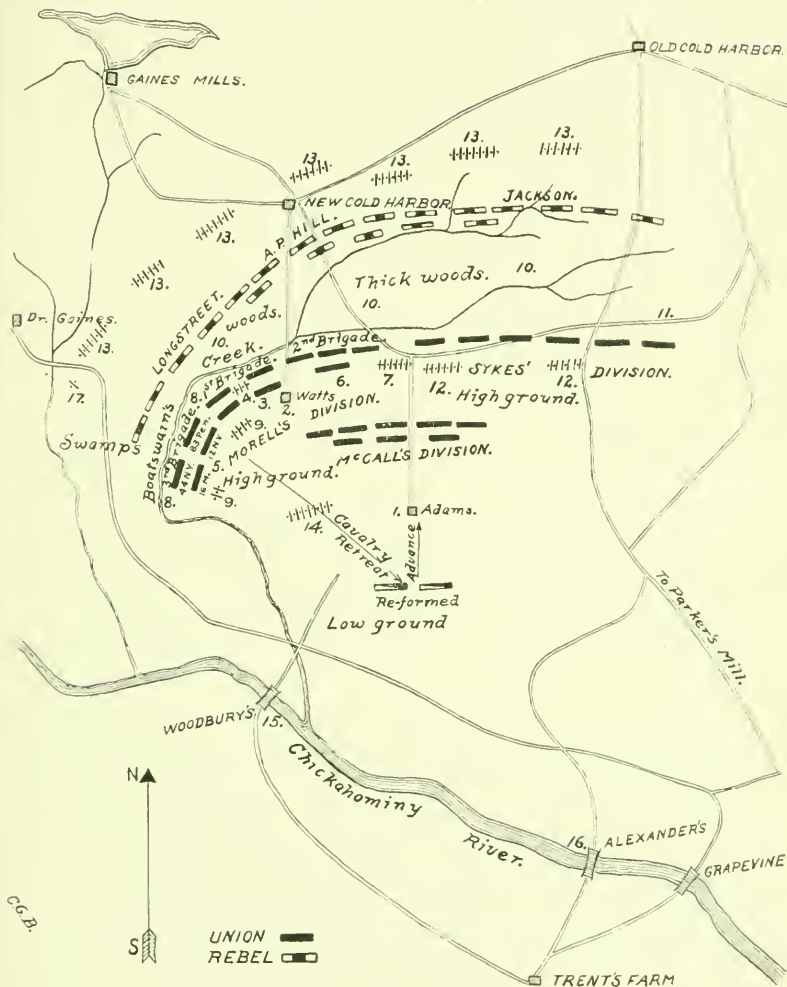
—BREVET BRIGADIER-GENERAL THOMAS W. HYDE.

Longstreet, commanding the rebel forces, was at Mechanicsville on the 27th of June, 1862, all ready to move down upon either side of the Chickahominy. He was then close upon Porter's Fifth Corps. It was thought by McClellan to be necessary to fight the enemy where he stood, and hold the position till night, his mind being still bent upon perfecting his arrangements for the change of base to the James River, and at 3 a. m., General Porter received orders directing him to withdraw his command to a semicircular line east of Gaines Mills, and behind Boatswain's creek, the flanks resting on the Chickahominy, and including in its sweep the high grounds east of the creek.

In front were the ravines of the creek, on the east woods and underbrush, on the north and west swamps and wood land, while on the hills to the north was cleared ground crossed by fences and ditches. The bridge approaches could be covered by the positions on these hills.

No fault could be found with the choice of this line but the time for making the defenses was limited, and the men and means were inadequate, to carry out these well laid plans for a line two miles in length. The action at Gaines Mills commenced about 2 p. m. During the afternoon

# GAINES MILLS.



1. General Porter's First Head Quarters. 2. His Second Head Quarters.
3. Martindale 4. Section of Weedens Battery. 5. Butterfield. 6. Griffin.
7. Martin's Battery 8 & 8. Ravines. 9 & 9. 5<sup>th</sup> Mass. Battery. 10.
- Thickly wooded, low, swampy ground, through which the
- Rebels charged. 11. First attack of Rebels on Union lines. 12.
- Other Union Batteries. 13. Rebel Batteries. 14. Position of
- batteries when the repulsed Cavalry rode through them
- and put them in disorder, and caused the loss of many guns.
15. First bridge destroyed. 16. Second bridge destroyed.
17. Gun aimed at Gaines House during the morning.



McClellan ordered up Slocum's Division to the support of Porter; also the brigades of French and Meagher of Richardson's Division; also two brigades of Peck's Division, but inasmuch as none of them but Slocum's came within relieving distance, their support of Fitz John Porter at the battle of Gaines Mills is lost to history.

At first the 3d Brigade held the position on the extreme Left of the line, with the Fifth Mass. Battery, Lieut. Hyde in command, on the right and rear of the brigade, then General Morell coming up with the remainder of his Division, Martindale's Brigade was placed on the right of Butterfield, and Griffin's Brigade on the right of Martindale's.

Sykes held the Right of the line, and McCall was in reserve. Martin's Battery was on the right of Morell, commanding the road.

The Left extended into the meadow about half a mile from Woodbury's Bridge.

Porter's Right was first engaged.

The forces immediately opposed to the Fifth Mass. Battery are believed to have been a brigade of five Alabama regiments.

General Porter's headquarters first at the Adams house, were later at the Watts house on a hill near the front. Among his volunteer aides were the Prince de Joinville, Captain Louis Philippe (Comte de Paris) and Captain Robert d'Orleans (Duc de Chartres). The new line had been safely reached and occupied, defenses and barriers were erected of whatever material was available, and Porter expected to hold it. Most of the artillery was formed in line about a quarter of a mile in the rear of the infantry. For an hour the firing had continued; at 3 o'clock the enemy had charged and been repulsed, but not until four o'clock, when the battle had been raging two hours, was Porter's appeal for more troops answered by the arrival of Newton's Brigade of Slocum's Division, which moved to the right of Griffin. Still the line remained unbroken, but at last, massing their

superior numbers, from 60,000 to 70,000 supported by 80 pieces of artillery to our 25,000 at most fighting men, on the Left, the rebels bore down the broken regiments of Butterfield's Brigade.

Captain William B. Weeden, on duty as chief of artillery, 1st Division, promoted from the command of Battery C, 1st Reg't. R. I. Light Artillery, reports:— . . . "The smoke had filled the whole field to the woods and it was impossible to direct the fire. The batteries were limbering to the rear in good order, to retire and renew the fire from the brow of the hill, when the cavalry, repulsed, retired in disorder, through and in front of the batteries. The caissons were exchanging limbers with the pieces and it was impossible to limber up and withdraw them. Men were ridden down and the horses stampeded by the rush of the cavalry. The whole line of artillery was thrown into confusion. Commands could be neither heard nor executed, and different batteries were mingled in disorder. One piece of my battery mired in the woods. Other caissons in front and rear of the same, having been abandoned by the drivers, it was impossible to rescue the piece. The remainder of the battery crossed Woodbury's Bridge at dark, and encamped on Trent's farm."

#### REPORT OF GEN. GEO. W. MORELL.

(June 27th.) "The Third and First Brigades were each in two lines, with small intervals; the Second in one line, with one regiment in reserve. Martin's Battery was in the open field between my Division and General Sykes's on my right, mine being on the extreme left.

A section of Weeden's (Fourth R. I.) under Lt. Buckley, was placed at an opening through the timber in General Martindale's line, and a section of Allen's (Fifth Mass.) in a like position in General Butterfield's. The rest could not

be brought into action. . . . The enemy approached through the woods from the direction of New Cold Harbor, and made their first serious attack about 12 o'clock upon the Right, which was handsomely repulsed by Griffin's Brigade.

The second attack was made about 2.30, and the third about 5.30 o'clock, each extending along my entire front, and both, like the first, were gallantly repulsed. At the fourth and last about 6.30 o'clock, they came in irresistible force, and throwing themselves chiefly against the Centre and Left, swept us from the ground by overwhelming numbers, and compelled us to retire. Lt. Bucklev lost his two guns yet without discredit, for he fought them to the last moment, having but three men, including non-commissioned officers, left to each piece when the infantry gave way.

As we retired the artillery opened fire from the Left and Rear, but the pressure was so great that the troops could not be rallied, except in small bodies, to support it. Besides, General (Philip St. George) Cooke's cavalry, having been repulsed in a charge upon the enemy's Right, rode at full speed obliquely through a large portion of the artillery, carrying men and horses along with them. The cavalry reformed under the hill beyond the reach of musketry, and advancing to the neighborhood of the Adams house imparted some steadiness to the infantry near them."

#### REPORT OF BRIG. GEN. DANIEL BUTTERFIELD.

(June 27.) "The following was the disposition of my brigade: Eighty-third Pennsylvania Volunteers on the creek, with its right connecting with General Martindale's left (First Michigan Regiment). Forty-fourth New York to the left, and on the same line of Eighty-third: Twelfth New York on the crest of the hill in rear of and supporting the Eighty-third: Sixteenth Michigan back of crest of hill,



in rear of and supporting the Forty-fourth: Allen's Fifth Massachusetts Battery to the right and rear of my position, so situated as to be used at any point of the line I might wish. Skirmishers from the Eighty-third and Forty-fourth Regiments, together with the sharpshooters of the Sixteenth Michigan, were thrown well forward on the brow of the hill, commanding our entire lines. . . . The first attack of the enemy in force on my brigade, took place at about 2.30 o'clock p. m., it having been preceded by a like attack on the Right and Centre of the general line. So soon as it began I ordered a section of Allen's Battery to take a position opposite to and fire through an interval in the woods commanding the hill in front of my centre. Their fire proved very destructive to the assaulting column. . . .

. . . The second attack of the enemy, preceded as in the first one by an attack on the Right and Centre, took place at about 5.30 o'clock p. m., and was more severe, but so far as the result is concerned met with a like reception and repulse. I brought forward my two reserves and had all my force engaged."

Of the third and last assault which took place shortly after 6 p. m. he says:—"So emboldened were the enemy by their success in getting on all sides of my command, that a regiment sent a flag of truce to the Eighty-third, demanding their surrender. This was indignantly refused, and the regiment expended its last round of ammunition in fighting its way out. A large portion of these succeeded in forming in good order on the hill in rear of the batteries, and with other fragments of commands, aided by the Prince de Joinville, Captain Hoyt and Major Webb of the regular artillery, and Colonel Roberts, Second Maine, two good lines of troops were formed with some degree of precision. The firing of the artillery closed the scene and saved us all from destruction."

## OFFICIAL REPORT OF LT. JOHN B. HYDE.

## ORIGINAL COPY.

CAMP NEAR HARRISON'S LANDING,

July 5, 1862.

CAPT. WEEDEN,

Chief of Artillery Gen. Morell's Division.

I have the honor to make the following report as regards the Battery under my command.

June 26th was ordered to report to General Butterfield, and proceeded with his Brigade in direction of Coal Harbor, and was subsequently ordered back to a field near Gen. Morell's Head Quarters, took position near the woods; afterwards was ordered to the field formerly occupied by the Reserve Artillery, remained there until 3 a. m. of the 27th, was then ordered to take position "in Battery" to the Left and near Dr. Gaines's House to command the bridge in front [see notes of Captain Hyde May 22, 1900 p. 320] and to cover the retreat of our troops, and then to retire after all were over and the bridge destroyed; this being accomplished took position again on the other side of a bridge, on a hill about 100 yards from the woods, and was again ordered to take position at the edge of the woods by General Butterfield [see notes p. 321] and with the assistance of his Brigade, drove the enemy back several times in great disorder, after which we resumed our position on the hill, and remained in readiness for the enemy to come out of the woods, then to give them double canister, which we did with great effect until our support gave way and we were obliged to limber up and retire, which we did in good order, with all the pieces except one, the horses of which having been previously killed, I was obliged to leave. We had proceeded but a short distance, when the fire of the enemy became so in-

tense, that the horses on three of the pieces were killed, thereby preventing their removal from the field.

Our loss was four pieces, twenty-two horses and harnesses.

Corp'l A. F. Milliken shot through the head.

Private Chas. D. Barnard shot through the breast.

" E. F. Gustine shot in the breast.

" Wm. H. Ray wounded in the breast.

" John Agen wounded in the side.

" L. D. Brownell wounded in ankle.

" Richard Heyes missing, prisoner.

" E. F. Smith missing, prisoner.

After having retired from the field, crossed the Chickahominy River and encamped near General McClellan's Head Quarters for the night. Amount of ammunition expended was one hundred shell and twenty-five canister.

#### NOTES OF LT. HYDE MAY 22, 1900.

"We were retreating towards the James River. We—our Battery—were the last to cross the bridge below Dr. Gaines's house on the way to cross the Chickahominy. This bridge was built of logs and planks and was about twenty feet wide and about thirty feet long. After we had passed over that bridge our guns were placed 'in Battery,' facing towards the enemy who were coming that way in pursuit of our army, to hold them in check if necessary. After all the troops had passed over, the colonel of the infantry regiment was ordered to destroy the bridge.

During the work of destruction I discerned coming down the hill at great speed several mounted men, whom by my glass I made out to be members of the Signal Corps. I at once told the Colonel in charge to have the planks of the bridge replaced as members of the Signal Corps were coming down the hill like lightning. He at first doubted it and

said they were rebels. I insisted, handing him my glasses, and having looked he said sure enough it was the Signal Corps, and ordered the planks to be put down over which they passed and went to the rear. I afterwards received a complimentary letter from Lieut. Tompkins who was one of the number.

After this bridge had been removed we proceeded to the next bridge which was wider and much longer, reaching from the bottom of a ravine to the top of a cliff or plateau, and after our Battery had passed over it this bridge was destroyed by being blown up. We were the last to go over. This took place in the afternoon.

It was the last stand taken, and it was there we lost our guns.

General Butterfield's order was to place two of my guns in the edge of the woods, and fire in the direction of the enemy.

Our position was on the plateau about 200 feet from the edge of the woods where our guns again faced the enemy—the forces of Stonewall Jackson who were directly in our front across the ravine—without support, which it was impossible to obtain, all the infantry being engaged as I was informed by General Butterfield when I asked for it. All the batteries were formed in a semi-circle the Fifth Mass. Battery being on the extreme left. Directly in front of the batteries was the ravine 20 feet in depth. The firing all the afternoon and until dark was terrific, and the engagement is said by General Butterfield to have been one of the severest battles of the war.

Toward the latter part of the afternoon in a cross fire from the opposite bank of the Chickahominy where the rebels had placed their guns, with the swamp in between us, one of the shells passing under my horse—not 'Black Charley,' one of 'Uncle Sam's' horses,—and tearing up the ground for quite a distance, exploded without injury to any one, but the shock made my hair stand on end."

## GRIFFIN TO HYDE.

HARRISON'S LANDING, VA.

July 17, 1862.

LT. J. B. HYDE.

*Dear Sir,*

It gives me great pleasure to testify to your good conduct whilst under my command; always showing a desire to execute all orders with alacrity, and in a cheerful manner.

Very Respectfully,

CHAS. GRIFFIN,  
*Brig.-Gen'l.*

## HOYT TO HYDE.

HD. QRS. 3D. BRIGADE.

MORELL'S DIVISION

5TH PROV. CORPS.

HARRISON'S LANDING, VA.

July 17, 1862.

LT. J. B. HYDE,

5th Mass. Batt.

*Lieutenant.*

In the absence of General Butterfield it affords me great pleasure,—having witnessed your conduct at the Battle of Chickahominy,—to give my testimony to the soldier like, brave, and efficient manner in which throughout the day you managed your battery. The effect of the fire of half of it on three occasions on that day, proved of the greatest assistance to our Brigade, and when later in the day all seemed lost, you willingly reported for duty with your last pieces, you gave evidence by the act, that you had done all any one could for the preservation of those lost.

Please accept my best wishes for your success,

and Believe me sincerely &amp;c.

WM. J. HOYT,  
*Asst. Adj't Gen'l.*

## FROM PHILLIPS' LETTERS.

"Before daylight on Friday June 27, 1862, we were round and prepared to move.

Then to our surprise we commenced a retrograde movement: backward went the whole Division, and as we came into the road we found our heavy siege guns moving along with us.

Then the fact that we were retreating became apparent to us, and all the time we could hear the enemy thundering on our rear.

At 6 o'clock we passed the Gaines house, and, crossing a little brook, came into battery on the hill beyond. Here we were ordered to wait till all our troops had crossed, and the bridge cut away. So we waited for two or three hours. Finally, the last of our column passed, and the ruins of the bridge soon fell into the stream, and no enemy had appeared.

I had one of my pieces aimed at Dr. Gaines's house, all ready to knock it down at the slightest demonstration. As soon as the bridge was down we limbered up and retired across the field, over a bridge in the middle of a piece of woods traversed by a deep ravine and brook, and into the field beyond, where we came into battery for the second time.

Three hundred yards in front of us stretched the woods that were to witness a terrible conflict. Right behind us the ground sloped down into the level meadows that border the Chickahominy.

Butterfield's Brigade and our Battery were on the extreme Left, the enemy being prevented from flanking us on that side by the fire of Smith's heavy guns across the Chickahominy.

Then came Weeden's Battery, then Martin's. There we stood, waiting an attack.

About noon the enemy attacked our right, but only to be driven back.



Again he attacked and this time our Left, and the bullets whistled round our heads pretty lively, but the result was the same. A third time he tried to get through the woods, and a third time our troops drove him back; but their ranks were thinned as they came out of the woods, and it was evident that unless reinforcements arrived our wearied men could not stand another attack from the fresh troops the rebels were constantly receiving.

But on they came for the fourth time, and with a more determined charge than before.

Lieut. Hyde sent my section down into the edge of the woods . . . and I blazed away.

But this time the thundering volleys of musketry told us that the hottest work of the day was before us.

All along the line it was one continuous roar, while mixed with it came the heavy reports of artillery, as Weeden and Martin thundered away on our Right. But it was of no use: advancing at trail arms in one unbroken mass, they rushed through the woods over the brook, now filled with dead bodies, closing their ranks as fast as our fire mowed them down.

The woods were full of smoke, and the bullets buzzed round our heads like a swarm of angry bumble bees: still our artillery thundered away.

My horse had a bullet in his flank and one sergeant's horse lay dead on the ground. As yet no men were hit, but louder and louder roared the musketry, and thicker and thicker buzzed the bullets, and suddenly, out poured our infantry in disorder, frightened and reckless,—they made an attempt to rally, rushing out right in front of the muzzles of our guns, which were not ten feet from the trees, but broke and retreated.

Still, as long as there was any hope I blazed away till all our men had retreated beyond me. Then I limbered up and carried my section into the field alongside of our other pieces.

As far as I could see the hill was covered with our men,

running in groups of two or three or alone, each one looking out for himself, while 200 yards in front stretched the long line of rebel infantry, which had formed between us and the woods, their red flags flying, and their muskets sending the bullets flying round our heads after all the infantry had left.

I unlimbered and fired one round of canister at a regiment with a red flag within less than three hundred yards. We could see the gaps made at each discharge instantly filled up by fresh troops, and still on they came.

Reluctantly, we limbered up and commenced our retreat. I got both my pieces off the field down to the bottom of the hill (and all the caissons got off safely,) and none too soon, for at the right piece, more exposed than the others, down went all the horses (four) and Corporal Albert F. Milliken fell, shot through the head, then Private Edward F. Gustine, at Peacock's piece, shot in the neck and breast, Private Charles D. Barnard shot in the side, then Wm. H. Ray fell at Smith's piece with a bullet through his shoulder, but managed to get off the field.

So down the hill we went at full gallop, but before we reached the bottom Peacock's and Simonds's pieces were left, with the horses dead in the traces. George F. Manchester one of the drivers on Sergt. Peacock's piece had his off horse shot but cut his nigh one loose and escaped. When he got to the bottom of the hill he took up a wounded officer in front of him, but in passing under the fire of our Reserve Artillery, one of their shells blew the officer's head off, and Manchester said he felt frightened for the first time. So far both of my guns were safe, but at the bottom of the hill, a fence stopped us a little, and while passing through the gap we experienced the hottest fire of all.

The rebels by this time lined the top of the hill, and poured a murderous fire into our retreating soldiers. As Blake's piece went through the gap, down went one horse with a bullet in his jaw, throwing his rider, but the other horses pulled him through and saved the gun. As Page's piece

passed through down went four horses at one volley, and I told the men to leave the piece. The rebels were following at double quick, and there was nobody to support us.

I had hardly gone a hundred yards when with the next volley my horse fell, shot through the leg, and as I tumbled off I saw the rebel flag planted on my gun!

I was compelled reluctantly to abandon my saddle and bridle, blankets, pocket testament, brushes &c. to the rebels, and taking my overcoat, revolver and brandy flask, travelled along on foot.

By this time all was confusion, the road was full of fugitives, the officers in vain trying to rally their men, and the thunder of artillery and musketry incessant.

The bullets buzzed around our heads thicker than ever, but I trudged on with a sullen desperation.

Our Reserve Artillery was blazing away over our heads, the shells coming in dangerous proximity to our caps, keeping the rebels back somewhat, and soon our reinforcements, the Irish Brigade, came up, too late, alas, for us.

Still we pressed on until we had crossed the Chickahominy, and reposed once more in safety.

Blake's piece got off. Corporal Spear's got stuck in a ditch, but they hauled it through. Simonds's piece was lost: Sergt. Smith got a bullet through his cap, taking off some of his hair, and raising a little swelling on the top of his head: John Agen had his jacket torn and his side bruised by a piece of shell, while spent bullets struck around very thick. Strange as it may seem, although my horse was struck three times; once in the edge of the woods, once in the leg as we were retreating, and a third time as he fell, throwing me off, I cannot find any bullet marks on me or my clothes.

I have seen enough of retreats, and my only consolation is that no efforts of mine could have altered the result. We did not leave the field till the whole of Butterfield's Brigade had broken; and after our horses were shot we could not save our pieces. Had the infantry rallied I would have

stayed as long as any of them, but, as it was, 15 seconds' delay would have lost everything, guns, men and horses.

We were the last battery on the field.

Our men fought well against superior numbers, and did not retreat till they had lost half their men, used up their ammunition, and were wearied out, and when the rebels came on the last time it was useless to fire at them. We could not kill them as fast as they came up. Had we had a battery of 12 pdrs. a regiment of dead men would have covered the field before they could have got our guns, but our little pieces do not throw canister much larger than a mustard box, and were never meant for that kind of work. As it was, however, we could see the gaps made in their ranks, as we threw in double charges of canister, but they filled them up as fast as they were made.

No description can convey an accurate idea of the peculiar sound the bullets make as they buzz around one's head. You must hear it to appreciate it. It approaches nearly the buzzing of a swarm of bees, intermingled with a few sharper notes. First it is buz-z-z-, then te-oo, very sharp. Inter-mingled with these is the sharp click when a bullet strikes a tree. Of course there is nothing very pleasant in the sound, but after a man gets used to it, he can listen to it with great composure, and I troubled myself as little as possible about the 'humming birds' as the men call them.

We kept on the retreat as fast as possible, the road being filled with artillery and infantry, wounded men on litters, and wounded men supported by their comrades. I do not want to see such a sight again.

That night we got over the Chickahominy and by midnight we went into park somewhere [Trent's Farm] near Weeden's remaining three pieces and three caissons. Scott and I lay down side by side, on a pile of hay, and I slept sweetly till long after daylight.

The next day, June 28th, with the remains of our Battery, we commenced our march, with the retiring army, towards

James River; other Divisions covering our retreat and fighting all the way.

I hear that the Irish Brigade drove the rebels back into the woods, spiked, buried, and otherwise disabled our guns (left on the field) and held the ground till everything had crossed, when they came over and blew up the bridge. About noon that day (28th) we heard an explosion, and an immense cloud of smoke announced the destruction of our bridges over the Chickahominy. A large house near us was used as a hospital, and the grounds all round were covered with wounded men. Lt. Mortimer, a fine fellow, 1st Lt. of Martin's Battery was in the house dying from a bullet wound. [Caleb C. E. Mortimer see p. 56 "In Sixty-One."]

In the afternoon we started and marched to Savage's Station on towards the James River. Troops, baggage teams &c. crowded the roads.

At sunset we camped in a very pleasant spot on top of a hill. Close by was a beautiful house and grounds but as usual orders came not to touch the fences. I am happy to state, however, that by the next morning all the rails in our vicinity had disappeared, carried off *probably* by some of the infantry regiments, as it would have been my duty to stop any of our men. Here we found our wagons again and slept under a tent, and washed our faces.

The next morning (29th) we again took up our line of march. As yet we knew nothing of our destination. The country was new, and had evidently not been traversed much by troops. The roads were excellent and we kept right on.

Still in our rear, though intermittently, the firing went on, but we cared nothing for that. At 9 in the evening we reached our camp, pitch dark, so I cannot describe the locality. Our wagons had now fallen to the rear, so we spread our blankets and turned in. The next morning, June 30, 1862, we started before daylight and with frequent halts kept on our way. About noon we crossed a large wheat field, and then crossed a still larger field on a high table land, and came in sight of the James River."

## THE LAST STAND.

FROM SCOTT'S NOTES.

"The morning of the 27th of June (1862) opened beautifully. Brightly the warm sun began its course, to go down scarcely seen through the smoke and dust of the battle that would be raging.

The Divisions and Brigades of General Porter's Corps were moving past to the last stand and line of battle down the river.

All the other Corps of the Army had crossed the river to the south side. The 5th only remained on the north side for it could not cross in the face of the enemy. Back of the river flats the country was rolling, with more or less woods; the depressions between the hills were favorable for the enemy to form their lines out of sight.

The Left of our line of battle was less than  $\frac{1}{2}$  a mile from the river, at the thin edge of a skirting line of woods that bordered a small stream running east and west to the river, in a depression which would be a rushing torrent after an hour's rain, but now nearly dry. A temporary log bridge crossed near this point where most of the Corps had passed.

The line of battle following the Creek a short distance east, curved to the south, passing swampy ground at the centre, then curving west to the river where the Right of the line rested, thus forming a semi-circle. Behind the line of battle formed, was an undulating open country to the river, which was crossed by three narrow bridges, one of them, called the Grape Vine bridge, being held in place by ropes made fast to trees up stream. The approaches to one of these bridges was nearly 1400 yards long.

The Battery took up its line of march about 9 o'clock from near the Gaines house, moving down the river, and going into battery covering the rear guard.



Once on its way all was silence, except the firing of the rebel skirmishers driving in our Pickets.

Limbering up our guns we crossed the log bridge, the last battery to cross, and soon the bridge was taken up and destroyed. Going into battery on low ground near a peach orchard in rear of the line of battle, we could not see the movement of troops on our Right, nor the brigades on our Left Front, as Butterfield's and Martindale's brigades were beyond the wood, the extreme Left of the line on lower ground. Following the creek they had felled trees, and formed what protection they could to shield themselves from the enemy's fire.

The line of battle formed extended a mile and a half or more, held by Fitz John Porter's Corps of 30,000 men. Early in the fight he called for reinforcements which were not promptly sent.

The rebels proved to have had more than double that number.

At this point we waited.

Being on the Left of the Battery I hardly knew what was going on at the Right. The sun poured down upon us in force, and while here the U. S. mails were distributed, and many read letters from home and friends for the last time.

Meantime the enemy were forming their lines around the 5th Corps. They thought they had us in a trap. Spent bullets came dropping on the sand, raising a puff of dust, the patient horses pricking up their ears and shaking their heads.

Still we ate our hard-bread and drank our hot water. Not a breath of air was stirring, and two miles away, across the river, the smoke and dust of the fierce battle raging could be seen during that afternoon, but not a gun was heard by the rest of the army at that distance.

About 12 o'clock General Daniel Butterfield of the brigade came down the slope to my section, and wanted me to train one of my guns to fire over the skirting of woods before

which his brigade was located. I said that the ground rose so rapidly that in firing it at so high an elevation we might find it on the ground.

He wanted to sight the gun himself, and the gun being trained to suit him, he commenced its elevation. At that moment 'the ball opened,' and he left suddenly, as the rebels were charging his brigade. The rebel batteries opened on the Right, throwing a raking fire through the woods, in front of which his brigade was located with the infantry which had commenced firing. We could hear the quick popping of a rapid firing gun. We had seen this gun before. It was fixed on a tripod, and by turning a crank it spit out bullets, and was supposed to annihilate anything in its front. The rebels captured it before the fight was over.

An order came to Lt. Hyde to send up one gun. Why the whole battery was not sent up I never knew. The Lieutenant ordered me up with the left gun of my section. Away we went and took our position at the edge of the wood. We could not see the brigade below us, but could see the rebels through the woods and brush, moving for a charge. We opened fire and plied them well with our one gun.

No artillery was to the left of us nor could we see the army to our right: the peach orchard seemed to cover us. The noise from the rebel batteries raking the woods, together with the fire of musketry, was terrific.

A second charge by the rebels on Butterfield's and Martindale's brigades, was repelled, then came a lull in front, the firing had swept to the Right of the line of battle.

I was ordered back to the rest of the Battery down the slope. We had taken our place with the Battery but a short time, when Longstreet, who had reformed his lines with fresh troops came on again.

Four guns were ordered up. We limbered up the Left Section, and away we went to the woods, followed by the Centre Section, Lt. Phillips, who took position on our right. These four guns were not idle. It would be hard to explain

one's feelings at such a moment, but we felt that as long as we were not hit we were not hurt, and every one worked to do his best now we had the chance.

Through the woods we could see only parts of the rebel lines. If we did not cut some of them down we did the small trees in our front, as they fell as if cut with a scythe.

Charge after charge was repelled by the brigade in front of us, but human endurance could not withstand the more than double force pitted against us. Our brigades were exhausted, ammunition gone, and all the Reserves had been thrown into the fight.

The left of Martindale's Brigade had been turned and the rebels were flanking us.

We kept up our fire with the guns unaware of what had happened. Enveloped with smoke we could not tell what was going on far from us.

At this point the infantry of our brigade came struggling up between our guns.

Anxious to know how the fight was going on I said to a soldier :

'What's the trouble below?'

'Trouble enough,' he said. 'The rebels are crossing the ditch on our right.'

Looking to our left we saw an officer mounted on a stone heap waving a flag. He cried out: 'For God's sake, men, stand by your colors!'

It was of no use, men were moving stubbornly off to the rear, and soon after as we moved down the slope, the brigade, what was left of them, had melted away, and I do not remember to have seen a Union soldier.

We received orders to retire in haste, which we did. Limbering up our guns with Phillips leading, we moved quickly down the slope to where we had left the Right section of the Battery, unaware that the guns were in the hands of the enemy.

To my surprise, Lt. Phillips as he came up with the Right section continued on at a trot. He had taken in the situation. As my section came on, I saw something was wrong with the guns, but I passed quickly by. Phillips still leading passed to the right of a foot hill which formed the last stand of the Corps at night, thus exposing our flank to the enemy, who were now near the bridge we had crossed in the morning.

Moving in this line, I was amazed to see the right piece of my section going pell mell past the left of the hill into a hollow below. Leaving my left piece to follow Phillips I turned about to look it up, passing near the guns already captured. Then I saw our plight. Overtaking the gun, which was but a short distance ahead, I saw it was fast stuck in a ditch. The situation looked anything but pleasant. In front of us, on the last rise of ground before reaching the river, was posted a line of artillery, throwing their united fire into the rebel lines. Their shot were flying in range of my head. I dismounted, choosing a lower elevation. Looking back to where the Right section had stood, we saw the guns had been turned towards us, the rebel colors flying over them, and their lines forming away to their Left. Not far from us in front of their lines was a piece of rebel artillery, which the drivers had driven over a bluff, and which seemed to be thrown into a confused heap. I thought their condition was even worse than ours. Why we were not molested while in the ditch I do not know, but suppose with their success so far, they felt sure of our capture. They could easily have shot the horses, but so sure were they that we were fast, doubtless they preferred live horses to dead ones. It was death or capture to us if we remained, but with a final effort, the gun came out of its bed, and we lost no time in moving but a short distance up between the guns of the posted artillery, where we again went into action. [See p. 340 Serg't Wilson.] If any one wants to live a lifetime in

a few moments, he must be placed, as we were, between the fire of two contending armies!

Leaving my sergeant in charge of the gun, I rode to the rear in search of my left piece. Here was 'confusion worse confounded.' I found Phillips and Hyde with the men of the Battery dismayed but not discouraged. We could not do more than we had done. The rebels with their superior force and flushed with victory, had driven the forces of Porter to the river. Cavalry were stationed with drawn swords to prevent the panic stricken men and teams from blocking the bridge.

About sunset the Irish Brigade, with other troops, crossed the bridge to the support of the Fifth Corps, and night coming on the Corps was saved from a complete rout.

Never was night more welcome. I can never forget the scene as we viewed it that sultry afternoon.

I learned from Lt. Phillips that after I left him near the foot of the hill, the enemy had a flank fire on him from the woods vacated by our brigade. His horse was shot from under him and the horses of two pieces shot, and the guns had to be abandoned.

My left piece was lost. I gave my sergeant credit for saving my right piece in taking the course he did, had he followed me with Phillips, which was his duty to do, the fate of the gun and ourselves might have been far different. My right piece joining us, between us we had two guns left, and strange as it may seem we had not lost a man of the Centre or Left sections. The men did their duty manfully.

Lt. Hyde reported that the enemy came down through the peach orchard on his two guns, and he only had time to fire one round when he was overwhelmed. Corporal Milliken and Edward Gustine of New Bedford, were killed at their posts. Five men were taken prisoner, three of them badly wounded, the rest escaped, taking sponge staffs with them.

As we waited near the bridge at dark for a chance to cross the Chickahominy, we were a sorry set. We had fought our first battle, when would the next one be? Men had done their duty, and we did not feel that we were entirely responsible for our loss of guns, but the artilleryman's defence is his guns, and their loss is deeply felt.

Why we met with no loss in our first engagement at the first line of battle, was that no artillery in front was posted; the flanking fire we received from their batteries passed harmless over our heads, in fact the noise of our own was so heavy that we did not notice the shrieking noise they had caused in their flight through the woods. The brigade being below us the enemy's infantry fire was against them; the woods and the orchard protected us. If we had been in view as the enemy passed us beyond the orchard we would likely have been captured where we stood. The Fifth Corps lost 24 guns. One of Martin's guns was capsized, crossing the bridge, bottom up, and had to be abandoned. They also lost three of their caissons, the horses being killed. His 1st Lt. (Mortimer) was taken across the river wounded, and died the next day. Five thousand prisoners were taken by the enemy and nearly four thousand were killed and wounded on our side.

The rebel loss in killed exceeded ours.

Demoralization seemed to possess all, but it is remarkable how soon men recover from such scenes.

The Fifth Corps crossed the river during the night, the bridges were blown up and destroyed, and the enemy were left to count their spoils.

Dr. Gaines was kind enough to say that he would willingly give his whole farm as a burial place for Yankee soldiers.

On the morning of the 28th, (June, 1862,) the Battery took up its line of march with the 5th Corps, passing Savage's Station, where the fields around were covered with the wounded from the previous battle, and the corps of



surgeons were doing their best to relieve suffering humanity. It was a gruesome sight to us, and we felt thankful we were not numbered with them. The Battery moved on, not knowing where we were going. It was rumored that McClellan was making a 'masterly retreat' to the James River.

As the 5th Corps had been so roughly handled it was put on the advance, while the other Corps were left to bring up the rear with a victorious army soon in pursuit.

Passing through White Oak Swamp, the Corps moved as rapidly as the roads would permit, the way being lined with baggage teams, droves of cattle, and artillery; the enemy attacking our flank whenever they could get a chance. We saw no enemy near us in this movement, but often heard cannonading at different times at various points.

Camping one night in a large opening with the Corps, with teams in harness, we sought sleep on the ground. No lights were permitted. We eat our 'hard tack' but not much sleep did we get. The night was black, with heavy claps of thunder, and sharp flashes of lightning. The enemy were said to be near us. Some army mules stampeded; a mule flying through the Battery among the sleepers, a small panic ensued. Every one was on his feet, and a few shots were heard, but soon things quieted down and we tried to sleep again.

Nothing impeded our march, and the last day of June found the 5th Corps camped on Malvern Hill near the James River."

#### NOTES OF LIEUT. SCOTT.

FEB. 22, 1901.

"I had charge of the Left section that day, as Lieut. Dillingham was sick across the river. Lieut. Hyde's Right section was captured where it was placed in Battery.

I fired the first Gun of the Battery at Gaines Mills. On

the morning of the 27th I was ordered up to the woods with one Gun, and it was served the best we knew until ordered back to the Battery, by whom I do not know. I had no more than taken my place in the Battery, than Phillips and myself were ordered up with the two sections of the Battery. As I had been up on the line before, Phillips followed me, and went into position on my right. While here the rebels captured Hyde's two Guns, and when we were ordered to the rear Lieut. Phillips led, and I followed. As we came to Hyde's Guns, the rebels had them. Phillips passed quickly by and my right piece being in the rear left Phillips' line and passed to the left and was stuck in the mud. Here is where I went back to see what had become of it. As I took in the situation, with the enemy's line of battle so near, I then thought the lives of the men were of more importance than the Gun. As I could not see how we could remain there 5 minutes, I told Serg't. Spear to take the horses and abandon the Gun, and left to look after my left piece, which I never saw. It was a miracle or Interposition of Providence that any of us escaped."

#### LETTER OF CORPORAL SPEAR.

"HARRISON'S LANDING, JAMES RIVER,

16 MILES BELOW RICHMOND, VA.

Friday, July 4, 1862.

One week ago today the Right wing of Gen'l McClellan's Army before Richmond gave way at Mechanicsville before the Confederate Army, and came retreating down across Gaines Farm to the Chickahominy River.

Our Battery was ordered to the top of a high hill above a bridge to assist in covering the retreat of our Army. This hill was on the left of the Gaines house, near the river. The last to cross the bridge were two batteries of flying artillery, and after they had crossed, the bridge was torn

up, and we were ordered to 'Limber to the Rear' and retire. After retreating half a mile, we found our Division viz. Porter's, drawn up in line of battle in a dense wood, with a nice barricade in front of it, and everything in readiness to meet the Confederates' advance.

After passing through the woods, the order came 'Into Battery' and hold ourselves in readiness. We remained 'In Battery,' without firing a gun, until about 3 o'clock, when the rebels formed in line of battle and down they came upon us, both on our right and left. The second time they advanced the Left section was ordered into the woods, and we were soon in sight of the rebel line, and in a short time were throwing shot and shell amongst them.

Again the rebels were repulsed, for the second time, and we limbered up and went 'Into Battery' in our former position, but were not allowed to remain silent long, for in less than fifteen minutes they came down upon us with a double, aye, thrible force. Then the Centre section was ordered to move down into the woods; also, the left piece of the Left section, and all three pieces commenced firing shot and shell. The fight was general the length of our lines, and such a ring of artillery and musketry! Shall I ever forget it?

No: but it was no use, our troops gave way, and down came the Confederates upon our batteries. The 5th Mass. Battery was on the extreme left, and when our infantry line gave way in front of the three remaining pieces, we fired 2 rounds of double canister and were ordered to 'Limber to the Rear,' and save the Gun and ourselves if a possible thing, for the rebels were now only a few rods from us.

As the men of my Detachment were limbering up the gun, I could see the rebels advancing upon us with their little red flags to the front, and it was then that I put spurs to my horse and ordered the drivers on the Gun to do likewise and follow me. I took a quick glance over to my right where our artillery and infantry were fleeing, and I saw that

the road was completely clogged up, and that if I wished to save the piece and the men's lives I must go in some other direction. So I started across the field, but had not gone more than 3 rods, before we landed in a deep ditch, and then the Lieutenant came up and ordered us to leave our piece and cut traces, as it was impossible, he said, to attempt to try and pull the piece out from the ditch. But instead of cutting the traces we started the horses up, and they becoming so terrified and frightened, as quick as lightning pulled the piece out, and were soon directly in front of our artillery, which had re-formed, and were blazing away at the rebels as they came down upon our retreating Division.

On reaching the hill where the line of artillery was formed, under command of Gen'l Charles Griffin, we were ordered to open upon the Rebs., and after firing ten or twelve rounds the order came for us to 'Limber up' and retreat; this being the second time within fifteen minutes, or perhaps less. And such a retreat! Everything was confusion, no regularity. Men, artillery, infantry and cavalry, all mixed up!

After retreating about half a mile they formed in line of battle, and we came 'Into Battery' again, and fired a few rounds. Then reinforcements came up and completely routed the rebels, and drove them back from the ground which they had gained within the short space of one hour.

That night we crossed the Chickahominy River and encamped, and the next morning I found the remnant of the Battery, and when we came to sum up what was left, ascertained that all our pieces were lost except Serg't. Blake's and mine; that 4 men were killed, 4 or 5 wounded, and about 30 horses killed and disabled.

There were two Quincy Boys in the fight, besides myself, —W. H. H. Lapham and H. E. Shaw. They both came out all right. Lapham was acting cannoneer, and Shaw was driving the pole horses on the piece which were shot from under him."

## NOTES OF LIEUT. SPEAR

JULY 24, 1901.

"The greatest credit for the saving of the Gun of which I was acting Sergeant, should be given Corporal Warren, Charles Jay leading Driver, the Swing Driver, I forget his name, and Brownell the Pole Driver, all of whom thought only of their favorite gun and its safety.

When we commenced to retire with our Gun the Confederates were at the Right piece of the Battery,—Corporal Milliken's Gun,—and had planted one of their battle flags on it, and as we left our position we were obliged to pass parallel with the guns left, and for a short time were not five hundred feet from the rebel skirmishers advancing."

## NOTES BY SERGT. E. T. WILSON.

With relation to the gun which was pulled out of the ditch, Sergt. Edward T. Wilson, who was No. 6 on the Gun that day, says in a note dated New Bedford, Mass., September 8, 1900:—

"It was the right piece of the Left section. Billy Warren, a Boston boy, was the gunner. The drivers, all but the one on the swing horses, remained by them. L. D. Brownell was on the pole. Charles Jay had the lead horses, and upon him a great deal depended. His horses got a footing on the other side of the ditch, and although the swing and pole horses were pretty well mixed up in the ditch, we managed to pull the old gun out. It was during this mix-up that Lieut. Scott ordered us to leave the gun. In scrambling across, Brownell fractured a bone in his right leg, one of his horses was hit by a Minie ball, which maddened the animal, and at one time it looked as though we would have to quit. But Brownell pluckily stuck to his horses, and, reaching firm footing, we made for a battery

that was located on a hill just ahead of us. It proved to be the Fourth Rhode Island, and reaching the hill we placed the gun in position and again began firing at the enemy.

This was one of the two guns which were saved, and nearly every man who was in that detachment was from New Bedford. William Warren was not a New Bedford man, and one other I do not remember about, whether he was from New Bedford or not, or what his name was.

At Savage's Station Brownell was sent on a hospital train for surgical aid, and with others was captured and placed in Libby Prison."

#### NOTES OF FRANCIS P. WASHBURN.

Francis P. Washburn, a driver on No. 6 gun, Sergt. Harrison O. Simonds, the left piece of the Left section, every horse attached to which was killed, obliging the men to seek a place of safety with all possible speed, recalls in Notes written in New Bedford Mass. October 9, 1900, a remark of General Fitz John Porter in relation to the loss of the guns of the Fifth Mass. Battery.

Washburn was sick but on duty all through the Seven Days' Battles. A man was not sick in those days as long as he could sit in a saddle or stand on his feet. During the inspection that followed at Harrison's Landing he was sitting with the sick and wounded under a tarpaulin put up for shelter, and when General Porter came to them, he as well as the other officers dismounted before a group of officers and men,—“General Porter,” writes Washburn, “was a man among men,”—and, among other things, the General said—“If I could have sold all my guns at the price paid for those four, I would have been in Richmond tonight.”

A day or two later, Washburn was sent to the General Hospital at Harrison's Landing, and was subsequently put on board the hospital ship “S. R. Spaulding,” and taken to



the Episcopal Hospital in Philadelphia. Afterwards he returned to the Battery.

LETTER FROM SERG'T. PELEG W. BLAKE.

"JAMES RIVER July 4, 1862.

17 MILES BELOW RICHMOND.

I wrote three letters on the 26th, but could not send them, for we were ordered to Old Church. Our forces let the rebels cross the river 12,000 strong at Mechanicsville, and our troops fell back to Dr. Gaines's plantation, where we were encamped—our Right wing. Two-thirds of our army were across the Chickahominy. Porter's Division and McCall's 30,000 engaged 70,000 under the rebel general Jackson. The rebel general Jackson is said to have been shot.

I have been in my saddle for eight days and nights, only getting about two hours sleep at midnight. The battle commenced the 26th when we were ordered out. It was a strategic movement to fall back and join the main army across the river.

Our Battery guarded the bridge at Dr. Gaines's till the last thing crossed the stream, and that was the mounted artillery. The bridge was then destroyed and we limbered up, and crossed another stream, and then we had to hold our position; this being the 27th day of June. At 3 o'clock they attacked General Porter's Division, and General McCall's Division, 30,000 troops.

Three times we drove the rebels.

Every time the rebels came up they had fresh troops, every time filled with whiskey and gunpowder, drunken devils, but we mowed them down by the thousands. The fourth time they came up the whole force of the rebels, 70,000 strong against 30,000 of ours, was a hard struggle.

They turned our Left flank where our Battery was, and

our troops had to fall back, but we stayed a few minutes too late and lost four pieces, that were close to the woods, of our Battery, within 100 feet of the rebels. Our horses were shot down so we had to leave four of our pieces.

I came into Battery and fired three shots after the other pieces left, but my horses did not happen to be shot, and I was the only sergeant of our Battery who saved his piece that afternoon, but 2 o'clock at night Serg't. (Charles H.) Morgridge's piece in charge of Corporal Spear came up, so we had two pieces, out of six, left.

I lost two men of my Detachment, Edward F. Smith and Richard Heyes, Englishmen, who worked in the Wamsutta mills [in New Bedford] 'dresser tenders.'

[The following marked "Continued, 3d page" though found detached among Lieut. Blake's papers is presumed to be a continuation of the foregoing:—]

As I came down the hill the rebels had planted their flag on the hill and were firing down upon us. The whole six pieces started: one went one way and one another, and so did the whole six. I happened to see the right way, but four of them were run up to a deep ditch, and drove into the ditch, and only one escaped.

Serg't. Page who followed me had his horses shot and lost his piece.

As I came down the hill one of my swing horses stumbled, throwing my swing driver 20 end over end down the hill, but I could not stop for him to mount, so I left him, and kept right along on the dead run, driving, dragging his nigh horse up on to his feet, I got towards the bottom of the hill.

General Butterfield says, 'For God's sake come into Battery and fire on that rebel flag!'

I says to the General, 'My men have all left me but the Gunner.'—

That was Corporal E. B. Nye, the fruit dealer who used to be on Second street (New Bedford), he is my Gunner

and he makes the best shot of any of the gunners in the Battery.

When reinforcements came from across the river our forces drove them the fifth time way past our camping ground. The stream or ditch ten feet deep in front of the woods where we were,—about a hundred feet through these woods,—was filled with rebels who were killed, so that they did not have to build any bridge to come across on, but we fell back and crossed the Chickahominy towards the James and joined the main army on the Left. The next day we started for the James.”

#### NOTES OF LOUIS E. PATTISON.

Nov. 2, 1901.

“The Left section got across the run first, and the Centre and Right sections had to wait to cross, and the horses were shot in their tracks by the rebel infantry. The saving of the guns was simply accident, as every gun was limbered, but could not get over the run,—a dry water course 8 or 10 ft. deep and when they crossed filled up with rails.

Blake was all right, a brave and cautious man.”

#### FROM CHASE'S DIARY.

“June 27, 1862. Packed up all our equipage and prepared to leave about 2.30 a. m. Were soon ready and left our bivouac and proceeded to the brow of the hill just in the rear of the camp we left yesterday to cover the retreat of our forces. Placed our guns ‘In Battery’ and remained there till all the artillery had crossed the millstream and destroyed the bridge. Cannonading and musketry commenced again this morning at daylight. The enemy’s firing sounds nearer and nearer and their battery of 32 pdrs. throws several shots at us but made wild shots.

After the bridge was destroyed we limbered up and went

about half a mile farther to the rear and placed our guns 'In Battery' on the brow of a hill, and changed our position several times on the same ground.

The enemy gradually advanced and drove in our skirmishers and charged on our front at least three times and were repulsed.

The infantry felled the trees in front of us to prevent the advance of the enemy's artillery and cavalry. Our infantry met and repulsed the enemy in the woods in front of us.

Our batteries and guns from the forts of General Smith's Division shelled the enemy vigorously, and the enemy's shot and shell struck all around us; musket balls whizzing like bees over and round us, and a spent ball hit the writer's elbow—and brought home.—The Left section advanced and fired canister into the enemy when they made their second charge on our front.

About 6 p. m. the enemy again rallied, and attacked us on the front and left and an awful battle ensued. The infantry checked them for a while, and in the mean time the Left and Centre sections took a new position at the edge of the wood behind the infantry, and commenced firing shrapnell at the enemy with one second fuze, and at last the infantry in front of us began to yield to the enemy's murderous fire, and a general and most disorderly retreat commenced. We poured the shrapnell into the enemy until they were almost upon us, then limbered up and drove off.

The enemy closely followed up our retreating army, and kept up a most destructive fire, which made great havoc with our forces. Horses and guns were left, and the whole army was panic stricken.

Many of our horses were shot and four guns left on the field. The whole of the retreating army crossed the Chickahominy, and the fragments of the different regiments and batteries bivouacked near General McClellan's headquarters on the south side of the river. . . . All the caissons

were sent across the Chickahominy early in the afternoon, and were all saved.

June 28, 1862. Another false alarm in camp tonight caused by some loose horses running about camp. Bugles were blown and the infantry ordered in line to repulse the supposed guerillas. It proved only a 'scare' and soon all was again quiet.

A false alarm in camp this morning occasioned by the infantry firing their guns previous to cleaning them. Left camp about 12.30 p. m. with the *remains* of our Battery, and marched about eight miles towards the James River."

#### NOTES OF PRIVATE LOUIS E. PATTISON.

OCT. 1, 1901.

"At the battle of Gaines Mills the Battery was placed in position on a knoll, with General Daniel Butterfield's Penn. Reserves in the woods directly in front. To get to this position a bridge was made over a run, or dry water course, with a rail fence, only wide enough for one team to cross at a time, which as we were to fall back behind another line of battle on a hill in our rear, showed gross negligence either of our own officers or some one higher in command.

When the time came our Battery commenced firing, and very soon the Reserves commenced falling back through our guns, saying that we were shelling them, and they were followed up by the enemy, and as the enemy came out of the woods we gave them three or four rounds of canister, and then came orders—"Limber to the rear," and all the guns were limbered and getting out of position as fast as possible, but the enemy followed up so quickly that only two guns got over the run and were saved, the other four being captured, some, if not all, being spiked.

The right detachment under Sergt. Wm. B. Pattison had a hard time, nearly all the men being killed, wounded or captured. Lieut. Phillips had command of our section,

Mason W. Page was serg't. of our detachment, William H. Baxter gunner, and George O. Proctor, Louis E. Pattison and Amos Blanchard drivers on gun in the order named. The outcome of the loss of their guns was the resignations of Lieuts. Hyde and Dillingham, leaving only Lieuts. Phillips and Scott."

#### NOTES OF D. HENRY GROWS.

"Friday, June 27, 1862. Went on post at 2 this morning. At 3, an order came to pack up and fall back to a hill in the rear of our old camp. Arrived there at about half past 4, and went into battery, with orders that as soon as our flying artillery passed the bridge to tear it up and open on the rebels with shrapnell and canister. After waiting two hours the artillery passed. We then tore up the bridge and waited for the rebels, but they did not make their appearance. So we limbered up and fell back about  $1\frac{1}{2}$  miles, and went into battery. In about an hour the 'Secesh' opened on the Right, but were repulsed, in this way: they tried the Centre and Left, but could not break them. About 5 this afternoon they received fresh troops, and threw them on to the Left where we were stationed. For three times they tried us, and were driven back, but at the fourth time they turned our Left, and we opened upon them with canister, our troops falling back all the while. The last round we fired was at 35 yards, a double charge of canister. It mowed their ranks awfully. The order came to limber up and fall back. We did so, but they were close upon us. We lost four of our pieces and twenty-five horses. Three of our men were shot dead: Charles Barnard, Corporal Miliken, and E. F. Gustine. Seven others are either killed or taken prisoners. The bullets flew like hail. I kept up with the gun till I was knocked down by a rail into a deep ditch. I was helped out, and kept on my way looking for the caissons that were in the rear. I soon found them and



sat down to rest. Saw James Tuttle: he was safe. Harry Simonds lost his piece, and was struck with a piece of shell.

About 8 o'clock we crossed the Chickahominy, and laid ourselves down to sleep.

I received a letter from my wife today during the battle!

Saturday, June 28, 1862. Got up feeling very sore, had some water to drink. I was awfully dry. My face and hands are black with powder and sweat, and I have no chance to wash.

About 8 this morning we fell back about a mile, and there found two of our guns; the other four having been taken by the rebels. Most all the men are tired out. The buildings near by are used for hospitals, and are filled with the wounded. It is an awful sight. About noon we hitched up and fell back. At Savage's Station there were a great many cars loaded with the wounded who are being moved away. The roads are lined with sick and stragglers. Got into camp about 11 o'clock. Was routed out at 3 o'clock in the morning."

Reviewing this Diary in Charlestown, Mass., October 1, 1900, Grows added the following:—

"There is one thing I did not mention: It was how the gun I worked on at Gaines Mills was saved. A bullet struck the right wheel horse, while the gun was stuck in a rut, the pain caused the horse to jump to the right, and the driver struck the off horse, and the wheels of the limber were free. And so we got out of a bad place."

#### NOTES OF CHARLES D. BARNARD.

FEBRUARY 1, 1901.

"I was wounded at Gaines Mills, June 27, 1862. While trying to save the gun we held, we got into the woods. The Confederates had charged 3 times on us before they got the gun. When Corporal (Albert F.) Milliken sent up the last charge to the gun, he sent word to the gunner Corporal (Charles)

Macomber, that that was all the canister he had. Corporal Macomber told us that when we had fired he should give the order 'by hand to the rear,' as we only had one horse standing, he being the nigh pole horse, the other 5 horses were down, having been shot.

As soon as we had fired, the order was given:—

'By hand to the rear!'

We each sprang to our posts.

No. 1, between the Wheel and Gun.

No. 2, opposite, between the Wheel and Gun.

No. 3, grabbed the Wheel.

No. 4, the opposite Wheel.

The rest of the gunners ran to the trail.

No. 2, William H. Ray had a ball pass through him.

No. 3, was myself. The ball entered the right thigh coming out  $\frac{1}{2}$  inch from the spine. The force of the ball threw me over the trail into No. 4 man's place. I got up standing on one leg, and said to Corporal Macomber:—

'They have shot my right leg off, Charley!'

At that William Ray came running up with a sponge staff, and Corporal Macomber said:—

'Billy, you are wounded.'

Billy said no, but upon unbuttoning his jacket the blood began to show, and Billy says:—

'They can't have this sponge staff to use on us.'

This was the only sponge staff we had left. So he took it, and when he came to the ditch in going to the rear, he made 3 pieces of it and threw it into the ditch.

Then Corporal Macomber came to me, and I threw one arm over his neck and he tried to take me to the rear, and as we were trying to go to the rear he said to me:—

'Help yourself all you can, Charley, for there lays poor Corporal Milliken.'

We both looked down on him. The ball had struck him in the head, killing him instantly. There was no mark of

blood on him. Corporal Macomber and myself were the 2 last men of our Battery that ever saw Corporal Milliken.

We had not gone 50 feet from him when a ball struck me in my left foot and stopped under my knee, the force of the ball throwing me out of Corporal Macomber's arms to the ground. He bent over me and said:—'Charley, I am going to throw you over my shoulder.'

I said, 'No, Charley, there is only one of us to be killed, and I am that man. You run around the foot of the hill, under the protection of our heavy guns that are on the hill.'

'No,' he says, 'I am going to shoulder you.'—

I fainted away from the loss of blood, and he got to the Battery and reported me killed.

#### WITHIN THE ENEMY'S LINES.

The first sound I heard was,—

'Don't tread on that man!'

I looked over my shoulder, and saw coming towards me a solid line of Confederates, and as they came up to me they opened enough to pass me. Not a man touched me. In a short time the stragglers began to come back. I was choking, and as they came near me I begged for water. Some of them said they had no water; others took no notice of me; others cursed me. At last when I did not care what they did to me, a very tall Confederate came along, and said he had no water, but would give me some whiskey and water. He knelt down and passed me his canteen, and said 'Drink all you want.' A little seemed to quench my thirst. I told him I was a thousand times obliged to him, that was all I could do, but he said that was not all I could do, I could 'the first time I had a chance do the same thing.'

I shall never forget his words and have tried to do so. I lay where I fell the second time about 2 hours, then a Confederate officer and a Private came along. The officer said to me—'Come, get up!'

I said 'I can't. I am wounded in both legs.'—He said, 'You can't play any of your Yankee tricks on me. If you don't get up, I will cut you down.'

I told him if he would give me 2 sticks I would try to walk, but I put one arm on each of their shoulders, as the Private asked me to, and they carried me through the gap where we had repulsed them 3 times that they had charged on us, into the yard where there was a large house, and as we entered the yard there was a number of Confederates making coffee. They began to make fun of me and I answered them back. Then it was the Private who was helping me told me to take all that they might say, for I was a prisoner and it was better not to answer back.

I thanked him and afterwards found out that he was right. They laid me under a tree and a doctor came and put some cotton in my wound near my spine, and put a bandage round me. In a few minutes the bandage was up under my arms. He said he would come in the morning and take off my leg.

#### THE RED BLANKET.

I was cold, and asked a Confederate if he had a blanket he would lend me. He said 'yes,' if I would give it to him the next morning. I told him I would, so he lent me one. Next a man came along and wanted to know who wanted water. I did, and had found a canteen, and he took it, filled it, and brought it back to me. I then dropped off to sleep, and in the morning when I awoke I saw that I had a red blanket. I looked it over, and found the name of Serg't. William B. Pattison sewed on it! When the Confederate called for his blanket, I told him that it was one of my Serg't's blankets. He said,—'You promised to give it to me this morning.'

I told him that I should do as I told him I would, and he took it, and I don't know as I ever saw him again. They

gave us that morning for breakfast boiled rice, and it did taste good. About 8 or 9 in the morning, an old man with long, white hair came and sat down and commenced to talk with me. He asked me where I was wounded, and I told him. He asked me how my leg felt, and I told him it felt 'queer.' I could not move my foot, and it felt like a foot that was 'asleep'; kind of prickly. He then told me he was a doctor, and asked me what I was going to do. I told him I had asked the doctor to take it off for me, but he advised me not to have it taken off, and asked me if I wanted to go home. I said yes, as I was no good to the army now. 'Then,' he said, 'tell them when they come after you that you have concluded not to have it done, and they won't take it off. It is better than a wooden leg, and if they take it off, they have got to unjoint it at the hip, as it will do no good to take it off below the wound.'

He then said that the ball had cut the leaders to my foot, which caused the foot to drop, and had injured the sciatic nerve, which caused paralysis, and that it would always trouble me, that many times I would be hurrying along and would stub my toe, as the foot had dropped and caused me to fall. This I have done a great many times. He said,— 'You may think it strange for me to give you advice, but if you ever want to go home don't have your leg taken off, for there is only one chance in a thousand of your living.'

I took his advice, and his words have proved true in regard to my leg.

#### THE DEATH OF PRIVATE GUSTINE.

Soon after he left me, one of our own surgeons came along and said to me:—

'One of your boys is over there.'

'What is his name?' I asked. He said he did not know but would go and see. He came back and said his name was Gustine. I raised myself up on my elbow and asked Gustine

how he was wounded. 'O, Charley. I am wounded through my left lung. I can't stand it a great while.'

'Don't give up so,' I said, but he answered:—'O, Charley, I'm a goner. I can't talk any longer.' He laid down and I never saw him again to talk with him. The next day I saw 2 men carrying an artilleryman into the next field to bury him. I think it was—poor Gustine.

### TALKING IT OVER.

That day a Confederate came and sat down by me and said:—

'Well, Yank, what do you think of the war?'

'Well,' I said. 'Did you start it?'

'No.'

'Neither did I. Can you stop it?'

'No.'

'Neither can I. You won't agree with me?'

'No.'

'Neither will I with you. Now we are good friends, what is the use of our arguing the question? Neither you nor I can stop it.'

'You're right,' he said, and from that time out, as long as he was there, he would come every day and ask me to lend him my pipe. He kept me in tobacco as long as he was there. I was then moved into the cellar of the house, and put into a little room with 2 others. One man's name was Smith. He belonged to a New York regiment. He was terribly wounded, and kept calling for his wife and children all the time. They came after him to take off his legs a number of times, and he would keep putting them off, saying, 'Let me lay a little longer, please, I am so comfortable.' At last two attendants came in and said 'The Doctor says bring you, dead or alive.'

'Well, please give me a drink of water.'

They gave him water, he drank a little, and then for the



first time in my life I heard the death rattle. They carried him out.

#### HANDY WITH HIS NEEDLE.

I lay in that cellar 3 days. Then they took me out, and laid me under a tree on the other side of the house, where I heard 2 Confederates talking about the poor fellows who had legs and arms taken off, how they suffered pain and had nothing to rest the stumps on. I called them and told them if they would bring me some old bags so I could cut them up into smaller ones, or some cloth, so I could make some small bags out of that, they could stuff them with grass, and they could lay their stumps on them and it would ease the pain. They did, and I made a number of them. I made the bags for Confederates as well as Union men. I, being a harness maker, was handy with my needle, and I always carry my thimble in my pocket, even today. I still have my needle-book that I carried with me in my jacket pocket.

I enlisted as an artificer, and when we were in Washington, encamped on Capitol Hill, the paymaster came and said that the Government only allowed 2 artificers, a blacksmith and a harness-maker, and as I was the second one to enlist as a harness-maker, I could take my discharge and go home. But I preferred to stay, so asked Serg't. (O. B.) Smith if I could have No. 3 man's place on the gun, which he gave me.

I was the first man wounded in the Battery, and the first badly wounded man to return to New Bedford.

#### TO RETURN TO THE PRISON YARD.

Next a very tall Confederate came to me, and said:—  
'Yank, where did you enlist?'

I told him I enlisted in New Bedford, but I was a Nantucket boy.

'New Bedford? Why, I used to be a coaster, and I have been there.'

He then told me all about that city, and how pretty it looked at night all lit up, as you come up the river. Every day, as long as I was there at Gaines Farm, he would come along and put something under my blanket and say, 'Don't touch that till after I am away.' I would find either crackers, or a piece of 'salt horse' as we used to call corned beef.

### THE NO. 1 GUN.

There was on the day of the Malvern Hill fight, a little boy came and said to me,—'You ones will be taken back before long, for you ones are driving our men. What gun was that that held the gap in the woods?'

I told him it was No. 1 gun of the Fifth Mass. Battery. I asked him how they got by that gun, and these are exactly his words:—

'General Jackson rode up and asked the general in command "Why don't you go on?" The general answered "I can't. I have got a piece of artillery I can't pass. I have charged three times on it, and have been repulsed each time."

Jackson told him to 'Charge, Halt, Fire, and then *Charge in your smoke!*'

By charging before the smoke rolled away their advance was unobserved, and that is how No. 1 gun was lost.

### THE CORN-POPPER.

'How is it?' asked the little boy, 'You ones kill our men and we only wound yours. You ones did not play it on we uns did you? You ones left a trap for us, but we did not touch it. What did you do with it? You ones came and took it away.'

It seems that it was what we boys used to call the 'Corn-

popper,' a gun that you put the cartridges into a hopper, and by turning a crank the cartridges would fall into the barrel of a rifle attached to it, and did good work. They thought it a trick we were playing on them, and did not dare go near it, and our men came and recovered it.

### A CONSULTATION.

While the boy and myself were talking, a number of officers rode into the yard and stopped a little way from where I lay and held a consultation. I should think they talked a half an hour or so, then they galloped off, some in one direction, some in another. In a little while from that they turned our men and won the day.

A soldier from a Maine regiment lay near me, and every morning he would ask me to lend him my testament which I did. One morning after he passed back my testament, some 'Johnnies' came along and began to plague him. He commenced to swear, and called them everything he could think of, and when he got them as mad as they could be, they threatened to kill him and he laid back and commenced to sing. Well, he was one of the best singers I ever heard, and after that they would come every day and stir him up, and it always ended in his singing.

### TO SAVAGE'S STATION.

We were put into army wagons and sent to Savage's Station where an officer came and asked what our names were. After that we were put on flats—such as we send wood into Boston on—and sent to Richmond. When the cars stopped, 2 Confederates came to the car where I lay, and asked me if I had anything to eat. I told them I had 2 hard tacks and that was all. They begged me to give them to them. I told them I would if I thought I could get anything to eat in the city. They said 'They will feed you ones when they won't feed us.' They said 'O, we are so hungry!'—

I told them I would give them one and keep the other for myself. When I opened my havresack I found I had 3 hard tacks, so I gave each one of them. They were mouldy, and wet, as it had rained hard all day, but you should have seen them eat, and then they begged for the other one. I told them I had done the square thing by them and wanted the other for myself. They said they knew it but they were so hungry. They did not take the one I had left, but thanked me for what I had given them. Soon 2 Confederates put me on a litter and carried me into the depot, laying me down on the narrow platform near the engine. When they had lain me down I found they had left my havresack and asked them to get it for me, offering them a ring I had on my finger if they would bring it to me, as I had my mother's and sister's pictures, and some few things I wanted to save. They went, and soon returned with it, and wanted to see the pictures. I showed them and then took off the ring and offered it to them. They were looking at the pictures, and when I offered them the ring they said, 'What do you take us for? Put the ring on your finger again.'

Soon a little boy came to me, about 12 years old, and said,—

'Soldier, what can I do for you?'

I had just had another hemorrhage and asked him to get me some cotton to stop it. He did, and then found me a small dry twig for me to keep the flies off. He then got me a fresh canteen of water. After that, every morning he would come and get me a fresh canteen of water. One morning he came and put his hand under my blanket and said 'Don't touch it till I am gone. It is something Mother sent, and there she is on the back of that car.'

I looked, and all I could do was to bow to her. After he had gone, I found a nice, clean, white crash towel, and while I was looking at it, an officer came up and wanted to know where I got that. I told him some one dropped it and I picked it up. He took it from me and when the boy came

again I told him, and he said, 'Some one told on Mother, yesterday, and she liked to got caught.'

The last morning he came he left something under my blanket and said 'Mother sent you that.' He said all the badly wounded were to be sent north, and the slightly wounded were to be sent to Belle Isle, and true enough about the middle of the forenoon they commenced to load up.

I heard an officer say 'Well, that's all.' I began to holler and the officer got mad, and told two men to 'take the fool and lug him off.'

They put me in an open wagon with springs under it. I made the 6th one. When the team got to the outskirts of the city, the driver turned round and said—'I am a Union man. I have got 2 boys down to the steamer looking out for good places for you.' He told us that they came after him to take us to the steamer, and he told them he would not take a Yankee in his wagon. He said they paid him \$10 a piece in Confederate money, to take us to the steamer.—'But,' he said, 'I would have taken all I could carry for nothing, only I dare not say so.'

On our way we went through a Confederate camp, and there was a bread cart standing near some tents. The teamster stopped his team and said he was going to buy some bread for us. While he was gone, an officer rode up and wanted to know where the driver was. I told him he was buying bread. He asked 'Are you hungry?'—I said 'No, my friend,' and he swore and said 'I am no friend to you.' He followed us almost to the boat. The driver gave us each a loaf of bread, and said the officer was watching him. He had a ten dollar U. S. bill and said he would give that for a picture of A. Lincoln, if either of us had one, but none of us had one. We finally reached the steamer, and as we got where we could see it and 'Old Glory,' what a shout went up! I could not keep back the tears, and great, stout men cried like babies to see the dear old flag again. One who

never was deprived of the sight cannot realize how good it is! The joy was beyond describing.

Well, true enough 2 stout young men came running up and said, 'Father, we have got some nice places for your men.' I was the last one to be taken out of the wagon, and I was placed in the gangway of the steamer. A man came in and sang out,—'Are there any Massachusetts men here?' I hollered out 'Yes, come here.'

He came and asked my name and put it in a little book. I asked him if he knew W. W. Caswell of the Fifth Mass. Battery. He said 'Yes.' I said 'Tell him that Charley Barnard is badly wounded, bound north.' He went to one of the streets of the Battery and hollered out:—'Does any one know Charley Barnard?' Ephraim B. Nye was writing a letter at that time to his wife. He stepped out of his tent and said,—'Yes, I know him.' He then gave him my message, and he wrote it to his wife, and that was the first that any one knew that I was living.

I was taken to Baltimore, put in the Hospital, No. 80 Camden St. One day a gentleman came in and looked at the card over my head and says—'From New Bedford?'—'Yes, sir.' 'Well,' he says, 'So am I, my name is Rodman (Edmund Rodman) and I am going back in a few days.'

Then I asked him if he would go and see my mother and tell her just how he found me. Some one had told her that I had had a large piece of my hip taken off, and they only took out about three inches. She was worrying about me. He went to see my mother and told her, and I never shall forget his kindness."

### THE FIELD REVISITED.

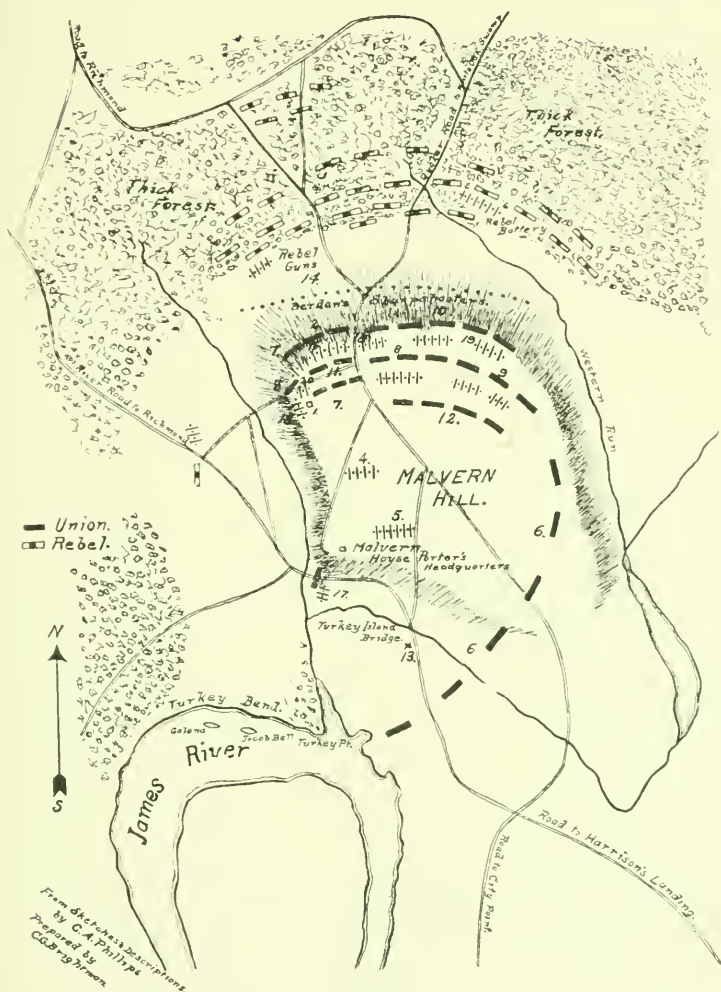
In letters dated South Boston, September 24th and October 3, 1900, Corporal Thomas E. Chase thus refers to a recent visit to this battlefield:—

"I have just returned from Richmond, Va. and the old



battle ground of the seven days' fights. I could not make it seem possible, as I watched the farmer tilling the battle-fields, that the last time I was there all was the roar of artillery and the rattle of musketry. Strange thoughts came to me as I strolled over that quiet square mile of peace,—Gaines Mills,—with only seven people in sight, as I pointed out to wife and daughter where sixty-five thousand Confederates fought fifteen thousand of our men that sultry afternoon of June 27th, 1862, for Nature is doing her best to hide the scars and lines of battle, but I had no trouble finding our positions."

# MALVERN HILL.



1. Dr. J. H. Mallert's house, Headquarters of Gen. Morell. 2. Morell's and Griffin's position. 3. Sykes' position. 4. Hunt's Reserve Art. 5. Colonel Tyler's siege guns. 6. General Franklin's Command. 7. Gen. Porter's Command. 8-9 Heintzelman's & Keyes' Commands. 10. Couch's Command. 11. Gen. Martindale's Command. 12. Sumner's Command in Reserve. 13. Place where Gen. Morell's Command bivouacked June 30, 1862. 14. Wheat fields. 15-16. Kingsbury's & Ames's batteries. 17. Mortin's. 18. Weedon's 1<sup>st</sup> position, 19 Weedon's 2<sup>nd</sup> position, also Kingsbury's. 20. Fifth Mass.



## CHAPTER XI.

### THE BATTLE OF MALVERN HILL.

JULY 1, 1862.

"Forget not our wounded companions who stood  
In the days of distress by our side;  
While the moss of the valley grew rich with their blood,  
They stirred not, but conquered and died."

—*Thomas Moore.*

It now became the duty of the Fifth Corps to guard the roads leading from Richmond toward the White Oak Swamp, over which they had passed on June 28, 1862, and on the next day to proceed to Turkey Bend on the James River, cover the Charles City road to Richmond, and open communication with the gunboats on the James.

Porter's orders were to move by the direct road to Malvern Hill, an elevated plateau a mile and a half long and about three quarters of a mile broad, free from any growth of timber. Towards the north and east it sloped gently till it reached a thick forest. On the west was a deep ravine running down to the James River. Along the front the land is uneven, making the hill difficult to approach except by roads built across the low places. Porter was to select and hold this position, continuing the line to the right. Time was lost by the guide mistaking the road, and the 1st Division did not reach James River until 10 a. m. of the 30th. The Divisions of Morell and Sykes were given the Left of the position, with Colonel Henry J. Hunt's Artillery Reserve and Colonel Robert O. Tyler's siege guns on Malvern Hill; Porter's command holding the Left and Left

Centre of our forces upon which the enemy made a most determined attack. This was successfully resisted by the infantry, which the superior position and strength of the artillery placed so as to sweep all the approaches, and, to some minds, the proximity of the gunboats, made invincible.

Brig. Gen. William F. Barry, in his account of the operations of the Artillery of the Army of the Potomac, from July 25th, 1861, to August 29, 1862, dated September 1, 1862, says:—

“For the artillery of the Army of the Potomac, it is but simple justice to claim that in contributing its aid to the other two arms, as far as lay in its power, it did its whole duty faithfully and intelligently, and that on more than one occasion, the Battle of Malvern Hill particularly, it confessedly saved the Army from serious disaster.”

If the “lay of the land” had been more in his favor McClellan might have here shown the advantage of the co-operation of the water with the land forces, as first suggested by him, and which he endeavored to demonstrate as soon as it was in his power.

Some time previous to this battle, he had consulted with Commodore John Rodgers, and it was supposed that he knew what position could be taken on the river, for conveniently opening fire upon the flank of the enemy attacking our forces at Malvern Hill.

General William B. Franklin held the Right resting on the James River, General Fitz John Porter the extreme Left: General E. D. Keyes and General S. P. Heintzelman the Centre, and General E. V. Sumner's Corps was in reserve.

The Right was to be supported by the gunboats “Galena” and “Jacob Bell,” the duty of whose 100-pounders it was to sweep the woods and prevent the advance of rebel reinforcements. But it has been confidently asserted that the co-operation of the gunboats at this point was of doubtful utility on account of the height of Malvern Hill, which obstructed the view of the troops from the river; in other

words the Hill was in the way. And yet, it would be hardly fair, perhaps, to say that the gunboats were of no advantage, especially as the victory was ours and nobody was to be blamed.

Grows' "Journal": "Sunday, June 29, 1862. Packed up, and at 4 were on our way: went about 3 miles and stopped, on account of some trouble ahead. It is very hot. In about a couple of hours we got under way and went a short distance, when we stopped and rested till 4 o'clock this afternoon when we began the march again, and arrived in camp about 7, put up tents and turned in.

Monday June 30, 1862. Broke camp about 4 this morning and started to go ten miles to City Point on the James River, but did not go more than three, when we went into park on a place called Turkey Island, put up our tents in the edge of the woods and laid down. I am very hungry, for I have not tasted meat for a number of days.

I soon fell asleep and awoke to find that we were on the move again to get out of the way, as a battle was going to be fought. We moved about one mile. After getting there we rested a little. In a very short time the fight began, and never did I hear such noise!—the cannonading was awful. In about an hour the firing on the rebel side ceased."

General McClellan stayed with the Fifth Corps all night on the 30th and inspected the line at 8.30 next morning.

#### REPORT OF GEN. GEORGE W. MORELL.

General Morell's Report dated Harrison's Bar, Va., July 21, 1862, has the following:—

"At daylight on the 30th June, 1862, Monday, I started for Turkey Bridge and James River via the Quaker road and Malvern Hill, and bivouacked about 10 a. m. on the bank of the river below the bridge, but was soon recalled to Malvern Hill, as the enemy was approaching. . . . On the



west edge of the field, not far from the Richmond road, and overlooking the field and valley, is a large white house, Dr. J. H. Mellert's, which was my headquarters. My Division occupied the extreme left of the line, and in this field bore its part in the battle of Malvern."

General Charles Griffin was charged by General Fitz John Porter with a general supervision of the artillery line, in addition to the command of his brigade; Captain William B. Weeden retaining the immediate command of the artillery attached to the Division. In his report General Griffin, after designating the artillery engaged, says:—"The batteries were excellently served. The greatest coolness and bravery were displayed by officers and men, and my only regret, is my inability to mention the officers by name."

General Morell, in his acknowledgments for his indebtedness to certain officers, includes Captain Weeden whom he says "besides performing his peculiar duties, joined me whenever he could do so, and acted as one of my staff."

#### A RECENT COMPLIMENT.

In a letter dated Providence, R. I. September 19, 1899, Captain William B. Weeden says:—

"A section of the Fifth Mass. Battery under Lieut. Phillips, was posted next Battery C., R. I. then under my immediate command, in the heaviest shock of the battle of Malvern Hill. It did excellent service, both command and men."

#### REPORT OF GEN. JOHN H. MARTINDALE.

General John H. Martindale in his official account of the battle, after referring to the retirement of the rear guard of the day before, which left Porter's Corps and Couch's Division to cover the front, describes the conflict as "an affair of artillery," and proceeds to say,—“None of Porter's Corps had yet engaged the infantry. Couch, however, was

pressed severely on the right, but held his ground. I had encountered artillery before, but now it opened as I had never yet seen it. It was obvious that the whole Army of the Potomac was resting there for safety on the steadiness of the portion of it which was then confronting the enemy. I went along the line of my regiments, and told them my dispositions for battle, and reminded them that a retreat would be annihilation. It would be better to face the enemy to the last, than to retire,—that there was no Washington to fall back on as at Bull Run, no Chickahominy to cross as at Gaines Mills. We must be victorious or perish!"

FROM THE REPORT OF BRIG. GEN. DARIUS N.  
COUCH.

HARRISON'S LANDING, VA.

July 5, 1862.

"At 9 o'clock [July 1, 1862] Berdan's sharpshooters were driven in. The rebels were driven off by artillery alone. From this time until about 1 p. m. the contest was on both sides in the hands of the artillerists; then they pushed forward a column to carry the Left of the line held by Griffin. They were driven back disorganized and cut up by our artillery alone. Their batteries played upon us without intermission, but owing to the care used in masking the men, our loss from it was not serious, with the exception of a battery to the right, that enfiladed my position. . . .

At about 4.30 p. m., after an incessant cannonade, they boldly pushed forward a large column from their Right in the open field to carry Griffin's position. The fire of three batteries was concentrated upon them. Kingsbury's [Battery D, 5th U. S.] battery having been withdrawn for ammunition, was relieved by three guns of Battery C, Rhode Island Artillery and two guns,—Allen's Fifth Massachusetts,—under Captain Weeden. The attacking column kept

on, continually reinforced until within range of Griffin's Rifles, when it was stopped and formed line.

From this time until 8 p. m. there was enacted one of the sublimest sights ever presented in war, resulting in a glorious victory to our arms."

The action now became general and General Couch assumed command of the entire line for the time, ordering up the reserves etc. etc.

"Night closed in upon us," he continues, "still fighting; the opposing forces only known by their lines of fire, that of the rebels gradually slackening until 8.30 p. m., after which an occasional cannon shot from our batteries only broke the stillness that pervaded this bloody field.

Thus ended the battle of Malvern Hill, which caused great carnage and demoralization among the best divisions of the enemy, with comparatively small losses on our side. . . . Having received orders from General McClellan to fall back, my troops were gradually withdrawn from the field. Captain Benson [Captain Henry Benson Battery M, 2d U. S.] who had relieved the Massachusetts and Rhode Island batteries after dark, left one section of his artillery. . . . Both armies retreated, the one because it was beaten, the other because it was a part of the plans of our general."

Powell's History says of Allen's [Fifth Mass.] and Weeden's [Fourth R. I.] Batteries:—"About 4 p. m. July 1st, [the hour at which the assault on Morell's lines was expected, information to that effect having reached Porter's Head Quarters,] the Fourth R. I. Battery [Weeden's] commanded by Lt. Richard Waterman, was withdrawn from the left, and later on, in connection with Lt. [John B.] Hyde's section of Allen's Battery, relieved Kingsbury's [Battery D, 5th U. S.] Battery, on General D. N. Couch's left, and rendered admirable service, having a whole company of experienced gunners to man his three guns."

At 4.30, McClellan came upon the field again to consult with Porter at his Head Quarters, the Malvern house. At

9 p. m. the battle was over and McClellan had a consultation with Commodore Rodgers in relation to the movement to Harrison's Landing which was then decided upon. So very pleased was he with the outcome of this encounter, that he closed his official report with the following words:—

"My mind cannot coin expressions of thanks and admiration warm enough or intense enough, to do justice to my feelings towards the Army I am so proud to command.

To my countrymen I confidently commit them, convinced they will ever honor every brave man who served during those seven historic days with the army of the Potomac. . . . I will simply call attention to the invaluable services rendered by the artillery, and say that its performances have fully justified my anticipations, and prove it to be our policy to cherish and increase that arm of the service."

#### FROM "RHODE ISLAND IN THE REBELLION."

"The battle began at 3 o'clock p. m. by a heavy musketry fire from the rebels upon our centre, and soon a general engagement ensued. Our line was in the form of a semi-circle. For several hours the conflict raged with unmitigated fury. Here, as at Gaines Mills, Porter's Corps did some splendid fighting. . . . At half-past eight o'clock in the morning the three remaining guns of Battery C, (Weeden's) with a section of Allen's Massachusetts Battery, all under the command of Captain Weeden, moved to the hills and proceeded off to the Left of the line to protect the left flank. The Battery (Weeden's) with Allen's section, was stationed on the brow of a hill, and commanded a plain below. A sharp look-out was kept along the edge of the woods beyond the plain, to see that no rebels came out, and if they did, to give them a becoming reception. Shot and shell from the rebel batteries on our right were constantly flying over our heads, but we had, for the moment, less to fear from them than from some of our own guns on the extreme Left of the line, which were obscured from our view by woods, and were shooting over our heads. Some

of their shells were fired at too short range, and a 32-pounder shell burst close by one of our pieces, instantly disabling six of its men, and fatally wounding Lieut. Waterman's horse and that of Serg't Hunt. It was little less than miraculous that their riders escaped. Two of the men were instantly killed, and four wounded, one severely.

The explosion was stunning. Shells were coming from Right, Rear, and Left, and our position being too hot we were ordered to retire: and, moving farther to the right, very soon relieved Griffin's Battery, which had expended all its ammunition. After getting in battery, firing was commenced, dropping shells in various directions in the woods in front of us. A rebel battery somewhere in front of us, responded to our civilities, and sent us specimens of their ordnance stores, but as most of them overreached, no injury was done.

In a short time a rebel regiment was seen coming down a road to our left and front and deploying into the field as skirmishers. Attention was also arrested by a rebel battery, just in the edge of the woods in the rear of the regiment, whose position could be discerned only by the smoke of its discharge. A few well directed missiles put a stop to impertinences, and firing from that quarter soon ceased. Most of its shots overreached and did comparatively little damage. One was made, however, which told on our ranks. A shrapnell burst splendidly,—for so are death missives often viewed on the battle field,—and one of the fragments struck Corporal William B. Thompson in the thigh, making a mortal wound. Another man, working the guns, was struck in the arm by a piece of the same shell, and died in twenty minutes. The rebel infantry came within 300 yards of our Battery, but we could not poke canister at them from fear of wounding our own men in front, so we gave them shrapnell, shells filled with sixty bullets and nearly as destructive, which were fired over the heads of the infantry.

The batteries, in their several positions, mowed down the

rebels with terrible certainty, as did our infantry along the entire line, but life seemed of no consequence to their officers, and relying on their superior numbers they filled every breach made in their ranks with fresh men, maddened and made reckless by whiskey and gunpowder.

Though they numbered three to our one it was in vain that they rushed upon our men. It was only to meet certain death and final repulse.

Our men stood up bravely to the work, as they did six days before, and when they saw the rebel infantry deploying, cheered and waved their hats; crying 'Give it to them!' 'Give it to them!' and it was done. . . .

About half past seven o'clock we were relieved, and returned to the camp we left in the morning. Late in the night the Battery proceeded on its way to Harrison's Landing where it arrived at 4 o'clock a. m., very much exhausted.

At midnight terminated a week of battles, the enemy driven back, and the Federal army holding the field. The Federals captured twenty-nine cannon and lost twenty-eight."

## THE SEVEN DAYS BATTLES.

### REPORT OF LIEUT. JOHN B. HYDE.

"I was ordered by Captain Weeden to take my remaining pieces, with his Battery, to the front and on the brow of a hill about 2000 yards from the enemy who were in the edge of the woods, with artillery and infantry. We began to shell them, and after about half an hour, in connection with other batteries, silenced the enemy, and was then ordered with Weeden's Battery to take position in the field on the opposite side of the road, and again began firing in the direction of the enemy. This was kept up till dark, when we were relieved and returned to camp.



Amount of ammunition expended, 300 rounds.

Robert King wounded in breast.

Jacob Peacock wounded in the leg.

Three horses shot.

During the engagement all the men behaved remarkably well.

All of which is respectfully submitted

JOHN B. HYDE *Lieut.*

Commanding Battery."

#### FROM PHILLIPS' DIARY AND LETTERS.

"Monday, June 30, 1862. Marched at 3 a. m. to the James River and camped at noon on Turkey Island near Malvern Hill.

The whole army is coming this way.

About noon as we passed through a wheat field, the wheat was stacked all over the field, and we took advantage of this to secure some feed for our hungry and tired horses. Sending our cannoneers over the fence the wheat travelled in a very short period on to our caissons, while the owners looked from their windows, rather startled at this demonstration of the Army of the Potomac. I am happy to say I saw no guard over the property. The next field was an immense corn field, the corn already four feet high. Intermixed with the corn were most delicious blackberries, which tasted sweetly after a diet of hard bread and water. Arrived at the farther limit of this field we stopped and rested awhile; our men pulling up the corn to fodder their horses. On Tuesday night [July 1st, after the battle of Malvern Hill] I could not see a blade of corn in the whole field. Close by us was a large cherry tree, but this was soon stripped. Some of our men brought me some cherries from a tree by the house close by, black, dead ripe, and delicious. After a short delay we marched on down the hill and came into park

in a very pleasant corn field, where we supposed we should stop all night, but late in the afternoon we moved back on to the hill again near our former position, but the appearance of things had changed. What we left a large green corn field was now an immense dry plain, all bristling with arms, and surrounded with batteries of artillery. Away beyond the wheat field we could hear the roar of artillery, and the rattling of musketry and everything looked like a grand fight the next day. At one time the enemy appeared in our vicinity, making a small attack on our left and got a terrible thrashing.

They dragged a few guns into position and opened on us, when, as the poet says, they were answered from the hill, and with a vengeance too. Probably nobody was ever in a hotter place,—on earth at least,—than the rebels were for the next 20 minutes. Siege guns, Parrotts, and everything else poured into them a tremendous fire, while the gunboat shells burst amongst them. The next day Captain Martin brought in two of their guns all covered with blood, while the dead horses and broken caissons showed the effects of our fire. Gradually as darkness settled upon the earth all became quiet, and we went to bed with great anticipations of the morrow.

#### THE BATTLE OF MALVERN HILL.

The sun was well up Tuesday July 1, 1862, before the reveille roused us to our day's work.

During the forenoon all was still and quiet, but we knew that the stillness might at any time be broken by the rattling of musketry and the roar of cannon. So we breakfasted on hard bread and waited for events.

Soon came the order to hitch up, and we started out toward the wheat field.

At noon they made their first attack, our artillery being arranged as follows:—

On the Right Griffin's Battery, Lt. Kingsbury com'd'g: six 10 pdr. Parrotts, 3 inch calibre;

Next on the Left:—(Adelbert) Ames's Battery [Battery A, 5th U. S.] of six Light 12 pdrs. smooth bore, otherwise called the Napoleon Gun;

Next:—5th Mass. Battery 2 pieces;

Next:—Captain Weeden's remaining 3 guns,—3 inch Rifled Guns.

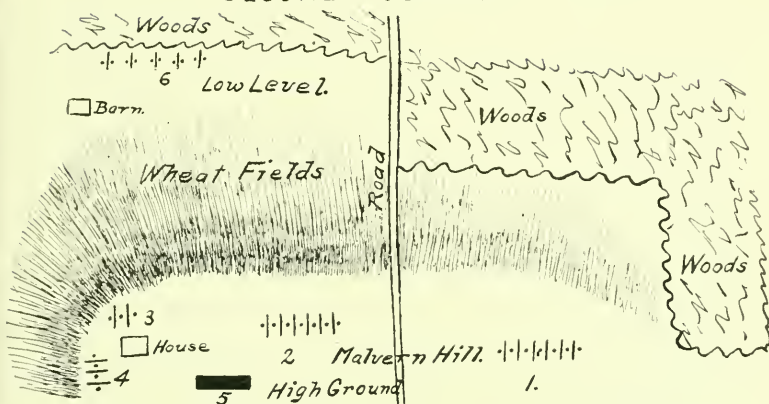
On the right of Kingsbury, and hidden by a piece of woods, were some other batteries.

Our two pieces were formed into one section and placed under me, Lt. Hyde taking command of the whole battery. Dillingham took charge of the caissons, and Scott was placed in command of the Battery wagons and forges belonging to Griffin's, Weeden's and Allen's Batteries.

Martin's Battery had been detached and sent to the left, and I saw nothing of it during the day. Well, we started out, and first came into line behind Martindale's brigade which was sheltered behind a little wood. Close by us was the Mass. 22d, which had suffered terribly on Friday [Gaines Mills]. Of course they were rather down-hearted, and the officers tried to keep up their spirits by singing &c. It was rather affecting to hear this regiment, cut down by disease and bullets to a mere fraction of its original numbers, strike up the John Brown song, and proclaim their determination to hang Jeff Davis on a sour apple tree, as sturdily as they did when their ranks were full. After waiting here a short time we, together with the brigade, moved a short distance to the left, and rested alongside of Weeden's Battery, Kingsbury having come into battery on the right; the brigade resting in front of us in column of Division lying on the ground. Here we waited and dined on hard bread and coffee, and shortly afterwards moved to the left and came into battery.

In front of us was the large level field about 1700 yards across. On the opposite side was a ridge, behind which the

## SECOND POSITION.



1. Kingsbury's 2. Ames 3 Fifth Mass. 4 Weedon's, pointing across the River. 5 Martindale. 6. Rebel Guns.



rebels placed their guns out of our sight, and blazed away, now from one place and now from another. In the woods beyond was an indefinite number of rebels. On our left the ground sloped rapidly down to a low level meadow bounded by woods. We were charged with the duty of protecting our Left from any flank movement.

No infantry was in sight; theirs being hidden in the woods, and ours being hidden behind the hill in rear of our guns.

Suddenly out the rebels poured from the woods in front of Kingsbury, and down the road, their red flags flying, and charged across the field.

Our infantry rushed out to meet them, and back they went with diminished numbers.

An intervening hill prevented us from participating; we could see them only for a few minutes.

Soon afterwards we were ordered to the right, and having to cross under a heavy fire of shrapnell, the enemy shooting very well, we had two men wounded by fragments of shell: Robert King in the shoulder, and Jacob Peacock in the leg.

While waiting for a few minutes to change our limbers, I had an excellent opportunity to dodge. A shrapnell burst right in front of me; the fragments striking the ground about 20 feet off. One piece about an inch square ricocheted, and came in the most spiteful way straight for my shoulder, but, by a most graceful right oblique, I got out of the way. About this time I missed Lt. Hyde, who was looking after the caissons, I presume, and so I took command and marched the guns at full gallop to the right, and came into line with Captain Weeden, behind Kingsbury, who was firing his last shots at the retreating rebels. Soon after we were ordered forward to relieve him, everything else remaining *in statu quo*, and we came into battery and waited. General Couch, General Abercrombie and General Griffin,—commanding Morell's old brigade,—were all in



our neighborhood, but I do not know the exact disposition of the infantry.

Late in the afternoon the rebels made another attack on our Left and Centre. Just previous to it they got six pieces of artillery into a new position, and opened on us, intending apparently to disable us. The result made the attempt very ridiculous; though they made some good shots and threw some shrapnell between our guns, they did not hurt anybody, and in 15 minutes we had silenced them so completely that they did not fire another gun. What on earth induced them to try such a ridiculous proceeding I do not know. If they had kept their guns masked until their infantry charged, and then had used them to distract the attention of our artillery, or to operate against our infantry, they might have accomplished something, but they ought to have learned by this time that they stand no chance at artillery practice.

As soon as they made their appearance from the woods, our artillery opened on them with terrible effect. The air over their heads was filled with the smoke of bursting shells whose fragments plowed the ground in front. Half way across the field, and already their ranks show many a gap, while wounded men are straggling fast to the rear.

They had got within 800 yards, when out rushed the infantry on our left, and the rattling of musketry mingled with the roar of cannon. Then the rebels poured out fresh troops from the woods in front of us; then we sent in more, and so the fight went on until 50,000 men were fighting in the field in front of us. We fired as fast as we could get fresh limbers full of ammunition; piling up our canister alongside of the gun, so as to be ready for them.

When two hours had passed away, we had fired 250 rounds, our men were tired, and three horses were killed, when another battery came to relieve us. [Colonel Henry J. Hunt sent Battery M, 2d U. S. Captain Henry Benson, and

Battery G, 1st New York Light, Captain John D. Frank, to relieve Waterman and Hyde on the left.] So we limbered up and came off.

The fight still kept on, but about dark we drove them back.

Going a mile to the rear I found the caissons all safe. We waited without unhitching till midnight, when we started for James River, arriving at 3.30 a. m. on the large plain where we encamped.

Our men came out of this fight in very good spirits; they thought they had paid the rebels somewhat for Friday's loss, and they cheered and hollaed at a great rate."

#### FROM SCOTT'S NOTES.

"June 30, 1862. After leaving the Chickahominy our spirits revived. Found the 5th Corps camped on Malvern Hill near the James River.

Parked away from the river in the lee of some outbuildings, we eat our hard-bread, heard a few experiences of narrow escapes during the day, and slept on the ground the night of the 30th of June unmolested. Most of the army were arriving, and with the gunboats on James River we felt secure.

In the rear of the Malvern house facing north, was a level plain or plateau.

Our lines were formed on the outlying hills of the plateau, with our flank on the river protected by the gunboats.

The enemy followed closely.

On the morning of the 1st of July, 1862, the weather was fine. Corps were getting into line of battle.

As the Battery stood on the plain near the Malvern house, solid shot from the enemy came pounding around us.

I was put in charge of the wagons and caissons, with orders to take them to a safe place, and they were taken past the Malvern house, into a hollow, where we remained all day, only listening to the heavy firing of the battle.

The 5th Mass. Battery, having only two guns, with Lieutenants Hyde, Dillingham, and Phillips, was sent to the front. I saw none of the fighting, but the guns were fought for all they were worth by Lt. Phillips who achieved for himself and his men high honor.

The gunboats sent their shots past the Left flank of our Corps into the enemy's Right. They made a fearful noise passing through the air, to the demoralization of the enemy, who did not like those 'lamp posts' as they called them.

As night began to close in, Lt. Hyde having come down to where I was stationed with the trains, I ascertained from him where the two guns were, and said I would go and find them.

Mounting my horse I started across the plains.

The artillery fire was terrific. In the darkness I could see the flashes of our guns and those of the enemy, and soon bullets came flying through the air. Meeting a mounted officer, and making inquiries of him without getting any further news, I thought, as I was there without orders, my safest place was out of the line of fire, and returning to the Malvern house I found the two guns had preceded me. The battle was over for the night."

#### FROM LT. BLAKE'S LETTER.

In a letter dated July 4, 1862, Lt. Peleg W. Blake then sergeant, but promoted to 2d Lt. on the 13th of that month, wrote:—

"On a splendid field near the James River, on the 1st of July came the tug of war.

We were ordered out with our two pieces, my piece and Spear's piece, all we had, at 12 o'clock m. We took our position on the Left of the field and commenced firing, the rebels coming out of the woods one mile distant.

Seventy-five pieces of artillery were firing on the rebels who were mown down by the thousands, not by the hun-

dreds, and at one time I should think there were 5000 rebels who came out of the woods under all of our fire of artillery and musketry.

On they came, and still kept coming, but soon began to run back for the woods, but I am sure, and I heard two generals say, that there were none ever got back to tell the tale.

Soon after, they made their general attack, and there were said to be 100,000 rebels under Beauregard. We whipped them bad.

We then fell back to the James River, and started down the river 10 miles. We are now on the James River."

#### LETTER OF ACTING SERG'T. SPEAR.

"Friday July 4, 1862.

Saturday morning the Army commenced retreating again and kept falling back, and falling back, until Tuesday, when it had another battle.

The two remaining pieces were engaged, and I was in the fight about 4 hours Tuesday afternoon."

#### AT MALVERN HILL

#### NOTES OF LIEUT. SPEAR.

JULY 24, 1901.

"The two remaining pieces went into position under command of Lieut. Phillips, nearly to the extreme left of the Army, on the right of the road, near a small farm house, remaining there until about noon, then changing to the left and rear about one-half mile, into a wheat field on the side of the hill commanding an extended view of the enemy's right, as it advanced in line of battle. This was the first best position that we had for execution, to my knowledge, during the war, the second being at Gettysburg when on the left of Hancock's Corps, the third day of the fight." [See p. 651.]

## LETTER OF ACTING SERG'T. SPEAR.

"HARRISON'S LANDING, VA.

Thursday, July 17, 1862.

Last night, also on the night before, we had thunder showers, and they cooled and purified the air, and the mornings following the showers were delightful. Every morning Bill Baxter and myself take a morning ride down to the river and have a swim. In my letter I stated that there were only three of the Quincy boys in the fight at Malvern Hill. There were four, viz., Joe Whitcher, H. E. Shaw, Bill Lapham and myself.

Joe Whitcher was driving a pair of lead horses on Tuesday, when the last fight occurred, and came directly on the battle field, to supply us with ammunition, conducting himself nobly, and managed his horses in good style, for it was a hard and difficult task to keep the horses in their proper places, when the bullets were whizzing, and the shells bursting about us."

## FROM CHASE'S DIARY.

"June 30, 1862. Routed out and packed up at two o'clock this morning, and after waiting three hours, again resumed our march towards James River, and later reached the river, and camped until about 3 p. m., when we again received marching orders. General McClellan hastily reviewed the troops this p. m., while in line to march. He was greeted by roars of cheering.

Cannonading heard in a northerly direction towards the Chickahominy.

At the foot of a hill to which we marched back, after marching over it this morning, an artillery duel ensued. A rebel battery commenced shelling our troops from the woods, but our artillery and the gunboats on the river, shelled them out in about thirty minutes. Several of the enemy's bat-

teries were taken, and about 200 prisoners passed our camp.

July 1, 1862. Cannonading heard in front this morning. A battery of twelve 32 pdrs. and the gunboats on the James River, opened on the enemy.

Hitched up and went 'In Battery' at the edge of a piece of woods just to the right of the 22d Mass. Regt. while they were singing 'John Brown's body &c' and the shot and shell flying over them, and us, both ways.

Nothing but hard bread and water to eat with one exception since June 26th until today, when we had beans. A general engagement began about 3 p. m. and lasted until about 9 p. m.

Our two remaining pieces advanced and took position on the left of the line, and commenced shelling the enemy in front: fired fifteen shots at them and then went to the rear, but afterwards took a new position on an eminence in front of the enemy, and held our ground until 7 p. m., when we were relieved by another full battery of 10 pounders.

A fearful battle! The enemy charged on our lines and were mown down with canister and shrapnell shot, and the infantry,—a constant roar of cannon and musketry. Lost two horses. Retired to the rear in good order, and took the march to Harrison's Landing, James River: reached a halting place about 3.30 in the morning of the 2d. [July, 1862]. Lt. C. A. Phillips very gallantly took us into our second position in front of the enemy."

#### NOTES OF D. HENRY GROWS.

From Notes of D. Henry Grows No. 6 man [to deal ammunition] on the 5th Gun:—"Tuesday, July 1, 1862. Got up about 6. Had some coffee. In a short time firing was heard on the Right, and we were ordered to take the pieces out on to the front. We went out and laid down to rest as the firing had ceased. Stopped here till about 3 this afternoon, when we were ordered to take our position in line of



battle, which we did on a beautiful hill, a large, level plain beneath, with woods in the rear in which the rebels were concealed.

We soon opened upon them, our position being on the Left, and they returned it in good earnest. We had about thirty pieces of artillery against them. They sent a brigade of infantry out against us.

I was sick of blood! We were exposed at one time to a heavy cross fire but we soon got it down.

There has been a great slaughter to-day! I stood at my post till I dropped, owing to the heat, and was sent to the rear. I shall go out again as soon as I am able. A man took my place. We fired some 300 rounds. We lost one horse, and one of the men was struck with a piece of shell. About dusk we went into camp and turned in. Had not slept but a short time before we were turned out and marched all night till 4 o'clock in the morning."

#### FROM GEN. THOMAS W. HYDE.

Gen. Hyde in his book "Following the Greek Cross," thus describes his emotions on this battle field:—

"I soon found myself on Malvern Hill, where I could admire the stern array of what was left of the 5th Corps, shattered but dauntless still, and wonder at the grand massing of its batteries, supported by the artillery reserve, and listen to the deafening roar of the great guns from the war vessels far down on the James. . . . We heard afterwards how the best chivalry of the South had for hours dashed themselves upon Porter's lines in vain, how Hunt's unsurpassed artillery had not allowed the enemy's attacking columns to keep their formation long enough to get near his guns."

It was "by the light of the fires," in the words of General Martindale, "reflected on the clouds over the woods, and the report of the pickets," which revealed to our forces that "the enemy was using the night to retire out of reach of our cannon, toward Richmond."

## CHAPTER XII.

### THE BATTERY DIVIDED.

#### OFFICERS AND MEN TRANSFERRED, PROMOTED, AND DIS- CHARGED FOR DISABILITY.

"What is honor? . . . Who hath it? He that died o' Wednesday. Doth he feel it? No. Doth he hear it? No. Is it insensible then? Yea, to the dead. But will it live with the living? No. Why? Detraction will not suffer it."—SHAKESPEARE, *King Henry IV.*

The Battle of Malvern Hill closed the Peninsula campaign. Halleck as general-in-chief gave peremptory orders, which were reluctantly carried out by McClellan and Hooker, to withdraw the Army from the Peninsula with all possible dispatch.

Governor Andrew in an address referring to this period says:—

"July 2, 1862, the President called for 300,000 men. The unfortunate campaign in Virginia, which results in the return of both our armies within the defences of Washington, aroused and inflamed the zeal of the whole people. The requisite number of men were speedily raised."

General McClellan wrote the Secretary of War that to accomplish the task of capturing Richmond reinforcements should be sent to him "rather much over than less than one hundred thousand men," and then followed six weeks of inactivity while he waited.

The Army had all "turned in" on the ground, after the battle of Malvern Hill, expecting to get a night's rest, but, talking over the day's fight while their excited nerves were recovering from the strain, orders came to move on, and they were again on the march.

In pursuance of the retrograde movement southwest they marched ten miles, to Harrison's Landing, arriving about daylight July 3d, and the Battery went fast asleep, at last, in a field where they had dropped down between the rows of corn. The horses stood in harness as they had been since the 26th of June.

The enemy had not followed in force, and the weary soldiers slept on far into the forenoon, unconscious that they were lying in six inches of water [Scott's Notes]. The rain beat upon them, but they paid no heed, and lay on the ground all day, side by side with the sick and wounded, obliged to lie, if they lie at all, in this quagmire, exposed to the weather, until the sick and wounded were taken on board the transports, which was accomplished during the day and the wagons came up with shelter for the weary ones.

Reinforcements also arrived, and stragglers came in. Among the fresh troops was the 32d Mass. Infantry, assigned to General Griffin's, late Morell's, Brigade. The enemy had not yet ceased harassing our rereating columns, for on July 3d in the morning, shells from two guns which they had placed in position, were seen bursting in the air; three of them going to pieces within 200 yards of the Battery and one striking in Captain Martin's camp near them. The Battery's two remaining guns were hitched up for action, but after waiting two hours they were unhitched again. The rebel guns were so near that they were easily brought in by our flying artillery.

Grows' "Journal": "July 3, 1862. . . . We soon got word that our troops had flanked them taking 40 pieces of artillery and 8000 prisoners. In a short time 600 of the 32d Mass Reg't. arrived and were loudly cheered. Fresh troops have been coming in all day. After being in harness all day, towards night we were told to unhitch and go into camp again.

Friday, July 4, 1862. About 10 this forenoon we broke

camp and moved to a better camping ground, so as to give the men and horses rest, of which we are greatly in need. Got some nice straw and laid it in my tent. Fixed up things, then laid down."

On the Fourth of July, General Henry W. Halleck, having come down from Washington, reviewed the troops, and the national salute was fired, at each Corps Head Quarters, in honor of the day.

General McClellan anticipated an attack, and was expecting recruits. In his address to the troops on that day he said:—

"The enemy may at any moment attack you.

We are prepared to receive them.

I have personally established your lines.

Let them come, and we will convert their repulse into a final defeat.

Your government is strengthening you with the resources of a great people.

On this our nation's birth-day, we declare to our foes who are rebels against the best interests of mankind, that this Army shall enter the capital of the so-called Confederacy: that our national constitution shall prevail, and that the Union, which can alone insure internal peace and external security to each state, must and shall be preserved cost what it may in time, treasure, or blood."

At the inspection of July 6th by General Fitz John Porter and Captain Weeden, the Fifth Mass. Battery was in line.

"It seemed to be well understood by General Porter," wrote Scott, "what the condition of the Battery was:—'You have lost four guns at Gaines Mills' he said, 'but you lost them honorably, and as soon as practicable they will be restored to you, and the service demands them.'"

Grows' "Journal": "Sunday, July 6, 1862. It is a very hot morning. There was an inspection of the Battery by General Porter and staff this forenoon [See p. 341 F. P. Washburn] and he told us when Richmond was ours we should go home.

This afternoon went to the Doctor: he told me I would not pass, and to have my discharge. I am almost worn out with fighting and marching so much.

Monday, July 7th. Went to the Doctor with Serg't Smith. He instructed me to tell my officer to have me go before the Brigade Surgeon and for him to sign our papers. Lieut. Hyde went to see him but he was away, so we will have to go tomorrow.

Tuesday, July 8th. A very hot morning. After eating I with three others went to the head doctor. He told our lieutenant to send us home, and he will do all he can for us, for which I am very thankful."

### A REVIEW OF THE BATTLES.

From a Letter of Thomas E. Chase:—"Harrison's Landing, Va. July 7, 1862.

Since I last wrote you we have been in two desperate field engagements, besides much danger on picket duty. At two o'clock p. m. Thursday, 26th ult., we received marching orders, and were soon on the march to White House. Cannonading had already commenced toward Mechanicsville, and we knew that there was to be hot work on the morrow. We marched about two miles towards White House, and then countermarched nearly back again, and bivouacked for the night in a field with General Butterfield's Brigade. The firing continued until about 9 p. m., and we left the horses all night hitched to the pieces, and laid down near the guns ready for duty at a moment's notice. At early dawn the fight commenced again, and troops began to move. We left, too, but instead of approaching the scene of action we marched back nearly to the spot we had left the day before, and placed the guns 'in battery' on the brow of a hill commanding a large tract of land around us. Lieut. Hyde then told us that our troops were retreating in good order, and that we were to cover their retreat, and that a battery of flying artillery would be the last to cross the mill-stream below us. We were to hold our position and repulse the enemy

until all the troops had crossed and destroyed the bridge. The enemy's cannonading and musketry sounded nearer and nearer, and at last the battery crossed and the men began to rip up the bridge. The enemy across the Chickahominy spied us, and opened on us from their 32 pdr. battery, but as the distance was great they did us no injury, their shells striking at least 100 yards from us. The bridge was destroyed before the enemy made their appearance, and we trotted off to a new position about half a mile distant, also on a hill, at the edge of a piece of woods. Here we were out of the range of the enemy's 32 pdrs., and began to think we could rest, but—Hark! The enemy have crossed the mill-stream, and are already at work! Our infantry commence felling the trees in front of us, and preparations are made for a general engagement. The enemy threw some shells into the infantry behind the woods, but did but little injury. Soon they—the rebs—formed a line of battle, and on they came, but were quickly repulsed by our troops. After a short delay, they again rallied with increased numbers. The Left section of our Battery took a position at the edge of the woods on this charge, and blazed away at them. The enemy were repulsed the second time as splendidly as the first, and they tried it for the third time with great force but with the same success. Redoubling their force, on they came again, yelling like devils. Our brave but exhausted troops held them in check for a few moments, and in the meantime we advanced with the full Battery, and began to pour canister and shrapnell into the solid ranks, but on they came, and our troops were overpowered and a general retreat had commenced. Many of the infantry had passed us before we ceased firing, but we finally 'limbered up' and drove off. The horses began to fall, the enemy were close upon us, and we were obliged to leave four of our guns on the field.

We retreated across the Chickahominy over Bottom's



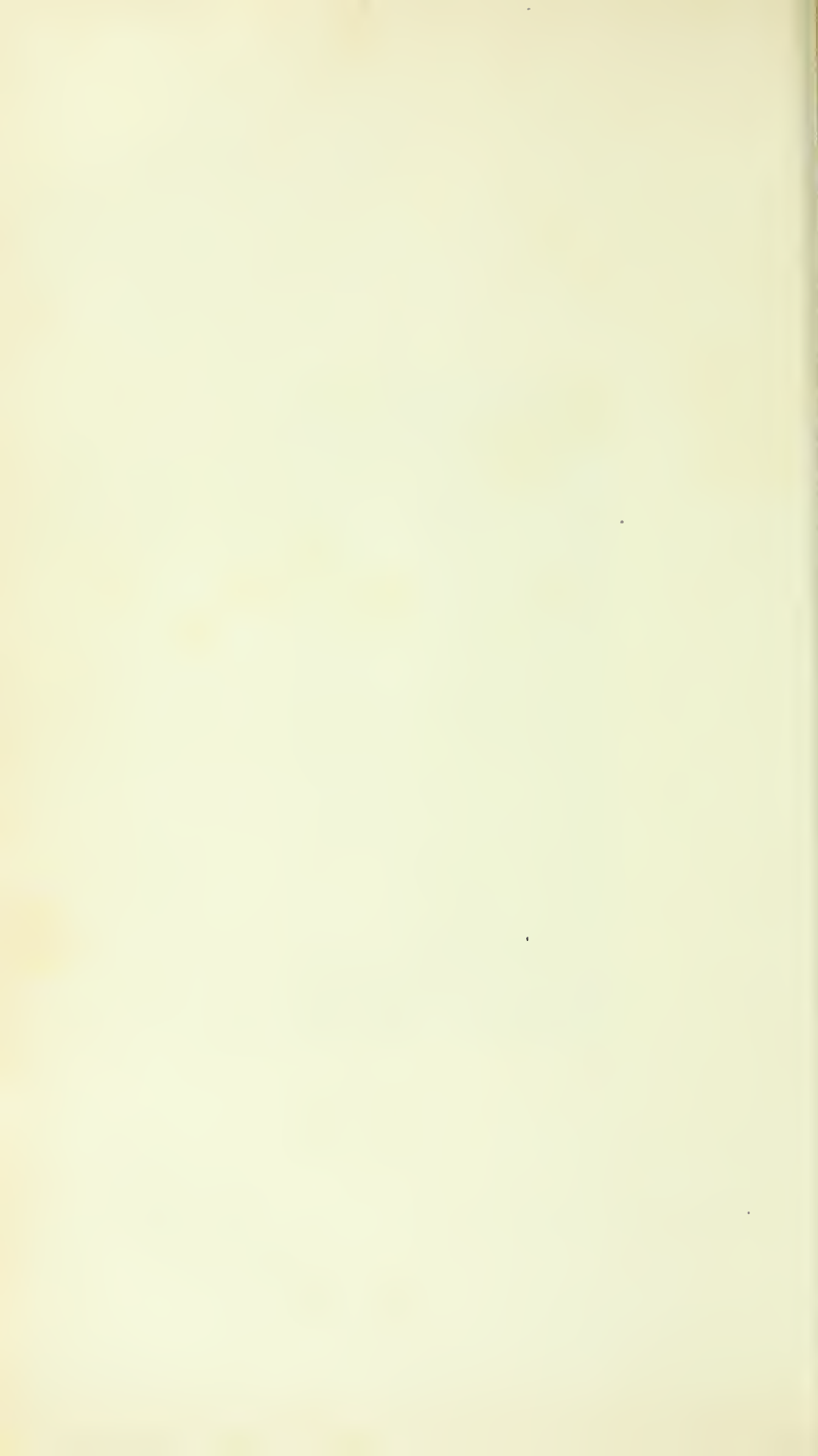
Bridge, and camped for the night near McClellan's Head Quarters. . . . Our Battery fired about one hundred rounds at them at short range. . . . Porter's Division was forced to retreat across the river. They were overwhelmed by superior numbers. Our troops fought bravely and well. We suffered a severe loss, but probably not more than half that of the enemy. We have been retreating towards the James River, and on Tuesday, 1st inst. we had another desperate battle. Before the fight McClellan rode along the lines, and was loudly cheered and greeted with music. Many of the troops thought it was good news, but something told me that it meant flight, and well I knew that ere long many of the voices that then cheered so loudly would be hushed in death. Although I was glad to see our Chieftain with us, well I knew his mission. That music was not harmony to me, for I knew that the interludes were to be the groans of the dying. This was on Monday, 31st, and the enemy had already made an attack about 5 p. m., but were soon repulsed."

Notes of Francis P. Washburn: "I send you a picture of the old sword picked up at Harrison's Landing. It was not carried by an officer but by a cannoneer. When we were equipped by the state of Massachusetts, the cannoneers were armed with swords like the one in the picture, and the drivers with sabres. Later in the War the drivers only carried side arms."

The mails had recommenced, and the usual order of camp was resumed, but it was not an ideal camp, for there was no drinking water within a mile. The question of comfort was not, however, paramount at that time for the destiny of the Battery was being determined.

A Special Order was issued from Head Quarters which for a time distributed its forces into other, but not new channels, as the batteries with which the fortunes of the members of the Fifth Mass. Battery were cast, had been near





neighbors in many camps and on many fields.

John Galvin in a letter of Nov. 27th. 1899. referring to the life in camp of the Rhode Island and Massachusetts men, says:—

"How often we partook of their hospitality of a Sunday morning! The 5th Battery boys would not forget us. The Rhode Island boys did not know how to bake beans. I suppose they might be able to bake clams, but they could do nothing with beans."

Of their fighting after the Battle of Gaines Mills he says:—"How nobly they fought, with their two guns and their handful of men, in every battle until we reached Harrison's Landing."

#### SPECIAL ORDER No. 200.

HEADQUARTERS, ARMY OF THE POTOMAC.

CAMP NEAR HARRISON'S LANDING,

July 11. 1862

Special Orders  
No. 200

16. The officers and men of Allen's Battery E. Mass. Artillery [Morell's Division, 5th Provisional Corps], are assigned to duty with Martin's Battery C. Mass. Artillery, the battery still retaining its company organization.

The Commander of the 5th Provisional Corps will make such disposition of the material and horses as he may deem proper in the batteries of Morell's Division. A sufficient number of men will be detached from Allen's Battery and attached to Weeden's Battery C, Rhode Island Artillery, to render the latter efficient. The Chief of Artillery will make arrangements at once to supply Martin's Battery with a light 12 pounder and Weeden's Battery with a 3 inch ordnance gun.

By command of Major General McClellan:

S. WILLIAMS,  
Assistant Adjutant General.

## CAPTAIN A. P. MARTIN'S ORDERS.

COMPANY ORDERS,

CAMP NEAR HARRISON'S LANDING, VA.

July 12, 1862.

In compliance with orders from Head Quarters Army of the Potomac, the officers and men of Allen's Battery E, Mass. Artillery, will be temporarily attached to this Battery, and until further orders will form one command. Officers and non-commissioned officers in both batteries will hold their present rank, and be respected and obeyed accordingly.

In future the roll will be called in company line. The company will assemble, and when the order is given to call the roll, each Sgt. will step 2 paces to the front, call the roll, and return to his place, in the ranks, and report to the First Sgt. as he passes down the line, who will return opposite the centre of the line and report to the officer of the day, after which the company will be dismissed.

The guard will hereafter be formed with sabres and inspected by the old officer of the day, the old guard will form and be properly relieved. Every man must appear at Guard mounting in uniform with pants turned down at the bottoms, brasses clean, with a tidy appearance generally. Every man will take his place in the ranks, remain silent, and keep his head square to the front, and his hands down by his sides.

Each sergeant will at once hand in to Hd. Qrs. a list of his detachment; designating those present for duty, and those sick; also make a distinction between drivers and cannoneers.

A. P. MARTIN *Capt.*,  
Battery C, Mass. Art'y.

## OFFICERS RESIGNED.

July 12, 1862, First Lieutenant John B. Hyde and Junior First Lieutenant Robert A. Dillingham resigned and were discharged.

## NOTES OF LT. JOHN B. HYDE, MAY 22, 1900.

"Lt. Dillingham was enlisted a private by me, and at my request was commissioned junior second lieutenant, and afterwards was promoted to senior second lieutenant.

He was a faithful, efficient officer, always discharging his duties in a satisfactory manner. At the time he resigned he was far from being a well man, and on the way home

became seriously ill. He was assisted through the journey by Lt. Daniel S. Tompkins of the signal corps who was also ill and on sick leave, and myself.

After he arrived at his home in New Bedford, he grew worse, and was sick a long time with the dropsy, and died with that disease on January 1st, 1868, aged 40 years."

### LT. HYDE'S COMING HOME.

Lt. Hyde did not resign as a sick man, but the nervous strain through which he had passed produced typhoid fever, the effects of which still remain (1902), and while disposed to return to the service his physical condition would not admit of it.

His relations with the Battery were always very pleasant, he looked after the men when they were sick but when well held them strictly to the performance of their duty.

The horse "Black Charley" was sent home by express, and in the fall of 1864, at the New England Horse Fair held at Saugus, Mass., took the prize as a saddle horse for action and beauty. The prize was twenty-five dollars, and with it went a diploma, which neatly framed is still (1902) preserved among his master's souvenirs of the war.

In later years he became the property of the distinguished lawyer Peleg W. Chandler of Boston and Brunswick, Maine, and occupied a stall in a stable as fine as a dwelling house.

### FROM A LETTER OF LIEUT. PHILLIPS.

"CAMP NEAR HARRISON'S LANDING,

July 12, 1862.

In compliance with my request Capt. Martin went up to see Gen. Porter yesterday. Gen. Porter said that the company would be assigned to Capt. Martin, still retaining its company organization under my command. Yesterday an order arrived from Gen. McClellan for officers and men of



the Battery to report for duty to Captain Martin, a sufficient number to be detailed to fill up Weeden's Battery, the company still retaining the company organization, and Martin and Weeden recruiting up to the maximum, regardless of us. So you see how the thing stands now. We still remain a battery, without guns or horses, and most of the men detached for other duty. I shall retain my commission, and be in command of the Battery, having our mustered pay rolls, and act as a kind of supernumerary to Martin's Battery. Scott ditto."

Diary of Lieut. Phillips: "July 13. Sunday, 25 of the men were detailed to Captain Weeden's Battery."

#### OFFICERS PROMOTED.

Several officers went up. July 13, 1862, Second Lt. Charles A. Phillips was promoted First Lt., Junior Second Lt. Henry D. Scott was promoted Junior First Lt., and Peleg W. Blake was commissioned Second Lt. All of the Fifth Mass. Battery.

August 1st Frederick A. Lull was commissioned Junior Second Lieutenant.

On July 13th, Scott and Phillips moved their tent to Captain Martin's camp, and from this time till Sept. 12, 1862, the fate of the members of the Battery and of the remaining commissioned officers was identified with the organizations to which they had been assigned, viz., the Third Mass. Battery and the Fourth Rhode Island, special regulations being made for several non-commissioned officers and privates (see p. 915), but after Captain Martin became acting chief of the Artillery Brigade, Lieut. Phillips received from General Morell, commanding the Division, the appointment of acting assistant adjutant general and was assigned to the staff of Captain Martin. Lieut. Scott was appointed acting assistant quartermaster of Morell's Division and was assigned to Martin's staff.

Corporal Thomas E. Chase whose Diary is so often quoted, went with Captain Martin's Battery.

July 14, 1862, General Halleck, who had been ordered to Washington, assumed command as general-in-chief of the U. S. Armies, and the Army of the Potomac was recuperating.

Grows' "Journal": "Monday July 14, 1862. About 8 this forenoon the Doctor came round to see us. He told some of us he would send us North as soon as he could, as this was no place for us. There are a great many men here sick, but they are being sent away quite fast.

Wednesday, July 16th. Went out towards evening to see the process of embalming two bodies to be sent home."

Lieut. Phillips wrote on the 16th July from the camp near Harrison's Landing:—"We have been spending a fortnight in this locality in great peace and quiet compared with the fortnight which preceded. We have been stopping here on a level plain, baked as hard as a brick in dry weather, and as sticky as putty in wet. Yesterday we were mustered for pay, and the heat was terrific. Captain Martin's Battery was mustered just before we were, and one of his sergeants was sun struck. Although we have been mustered for pay, we have as yet seen nothing of the Paymaster. By the regulations troops are to be paid off every two months, if possible. You see how theory and practice agree in this matter. People at home who see regiments marching off 1000 strong, have no idea of the skeleton regiments out here. It was sad enough before the last row, but that finished us up. Morell's Division was one of the largest in the Army, numbering when filled to the maximum 15,000. Before we left Gaines's Hill the regiments had been reduced to an average of less than 400 effective men. The Massachusetts 9th and 22d were quite large, numbering 800 and 600 men. At Gaines Mills the 22d lost 11 officers and 350 men, at Malvern Hill 75 men. They have now 304 men

on their rolls, and of these probably less than 200 are effective. There are now with the Regiment 7 officers.

A great many officers are resigning, and things are in pretty bad shape. Strategy of the kind we have had lately is all humbug. The Army of the Potomac have fought the bloodiest battles of the war, and they have decided nothing. Fair Oaks may have shown good fighting on the part of our soldiers, but beyond killing so many hundred men nothing was accomplished. The same may be said of all the battles of the Peninsula. As far as loss of life was concerned Gaines Mills cost us nearly, if not quite, as much as a successful assault upon Richmond would have done when we first arrived, and has cost us immeasurably more in moral effect here and abroad, in time, and money, and all owing to the 'slow and sure' policy."

#### LETTER OF ACTING SERG'T SPEAR.

"HARRISON'S LANDING, VA.

July 17, 1862.

Some of the men have been put into Captain Weeden's Battery, and the rest were put into Captain Martin's. We are getting along well, although we have nothing to do, to speak of. Some of the men are in the Detachments in Martin's Battery, and some do not do any duty. Bill Lapham has been sent North to a hospital."

The sick and wounded were sent to various hospitals: David's Island Hospital, New York; U. S. Hospital, 16th and Filbert Streets, Philadelphia; Convalescent Hospital, Alexandria; to Baltimore, to Cumberland, Md., to Fort McHenry Hospital; Finley Hospital, Washington, D. C.; Armory Hospital, Washington, D. C.

Between February 10th, 1862, and December 31st of the same year besides the three commissioned officers, as many as 32 members of the Battery were discharged for disability. Of these 24 were Lieut. Hyde's recruits, and 5 were Lieut. Allen's.

## LETTER OF LIEUT. PHILLIPS.

" HARRISON'S LANDING,

July 18, 1862.

Hyde and Dillingham left yesterday. Their resignations took effect on the 12th. Scott and I and the men except 28 assigned to Weeden moved over to Captain Martin's camp last Sunday. We act as officers under Martin, taking our turn as Officers of the Day, and the men are incorporated with his battery. Nominally the 5th Mass. Battery still exists, having its officers and non-commissioned officers, and its own muster and pay rolls, but it is a very slender existence. I cannot sign a requisition or act in any official capacity as commander, and have nothing to do with the men."

Friday July 18, 1862, on account of heavy rains which "drowned out the whole camp" and flooded the tent of Scott and Phillips, the camp of the Third Mass. Battery was moved to a hill near by, and the next day C. D. Barnard, supposed to have been killed in the battle of Gaines Mills, June 27, 1862, came down the river from Richmond among other wounded soldiers on board the steamer "Louisiana" with a flag of truce. See p. 358 C. D. Barnard.

Among other changes wrought by time, Captain A. P. Martin appeared in his new capacity of Chief of Artillery; Captain William B. Weeden having resigned and gone home.

Grows' "Journal":—"July 20, 1862. Soon after dinner Harry Simonds and Joe Knox came over to see me. Had a very pleasant time talking with them. They stopped about an hour. . . . Some more have died today with the fever. A great many are embalmed and sent to their friends."

## MARTIN'S PROMOTION.

HD. QUARTERS MORELL'S  
DIVISION, CAMP NEAR HARRISON'S  
LANDING, VA. July 24, 1862.

Special Orders.

No. 215.

Captain Augustus P. Martin, Battery C, Massachusetts Artillery, is hereby designated as Chief of the Artillery attached to this Division. He will be obeyed and respected accordingly.

By command of Brig. Gen'l Geo. W. Morell.

R. T. AUCHMUTY,  
Ass't Adj. Gen'l.

## ENLISTED ABOVE THE NUMBER.

By Special Order No. 89, Head Qrs. 5th Corps, camp near Harrison's Landing, Va., July 24, 1862, Thomas B. Stantial and James A. Wood, privates in the Fifth Mass. Battery, having been enlisted as artificers above the number authorized by law and deprived of their positions without any fault of their own, are discharged from the military service of the United States by command of Brig. Gen'l F. J. Porter.

## THE FIFTH ARMY CORPS.

July 24, 1862, Morell's Division was reviewed by General Morell preparatory to a grand review the next morning of the Fifth Army Corps, Brig. Gen'l F. J. Porter commanding, by General McClellan.

The term "Provisional" having been dropped on July 22, 1862, by General Order No. 84 from the War Department, the "Fifth Army Corps" was permanently established.

On the 25th the review by McClellan took place, and in the afternoon General Halleck arrived at Harrison's Landing.

## LETTER FROM PHILLIPS.

"CAMP NEAR HARRISON'S LANDING,

July 25, 1862.

. . . Our camp is pitched in a very pleasant spot on a little knoll about a mile from the river. Our tents, that is, the officers, are pitched in a line on the crest of the hill, and in the same line is our dining-room. This is formed of a tent fly surrounded by boughs of trees. An elegant table of pine boards occupies the centre, and a number of ammunition boxes placed around form our seats. We use it for a writing apartment, and I am at present in it writing on a sheet of paper borrowed from Lt. Walcott [commanding Third Mass. Battery] who is writing alongside of me. Until lately we were pretty well removed from water, having to go to the river to get it, but a few days ago the infantry of the Division who were encamped near by, on the edge of the woods, moved down nearer the river, leaving their wells and springs, which proved quite acceptable. Still the water out here is poor at the best, clayey, and tasting of the swamp. I would give a great deal for a glass of pure cold Massachusetts water! . . . All would be very well if we could only get some soft bread. We got some the other day but it only served to aggravate things. . . . I am afraid recruiting is not going on very brisk at home. We need more men or more generals or different ones, I don't know which. The troops here are gradually gaining health and strength, but the officers appear to be backing down. General Martindale has gone home on a furlough and has probably resigned. [General Martindale never resumed this command but was given one near Washington.] Butterfield has gone home [on leave]. Kingsbury [Lt. Kingsbury of Griffin's Battery] is promoted colonel of Conn. 11th and everybody else is resigning, going home on furlough, or sick leave, or getting cashiered."



Grows' "Journal": "Friday, July 25, 1862. Had breakfast of coffee and bread. I drank some of it and soon after laid down to hear the news read, which was very interesting. There are only seven of us in a tent now, the rest have been discharged. One of the men gets a paper and reads to us. Had for dinner some meat and potatoes. I eat the potatoes and let the meat alone. After eating I went out under the shade of a cherry tree to get cool. The sun is very hot, and there is little air. Remained out most of the afternoon. Came into the tent about 4½ o'clock and had some rice and sugar for a lunch. Took a light smoke. Tea was ready at 6. I drank a little and laid down. Had a severe night of it."

#### GEN'L. PORTER TO GOV. ANDREW.

Major General Fitz John Porter, commanding Fifth Army Corps, Harrison's Landing, Va., July 26, 1862, to His Excellency John A. Andrew, Governor of Massachusetts.

[Extract.] "It affords me great gratification to express to you my admiration for the noble conduct of the troops from your state under my command, in the late actions before Richmond. No troops could have behaved better than they did, the ninth and 22d Regiments and Martin's Battery, and portions of Allen's, or done more to add to our success. Their thinned ranks tell of their trials, the brave men lost, their heroic dead, and gallant conduct and devotion to their country. Their discipline was never excelled, and now with undaunted hearts, they await with confidence of success the order to advance. I hope you will be able to send on men to fill their depleted ranks, even in parties of ten, as fast as recruited. A few men joining us now gives great heart to all men, and adds to our strength nearly five times the same number in new regiments."

Grows' "Journal": "Sunday, July 27, 1862. The Doctor came around and ordered me to have tea and farina whenever I wanted it. He is a very kind man.

Church services were held here by the officers of the Hospital, and the singing did sound splendid. The air is nice,

and cool enough to make it comfortable. I wrote a letter to Lieut. Phillips in regard to my case, and shall send it as soon as I can get an opportunity tomorrow, and trust it will do some good."

### ENLISTED ABOVE THE NUMBER.

By command of Maj. Gen'l Fitz John Porter Hd. Qrs. Morell's Division, July 27, 1862. Special Orders No. 93, two privates in the Fifth Mass. Battery, Christopher B. Tripp and Charles D. Barnard, having been enlisted as artificers above the number authorized by law, and deprived of their positions without any fault of their own, were discharged from the military service of the United States.

Grows' "Journal":—"Monday, July 28, 1862, there were four steamers in the river with sick and wounded brought down from Richmond. They will have good care and treatment.

Tuesday, July 29, 1862. Yesterday afternoon we had some new cots brought into the tent for us. The nurse put them up and I slept nicely last night. Had a little tea for dinner, and this was all I could bear. Had some nice tea with milk in it for my supper."

### BATTERY QUARTERMASTER.

HEAD QUARTERS MORELL'S DIVISION,  
CAMP NEAR HARRISON'S LANDING, VA.  
July 30, 1862.

Special Orders.

No. 222.

Second Lieut. Henry D. Scott, Battery E, Mass. Artillery, is hereby appointed Battery Quarter Master of the Artillery force attached to this Division. He will be obeyed and respected accordingly.

By command of Brig. Gen. Geo. W. Morell.

R. T. AUCHMUTY,  
Ass't Adj't. Gen'l.

## ARTILLERY ADJUTANT.

HEAD QUARTERS MORELL'S DIVISION,

CAMP NEAR HARRISON'S LANDING, VA.

July 30, 1862.

Special Orders.

No. 223.

Second Lieut. Charles A. Phillips, Battery E, Mass. Artillery, is hereby appointed Artillery Adjutant of the Artillery force attached to this Division.

He will be obeyed and respected accordingly.

By command of Brig. General Geo. W. Morell.

R. T. AUCHMUTY,

Ass't Adjt. Gen'l.

Lt. Phillips in a letter dated Harrison's Landing, July 31, 1862, says with reference to his position as adjutant of the artillery force attached to General Morell's Division:—"This does not interfere with my commission [as lieutenant of the 5th Mass. Battery] nor with the reorganization of the Battery, but it relieves me from the duties of Officer of the Day, and I circulate the orders from Hd. Qrs. with an 'Official: Charles A. Phillips, Adjutant' added. Scott is appointed Quartermaster, so that our Chief of Artillery has quite a staff.

The commissary at last has some soft bread, and we are living gayly now. We have also some vegetables, and today we had for dinner, soup with meat, potatoes and desiccated vegetables in it, beets, pickles, soft bread and tea. We also had Colonel Ritchie of Governor Andrew's staff to dinner, and he seemed to enjoy the fare. In an interview which he had with General Porter, General Porter said that the Battery would probably be reorganized as soon as they could get the guns."

## AN ARTILLERY DEMONSTRATION.

The Union fleet extended for two miles above and below Harrison's Landing when the rebel general Pendleton opened fire upon the Union camp and shipping, and the Union artillery on shore and in the gunboats replied, after

which the enemy returned to Petersburg where they came from, and our forces occupied the position and commenced constructing earthworks to guard against further surprise. An attack on Petersburg was contemplated and plans made for the destruction of the railroad bridges over rivers, in order to cut off connection between Richmond and the South. When this plan was carried out the war was over.

Grows' "Journal":—"Thursday July 31, 1862. I got a nice dipper of chocolate.

Friday, Aug. 1st. Was awakened at 1 o'clock this morning by heavy cannonading and the whistling of balls and shells. Got up and looked out of the tent. The opposite bank of the river looked on fire with batteries. The rebels had, during the darkness of the night, planted several light batteries upon the shore and were trying to sink our transports. For half an hour the cannonading was awful. Our gunboats soon got into position, and in a few minutes silenced them.

A beautiful morning. Have ascertained that the rebels did not do much damage. Several shot and shell have been dug up this morning. About 10 this forenoon, a poor fellow was brought to the Hospital wounded with a piece of shell. Have ascertained that 14 of our men (men of our Army) were killed during the firing by the rebels: some of the Cavalry, Lancers, and a few of the Zouaves. It was a surprise and will probably teach our folks a good lesson. There are 10 men here, 9 besides the nurse."

#### PHILLIPS' VERSION.

CAMP NEAR HARRISON'S LANDING, VA.

Aug. 2, 1862.

"Supplies of stationery have been drawn for the adjutant of the Artillery and also for the commander of the Fifth Battery. Night before last we had quite a little excitement here. About midnight, as we were all sleeping soundly,

half a dozen guns suddenly banged away, disturbing the silence of the night, and kept up the noise for several hours. It was full as noisy as anything at Yorktown. Of course this brought us up and out in a very short time, and we found that the rebels had planted some field batteries across the river, and commenced banging away with perfect looseness. Some of the shots fell among the infantry of Morell's Division, two hitting the tents of the Mass. 32d, who are not yet accustomed to this style of thing, and among the cavalry encamped near the river, and I presume the vessels on the river received an uncomfortable share of attention. We were too far off to be troubled and we stood and enjoyed the show. I suppose our batteries had something to say on the subject, but the affair was mostly noise. Last night the houses and woods on the other shore, which had sheltered the rebels, were burned, making quite a brilliant conflagration, and some of our troops are now sent over to the other side every day.

Lieut. Col. (Arthur F. see p. 37) Devereaux called to see me. He seemed to be quite excited at the slowness of the enlistments, and like a good many others round here, went in for a draft at once. . . . We can now get unlimited soft bread of the commissary at 10 cts. a loaf, and with onions, beets, potatoes, desiccated vegetables, fresh and salt beef and occasional baked beans, we live pretty well. . . .

Dr. Schell, the surgeon of the Batteries, has arrived, having spent a month among the Rebels. He was in the hospital at Gaines Mills and remained after we retreated, and was taken prisoner. The rebels kept him at the hospital three weeks attending to their wounded. He says the rebel loss was at least half as much again as ours. . . . Massachusetts is doing right in recruiting the old regiments &c. but after this I hope people will see that regiments must be *continually* recruited, as long as the war lasts. These grand uprisings of the people at a new call for troops may

be all very well in a moral and æsthetical point of view, but in my opinion are not half so useful as a steady volunteering. Still I do not know that we can recruit in any other way. I am glad Halleck has been appointed commander-in-chief, though I do not know exactly what effect it will have. General Morell has been made a major general. . . . Just dined on sardines, stewed tomatoes and Scotch ale. . . . The contrabands are encamped near the shore here, and the way they skedaddled when they found the shells falling around their camp was slightly amusing. Artillery practice at night is as good as fireworks. . . . Adams Express has tons of stuff at Fortress Monroe that they cannot bring up the river. They talk of increasing their facilities, and I hope they will. As it is now it is rather a matter of luck for anything to come through, and the time of transportation varies exceedingly, from a few days to a few months.

Sunday, Aug 3, 1862. Rainy. Troops moved across the river. . . .

Lull is now 1st Sergeant and first in line of promotion, and has done more work than any other non-commissioned officer in the Battery. Blake will make a good officer, and I am glad of his promotion."

Grows' "Journal":—"Saturday, Aug. 2, 1862. General McClellan has been looking through the tents for the past two days, to see how the sick are, and how they are getting along. Several ladies have called to see us, giving cakes, lemons, &c. They were from the (steamer) 'S. R. Spaulding.'

Monday, Aug. 4, 1862. The Doctor came round and took down my name, to be sent North. About 3 this afternoon the Orderly came over with the Rolls for me to sign. Harry Simonds came to see me soon after, and bade me good bye. About half past 5 this afternoon the order came for me to get ready. In a short time I was in the ambulance ready for



the boat. I soon arrived on board the steamer 'Vanderbilt, and was shown to a good berth. After putting my things away I had some good beef tea and bread—soon after a large cup of tea, and bread with butter. The nurses are very kind; all being men, with the exception of three ladies who wait on the worst cases. There are many aboard who are very sick, and out of their heads (delirious) and they require a great deal of watching."

The President called for 300,000 more men to serve for nine months.

The reinforcements, which the President and General Halleck, after their visits to the Army of the Potomac assured General McClellan should be provided, did not come, and August 4, 1862, after McClellan had occupied the position he had secured on the James River for a month, he received orders from General Halleck to proceed to Acquia Creek, between Fredericksburg and Washington, thus relinquishing the hope of the capture of Richmond, and of assisting in the protection of Washington by holding the attention of the enemy, so as not to admit of their detaching any large force to attack Washington.

General McClellan protested. The order was reiterated, and the Army of the Potomac, transportation by water to Newport News not being convenient, marched to that point.

#### FROM A LETTER FROM PHILLIPS.

"Monday, Aug. 4, 1862. The mail boat leaves here at 9 o'clock in the morning, but I generally mail my letters the evening before, writing them in the daytime. . . . Last night we received a notification that the commissary was prepared to issue fresh bread to the troops. This will set up the sick men in a very short time, and if the army should be kept much longer on hard bread and salt beef the men would not be good for much. Sickness, I presume incipient scurvy, is very prevalent here. Everybody seems to lose

all strength. I do not know of anything which set me up so much as the tomatoes. From feeling weak and languid I became quite lively and strong. . . . The only variety we have is in the way of flies, which are very thick and very troublesome. The flies here look like the common flies at home, but they have a much more insinuating way with them, biting just like mosquitoes. Their quantity, too, is perfectly astonishing. The tent is generally full of them, not to mention other bugs and creeping and crawling things, which abound in great variety. It is quite an occupation every evening to catch the bugs and throw them out of doors.

Yesterday (3d Aug.) we had inspection and I turned out as usual with Martin's Battery. . . . Recruits and soldiers returned from furlough, come in, a few every day, though whether more than enough to make up for the exodus of the sick I do not know. There is a little too much of getting up companies. If men won't recruit without a commission, send home some of the officers here on recruiting service, but do not get up new companies to please the vanity of towns and the martial glory of untried men."

---

In the following words Napoleon Bonaparte expresses similar sentiments:

"It has been said that the victories of the French Republic were won by the new volunteers, who were inexperienced in war. There could be no greater mistake; they were won by the 180,000 old soldiers of the monarchy. You will not soon see me going to war with recruits."

#### LETTER OF LIEUT. PHILLIPS.

"Aug. 5, 1862: Yesterday afternoon some batteries of horse artillery went by with forage as if going on a reconnaissance, and at midnight we got orders to be ready to move at short notice with two days' rations. So the un-

lucky adjutant had to arise, copy the order, and send it to the other batteries. This morning there was some artillery firing. . . . We were probably put under marching orders so as to be ready to support the reconnoissance if necessary. . . . Let me explain the two kinds of Light Artillery:—‘Horse Artillery,’ or ‘Flying Artillery’ has all the cannoneers mounted on horseback. In ‘Mounted Artillery’—the common Light Batteries,—the cannoneers walk or ride on the carriages. We are ‘Mounted Artillery.’ There are only a few batteries of ‘Horse Artillery’ in the service, and they are all attached to the Artillery Reserve. They are used to manœuvre with cavalry on reconnoissance &c. General Stoneman in his flying expeditions uses Cavalry and Horse Artillery. The Fifth Battery is not yet remounted and equipped.”

### THIRD MASS. BATTERY.

COMPANY ORDERS.

HARRISON'S LANDING, VA.

Aug. 5, 1862.

Lieut. Valentine M. Dunn, having been commissioned as Senior 1st Lieut., Lieut. Philip H. Tyler as Junior 1st Lieut., Lieut. Aaron F. Walcott as Senior 2d Lieut., and Sergeant Thomas M. Cargill as Junior 2d Lieut. of Battery C, Mass. Art'y, they will at once assume command of their respective positions and be respected and obeyed accordingly.

Lieut. Charles A. Phillips, having been commissioned as Senior 1st Lieut., Lieut. Henry D. Scott as Junior 1st Lieut., Sergeant Peleg W. Blake as Senior 2d Lieut. of Battery E, Mass. Art'y, they will be respected and obeyed accordingly.

A. P. MARTIN *Capt.*

Battery C, Mass. Art'y.

Grows' "Journal":—"Tuesday Aug. 5, 1862. About 9 this morning the ambulances began bringing more sick aboard. Got filled up about noon and then got ready to start as soon as the water is high enough. . . . Got under way about 4 o'clock this afternoon, and went down the river. The scenery is very fine. We had a flag of truce flying, and the rebels did not fire on us. The other boats; such as the

mail and transports, go up and down the river accompanied by gunboats.

Arrived off Fortress Monroe about 8 o'clock in the evening, and anchored for the night.

I cannot describe my feelings on beholding this place again! 'Burnside's Fleet' are in Hampton Roads, and the several men-of-war.

On board, six have died since yesterday, and I do not know how many are dead in the after cabin. There is one poor fellow near me, who cannot stand it till morning.

Wednesday, Aug. 6th. The poor fellow near where I laid on deck, died at 12 last night. Since we started twenty have died. About 10 this forenoon, we received orders to go up the river to Norfolk, and there take in coal and ice to last us to Philadelphia. The trip was quite pleasant.

Passed the old rebel batteries on Sewall's Point; also the place where the 'Merrimac' was blown up, and the old U. S. Frigate 'United States' burned by the Secesh. I also saw Portsmouth, a very fine place. About one o'clock, we hauled alongside the wharf, and began taking in coal and ice. My goodness, how hot it is! Got aboard about 40 tons of coal, and about 5 tons of ice. We laid here till about 4 in the afternoon, when we swung off from the wharf, and 'steamed up' for the Fort for orders. A nice breeze sprung up, and it is very pleasant. Arrived off the Fort about half past 6, 'lay off and on' for about an hour. Got orders to go to Philadelphia. This was cheering to me, knowing that Massachusetts would send for her sick and wounded. Soon got under way, passing the Rip Raps, and proceeded out to sea by the large 'Light Boat.' It is a fine evening, and the stars are beginning to come out. Large porpoises jump out of the water and play around the steamer. The sea breeze has already begun to revive the sick. It does seem good to me!

Five more have died, making in all since last Monday

night twenty-five, mostly fever cases. They were kept too long at the Landing before they were sent away for the North, and many, I think, who have died on board would have been alive if they had been sent away before."

### PRISONERS EXCHANGED.

"Aug. 6, 1862. [Chase's Diary, Corporal Chase being with the Third Mass. Battery.] Thirty thousand prisoners returned from Richmond; among them Richard Heyes and Edward F. Smith of the 5th Mass. Battery, taken prisoners at the battle of Gaines Mills."

---

Grows' "Journal":—"Thursday, April 7, 1862. I only got about two hours' sleep last night. I laid down on deck. Excitement is now keeping me up. About 8 this morning passed the capes of Delaware, Cape May and Cape Henlopen, and entered the mouth of the river. We are now 100 miles from Philadelphia, and expect to get there about 3 this afternoon.

It does look splendid to see the farms on the banks of the river, Delaware on one side and Pennsylvania on the other; Philadelphia being on the left hand side, going up the river. Such neat houses and barns made me for the first time realize that I was coming near home. We arrived at 'quarantine' about 3 in the afternoon, and waited some time for the Doctor to come aboard before we could go to the city. He came at length and in a short time left us, when we proceeded up to the city, only 10 miles.

Arrived at the Pier in about an hour and made fast. After waiting almost an hour, everything then being in readiness we began to go ashore.

On landing I once again found myself in the presence of a vast throng of white men and women in citizens' dress. Some of the ladies grabbed my knapsack, others my canteen, and haversack, and overcoat, offering me tea, coffee.

cakes, wine, and water etc. I endeavored to get away from them, but it was of no use. I took a few cakes and some strong tea, and accepted a handkerchief from a young lady and started to go ahead, but soon found myself in the hands of two ladies, who passed me over to some gentlemen, who put me in a carriage to be sent to the Hospital. Such kindness I can never forget. On the way, a little boy came up to the carriage with a lot of nice pears, and threw them in, to us. After a drive of an hour we arrived at the Hospital, and I was shown to 'Ward W.'

Friday, Aug. 8th. At  $\frac{1}{2}$  past 10 this forenoon the surgeon's call was sounded, and those who were able, got up, put on their dressing-gowns and sat in the chair at the end of the bed.

I was greatly astonished to find the Doctor so kind. He soon came to my bed and talked with me. He ordered iron and lemon juice, and then passed on."

#### LETTER FROM LIEUT. PHILLIPS.

"CAMP AT HARRISON'S LANDING,

Aug. 8, 1862.

I received a letter from Mayor Taber of New Bedford last night, asking me to give him an account of things in the Battery, and I am preparing a long memorial on the subject.

Glad to see that Serg't. F. A. Lull has been commissioned Junior 2d. Lieutenant. . . . Lull's claims and qualifications were so much superior, that I was very much excited at the idea of his being overlooked. He is a good hearted, willing, and smart man, and will make a good officer." [Lull's commission was dated Aug. 1, 1862.]

Grows' "Journal":—"Saturday, Aug. 9, 1862. The Doctor came round at the usual hour and ordered me to continue with the same medicine. In each ward there are two men nurses, a ward master, and two Sisters of Charity,



and they are very kind, doing a large amount of good in relieving the suffering of the men.

About 8 this evening I was obliged to call the Doctor. He gave me some medicine, also some laudanum to make me sleep. Had a hard night of it—greatly distressed for breath.

Sunday, Aug. 10th. There are 1300 sick to arrive here today. Listened to the church bells. It made me feel blue. About 3 this afternoon, the sick began to arrive. I sat at the end of the ward, looking at them. They looked bad enough. Two were brought into my ward, both of them speechless, one of them looked dead, he was so far gone. The Doctors gave him some wine to revive him, but he could not speak, or take any notice. Poor fellow, we do not know where he belongs nor who he is."

#### FROM LETTERS OF LIEUT. PHILLIPS.

"Sunday, Aug. 10, 1862. No rain, no shade, no clouds, but day after day the same hot sun shining down from the same cloudless sky on the same parched earth. The heat tells on everybody. For the last few nights I have been trying to solve the problem how to cover up my head and feet with a short blanket, and I invariably give up in despair.

Our table is set in a rustic arbor, and we have white china cups, plates &c., and unlimited 'contrabands' to tend table and keep off the flies.

We have quite a large mess now: Captain Martin and his officers,—Lieutenants Dunn, Tyler, Walcott and Cargill,—Lieutenants Scott and Blake, and myself.

One of our men arrived here a day or two ago, discharged from hospital at Georgetown and ordered to report here for duty, and within 24 hours after his arrival our doctor reported him insane, and sent him to the hospital.

We keep two or three regiments over on the other side, and

a signal officer who was here yesterday told me that there were no signs of the enemy over there. Captain Henry Benson, who was wounded the other day at Malvern Hill, was the commander of one of the best Horse Batteries in the service. He was orderly sergeant at Bull Run, and got his commission for services there. He was at Hanover Court House and annoyed the enemy terribly.

One of our men picked up a shell thrown across the river by the rebels, which must have been taken from us at Gaines Mills or afterwards. It was a 3 inch Schenkle shell, which had been furnished to us only a few days before the fight. We left 15 rounds of these in our limbers, and Weeden left about as many more. Not understanding the nature of the projectiles the rebels had neglected to arrange the percussion fuze plug properly, and consequently the shell did not explode.

There is a most intense craving for a variety of food, and I hope our government will not furnish any more such hard bread as the men have had to eat for the last six months: hard, tasteless, and indigestible. I think it has killed a great many. It seems to me that Government might at least furnish as good bread as the common ship bread. The rebels are wise in this respect. They do not issue any hard bread, but serve out flour, and many a captured haversack has been found full of hot biscuit.

Sunday afternoon, August 10th Seymour's, formerly McCall's, Division went across the river. This being the other Division of the Corps we supposed we should follow. Sunday evening we got an order to be ready to march at 2 p. m. the next day on temporary service, with 5 days' rations and forage, 40 rounds of ammunition in cartridge boxes, 60 in the wagons. After various conjectures where we were going, we came to the conclusion that we were going on a reconnoissance to Petersburg.

The next morning the order was countermanded. I went

down to the shore to buy a thin flannel blouse but did not succeed. Sutlers, Quartermasters and Commissaries were packing up and sending their things on board steamers and schooners. Adams Express has been ordered to bring no more packages to Harrison's Landing, and everything looks like an evacuation. Meanwhile the weather continues hot and we are gradually shrinking away. I weighed myself (Aug. 11th) and found I had lost 15 pounds since leaving Gaines Hill."

#### THE BATTERY TEAMS.

CAMP NEAR HARRISON'S LANDING,

Aug. 11, 1862.

Captain Martin to Capt. Auchmuty A. A. G.

CAPT. AUCHMUTY.

Sir.

I have received orders to turn in 3 teams out of the number with which the Batteries are supplied. I beg leave to make the following statement in regard to this:—

There are four batteries in this Division; one [Captain Allen's] is without guns, but the men are mostly here, and the present supply of teams—13—gives merely three to each Battery and one Hospital team loaded exclusively with hospital stores.

The number of men attached to the Batteries is 477; according to the regimental allowance of one team for 200 men, it would require two and one half teams to carry rations &c. for these men. In addition to this we have 5 days' forage for 380 horses to carry,—This being the total number of horses actually with the Batteries. This amount of forage would weigh 26,100 pounds, and, if the number of teams is reduced, as the orders contemplate, we should have but  $6\frac{1}{2}$  teams to carry this amount, for which purpose each team would be loaded with 4,092 pounds, a load which would render it impossible for the teams to follow troops in light marching order.

I respectfully request that under these circumstances, there being a full complement of officers and men for four batteries, we may be allowed to retain the teams we now have.

Very respectfully,

Your ob't. serv't.

A. P. MARTIN, *Capt.*  
Com'd'g Division Art'y

---

Captain Martin was allowed to retain the teams.

Grows' "Journal":—(Philadelphia) "Monday, Aug. 11, 1862. One of the men brought in yesterday died in the night, the other is very low, and has not spoken yet. He had watchers all night.

Tuesday, Aug. 12th. Went to dinner at 12. Mutton chops, potatoes, gravy, bread etc. The Doctors tell us to eat all we can, and then it will take a great while to get the men up."

From a letter of Lieut. Phillips: "August 12, 1862. This forenoon some gunboats lying near the ordnance wharf opened on the opposite shore, bursting their shells somewhere up among the woods."

LETTER OF MAYOR TABER OF NEW BEDFORD  
AFTER RECEIVING THE MEMORIAL  
OF LIEUT. PHILLIPS.

"MAYOR'S OFFICE,  
CITY OF NEW BEDFORD,  
Aug. 14, 1862.

LIEUT. CHAS. A. PHILLIPS.

*Dr. Sir.*

Accept my sincere thanks for your full and frank letter of the 8th inst.

In stating to you that it corroborates in every particular a statement I have received, signed by seventy-five of the Battery, you can estimate its value to me. Every account I have received has been of one tenor. You are probably aware of the strong interest I have felt in the welfare of the Battery. The majority of its members I am personally acquainted with, and know them to be reliable men, who would not under any circumstances shirk a duty; brave men and hardy. Tell them all that my best exertions shall be used for its recuperation.

In the meantime, I would be pleased to hear from you any suggestions you feel inclined to make, and in anything that

may tend to restore the confidence of the men,—which appears to be unlimited in you,—or to promote the interests of the Battery, command me in any way.

Very sincerely Yrs.

I. C. TABER.

I shall see Gov. Andrew within a few days, and with his authority will endeavor to obtain some recruits."

#### LETTER OF THOMAS E. CHASE.

"HARRISON'S LANDING, JAMES RIVER, VA.

Aug. 14, 1862.

I wrote you on the 25th ult., I think, and after I had finished my letter I found that my last stamp was a 1 cent one. and I could not beg, borrow, or steal one, so I sent it without a stamp, signed by our Lieutenant, as I frequently do. Perhaps it did not reach you. Myself and 25 others are with the 3d Mass. Battery, but when Captain Allen comes, we expect to be reorganized. The Captain will, if possible, return on the 26th instant. . . . The Army, or portions of it are preparing to leave the Peninsula, and our knapsacks were taken from us last Sunday, and our tents, with the knapsacks, are already on ship-board. Where we are going we know not. . . . The weather is scorching hot and the 'light weights' are in great danger of being carried off by the mosquitoes. They are well drilled and make furious charges and make night hideous with their infernal buzzing."

## CHAPTER XIII.

### FROM HARRISON'S LANDING TO ACQUIA CREEK.

### THE BATTLE OF SECOND MANASSAS OR SEC- OND BULL RUN.

AUGUST 30, 1862.

"But north looked the Dictator;  
North looked he long and hard."

—LORD MACAULAY.

### THE RELIEF OF MAJ. GEN. JOHN POPE.—THE PROTECTION OF WASHINGTON.

They were ten days getting ready to move, and on August 14th, 1862, at 5 p. m. the Army was set in motion, Porter's Corps marching to Williamsburg, halfway between Yorktown and the Chickahominy River, according to orders there to await the arrival of the next Corps.

All superfluous baggage had been packed up and put on board a schooner, and on Thursday, August 14th, just after supper, Scott, Phillips, Chase and others being with the Third Mass. Battery, orders were received to get ready to start immediately, so they hitched up, packed up, and waited till about 10.30 p. m. when they moved forward parallel with the river towards Fortress Monroe.

"By midnight," wrote Phillips, "the Division had got stretched out on the road and we halted in a jam. I lay down on a limber, with my reins in my hands, and got what sleep I could.

At 3 in the morning of the 15th the column again started. Sykes was ahead of us. The weather was beautiful and cool, the road was very good, and the Provost Guard not



being such an institution as formerly the corn fields which were abundant, were pretty well stripped. At every halt fires were lighted and ears of corn roasted. Peaches were plenty but not ripe. There were tomatoes enough to furnish at least one meal a day, and on the whole we lived well. About 5 o'clock in the afternoon we crossed the Chickahominy, near its mouth, on a pontoon bridge over seven hundred yards long, and camped a mile from the shore."

This pontoon bridge, it has been said, surpassed in construction, skill and capacity, anything that had been attempted in the annals of military bridge building.

On August 16, 1862, news was received at Porter's Head Quarters, that the main body of the enemy was moving north, intending to crush Pope before McClellan could come to his relief, and to proceed directly to Washington. General Porter sent this information to McClellan, and reported that, unless otherwise ordered, he would leave Williamsburg at 4 a. m. August 17th without waiting for the arrival of the next Corps; would complete the march to Newport News, and hasten to General Pope's relief. This he did, and in pursuance of this plan, the Division moved on the 16th, passed through Williamsburg and camped at 5 p. m. close by Fort Magruder, about half a mile outside the city.

Only the Fifth Corps went to Acquia Creek, the remainder of the Army of the Potomac went directly to Alexandria, Va. seven miles from Washington.

On Sunday, Aug. 17th, Porter's Division marched at 7 a. m. and encamped within a mile of Big Bethel. "Reached Yorktown (Chase's Diary) at 1 p. m. and made coffee at our old camp ground of April 5, 1862."

Phillips refers to this revisiting of old scenes in the following words:—"As we passed through Yorktown I rode into our old camp. Everything was changed. Grass and weeds growing everywhere. My bedstead still remained,

and the grove around our tents. My chair was gone. The house that we built at Wormley's Creek was all gone, the ruins of the chimney still remaining."

The same day they marched three miles beyond Howard's Mills and camped, reaching Newport News on the 18th and going into park about 1.30 p. m. "A bath in salt water" writes Chase, "was a luxury enjoyed by some."

Meanwhile the sick and wounded waited in the Hospitals.

Grows' "Journal":—"Sunday, Aug. 17, 1862. (Philadelphia.) Prof. W. B. Rogers of Boston, came into the ward with his brother who is our surgeon. He talked with me, took my name, and residence when at home. He starts for Boston tomorrow, and will attend to my being transferred to a Massachusetts hospital. Divine service was held this afternoon, but I did not attend, not feeling able."

Chase in a letter of the 18th says his health is "tip top."

Tuesday the 19th, at 7 a. m., the Fifth Corps marched to Hampton, and taking the three batteries of the Division and Thompson's Battery of the Artillery Reserve on board the "City of Norwich," hauled into the stream off Fortress Monroe. In the morning of the 20th they sailed up Chesapeake Bay towing two schooners and three barges, bound for Acquia Creek, Va., a point of advantage between Fredericksburg and Washington, and anchored that night in the Potomac River.

On Thursday, August 21st, they landed at Acquia Creek, and with relation to the accommodations, Lt. Phillips writes: "the Colonel commanding the Post taking compassion upon us, we spread our blankets on his office floor, and slept there all night."

On Friday, Aug. 22d, about 5 p. m., leaving Waterman's Fourth, R. I. Battery, which included the 30 members of the Fifth Mass., at Acquia Creek, the Third Mass. Battery and its contingent marched 8 or 10 miles beyond, towards Fred-

ericksburg, Va., which is 55 miles from Washington, and about equidistant from that city and Richmond.

They camped on the road.

On Saturday, August 23d, General Porter started his command in a southerly direction at daybreak, and marched to Falmouth on the opposite bank of the Rappahannock River from Fredericksburg. Here they stopped to rest until 4 p. m., and during the interval Lieut. Phillips called upon General Ambrose E. Burnside, and went over to Fredericksburg. See p. 443 Burnside.

In the afternoon, the march was resumed for 10 miles towards Culpeper Court House, Va., on the Orange and Alexandria railroad, 69 miles from Washington and 12 miles north of the Rapidan River. The roads were very hilly and rocky, and crossed frequently by beautiful little brooks. They camped near Deep Run. The next day, August 24th, was Sunday. In the Hospital, at Philadelphia, Grows wrote in his journal: "About 3 this afternoon Surgeon Dr. Hays came through the ward for inspection, which lasted a 'short time. A Doctor was buried 'under arms' this afternoon. There are not many deaths here now."

In camp by Deep Run reveille sounded at daylight. The Third Battery marched in company with Sykes's Division to Culpeper Court House, hearing reports of rebels ahead between them and General Morell's Division: countermarched about one and a half miles, recrossing Deep Run, and went "In Battery" on the brow of a small hill behind Regular Battery D, 5th U. S. (Griffin's). "Changed positions" (Chase's Diary) "with Battery D, about 11 a. m."

Lt. Phillips speaks of the battle array as "making a most formidable appearance spread over the hills." At 3.30 the Battery again limbered up and for the third time that day marching over the same road, joined Morell's Division.

Grows' Journal:—"Aug. 25, 1862. (Philadelphia.)

Orders came today for none of the men to be allowed 'passes' till after the 1st of September, and this makes it very hard, as many of the men have families living here in the city."

The evolutions of August 25th were much the same, the Third Mass. Battery starting out at 6 a. m. They marched a mile, halted till 12 o'clock, turned round, marched back, and camping on the same ground they left, remained there that day.

And here is the first mention of the restoration of the guns to the Fifth Mass. Battery, all that was lacking to place it upon its former footing in the army. Lieut. Phillips wrote home in a letter dated "Vicinity of Deep Run or Barrett's Ford, or *somewhere*":—"General Burnside is rather interested in the Fifth Battery, and I think I shall get some guns pretty soon."

On Tuesday, Aug. 26th, at 3 a. m., reveille was sounded, and they marched with the Division to Kelly's Ford, about 9 miles from Deep Run and 12 miles above Barrett's Ford. Lieut. Phillips put one section on picket, and sent Lieut. Scott and three wagons to Falmouth for forage. Heavy cannonading was heard in front. The next day they marched past Bealton to Warrenton Junction.

#### MET POPE AND GOING NORTH.

It was on August 27th, 1862, at 10 o'clock a. m. that General Porter joined General Pope at Warrenton Junction on the Orange and Alexandria railroad, 48 miles from Washington. General Pope finding his Right turned by General Ewell, had fallen back towards Warrenton, where he was joined by General Joseph Hooker. Overtaking the rebels under Ewell at Haymarket a severe fight ensued, terminating at night in the defeat of the enemy. On that day the Federal gunboats destroyed the rebel works at City Point, Va.

## THE SECOND BATTLE OF MANASSAS.

The first battle of Manassas or Bull Run was fought July 21, 1861, and the Union troops under McDowell were defeated by the Confederates under Beauregard. The stream called Bull Run was described at the time as a mere rivulet, dry in many places, but containing from four to six feet of water in the channel after heavy rains. It extends for about six miles north and south, and is crossed by the Manassas railroad. A Confederate battery which made great havoc among our troops was situated on a slight eminence in a ravine on the west side of the Run.

The only places besides the fords at intervals of a mile or two, where the stream could be crossed, were three bridges, viz., a stone structure, over which passes the Warrenton turnpike; a wooden bridge at Blackburn's Ford seven miles below, on the direct road from Centreville to Manassas; and a mile or so below this, the bridge by which the Orange and Alexandria Railway is carried over Bull Run. Three miles beyond Bull Run is Manassas Junction where the rebels had intrenched themselves, the stream itself forming a defensive line eight miles in length from the Stone Bridge to the railroad; the wooded slopes of the hills furnishing masks for batteries. Sudley's Ford across Bull Run was two or three miles above Stone Bridge.

The battlefield of Manassas or Bull Run, is 34 miles from Washington, about four miles from the railroad station at the junction of the Orange and Alexandria and Manassas Gap railroads.

"Aug. 28, 1862. (Chase's Diary.) Reveille at 1.30 a. m. Left camp about 3 a. m. Marched half an hour and halted an hour for troops to pass; halted near the railroad cars. Saw the ruins of a train burned by the rebels the night of August 26th. Heavy cannonading heard in front

p. m. Marched to Bristoe Station, reaching there at 1 p. m."

The night of the 28th Sigel's command was just south of the Warrenton turnpike, the portion running from Gainesville to Centreville, part on the left near Newmarket, the remainder near the junction of the turnpike and Sudley Springs road at Groveton. Kearney was at Centreville. Heintzelman was with Hooker at Bull Run. Porter was at Bristoe. Part of McDowell's Corps had contested unsuccessfully the passage of Longstreet through Thoroughfare Gap in the Bull Run Mountains, through which passes the Manassas Gap R. R. from the country west of the Blue Ridge Mountains, through Manassas Gap and Thoroughfare Gap, to Manassas Junction, and part had been engaged with the enemy near Groveton.

Banks with his Corps was guarding the army trains at Bristoe.

On the rebel side, Longstreet was encamped at the foot of the mountain, on the eastern slope, having passed through Thoroughfare Gap.

On the morning of the 29th of August, the position was as follows:—The rebel general Jackson had marched round Pope's right flank, gained his rear, captured large supplies at Manassas, cut his railroad communication by the Orange and Alexandria R. R. with Washington, and was awaiting the arrival of other rebel forces under Lee on the old battlefield of Bull Run.

The Fifth Mass. Battery men with the Third Mass. Battery left camp at 6.30 a. m. when the advance met the enemy. They opened one or more batteries on our troops but fired slowly. Our batteries and infantry were placed in position to give the enemy battle. "We marched," wrote Phillips, "to Manassas Junction, then up the Manassas Gap R. R. towards Thoroughfare Gap, and Morell's Division formed line of battle on the hills in a splendid position, our



pickets being within hearing distance of Thoroughfare Gap, and hearing the Rebel troops passing. Our infantry was formed in plain sight and the rebels opened a battery on them, killing one or two. The infantry then retired under cover and Hazlett's Battery [5th U. S. Battery D, Lt. Charles E. Hazlett] shelled a little. While I was expecting an attack on our part I learned it was proposed to retire as we came. However, after commanding and countermanding we stayed there that night."

On August 30, 1862, at half past three in the morning, Major General Fitz John Porter received from Major General John Pope orders, written in the field on the previous evening at 8.50, to march his command immediately to the field of battle of that day, and to report to him in person for orders.

"You are to understand," so ran the despatch, "that you are expected to comply strictly with this order, and to be present on the field within three hours after its reception, or after daybreak tomorrow morning."

To reach the field within three hours after the reception of the orders at 3.30 a. m. would be before half past six, but daylight came so soon after that Porter, in order to obey instructions, was obliged to make a flank movement with his entire force in the presence of the enemy. Orders coming to Morell from Porter to lose not a moment in carrying out these instructions, Morell issued his orders to his command, and at the head of Griffin's Brigade which Martin's Battery followed, took the direct road to Centreville.

General Pope was at Groveton. It is said that Morell's caution and circumspection with reference to Griffin's Brigade, waiting till he had called in his skirmishers, caused him to lose sight of the rest of his Division, and in going to Centreville he supposed he was following Sykes according to instructions, but Sykes had gone to Groveton. Orders

were sent to Morell on the Gainesville road which of course did not reach him.

General Porter reported to General Pope as directed, and placed his Corps north of the Warrenton turnpike near the Dogan house, facing toward the west. Next him was Sigel, then Reno, then Heintzelman. Ricketts and King were in reserve. South of the Warrenton pike was Reynolds' Division. Sykes occupied a corn field in front of the Dogan house on both sides of the Warrenton road. Morell's Division was on the right of Sykes. Immediately in front and to the left of Reynolds was rising ground covered with timber and scrub oak. On Porter's right front was a forest, and between the two was cleared ground a half mile in extent, across which was an elevated ridge occupied by the enemy's artillery commanding this cleared space and the turnpike, and in a position to concentrate a direct flank fire upon our forces in case we made the attack. The enemy's forces were concealed; the Union forces were in plain sight of the enemy.

It appears that it had been the design of General Pope on the day before to possess himself of the coverts provided by these forests, but his efforts were unsuccessful, resulting in much loss; his only gain being the knowledge, too dearly bought, that the rebel general Jackson was present in large force especially on the Left, and that he had the advantage at the north of a railroad embankment to add to the strength of his position. It is said that General Porter learned at General Pope's headquarters, that the efforts of the 29th had been mainly a series of skirmishes, artillery contests at long range, and a few attacks, after strong protests and delay, by Brigades and separate Divisions resulting in repulses and heavy losses.

Between 12 and 1 p. m. of the 30th, Porter was ordered to push forward on the Warrenton turnpike to be followed by King and Reynolds, while the Division of Ricketts would

pursue the Haymarket road followed by the Corps of General Heintzelman. The cavalry was to be assigned by General McDowell.

Orders from McDowell directed Porter :—

“Organize a strong advance to precede your command, and push on rapidly in pursuit of the enemy until you come in contact with him. Report frequently. Bayard’s brigade will be ordered to report to you: push it well to the left as you advance.”

Reynolds and Porter, it is affirmed, were confident that the enemy with numerous artillery were massing their forces on the left.

General McDowell believed the enemy was retreating when they had merely withdrawn from the Right in order to concentrate on our Left.

General Porter prepared for a strong attack, which Butterfield supported by Sykes commenced at 3 p. m., charging across the open field nearly to the woods, hoping to sweep round to the left and take the guns of the enemy, but were repelled by musketry fire on the right and front, and an incessant cross fire of artillery. They held their ground 30 minutes assisted by Hazlett’s Battery.

General Porter had desired the help of Sigel; he again asked for it after Butterfield’s repulse, but the necessity was comprehended too late. The enemy was in a position to sweep the entire ground, over which the Fifth Corps had to pass, with its numerous artillery, and its musketry protected by the railway embankment, and four desperate attacks, most gallantly made, were repulsed, in the attempt to take the embankment, our men being fired upon by many with stones, time being too pressing to admit of loading firearms. The rebel general Longstreet attempted to cut the Union troops off from the turnpike by pressing upon Warren on our Left.

Porter’s attack with proper support might have broken Jackson’s line but with the terrible fire from the enemy’s guns it was madness to continue, and the order was given

to retire to the plateau in the rear of the Henry and Robinson houses which commanded the Stone Bridge over Bull Run, which was saved. It was at the Henry house on the right of the turnpike that General Morell joined the 1st Division having ridden from Centreville.

Weeden's Fourth R. I. Battery, Captain Richard Waterman commanding, in which were thirty of our Fifth Mass. Battery men, took position on the heights near the Warrenton turnpike, commanding the field, over which Butterfield was to advance to the attack. One section, the remainder staying on the hill at the Henry house, advanced later to within canister range of the woods, but returned soon after and fired shrapnell at the enemy's infantry in the edge of the woods, limbering up to fall back with the infantry. (Sigel.) Subsequently they went into position on the top of Bull Run Hill, covering the charge on the Left of our lines, and at 7.30 p. m. moved with the Army to Centreville.

Louis E. Pattison served as cannoneer throughout the campaign.

The Adjutant General's Report of the state of Rhode Island, 1865, in its casualties gives "one man wounded."

It is recorded in the official reports of the Adjutant General of the state of Massachusetts, that the Fourth R. I. Battery was engaged in the Second Battle of Bull Run, and "one of the men of the Fifth (Mass.) Battery was wounded."

The name of this soldier was Francis Oldis, and he was taken to Washington, D. C., and placed with the wounded in "Ward P" of the Armory Hospital. He subsequently rejoined the reunited Fifth Mass. Battery.

## NOTES OF LOUIS E. PATTISON.

Nov. 2, 1901.

"Only one section of the Fourth R. I. Battery went into action on the Bull Run field. The whole battery went into

position when Longstreet was coming through the Gap, but my recollection is that no shots were fired. On the next day on the old Bull Run field, General Sigel ordered Captain Waterman to proceed to a position near the R. R. cut, and Captain Waterman replied that he must have orders from General Porter. Sigel replied angrily that Porter could fight his men, and he would fight his own, and you can readily see why our forces were unsuccessful."

---

The Captain called for volunteers from the Left and Centre sections to help man the Right section to go into action near the R. R. cut, and Sergt. William B. Pattison and his brother Louis E. Pattison of the Fifth Mass. Battery volunteered to go with the Right section into action.

Lieut. Richard Waterman in command of the battery was promoted to captain July 25th, 1862, receiving his commission in the field.

Colonel J. Albert Monroe of the 1st Rhode Island Light Artillery of which the "Fourth" was "Battery C," says, in a paper published by the Soldiers and Sailors Historical Society of Rhode Island:—

"Our northern historians when it has been necessary to mention the artillery, have not been so painstaking [reference to the Southerners who mentioned them with great accuracy] and have generally only incidentally mentioned that 'a battery' here or there did so and so, ignoring entirely what particular battery it was, or who commanded it, unless it was a regular battery, and in that case it is designated by its commanding officer's name. The exceptions are comparatively few, and they seem to be accidental, rather than intentional!"

He observes,

"the marked contrast between the honorable mention of infantry and cavalry with that of light artillery batteries."

Having by long and careful reading been impressed with the justice of this criticism, pains have been taken in the present work to make conspicuous the well authenticated movements of the light artillery, to give the complete official designations of the batteries, and whenever they are called

by the names of their commanders, the full name is given at the first mention.

Anxiously the men in the hospitals north and south were looking for news on that day. Grows wrote in his journal: "Saturday, Aug. 30, 1862. (Philadelphia.) Got the papers to see about the Army. The news is not very encouraging, but still we all hope for the best."

Lt. Phillips's notes of the event now before us contain the following observations:—

"Saturday, Aug. 30, 1862, we began to retire at 3 a. m. Griffin's Brigade and Martin's Battery forming the rear guard. I waited till the pickets were all drawn in, and the troops gone, but no rebels appeared.

#### AT CENTREVILLE.

Returning to the Junction we marched up the railroad, forded Bull Run and went into park near Centreville with Griffin's brigade, the rest of the Division having got out of sight and hearing. Some cannonading was going on, but this was too common to excite attention. We started a plum duff, but before it was finished we got orders to hitch up and started for Bull Run,—finally going on across Bull Run. By dark we reached Stone Bridge, Franklin's forces marching with us. Here we found our troops retiring, and halted till General Franklin ordered us to return, and we camped in Centreville about midnight. Butterfield's and Martindale's brigades badly cut up. Fletcher Webster reported killed."

From the Notes of Corporal Chase of the 5th Mass. then with the 3rd Mass. Battery:—"August 30, 1862. Hitched up at 4 a. m. and relieved Battery D, 5th U. S. (Hazlett's) in front, and remained in position half an hour, then left for Centreville, Va. Reached Centreville at 11 a. m. Caissons sent to the rear this morning. Saw about 150 prisoners at



Centreville. Hitched up at 5 p. m. and started to reinforce the troops in front; advanced about a mile and a half to the front when we met teams and wounded soldiers coming to the rear. In a short time the whole army appeared to be retreating in the wildest confusion. For about three hours the troops both able and disabled continued to pass us; 3rd Mass. Battery countermarched and camped on heights at Centreville."

Captain Waterman's battery moved by order of General Morell from Centreville, on the morning of August 31st towards Alexandria, to procure forage for the horses, they being in a very exhausted state, not having had any grain for five days. It moved as far as Fairfax Court House and encamped; three of the horses having dropped dead from exhaustion as the battery moved into camp. In front of the Third Battery cannonading was heard, and the smoke seen. Hacks were arriving from Washington to remove the wounded. The Battery advanced about an eighth of a mile to the front about 11 a. m., and went "In Battery" supported by a large force of infantry. Several lines of battle formed and skirmishers were thrown out, remaining in position all day and night, but all remained quiet until late in the evening, when the advance batteries began to shell the woods, and the pickets and skirmishers fired several volleys of musketry. Generals Pope and McDowell passed the Battery in the evening. No mail was received, no newspapers, and all interest seemed to be centred in the wagons which had been sent to Alexandria and Falmouth for supplies which were sorely needed, when the alarming news reached the waiting lines, so advantageously placed upon the hills of Centreville, that the enemy was between the Army of the Potomac and Washington!

Soon after the first battle of Bull Run the Richmond *Whig* of July 24, 1861, published the following under the head-line of "The Devoted Band":—

"The shortest path to peace is that which carries havoc and desolation to our invaders. It is believed that there are five or ten thousand men in the South ready and willing to share the fate of Curtius and devote themselves to the salvation of the country. It is proposed that all who are willing to make this sacrifice, shall arm themselves with a sword, two five shooters and a carbine each, and meet, on horseback, at some place to be designated, convenient for the great work in hand. Fire and sword must be carried to the houses of those who are visiting those blessings upon their neighbors. Philadelphia, and even New York, is not beyond the reach of a long and brave arm. The moral people of these cities cannot be better taught the virtues of invasion, than by the blazing light of their own dwellings. None need apply for admission to 'The Devoted Band' but those who are prepared to take their life in their hand, and who would indulge not the least expectation of ever returning. *They dedicate their lives to the destruction of their enemies.*

A. S. B. D. B.  
Richmond.

All Southern papers are requested to give this notice a few insertions."

Now, after a year had passed, and another Bull Run battle had been fought, the "long and brave arm" was actually stretching out its hand very near indeed to Washington, with the index finger pointing to Baltimore.

A few miles northwest of Fairfax Court House, Kearny was desperately opposing its force at Chantilly, where he made the gallant dash which cost him his life.

### "THE SYMBOLS OF GOVERNMENT."

Hunger and fatigue so lately controlling emotions, passed out of mind. Chagrin at the second failure at Manassas lost its sharpest sting in the actual presence of the peril, which had so long threatened the citadel which held the "symbols of government," the treaties and seals, for the safety of which Edwin M. Stanton then Buchanan's attorney general, had trembled, long before the first rebel gun was fired.

## THE PROTECTION OF WASHINGTON.

General McClellan wrote General Porter September 1, 1862, 5.30 p. m.:—

“This week is the crisis of our fate. Say the same thing to all my friends in the Army of the Potomac, and that the last request I have to make of them is, that for their country’s sake they will extend to General Pope the same support they ever have to me. I am in charge of the defenses of Washington.”

At the close of General Porter’s acknowledgment of this letter, he said:—

“Our killed, wounded, and enfeebled troops attest our devoted duty.”

It was McClellan who disposed the troops around Washington, placing the Fifth Corps on Hall’s Hill. Not being able to procure either rations or forage, the Fourth R. I. Battery moved on the 1st of September to within five miles of Alexandria, where part of one day’s rations of grain was secured.

“The morning of that day,” Chase wrote, “was cloudy and windy. Guns of the Third Mass. Battery still ‘in Battery.’ Went with horses, for hay, about a mile, with several regiments of infantry and a section of a battery for protection against guerillas, a. m. Thunderstorm with cold, heavy rain at 5 p. m. Left position about 12 p. m.”

Phillips says of this tempest, “It began to rain just after we had got orders to be ready to move and had struck our tarpaulins. I lay down with my overcoat on, on a wet pile of hay, and tried to persuade myself that I was not wet through, but did not succeed.” On that day (Sept. 1st) he afterwards wrote, “there was something of a fight. I have learnt no particulars.”

## THE EXPEDITION OF LT. SCOTT.

The historian of the Third Mass. Battery thus describes the expedition for rations [see p. 417] in charge of Lt. Henry D. Scott:—

"Our army started to re-enforce General Pope's army then at Centreville.

General Lee was advancing to meet General Pope. The artillery brigade carried ten days' rations from Falmouth then the base of supplies. When out twenty miles they had used seven days' rations. Captain Augustus P. Martin, chief of the Fifth Corps Artillery, sent eighteen wagons belonging to the batteries of the Artillery Brigade in charge of Lt. Scott of the Fifth Mass. Battery back to Falmouth for rations. John D. Reed of the Third Mass. (Battery) was ordered to report to him as his assistant.

They started at four o'clock in the afternoon, run within four miles of the ration depot and went into park at nine o'clock: started at daylight for the depot. Met an extra supply train at Falmouth Heights loaded with rations for the Fifth Corps: 75 wagons. We loaded our train with forage and as soon as possible started for the batteries. . . . Orders to hurry along and reach the army at Bealton before dark 29 miles from there. Rebel cavalry had crossed the river 25 miles above. General Burnside had returned from Newbern, N. C., and with a part of his army was encamped at Fredericksburg and Falmouth. There were several hundreds of wagons on the road. An orderly on the dead run ordered the trains to turn back. The enemy had captured over three hundred wagons, and destroyed the telegraph station three miles up the road.

The Fifth Corps supply train that we met was among those captured.

We were then 15 miles from Falmouth, halfway between the Army of the Potomac and General Burnside. About dark a cavalry force and a flying artillery battery were sent out by General Burnside for our protection. At 12 o'clock at night we arrived inside the picket line at Falmouth, men and animals played out. At daylight started for Acquia Creek, arriving there at noon. A rebel battery followed us

and at intervals shelled the train. The wagons and mules were loaded on steamers and sailed for Alexandria. When we arrived there the army was retreating back from Second Bull Run. The batteries camped at Upton's Hill, where we reached them with the forage six days after starting for it. The horses in the batteries had been four days without grain or hay, having only that which they could graze in the fields."

The trains of stores which were collected at Warrenton and Warrenton Junction, and were at Bristoe, Sept. 1, 1862, were stopped at that place on account of the bridge at Bristoe having been destroyed by the rebels. Sept. 2d, the Fourth Rhode Island Battery moved to Alexandria.

Gen. McClellan was appointed to the command of the troops for the defence of Washington.

From about 12 o'clock midnight, September 1st, the Third Mass. Battery marched to sunrise of the morning of the 2d, going three-quarters of a mile from the bivouac of the previous day. They marched with a large body of troops—among them General Piatt and Battery H, 1st Ohio Artillery, who joined them on the route having been attached to the Division,—and a large baggage train, to Fairfax Court House, where they halted about 11 a. m. for breakfast. Here Lt. Scott met them having come from Alexandria. Marched again at 2 p. m. : halted on the way while skirmishers were thrown out and line of battle formed : waited about an hour and a half, then proceeded : the rear guard attacked and heavy cannonading heard. John G. Sanford and Thomas E. Chase were obliged to straggle in the rear with disabled horses. In the evening the Battery arrived at Chain Bridge. On the 3d of September the Fourth Rhode Island Battery marched to Miner's, near Hall's, Hill, and rejoined the Division. All other divisional batteries had remained with the commands.

Chase and Sanford, minus one horse etc., found the Third

Mass. Battery after much trouble on the morning of the 3d. They hitched up at 9 a. m., marched to Hall's Hill, Va., with other troops and camped in the old camp of the Mass. 22d. Regiment. Rickett's Division was occupying Captain Martin's old camp.

Lt. Phillips closes a letter with the words:—

"I went down to our old camp and looked around.

'The King of France with 40,000 men

Marched up the hill and then marched down again.'"

### SCOTT'S SUMMING UP.

Lt. Scott thus comments on the situation:—"The enemy got tired waiting for McClellan to decide what to do, and started for Washington. The Army of the Potomac was ordered by the President to the protection of that city. The feeling of McClellan and his admirers seemed to be that they wanted to get General Pope, who was guarding Washington, driven into the Potomac.

The Army moved at once to Hampton, and were transported to Acquia Creek, moving to Fredericksburg and from there to Kelly's Ford on the Rappahannock to assist Pope. The final result was that Lee drove both armies on to Washington."



## CHAPTER XIV.

### THE BATTERY REUNITED.

"The great art of war consists in knowing how to separate in order to subsist, and how to concentrate in order to fight."

—NAPOLEON BONAPARTE.

### THE FIFTH MASS. BATTERY REUNITED AND REINSTATED.

RE-ASSIGNED TO THE FIRST DIVISION.

#### 5TH ARMY CORPS.

On September 3d, 1862, the enemy was no longer to be seen in front of Washington, but was far on its way north, and McClellan, with all the troops not needed in Washington, was in pursuit.

Our pickets having been driven in, about 4 p. m. of the 4th, the Third Mass. Battery hitched up and marched with the whole infantry force towards Falls Church, Va., to meet the enemy. "Marched about three-quarters of a mile (Chase's Diary), then countermarched with the other troops to our camp; the enemy who had but a small force, withdrew after a few shots from their batteries.—Countersign 'Yorktown 5th.'—[Other countersigns given on p. 797 contributed by General A. P. Martin, November, 1899.]

Grows' Journal: "Sept. 1, 1862. The Doctor took my name for a discharge. 5th. I was much pleased at seeing my papers this forenoon. They will be sent to General Montgomery to sign today. 7th. About 3 this afternoon Surgeon Gen. Dr. Hayes and his assistant came into the

ward for inspection. This is done every Sunday, for the purpose of seeing that things are kept clean and in their places."

David Henry Grows was discharged for disability Sept. 10, 1862.

### LETTER OF SERG'T. PEACOCK.

"HALL'S HILL, VA.

Sept. 6, 1862.

Here I am in the old camp we left last spring. Everything looks about as we left it. We have had a hard time of it since leaving James River—constant marching and fighting for over three weeks. I was all through the Bull Run fight with Lieut. (Thomas M.) Cargill and the Third Mass. Battery caissons. These were upon the battle field while the guns went to Centreville.

It is a sad sight to see Porter's Division at the present time, worn out and ragged. Camps that held one Reg't. six months ago, now accommodate two Brigades! The 83d Penn. that left in March with 1100 men, now numbers 90, and no one Regt. over 200 men.

Our Battery is 75 men short by sickness and death. We expect to leave here in the morning to be recruited up and reorganized. Our knapsacks were sent off at Harrison's Landing over a month ago, so about all we have is what we stand in.

P. S. We go from here to Fort Corcoran."

---

"In the afternoon of September 6, 1862, the 5th and 3d Batteries [Corporal Chase still keeping the distinctive titles] were mustered for pay by Lt. C. A. Phillips, commanding. Received orders after supper to strike tents. The 3d Mass. Battery was to go to Alexandria to refit. Hitched up at 8 p. m. Marched towards Alexandria about 12 p. m. (a

silent, rapid march through the darkness) and halted near Alexandria at sunrise on the morning of the 7th, Sunday. Arrived about noon at Fairfax Seminary [A theological institution occupied as a hospital for the sick and wounded of our Army] and went into camp. All the Army except Morell's Division seemed to have disappeared."

From a Letter of Lieut. Phillips: "Sunday Evening Sept. 7, 1862. Fairfax Seminary:—I was not very well at Harrison's Landing, but a march always cures me. . . . When we left Hall's Hill for the Peninsula, I left my bedstead with Mr. Osborn, not expecting to see it again. Our unexpected return to this locality prompted me to look after it, and I found it all right, and I intend to stick by it hereafter."

On Monday the 8th they marched to Upton's Hill near Washington, and camped with Griffin's Brigade.

#### LETTER OF THOMAS E. CHASE.

"UPTON'S HILL, VA.

Sept. 10, 1862.

Well, here we are again, just where we started from last spring. We have been within 4 miles of Richmond and now we are in sight of the National Capital. Little did we think, last spring, that the Army of the Potomac were to drive the enemy to the wall and after a tedious campaign and hard fighting, we would return to our old camping ground and the enemy still unconquered. We left Harrison's Landing on the night of the 14th ult. and marched to Hampton where we took a steamer to Acquia Creek, on the Potomac, and from there we have marched here by way of Fredericksburg and Manassas. . . . We have had no change of clothing since the 7th ult. and until our arrival here—Sept. 3d—we did not have time to wash our clothing and sufficiently dry it. We washed it and put it on wet

and thanks to the hot sun it was soon dry. This is what old braggadocio Pope calls 'light marching order.' We have marched over many miles of the road between Fredericksburg and here *three* times. We would advance eight or ten miles in the morning, then halt for two or three hours, then countermarch, and in the night of the same day advance again, and take position in line of battle with other troops and expect an engagement every minute. Some days we would go ahead all the way from six to twenty-five miles a day. We have escaped all the fights by mere luck or accident, but we have seen all their horrors. At the battle of Manassas we were ordered to the front about 5 p. m., and after we had advanced about a mile, we met large numbers of the wounded coming to the rear. Soon they came in crowds, and finally the whole Army. The road was blocked up with troops, and we were obliged to countermarch. The wounded passed us in every stage of mutilation, some of them on horseback with their legs and arms amputated, and the naked stumps exposed to the view of those just ordered to the front. We are here to rest and recruit, and if old Jackson will be civil for a few days our Battery will in all probability be recruited, for we have had new officers lately commissioned for our old Battery. Twenty-eight new recruits have arrived, some for the 3d Battery; among them is one D. C. Chase of Charlestown, Mass.

Thursday morning, Sept. 11, 1862: We have our guns 'in battery' at the outposts at Upton's Hill with Griffin's Brigade. We are under the same restrictions here that we were on the Peninsula, although within two miles of the National Capital. We have a good place to camp and have plenty of soft bread served out to us. We are having a good rest and fast recruiting."

---

On Thursday the 11th Lt. Phillips went to Washington

and had a short interview with General Fitz John Porter, who requested him to address a paper to him in relation to the reorganization of the Fifth Mass. Battery. Lt. Phillips accordingly drew up a short memorial, concluding with a request for the members of the Fifth Battery to be placed in camp by themselves and supplied with guns. In Lt. Phillips' own words:—"I did not expect an immediate compliance with this request, but I had it forwarded so as to reach him that afternoon. I then went into the city and returned about dark. As it had commenced to rain I concluded to stop over night with Blake who was camped with the wagons near Fort Corcoran. The next morning, September 12th, Scott rode down before I was up, and gave me a telegraphic order, which Captain Martin had received Thursday evening, as follows:—

UNITED STATES MILITARY TELEGRAPH.

Received Sept. 11, 1862.

From Fort Corcoran

To Capt. A. P. Martin Chief of Art'y.

Direct Lt. Phillips to make requisitions for a new battery without delay.

GEO. W. MORELL

M. G.

At the same time, Scott told me, the whole Division had got marching orders and were probably on the road then. I saw at once that to get my guns I must stop behind, but this order gave no directions whatever.

I immediately rode up the road till I met Captain Martin, and we went to General Morell's Hd. Qrs. and succeeded in getting a verbal order to keep my men here in camp till I was supplied.

Captain Waterman was not over much pleased at losing the men [from the Fourth R. I. Battery] but I thought I had recruited his battery long enough."

George L. Newton of Weymouth, Mass. secretary of the Fifth Mass. Battery Association, was one of the number of those who were transferred to the Fourth R. I. Battery.

When asked to furnish the names of the others which were subsequently supplied by Gideon Spencer First Lieutenant 1st Rhode Island Light Artillery, he replied under date August 15, 1899:—"While I was one of that number I cannot recall the names of the others. If I remember correctly there were about 30 of us, and Captain Waterman was very sorry to lose us when we were ordered to report to Captain (then Lt.) Phillips at Arlington Heights after the Second Battle of Bull Run."

LETTER OF DR. GIDEON SPENCER, SECRETARY  
STATE BOARD OF SOLDIERS' RELIEF  
OF RHODE ISLAND, PROVIDENCE,  
OCT. 18, 1899:—

"I enclose list of 5th Mass. Battery men who were attached to Battery 'C' 1st R. I. Lt. Art'y. This was the 4th R. I. Battery, but 'C' in the regiment of batteries. The enclosed record was taken from the Adjutant General's Report of R. I. 1861 to 1865. This report was revised and compared with the War Department records within the past five or six years, and must be nearly perfect. It will give you at least the date of their transfer. I hope this may be of some service, as I know from experience, at this late day, the writing of history of the War of the Rebellion is a severe task."

Agen John, Priv't. Batt'y C; July 4, 1862, detached from the 5th Mass. Battery. Sept. 12, 1862, returned to Battery.

Alden F. D. Priv't. Battery C; July, 1862, detached from the 5th Mass. Battery. Sept. 12, 1862, returned to Battery.

Almy A. W. Priv't. Batt'y C; July 4, 1862, detached from the 5th Mass. Battery. Sept. 12, 1862, returned to Battery.

Alton J. H. Priv't Batt'y C; July, 1862, attached to this Battery. Sept., 1862, transferred to 5th Mass. Battery.

Champlin E. Priv't. Batt'y C; July, 1862, detached from 5th Mass. Battery. Sept. 12, 1862, returned to regiment.

Cooper H. D. Priv't. Battery C; July 4, 1862, temporarily detached from 5th Mass. Battery.

Crapo H. D. Priv't. Battery C; temporarily detached from 5th Mass. Battery. Sept. 12, 1862, returned to 5th Mass. Battery.

Dunham W. H. Priv't. Batt'y C; July 4, 1862, detached from 5th Mass. Battery. Sept. 12, 1862, returned to Battery.

Flynn Michael, Priv't. Batt'y C; July 4, 1862, detached from 5th Mass. Battery. Sept. 12, 1862, returned to Battery.



Freeborn G. H. Priv't. Batt'y C; July 4, 1862, detached from 5th Mass. Battery. Sept. 12, 1862, returned to Battery.

Gilbert J. A. Priv't. Batt'y C; July 4, 1862, detached from 5th Mass. Battery. Sept. 12, 1862, returned to regiment.

Graham B. Priv't. Batt'y C; July 4, 1862, detached from 5th Mass. Battery. Sept. 12, 1862, returned to regiment.

Gunning William, Priv't. Batt'y C; July 4, 1862, detached from 5th Mass. Battery. Sept. 12, 1862, returned to regiment.

Hathaway J. F. Priv't. Batt'y C; July 4, 1862, detached from 5th Mass. Battery. Sept. 12, 1862, returned to regiment.

Jordan S. R. Priv't. Batt'y C; July, 1862, detached from 5th Mass. Battery. Sept. 12, 1862, returned to regiment.

Kay J. Priv't. Batt'y C; July 4, 1862, detached from 5th Mass. Battery. Sept. 12, 1862, returned to regiment.

Kiel E. E. Priv't. Batt'y C; July 4, 1862, temporarily detached from 5th Mass. Battery.

McVey D. Priv't. Batt'y C; July 4, 1862, detached from 5th Mass. Battery. Sept. 12, 1862, returned to regiment.

Munroe J. Priv't. Batt'y C; July 4, 1862, temporarily detached from 5th Mass. Battery.

Murray J. Priv't. Batt'y C; July, 1862, detached from 5th Mass. Battery. Sept. 12, 1862, returned to regiment.

Newton G. L. Priv't. Batt'y C; July 4, 1862, detached from 5th Mass. Battery. Sept. 12, 1862, returned to regiment.

Oldis F. Priv't. Batt'y C; July 4, 1862, detached from 5th Mass. Battery. Sept. 12, 1862, returned to Battery.

Pattison L. E. Priv't. Batt'y C; July 4, 1862, detached from 5th Mass. Battery. Sept. 12, 1862, returned to regiment.

Pattison W. B. Priv't. Batt'y C; July 4, 1862, detached from 5th Mass. Battery. Sept. 12, 1862, returned to regiment.

Rice E. E. Priv't. Batt'y C; July, 1862, detached from 5th Mass. Battery. Sept. 12, 1862, returned to regiment.

Tucker J. C. Bugler, Batt'y C; July 4, 1862, detached from 5th Mass. Battery. Sept. 12, 1862, returned to regiment.

Waddington J. Priv't. Batt'y C; July 4, 1862, detached from 5th Mass. Battery. Sept. 12, 1862, returned to regiment.

Welsh Patrick, Priv't. Batt'y C; July 4, 1862, detached from 5th Mass. Battery. Sept. 1862, returned to regiment.

West Benjamin, Priv't. Batt'y C; July 4, 1862, detached from 5th Mass. Battery, and borne on extra duty as teamster until Sept. 1862. Sept. 12, 1862, returned to regiment.

Wilcox W. S. Priv't. Batt'y C; July 4, 1862, detached from 5th Mass. Battery. Sept. 12, 1862, returned to regiment.

---

To proceed with Lieut. Phillips' Letter:—"Luckily our

three wagons [see p. 410 Captain Martin] were still with the Batteries, having been turned over to the Battery quartermaster (Scott), each battery having the use of one. So Scott started off and emptied the stuff out of them while I got the men together.

As soon as we got straightened out, I marched them to a spot a short distance from Fort Corcoran, and pitched our camp. Scott and I have a brand new wall tent, which I foraged at Upton's Hill, Blake and Lull a small wedge tent, while the men have a most motley assortment of poncho tents &c. Our camp is in a very pleasant spot, in good order, and altogether looks quite well.

Having pitched our camp and sent after forage and rations I felt that I was fairly started as an independent corps."

Sept. 12, 1862. (Chase's Diary.) "Reveille at 3 a. m. Hitched up and marched to Fort Corcoran, Va., and halted near Georgetown. Soon after halting we were agreeably surprised by seeing the remains of the old 5th Battery again assembled to be reorganized.

Went into camp on a hill near Fort Corcoran, and the Third Battery left us and continued the march to Antietam, Md.

Received knapsack well stocked with clean clothing, the first change of clothing since we were stripped to light marching order August 10th (1862), and with soft bread and rest, happiness reigns supreme."

The next thing for Lieut. Phillips to do was to get his ordnance requisitions approved.

"I had some doubts" he wrote, "whether I could find anybody to do it, but having found out from the commanding officer at Fort Corcoran that General Heintzelman was in command, I started off the first thing in the morning of the 13th for his headquarters at Arlington House. I got his signature without any difficulty, and started for the city.

Having put the requisitions through the usual routine of the 'circumlocution office' I got my orders for the various articles, and shall get them as soon as they are on hand. At the corral I found about 200 horses and orders for about 600 ahead of me.

They had plenty of guns at the Arsenal,—no carriages, but were expecting a supply every day. Harnesses are plenty, the only trouble is the horses. I have required for 3 inch guns, the same that we had before. Meantime the Division has gone."

Morell's Division 6000 strong, which had camped one brigade on Upton's Hill, one at Hunter's Chapel, and the other at Fort Corcoran, had crossed the river and marched to Antietam.

The Fifth Corps had here been joined by the 20th Maine Infantry Lt. Col. Joshua L. Chamberlain [see p. 835 "Battle of the North Anna"] assigned to the 3d Brigade, 1st Division (Morell's) Fifth Corps, which it joined Sept. 12, 1862, and the 118th Pennsylvania,—commercial exchange of Philadelphia,—commanded by Colonel Charles M. Prevost.

As organized for the Maryland campaign from September 11th to 30th, 1862, the Artillery attached to the 3d Brigade, 1st Division, Fifth Army Corps, consisted of the Third Mass. Battery Captain A. P. Martin, Fourth Rhode Island, Captain Richard Waterman, 5th U. S. Battery D, Lt. Charles E. Hazlett.

The Fifth Mass. Battery remained in camp opposite Georgetown. After reuniting the men belonging to the Battery who were serving in the Third Mass. and Fourth R. I., Phillips needed 20 men. This he stated in a note to Governor Andrew. He could take 25, and he could not give the exact number of the men on the rolls, as men were sent to the hospitals and then discharged for disability and no notice given to their captains. In a letter he states that





he met Lieut. Batchelder, Division Ordnance officer, on the 13th, and asked him to tell General Morell that he should like a written order to remain till he got his guns, and then to rejoin the Division. "I have found" he wrote, "a commissary who will issue rations and a quartermaster who will supply forage, and am sure of getting my guns, so I am all right. Captain Waterman left a section here with his battery wagon and forge in charge of Lt. Buckley to obtain new gun carriages. Buckley (William W.) was in at the Arsenal changing his carriages on the 13th. He told Scott he was going to get some horses, and I do not think he has got his order filed, so I shouldn't wonder if he had to wait longer than we do. I expect an order to report to General (Amiel W.) Whipple. Lull got his commission the other day at the War Department, where it had been laying a month or more, so he is all right, though I do not understand why it is dated Aug. 1st *and all the rest July 13th*. In regard to recruits I cannot send for any definite number. I can only muster and draw pay for 151 enlisted men. On the muster roll of August 31st there are 134 enlisted men. This includes a large number who have been sent to hospitals at various times, but whether they are alive or dead, in the service or discharged from it, I do not know and cannot find out. I shall take all recruits that come, to the number of 30, say."

The picture here given of the Army Desk, was photographed November 4, 1899, by E. G. Merrill at Salem, Mass., as it now appears in the home of Captain Phillips. It is one of those furnished by Government for the use of Army officers, and was in use by Captain Phillips two years and a half. Its dimensions are, outside, breadth 24 in.: height 20 in.: depth 12 inches.

When opened after many years for the purpose of examining the papers relating to the history of the Battery, it



was found to contain records from 1861 to 1865, and the settlement of accounts.

After the papers were examined and extracts made, all the diaries, official papers and books, which had been taken out were carefully returned to their places, so that when the photograph was taken the desk held everything exactly as when first opened.

COMPANY ORDER NO. 1.

FORT COBCORAN, Sept. 13, 1862.

Company Orders.

No. 1.

The following appointments are announced:—

Charles A. Phillips Senior 1st Lieut.

Henry D. Scott Junior 1st Lieut.

Peleg W. Blake Senior 2d Lieut.

Frederick A. Lull Junior 2d Lieut.

Joseph E. Spear 1st Sergeant to date from August 1st.

Ephraim B. Nye Serg't., to date from July 13th.

William B. Pattison Corporal, to date from July 1st.

William G. Warren Corporal, to date from July 13th.

John W. Morrison Corporal, to date from August 1st.

(Signed) CHARLES A. PHILLIPS *Lieut.*

Com'd'g Battery E. Mass. Art'y.

From Lieut. Phillips under date Sept. 14, 1862:—"I received two letters today directed to men whom I never heard of, members of Mass. 5th Battery, Camp Day, Cambridge, and forwarded on here. I should judge by this that my recruits had started.

I am afraid, in that case, they will be forwarded to Morell's Division. The shoulder-straps have arrived, and have given universal satisfaction. I have the most cordial co-operation of all my officers and men. . . . Four recruits have arrived from Massachusetts named Bliss, Brand, D. Shackley, J. Shackley. They went up to Rockville hunting after Morell's Division. Two of my sick men have returned from hospital and I expect more every day. We live very independently. The men feel much

more cheerful than they have for some time, and so far all goes well. I am afraid at the present rate our Division will travel out of our reach. When last heard from they were *en route* for Harper's Ferry. Our return to Hall's Hill enabled me to regain possession of my old camp stools which I had at Lynnfield and Readville, so that [with the bedstead] our tent is about as comfortable as it was in those days. We have manufactured a dining-table out of harness boxes, and live in style. Some of us go into the city every day so that we have an opportunity to do our marketing. Things around here remain very quiet; once in a while we can hear a little firing up river, and a green regiment camped close by salutes us occasionally; today sending a whole volley of bullets into our camp under the impression that they were discharging their muskets into the side of the hill. Washington is quiet. Massachusetts must be getting very warlike. I see by an advertisement in the *Transcript* every citizen of Boston is called upon to keep a uniform and musket on hand to guard against contingencies."

With regard to General Burnside's influence in favor of the Battery, Lieut. Phillips wrote home from camp near Fort Corcoran, Sept. 14, 1862:—

"... Thanks, however, to my friends at home and out here,—among the latter particularly Gen. Burnside,—I have at last got an order to draw a new supply of guns, horses, &c., and have gone into camp here for that purpose. . . . Gen. Burnside whom I saw at Falmouth, wished to be remembered to you. After I saw him he had an interview with Gen. Porter, which probably helped me as much as anything. . . . We are camped just beyond Fort Corcoran, on the right hand side of the road going from Washington, in a very pleasant spot. On the whole our camp looks well. Horses and guns only are needed to complete the picture.

I met the 40th Mass. under Lt. Col. Dalton on the Avenue

the other day. They looked very well. I find my hands full of business just now, but I never felt better."

### CORPORAL SHACKLEY'S NOTES.

"I enlisted as a recruit to the Battery after McClellan's campaign on the Peninsula, and went to Camp Day at Cambridge, Mass.

Daniel K. Shackley, Robert Brand, and Cornelius E. Bliss, also enlisted as recruits to the Battery, and early in September (1862) we four, with others, were ordered to join our respective commands. We were transported to Washington, D. C., and quartered in a barrack known as 'Soldiers' Retreat.' We were there while the Fifth or Porter's Corps were marching through Washington to South Mountain and Antietam. The next day, when a call was made for recruits for Porter's Corps to fall in, we were glad of the opportunity to get away from the 'Retreat,' and falling into line we marched just outside the District of Columbia and bivouacked for the night.

The next morning we proceeded on our march and passed through Rockville, where we found some men of the Third Mass. Battery, who told us the Fifth had been detached and left at Fort Corcoran to recruit and receive new guns and horses.

We four recruits for the Fifth Battery went to the Provost-guard of Rockville, and received some rations and a permit to return to Georgetown. We went towards Georgetown about three miles, and turning into a field spread our blankets under the branches of a large oak tree, and after eating some of our army rations, we lay down for our night's rest with the clouds for our canopy.

With our heads on the ground we could hear heavy cannonading, which we afterwards learned was the battle of South Mountain, Sept. 14, 1862.

Next morning we proceeded on our way, and were soon overtaken by an empty wagon train, and by the courtesy of the train master we put our knapsacks in the wagons and went over the rough macadamized road to Georgetown.

We reported to the Provost-guard, who after two or three hours, detailed a sergeant, a corporal and six men with the following prisoners, [the four recruits] who marched us over Aqueduct bridge and then told us to go where we pleased.

We climbed up the hill to Fort Corcoran, where we found the Battery and felt quite at home."

On Sept. 16, 1862, all the harnesses had been obtained, and on the 17th procured a little more ordnance.

### BATTLE OF ANTIETAM.

This day, Wednesday the 17th, has been called the bloodiest day that America had ever known. When nearly two hundred thousand men for fourteen hours were engaged in mortal combat, witnessed by an army of spectators who observed the conflict from the surrounding hills.

Thursday the 18th the battery wagon and forge were hauled out, and it was ordered that the morning report should be made to Brigadier General Whipple commanding defences of Washington Southwest of the Potomac, which the enemy crossed that night, holding the right bank and defending the ford with his artillery. Portions of Morell's and Sykes' Divisions with a portion of the Divisional artillery were ordered to occupy the banks of the river, clear the fords, and capture if possible the enemy's guns, during which movement the enemy fell back in confusion, and two guns and several caissons were secured.

Lieut. Phillips wrote on this date:—"I have got under General Whipple's orders at last.

He rode into camp today, and after a few inquiries about

my guns, said that as his orders were to take command of all within his limits, he supposed I came under his command, and wished me to send my morning reports to him. I told him that this relieved me of some responsibility, as I was sometimes at a loss to get my requisitions approved, &c. &c. He said he would approve my requisitions if I would send them up to Head Quarters. I told him what my instructions were, and that I thought it exceedingly doubtful if I ever caught up with Morell's Division at the rate things were moving. He seemed to think so too, and said that he should like very much to have me in his Division but, of course, he should not like to interfere with General Morell in any way. I said it made very little difference to me what Division I was in &c. &c. So on the whole, it will not be the most surprising thing in the world if we end by being transferred to Whipple's Division. . . . What sort of red tape has prevented Terry [Serg't Terry desired the commission of quartermaster of the batteries] from being commissioned? As near as I can get at it, the Governor would not commission him till he was discharged, and the Department would not discharge him till he was commissioned, and there they stuck!

Friday (the 19th) General Whipple had his Division out for review, and having miscalculated the length of the line one regiment formed on our battery wagon and forge. The order was then given 'Form Squares'; and the regiment formed a square with them in the middle! As a drill for manœuvring on difficult ground it may have been excellent, but as a military exhibition it was rather a failure. Saturday (20th) he had a review, but, having grown wiser, this time he formed the line somewhere else, so as not to cross our parade."

## ON RECRUITING SERVICE.

HEAD QUARTERS ARMY  
OF THE POTOMAC,  
WASHINGTON.  
Sept. 20, 1862.

Special Orders.

Extract.

5. Quartermaster Sergeant T. W. Terry, Battery E, Mass. Artillery, is detached on the recruiting service, and will report for instructions to the superintendency of the recruiting service for the state of Massachusetts.

By command of Major General McClellan.

(Signed) RICHARD B. IRWIN,  
*Ass't Adj't. Gen'l.*

"Sunday, Sept. 21, 1862 (Phillips) General Whipple had an inspection of his cavalry, and by way of variety made me turn out my men for inspection. Without guns or horses I could not make much of a display, but I did my best.

Sept. 22d. I have just learned how the troops here are organized: General Heintzelman commands the corps here, composed of four Divisions of which Whipple is one. . . . I find I have quite a number of acquaintances round here: Lts. Hall, Dalton, Smith and Pope of the 14th, and through them I am getting acquainted with most of the officers of that regiment. Yesterday afternoon Lull and I rode up to the 40th Regt. encamped close by Fort Ethan Allen near Chain Bridge. We took tea with Captain Johnson and his lieutenants, then looked on at Dress Parade, and after that I called on Lt. Col. Dalton and Major Day, so, on the whole, I tumbled into quite a lot of acquaintances. The roads which last spring were regular mud holes, are now in excellent order and riding is very pleasant. Business in Washington gives us all plenty of opportunities to get into the city, and our present life is rather a relief from the barbarous way in which we have been living. Our men are recruiting upon a diet of soft bread, and our number is constantly on the increase from the hospitals. I have now 95 enlisted



men in camp; rather a small proportion of 150, but more than we have had for some time. We have five or ten on the sick list every day, but no serious cases. I have bread and milk every morning for breakfast. In regard to the negro question I have gained no new views. I do not think that emancipation would be a *direct military advantage* of any account, but I think it would be a great step towards the suppression of the rebellion. . . .

You don't think my picture looks military," he writes with reference to one sent home, "perhaps this is owing to the hat. I started out here with a small forage cap, but the heat on the Peninsula rendered this intolerable. At Gaines Mills I invested in a felt hat, which was my costume through the battle. By the time I reached Harrison's Landing this was pretty well played out, having served as a night cap pretty constantly. I next purchased a straw hat which showed very prettily at first, but rain and dust soon spoiled its looks. I wore this till we arrived here and had it on when my picture was taken. As it had become the laughing stock of the company I took the first opportunity to dispose of it. . . .

Sept. 24, 1862. General Whipple appears to take considerable interest in our getting our guns and horses, and his staff are congratulating themselves upon having gained an 'experienced' battery in the Division.

I have no doubt but that the 1st of January will see states enough in rebellion to make a very general emancipation. The rebellion will not be crushed at once, and the campaign in Maryland is not all rose colored. We have driven them out of Maryland, but it proved our weakness that they ever got there, and we did no more than they did when they drove us off the Peninsula. The fights at South Mountain were not decisive defeats, and the battle of Antietam Creek was almost a drawn game.

Richmond will not be taken this year unless it is done by gunboats.

General Whipple's Division is a great Division for drilling. We had two reviews last week, and day before yesterday he had the infantry of his Division form hollow squares, while four companies of cavalry charged all over the field sometimes in good order, but more frequently in disorder. Altogether it was a remarkable exhibition."

FROM A LETTER OF THOMAS E. CHASE.

"CAMP NEAR FORT CORCORAN,  
ARLINGTON HEIGHTS, VA.

Sept. 25, 1862.

When I last wrote you we were with the 3d Battery, with the pieces 'in Battery' at Upton's Hill, but on the 12th we received marching orders and started towards Washington. When we arrived at the bridge,—to Georgetown,—we were very agreeably surprised to see that our days with the 3d Battery, 4th Rhode Island and 5th Regulars were numbered. The scattered remains of the old Fifth gradually collected, and we are now in camp, waiting for recruits, guns, and horses. Many of our men who left us at Harrison's Landing, sick, have returned to us hale and hearty. We received our knapsacks when we arrived here, having been without them 33 days. Everything in mine was dry and as perfect as the day I packed it, but others had been rifled of their contents. . . . I do not want you to think that I am not willing to take my share of the hardships of the war, neither do we have an unusual dread of battles ahead when there is the least chance of accomplishing anything, but I must say that I am disgusted with the summer campaign in Virginia. There have been several 'loose screws,' in fact the only one that was fast and firm to one policy was McClellan, but the screw-drivers at Washington kept twisting him round until they nearly split his head, and

finally the only screw that held the machine together also became loose, his plans were abandoned and here we are just in sight of Abraham's house. Where the blame in the main rests I will not attempt to say, for I do not know, all I can account for is my own conduct. I have endeavored to do my humble part as well as I could. Let every one account for his own doings. You say you have been fighting for McClellan but some have been down on him. Well, no matter, let 'em croak. 'Truth crushed to earth will rise again,' so will George. Where's old Pope now? His 'Head Quarters are in his saddle,' but where's his saddle? Ask the breezes that ruffle the Potomac north of Bull Run.

We have received our battery wagon, forge, and harnesses, and our new sabres have come today."

#### FROM LIEUT. PHILLIPS' LETTERS.

"Sept. 28, 1862. A week ago yesterday we were told that our guns would be ready for us at the Arsenal on Monday morning, so we went in on Monday morning to find that General Burnside had sent down on Sunday for six guns and off they had gone. However, unless some other general in the field wants some guns, we shall get ours by Tuesday. With horses the thing works the same way. Thursday night the numbers had been so reduced that there were orders for only 150 ahead of us. Friday morning down came an order from McClellan for 200, and this must be filled before anything else. It is rather discouraging, but we can wait. Scott and I have had a floor laid in our tent for the first time since leaving Massachusetts. Our men have built an oven and we can roast and bake at a great rate. Yesterday we had roast beef for dinner, and this morning we had baked beans for breakfast. One of our latest improvements is a rack to hang our clothes on. The men are living quite comfortably, having foraged a great many tents. In fact the camp has been gradually growing and now presents quite a respectable appearance.

One of General Whipple's brigades has gone to the front, to Miner's Hill, I believe. From this I infer that General (Franz) Sigel has moved off somewhere. The other day when I was up at Hall's Hill, I learned that General (R. H.) Milroy's brigade had gone off. Captain Martin's quartermaster sergeant was in Washington yesterday, and from him I learned that they had not been in any fight yet. He left the Division at Sharpsburg."

The rebel army had been driven back into Virginia, and under date of September 30, 1862, General Halleck thanked General McClellan and his army for hard fought battles, adding:—

"For the well earned and decided victories in Maryland, a grateful country, while mourning the lamented dead, will not be unmindful of the living."

On the 30th Lt. Phillips drew two guns and caissons, and on Oct. 1, 1862, Wednesday, Corporal Chase has recorded: "Received four new guns and 81 horses, again equipping us as a full battery."

Phillips himself says:—"The remainder of the horses I shall get early tomorrow (Oct. 2d) so that by tomorrow night I shall be fully equipped. As I understand it I cannot move from here without an order from General Whipple. I shall report myself to him tomorrow ready for service and tell him that I had rather stay where I am. If I stay in his Division I shall do it under favorable auspices, I have got a very good set of horses, good guns and carriages, and better ammunition than we had before. Altogether I am quite well satisfied with things."

Captain, then Lieut., Scott remembers a speech made about this time by Lieut. Phillips to the men "which was the only model speech" he "had heard in the Battery up to that time.—Lt. Phillips called the men into line and said:—

'Men, once more we have our guns and horses, and when they go to Richmond, we go with them.' "

"We had passed," Lt. Scott remarks, "through a varied

experience, but now we felt certainly a new future was before us. All were jubilant."

Nineteen more horses were obtained on Thursday (the 2d) and in the afternoon he reported to General Whipple that he was ready for service.

In the meantime he had received the following order from Captain Martin.

### GEN. FITZ JOHN PORTER DIRECTS.

On Sept. 27, 1862, the Fifth Corps went into camp in the vicinity of Sharpsburg, Md. directly north of Harper's Ferry and in the neighborhood of the battle grounds of Antietam Creek.

#### ORDER FROM CAPT. MARTIN.

CAMP NEAR SHARPSBURG, MD.  
September 27, 1862.

LIEUT. PHILLIPS

Commanding 5th Mass. Battery.  
Lieut.

General Porter directs me to say to you that he wishes you to rejoin the Division as soon as possible. He says if you have not obtained your full equipment, and there seems to be any unnecessary delay, to call on General Barry in Washington for assistance, or you can communicate with him by telegraph through General McClellan's Head Quarters.

Lt. Walcott will give you information about the road etc.

Very respectfully

Your ob't servant

A. P. MARTIN *Capt.*  
Commanding Division Artillery.

Forwarded with the following indorsement.

CAMP NEAR FORT CORCORAN,  
Oct. 6, 1862.

The within is respectfully referred to Brigd'r General Whipple Com'd'g Division.

I expect to be ready to move by the 8th of October.

(Signed) CHARLES A. PHILLIPS *1st Lt.*

When Lt. Phillips called upon General Whipple on Thursday, Oct. 2d, this order from Captain Martin was in

his possession, though of course without the indorsement at that time. "I had shown him" (Gen. Whipple), he says, "the order I had received from Captain Martin, but as General Barry told me that I was to receive orders from General Whipple only, and that General Porter had no power to order me away, I told him I was a little uncertain what I was going to do. He promised to give me proper orders, and said that he should like to keep me in his Division. I told him that would please me and my officers as we had no particular desire to rejoin Morell's. The Division (Whipple's) is not everything that could be desired. It is composed of two brigades, General Piatt's and another, made up mostly of green troops. There are two batteries: Battery H, 1st Ohio Art'y, under a major or Lt. Colonel, and the 11th N. Y. Battery, Captain something-or-other-hamer. The 11th N. Y. has been in one fight only, where they lost four guns, so that we have companions in misfortune. Still I think the Division will be a good one. . . . I have been to see the General several times, and I always meet with a cordial reception. His staff appears to be composed of very good officers. His ass't adj't general is Captain Henry Dalton, and one of his aides Lt. Eddy has been here frequently.

The trouble in Morell's Division was that we never had a fair start. Yesterday (Oct. 2d) we hitched up and had a drill, and found our horses work very well: there is not a balky one in the lot. One animal distinguished himself by jumping round when being harnessed, actually jumping square over one man, but after tying up his leg and giving him a short Rarey-izing, he came to."

Chase's Diary. "Oct. 2, 1862. On guard last night and today 2d relief. In camp near Georgetown. Company preparing to march all day.

Oct. 3d. Battery drilled by sections. Hitched up p. m. A perfect success. Sent my old memorandum book home



yesterday. Sent secesh cartridge box home today by express."

From the 1st to the 4th of October, President Lincoln was with the army in the different encampments and on the battlefields. He approved of what had been done, and promised supplies should be sent immediately.

The army was in need of everything, and McClellan dared not cross the Potomac, where the enemy was in strong force, with the river, which might rise above a fordable stage at any time, between him and his army and base of supplies.

On the 5th in the forenoon there was an inspection of the Fifth Mass. Battery. It took place at 9 o'clock and General Whipple sent two of his staff down to witness it, "though I wished," says Phillips, "they had stayed away till we had got our horses broken in, and our harnesses fitted. We had not got out of park when one trace unhooked, then another, and then another, causing a halt every dozen steps. Finally we got in line and prepared for inspection. I felt pretty grumpy as we rode round through the Battery. However, I got through with it, and then took the Battery out on a two hours' drill, and I think they will do better next time. This afternoon we took a ride out into the country. I have recitations in tactics every evening, and it is curious to see how some things strike the company officers. I never found the slightest difficulty in learning tactics from the book, and long before we ever hitched up, I could do any manœuvre in the book. Mere manual dexterity of course can be acquired only by practice."

October 6th, 1862, Captain Martin's order, indorsed by Lt. Phillips (see p. 452) was sent to General Whipple. Concerning this he wrote on the 7th:—"I have referred the order I received from Captain Martin to General Whipple, and he has ordered me to go ahead with my preparations and report when ready to him. Meanwhile he has made

application to have the Battery transferred to his Division."

McClellan had been ordered on the 6th by General Halleck to cross the Potomac at once, and "move now, while the roads are good." The cavalry had moved north and would intercept the rebel general Stuart's raid through Maryland and Pennsylvania. The army must move, although besides every other needful thing horses were scarce, and a new supply was indispensable.

Orders were received for the Fifth Mass. Battery to start Wednesday morning Oct. 8.

#### MARCHING ORDERS.

HEAD QUARTERS  
WHIPPLE'S DIVISION,  
3D ARMY CORPS,  
FORT CORCORAN, VA.  
Oct. 8, 1862.

Special Orders

No. 167.

The Fifth Mass. Battery Lt. Phillips commanding, is hereby relieved from duty with this Division, and will report as soon as practicable to the commanding officer of Morell's Division, Porter's Corps.

By command of Brig. Gen'l Whipple.

DANIEL HALL  
*Act'g Ass't Adj't. General.*

#### ON THE MARCH.

"On the 8th of October [1862, Scott's Notes] the Battery crossed the Potomac on the Aqueduct bridge, and followed the road taken by the army through Maryland to join the Fifth Corps at Sharpsburg. Phillips was in command.

The weather was dry and warm, and the dust that rose was stifling and blinding.

Passing through Urbana we found the rebel general Stuart in his raid in Maryland had crossed our line of march but an hour before. Had we been a little earlier we would likely have been captured, as we had no escort.

Arriving on the Monocacy River at night near Frederick

City, completely exhausted with the heat and dust of the day, the men at once went in bathing and got rid of some of the accumulated dust of our travel."

#### CORPORAL CHASE'S ACCOUNT.

"Oct. 9, 1862, (Diary of Corporal Chase) Reveille at 4 a. m. Hitched up and left camp about half-past 5 a. m. Passed through several villages and halted for the night about 2 miles from Frederick City, Md. Bivouacked near the bridge over Monocacy River on the Baltimore and Ohio R. R. 10th: Reveille at 4 a. m. Broke camp and left about 6 a. m. Passed through Frederick, Md., and over the road around South Mountain, and halted about two miles from Boonsboro', Md. Marched again through Sharpsburg, about 3 p. m. and halted, and went into park just outside the town. Saw much evidence of the recent battle on the route, both at South Mountain and Sharpsburg: buildings shattered and trees scarred by shells and musketry gave proof of the bloody battle of Antietam. Visited some rebel prisoners in a hospital near Boonsboro', and found among them privates of the 5th and 6th Alabama regiments, who charged on our Battery at the Battle of Gaines Mills, June 27, 1862. They belonged to General Rhodes' Brigade, General Hill's Division, and were taken prisoners at the battle of Antietam.

The people along the route all seemed loyal and welcomed us heartily."

With respect to this assignment and the march back to the First Division Captain Phillips wrote:—

"General Whipple wished to keep us in his Division, but was hardly enterprising enough, so we got our orders to start Wednesday morning. At ten o'clock we started, crossed the Aqueduct, turned up the left by the reservoir and kept on through Tenallytown and Rockville. We

camped a mile beyond the latter place. The day was hot and dusty but the road good. Thursday morning we started at 5 o'clock. The road was excellent, macadamized, but the country very hilly. Leaving Sugar Loaf Mountain on our left, we pushed on through Clarksburg and Urbana for the Monocacy. About 5 o'clock we reached the Monocacy, crossed the turnpike bridge and camped on the banks between the two bridges. I availed myself of the opportunity to wash off the dust which had accumulated very thick, got a glass of ale, at the railroad saloon and went to sleep. The next morning we started at daybreak and passed through Frederick before the people were up. The day was cloudy, with a little sprinkle once in a while. Soon after leaving Frederick we crossed a range of hills, passing through the little village of Fairview. The valley in which Frederick is situated is a splendid farming country, and finely cultivated. The people appear to be very enterprising as they had already repaired their fences where they had been torn down. After crossing this range of hills we came to another valley of equal fertility and cultivation. In the centre was the town of Middletown: on the opposite side were South Mts. Passing across the valley and through Middletown, we began to ascend South Mountain Pass where one battle came off. Half way up the hill I halted in front of a little inn to rest the horses. On the descent we passed a long train of ambulances full of wounded Federal and Secesh; the Secesh being a better looking set than I have seen before. At the bottom of the hill we halted an hour to rest. In the house near by were several wounded Secesh, and our men strolling around, found one of them who had one of my men's blankets taken at Gaines Mills. I did not see the men myself, but they said their regiment suffered greatly in getting our guns, and would not believe our loss was so small. [See p. 351 Barnard.] We next passed through Boonsboro', turned to the left, and passed

the village of Keedysville, crossed the little Antietam, and came to the hills occupied by our troops in the battle of Antietam. Across the creek the hill rose steeply, and just over the crest lay the village of Sharpsburg. Almost every house had a cannon ball through it; chimneys knocked off and the mischief played generally. At present the town presents quite a busy appearance. Churches and houses are turned into hospitals. The U. S. Sanitary Commission occupy a couple of stores, and the streets are quite crowded. Just beyond the town I halted the Battery, and rode ahead to report to General Morell."

# FREDERICKSBURG.



1. Position of 5th Mass. Battery during the battle. 2. The Poor House. 3. The Brick kiln. 4. Place where Corporal Platts was buried 5. The building of the Young Men's Christian Association used as a hospital during the battle. 6. The Right Grand Division. 7. Left Grand Div. 8. Centre Grand Div. 9. Position of 3rd Mass. Battery. 10. Humphreys' Division 11. Griffin's Division. 12. Sykes' Division. 13. Upper Bridge. 14. Middle Bridge. 15. Lower Bridge.





## CHAPTER XV.

### THE BATTLE OF FREDERICKSBURG.

DECEMBER 13, 1862.

"The armies stand by to behold the dread meeting:

The work must be done by a desperate few,  
The black mouthéd guns on the height give them  
greeting—

From gun-mouth to plain every grass blade in view."

*At Fredericksburg.*—JOHN BOYLE O'REILLY.

Having seen the rebel army safely across the Potomac, it appeared to be the duty of the officials who were to formulate and regulate the campaign, to take into consideration the recuperation of the army, more especially as the Stuart dash into Maryland had resulted in a loss of horses, which it was absolutely necessary should be supplied at once, as well as the pressing demand for clothing, shoes and blankets, which it was impossible longer to ignore. Recruiting must also be strenuously urged in order to restore the diminished ranks. Regiments in some instances had no officer of higher rank than captain, and many companies were without any commissioned officers. All possible dispatch should be used in the forwarding of supplies.

While these most important objects were being accomplished, the Army waited and watched the banks and fords of the river, and the camp for a brief period fell into the familiar routine of constant drill and frequent inspections by day, and at night the suspended animation of a bivouac near battle grounds, which had been the scene of too much ruthless sacrifice of human life ever to be obliterated from the

memory, or to give unbroken rest to those who fell asleep in their neighborhood.

On the 27th of October, 1862, the Army of the Potomac commenced to cross into Virginia. General George Webb Morell was placed in command of all the Union forces remaining on the upper Potomac, from Antietam Creek to Cumberland, Md., and his place at the head of the 1st Division of the Fifth Corps was filled by General Charles Griffin.

General McClellan's plan was to follow the eastern slope of the Blue Ridge Mountains in a southern direction, occupying the various gaps, and, turning the tables on General Lee, to place the Army between him and Richmond. By the 2d of November, the Army had crossed either at Harper's Ferry or at Berlin, and the various corps had followed the various routes marked out for them. On Nov. 9, 1862, the disposition of the Army of the Potomac was as follows:—

The First, Second, and Fifth Corps, the Reserve Artillery and Army Head Quarters were at Warrenton, the Ninth Corps was at Waterloo, the Sixth Corps and the Eleventh Corps at New Baltimore with part of the Eleventh Corps at Gainesville and Thoroughfare Gap, part of the Third Corps posted along the Orange and Alexandria railroad from Manassas to Warrenton Junction. Part of the cavalry were confronting Longstreet at Hazel River six miles from Culpeper Court House, and Rappahannock Station was guarded. The rebel general Jackson was near Chester and Thornton Gaps, but the mass of the rebel army was west of the Blue Ridge.

At Warrenton, having relieved Washington from danger, with a successful campaign in prospect, and an Army full of enthusiasm and sublime faith in their leader, orders came on Nov. 7th to relieve General McClellan from the command of the Army and General Fitz John Porter from the command of the Fifth Corps. General Ambrose E. Burnside

assumed command of the Army of the Potomac, and General Joseph Hooker of the Fifth Corps.

General Burnside, on assuming the command substituted for the plan of campaign originated by McClellan a new one, which involved the seizure of the heights south of Fredericksburg after fording the Upper Rappahannock River; the railroad to Fredericksburg being reopened by sending a small force north of the Rappahannock for that purpose.

Previous to this movement Burnside reorganized the Army, by forming Three Grand Divisions, the Right, Centre, and Left. The Right was composed of the Second and Ninth Army Corps Major Gen. Edwin V. Sumner in command, the Centre consisted of the Third and Fifth Army Corps Major Gen. Joseph Hooker in command, and the Left, of the First and Sixth Army Corps, Major Gen. William B. Franklin, commanding.

The Fifth Corps was commanded by Brig. Gen. Daniel Butterfield, and the 1st Division to which the Artillery Brigade in which was the Fifth Mass. Battery was attached, was commanded by Brig. Gen. Charles Griffin.

General Burnside commenced his movement on the 15th of November, 1862, and instead of crossing the Rappahannock River, marched the entire Army down its north bank, the advance of the Right Grand Division arriving in the vicinity of Falmouth, Va. on the 17th but was unable to cross to Fredericksburg, on account of a rebel force on the other side of the river, sent for the purpose of obstructing the passage at this point. The bridge across the river to Fredericksburg had been destroyed.

A corps of the Confederate Army was awaiting developments in the vicinity of Orange Court House. In anticipation of our attempting to gain the heights near that city Longstreet was ordered to proceed to Fredericksburg. On the 19th the Fifth Corps was at Hartwood a few miles above Falmouth. On the 21st at 5 p. m. in the midst of a rain

storm, the Right Grand Division having arrived at a point where the Potomac Creek crossed the Acquia Creek and Fredericksburg railroad, General Sumner summoned the authorities of the city of Fredericksburg to surrender. In the event of their refusal, he threatened to bombard the place at 9 a. m. the next morning. The city then under the control of the confederate general Lee did not surrender, and was not bombarded. Longstreet established his command on Marye's Heights in the rear of Fredericksburg, and a part of Jackson's Corps was near Port Royal on the Rappahannock River, when on Nov. 26th our gunboats had arrived.

General Burnside ordered the construction of five bridges from the upper part of the town to the lower, within a distance of about two miles, and the artillery were employed not only to protect the building of the bridges, but to protect the Left flank of the Army from attack in the direction of the Massaponax River, and to control the enemy's movements on the plain between the ridges of hills on both sides of the river. To supply this unusual demand some of the artillery was withdrawn from the Grand Divisions, and temporarily added to the Artillery Reserve. The Reserve was then formed into four Divisions viz., the Right, the Right Centre, and the Left Centre, and the Left, numbering in all 147 Guns, and disposed along the north bank of the Rappahannock River. Battery C, 1st Rhode Island, and Battery D, 5th U. S. were detached from the Fifth Corps and placed in position to join in the general fire directed upon the town and hills beyond, but the Third and Fifth Massachusetts Batteries crossed the river and entered the city.

The Right Grand Division of the Army was concentrated near the upper and middle bridges; the Left Grand Division near the bridge below the town; and the Centre Grand Division near to and in the rear of the Right.

On December 11th the Fifth Corps marched three miles

to the bank of the Rappahannock, the artillery moving in the rear of the Division, and was massed on a level tract of land in the rear of the batteries on the ridge.

The pontoons for the bridges had to be taken down the Potomac and up the Rappahannock, and Burnside waited for them 12 days on the Stafford Hills all ready to cross. In the early morning of Dec. 11th the teams carried them down to the river banks.

Edwin Forbes in his description of "The Pontoon Train" attached to his picture, thus describes the train and the method of building a pontoon bridge:—

"One of the finest sights during the march of the great army was the pontoon train. The huge scows resting on their heavy wagons, went tossing over the rough roads pulled by six mule teams. . . . On nearing a stream, a road was chosen where the approach to cross would not be too steep. The wagons were drawn near the bank, and the pontoon boats were slid off from the rear of them into the water. This work was often accomplished under the enemy's fire from an opposite bank of the river; but our men worked with a will, loading the boats and pushing them off with a dash and a cheer to clear the enemy away. Then the real work of building a bridge would begin. Boats would be pushed out, turned lengthwise with the current, and placed at regular intervals across the stream, anchored at both ends. Then a set of men would quickly attach stringers from boat to boat, and another set would hurry forward with planks to place over them, thus forming a floor. In an incredibly short time the bridge would be completed, and the main body of the army would march across amid great cheers."

The engineers while laying the pontoon bridges on the 11th December, 1862, being continually harassed by the rebel sharpshooters, our batteries on the Heights commenced a terrific cannonading which was continued two hours, in order to drive them out of the house which concealed them; setting fire to the city in several places, and under cover of a movement of the Massachusetts and Michigan troops the pontoon bridges were completed. Three regiments of infantry crossed in boats, under fire, drove the enemy from their entrenchments and took possession of the town, fighting their way through. These were the Mass.



19th and 20th and the 7th Michigan. When these men of Massachusetts and Michigan crossed, in the words of the poet Baker:—

“Cheer after cheer we sent them  
As only armies can—  
Cheers for old Massachusetts,  
Cheers for young Michigan.”

Two distinct combats made up the Battle of Fredericksburg on the 13th. One the fight on the Federal Left wing with Jackson and Stuart's cavalry and horse artillery on the east, and the assault of the Federal Right and Centre directly upon the Heights, when our artillery from the Falmouth bank of the river, from 40 to 50 feet high and sloping, fired over the heads of our troops on the banks and in the city, when the shells did not fall short on account of defective ammunition, and the Confederate artillery from Marye's Heights fired over them and into them.

During the action the headquarters of Generals Burnside and Hooker were at the Phillips house, and of Sumner at the Lacey house. The latter stood on the north bank of the Rappahannock, directly opposite Fredericksburg.

They met the enemy first on the plain, then he withdrew to the Heights after the rifle pits had been taken by the regiments who volunteered to cross over in boats, while the bridge was being built. The turnpike to Fredericksburg crosses the plain half a mile from the river, and between it and the Heights extends the railroad. There was a canal in the rear of the town, which the troops must cross before making the attack on Marye's Heights, which conducted the waters of the Rappahannock River at Falmouth to the lower end of Fredericksburg for manufacturing purposes. At the base of the bluff was a sunken road which sheltered numbers of Confederates. Half way up the ridge they hid behind a trench, and on the crest were the breastworks and artillery. There was not the least chance of an attacking column car-

rying the position. While other attacks were in progress General Butterfield was ordered to attack and break the enemy's line and carry the Heights on his front.

The crowded streets of the city proved a great impediment to the passage of the artillery. Batteries were placed in position on the left side of Hanover Street on the right and left of the point of attack.

The historian of the Fifth Corps says of the Battery:—

"The 5th Mass. crossed the river at 4 p. m. on the 13th and was placed in an advanced position near the centre of the corps line between the poor house and some brick yards, and opened fire at about six hundred yards from the stone wall. After dark, having fired 107 rounds of shrapnell and shell, the Battery was withdrawn, under orders, to the city, but returned to the same position on the 14th, remaining until after dark on the 15th, when it was withdrawn, and early on the 16th recrossed the river and returned to its camp."

At the time of this attack at the stone wall, General Andrew A. Humphreys commanding the 3d Division Fifth Corps, describes its appearance as "a sheet of flame that enveloped the head and flanks of the column."

On the 15th the enemy still holding the Heights held the town. General Butterfield held the portion of Fredericksburg extending from the Rappahannock River on the right to Hanover Street, and was ordered to put it into a state of defense.

In the disposition of the troops General Griffin held the left to Fauquier Street. Captain Stephen H. Weed, Chief of Artillery of the Fifth Corps, was charged with the distribution of the batteries.

After dark of the 15th earthworks were constructed between the streets which were barricaded for artillery, but at 4 a. m. of the 16th General Burnside ordered the withdrawal of the Army from Fredericksburg. This was accomplished at 8 o'clock a. m., in a storm of hail and rain but in perfect order. When they removed the pontoons they did so as noiselessly as possible, and the enemy was surprised the next morning to find they had all crossed and the bridges were gone.

## THE MONUMENT.

At the Thirty-First Annual Reunion of the Society of the Army of the Potomac, held at Fredericksburg, Va. May 25th and 26th, 1900, General Daniel Butterfield announced his intention to erect in the National Cemetery on the field of Fredericksburg, a monument to the honor of the Fifth Army Corps, and in memory of the honored dead of that Corps.

In the afternoon of the 26th the corner-stone was laid by the Masonic Lodge of Fredericksburg in which George Washington was made a Mason. The act was performed with a silver trowel on which was engraved a representation of the proposed monument. Brevet Colonel Horatio C. King presided.

These ceremonies took place on Marye's Heights, in the presence of the Society, the President of the United States, his Cabinet, members of congress, heads of Departments and other guests.

The number of Union men engaged was 30,000. Of these over 16,000 are buried there, 14,000 in unknown graves, in the words of General Edward Hill who made the address, "buried where they fell. In time their honored bones found sepulture on these terraced heights." He quotes General Butterfield in his presence as saying:—

"I have always felt that the magnificent services of the Fifth Corps, on the occasion of the battle of Fredericksburg, as well as on other fields, deserve a lasting memorial. As I read the order issued by me after the battle, (see p. 519) I feel today the same heartfelt appreciation that it expresses, and it gives me great pleasure to place a lasting memorial of enduring granite, to record my feeling toward the Fifth Corps,—whom I had the great honor to command in that battle,—over the graves, not only of the many brave men of the corps who are buried there, but also in honor of all the gallant and splendid soldiers in that famous battle."

General Hill was an officer of the Fifth Corps who par-

ticipated in the battle. He closed his address with the following words:—

“This column of imperishable granite, bearing the insignia of the Fifth Army Corps, the Maltese Cross, garlanded with laurel and oaken wreaths, emblematic of fame and victory, crowned with the ball of infolding fire, will carry down the ages the story of Fredericksburg, and forever stand a monument to the lofty patriotism and military ardor of the founder, an incentive to noble deeds, a glorious tribute to the brave men of the Fifth Corps who fell in defense of the flag that from reveille to retreat bends above this consecrated ground.”

The Monument was dedicated May 30, 1901, with appropriate ceremonies in which the Society of the Fifth Corps of the Army of the Potomac, as a body, participated.

### THE MEMBERS' STORY.

#### AFTER REPORTING TO GENERAL MORELL.

Notes of Lieut. Scott: “Reaching Sharpsburg on the 11th of October, 1862, we took our place with the Artillery Brigade of Morell's Division 5th Corps.”

#### FROM LETTER OF LIEUT. PHILLIPS.

“CAMP NEAR SHARPSBURG, MD.

Oct. 11, 1862.

He (Gen. Morell) seemed glad we had got up, and told us to go into camp where we were, which we did. Last night it rained, and tomorrow when the ground gets dried I shall move ahead a mile, near the rest of the Division. Everything is very quiet, and no enemy around.”

Phillips' Diary: “Sunday Oct. 12, 1862. Moved camp a mile to the front near Gen. Morell's Head Quarters.”

Chase's Diary: “Oct. 11. . . . Detailed for guard 3d relief p. m. Oct. 12. . . . Camped about a mile and a half from Sharpsburg, Md.”

Phillips' Diary: “Tuesday, Oct. 14th. Sent Scott to Har-

per's Ferry after horses. Oct. 15: Scott returned with 11 horses. All quiet."

#### FROM LETTER OF LIEUT. PHILLIPS.

"CAMP NEAR SHARPSBURG, MD.

Thursday Evening, Oct. 16, 1862.

Griffin's Brigade, four of Hazlett's guns, and two of Martin's with considerable cavalry, went over the river to-day on a reconnoissance. We have heard more or less firing all day. The long expected event, the rising of the river, seems close at hand. We have got an oven built and had some baked beans this morning. We can get soft bread at Sharpsburg, but the meanest bread I ever tasted, dry and tasteless as sawdust."

On Friday the Reconnoissance, which was sent across the river the day before returned with no news of importance, and the commanding officer of the Battery received the following circular:—

#### FROM CHIEF QUARTERMASTER CHARLES B. NORTON.

Circular.

HEAD QUARTERS 5TH ARMY CORPS,  
NEAR SHARPSBURG, MD.

Oct. 17, 1862.

It having been ascertained that Trains have gone to the various depots for supplies without a commissioned officer in charge, notice is again given that it is absolutely necessary that such an officer should accompany all Trains.

On the first day of each month Division Quartermasters will send to these Head Quarters a consolidated report of all Quartermasters' Stores and estimates of funds, in detail, required in their Divisions for the month then current. This report is necessary in order that the wants of the Corps may be known in sufficient time to be ordered to the nearest depot. Regimental and Brigade Head Quarters will inform the Division Quartermaster of their wants in season, so that the Division Quartermaster can send in his report on the day mentioned. Brigade Quartermasters will make requisitions on Capt. Alex. Bliss A. Q. M. at Harper's Ferry, Va., for one wagon in addition to the pres-

ent allowance, which will be used exclusively for the transportation of medical stores of the Brigade.

Hereafter supplies of all kinds can be obtained at Harper's Ferry, on requisitions properly approved. Brigade Quartermasters can inform themselves by telegraph as to what there is on hand at the Depot. But few stores will be sent to Frederick and Hagerstown. Transportation will be always kept in condition for an immediate move.

Division Quartermasters will send copies of this circular to Quartermasters of Brigades who will furnish each Regimental Quartermaster with a copy of the same.

By command of Major General Fitz John Porter.

(Signed) CHARLES B. NORTON,  
*Lt. Col. Chief Quartermaster,*  
*5th Army Corps.*

Chase's Diary: "Oct. 19, the Battery was inspected by Captain Martin."

#### SPECIAL ORDERS.

HEAD QUARTERS  
MORRELL'S DIVISION, CAMP  
NEAR SHARPSBURG, MD.  
Oct. 20, 1862.

Special Orders

No. 257.

In accordance with instructions from Head Quarters, Battery E, Mass. Artillery, Lieut. Phillips commanding, is hereby detailed to relieve Captain Diedrichs' Battery now on duty with 3d. Brigade.

Relief will be made by 9 a. m. tomorrow.

By command of Brig. General Griffin.

FRANCIS S. EARLE,  
*Ass't. Adj't. Gen'l.*

Capt. Martin. Lieut. Phillips.

---

#### PHILLIPS' COMPANY ORDER.

Lieut. Phillips, when he issued the following order must have been of the same mind as General, then Major, Thomas W. Hyde of the 7th Maine Infantry, who said that "the clean and careful soldier is also pretty sure to make a good officer."



CAMP NEAR SHARPSBURG, MD.

October 20, 1862.

Company Orders.

No. 7.

The Battery will be formed in line for inspection tomorrow morning at 8 o'clock.

The drivers' valises will be strapped on the saddles. After the Battery is dismissed the men will remain in uniform, and keep round the quarters until the camp and quarters have been inspected. Everything is expected to remain neat and clean during the day. The men are expected to have as much anxiety as the commander that the Battery should obtain a good name.

CHARLES A. PHILLIPS *1st Lieut.*

Com'd'g Battery E. Mass. Artillery.

## LETTER OF LIEUT. PHILLIPS.

"CAMP NEAR SHARPSBURG, MD.

Evening Oct. 20, 1862.

I have received a copy of a Special Order from McClellan's Hd. Qrs. honorably discharging Captain Allen from the service, dated Oct. 17th. . . . The programme for tomorrow was an inspection of the Division Batteries, camps, company books, &c., &c., by Lieut Col. (Alex. S.) Webb to commence at 8 o'clock. I have just received orders, however, to relieve Captain Diedrichs' Battery (Otto Diedrichs, A, 1st Battalion N. Y.) Dutch, 20 pdr. Parrotts, now with the Third Brigade—Butterfield's—at the mouth of Antietam. Relief to be made at 9 o'clock. I shall start at 8. I am rather sorry to miss the inspection, as I can show the cleanest battery and the neatest camp, except, perhaps, Hazlett's, of all the Batteries.

I would recommend for Junior 2d Lieut. 1st Sergt. Joseph E. Spear of Quincy. He started as Corporal but his Serg't being sick, took entire charge of his piece at Gaines Mills and brought it off safely, entirely by his own efforts. Upon the reorganization of the Battery I made him 1st Sergt. He is only 19 years old, but I am not likely to blame any one for their youth."

Chase's Diary: "Oct. 20, 1862. Usual drill a. m. and drilled by sections: hitched up p. m. Broke the pole of our caisson 4th Detachment. A good, lively, drill. Official notice of the acceptance of Captain Allen's resignation read in line at Roll Call p. m."

Shackley's Notes: "On the 21st of October the Battery was ordered to Antietam, and placed in position to defend the neighborhood where the battle took place."

### ACCOUNT OF OCT. 21ST IN LETTER OF

LIEUT. PHILLIPS OCT. 26TH.

"CAMP NEAR THE MOUTH OF THE  
ANTIETAM, Oct. 26, 1862.

On Tuesday morning agreeably to orders from General Griffin, commanding Division, General Morell being absent, we marched at 8 o'clock. We returned back to the centre of Sharpsburg and then turned to the right. At 9 we crossed the Antietam, near the mouth, on a stone bridge, and turned to the left. Just above the bridge there is a dam across the Antietam, making quite an extensive mill pond. Close by, on the left bank, are the ruins of the Antietam Iron Works. Some 8 or 10 houses are scattered round in the vicinity. Proceeding a short distance along the creek we found Captain Diedrichs' Battery on top of a hill on the right. I waited till he had hauled his guns down, and then put mine in their place, and pitched my camp. . . . The roads have so far been excellent, but let the mud once prevail, and then farewell to all hopes of an 'onward movement.' There are no signs of moving round here, everything is very quiet and has been so for the last month."

The same date account of Oct. 23d &c.: "Thursday afternoon, Capt. (Elijah D.) Taft of the 5th N. Y. Battery, arrived with four 20 pdr. Parrotts, which he placed on the hill with mine. On Friday forenoon we were inspected by

Lieut. Col. Webb, and after inspection I moved my guns farther down river, where I had a better command of the ford."

---

### LETTER OF SERG'T. PEACOCK.

"CAMP NEAR ANTIETAM, MD.

Oct. 23, '62.

We are on top of Antietam Hill, almost a mountain, our Guns in position all ready for action. The hill commands the Ford at this point of the river. We were up all last night by our Guns, but the Rebs gave up the attempt they made to cross. The weather is very cool up here, particularly when we have no regular tents to sleep under. There are only a few shanties and one large Iron Works in this place, and but few traces of the late battle to be seen. We are so short of men that it keeps us at work all the time running the machine. I have made up my mind to stop the remainder of my three years, for the War will not end sooner than that time."

---

Chase's Diary: "Oct. 23, 1862. Routed out with the 4th Detachment at 1 o'clock this morning to man the guns. Each Detachment stood guard an hour in turn through the night. Indications of the approach of the enemy caused the alarm. All quiet through the night. Oct. 24th. . . . Cannoneers removed their quarters nearer the guns in the p. m. Detailed for guard 2d Relief p. m."

Phillips' Letter of Oct. 26 continued: "Taft's guns are placed on a very high hill commanding a view for miles. The sides of the hill are as steep as the roof of a house. My tent is placed on a sort of terrace which runs round the hill, while Captain Taft had to dig out a place for his. My guns

are in a little hollow between two hills. In front of them the ground slopes gently for 100 yards, then tumbles into a stone quarry, and then comes a level meadow to the river. . . . No enemy in sight, not even any picket firing. One of the Batteries of the Divison has been firing a few shots this afternoon, but after looking on, I have come to the conclusion that they were firing at the other side of the river and succeeded in hitting it."

---

Chase's Diary: "Oct. 26, 1862. Sunday. No inspection today and guard mounting and roll call omitted this p. m. Orders to cook two days' rations late p. m. On fatigue duty about an hour bringing water, and hanging the baggage-wagon in the evening. Thoroughly drenched with rain."

#### LETTER OF LIEUT. PHILLIPS.

"CAMP NEAR THE MOUTH OF THE ANTIETAM,

Oct. 26, 1862.

Altogether the situation is a very pleasant one, and I am not sorry for the change. We have got a good oven, and have our baked beans regularly. As cold weather is coming on we have been trying various contrivances for warming up, but cannot get rid entirely of the smoke. At present we have a fireplace resembling very much a hole in the ground, from which the smoke is conducted by an underground railroad to a chimney outside. The chimney being as yet in an unfinished state, it does not draw to complete satisfaction but tomorrow we shall raise the chimney a few feet, when we expect the apparatus to be entirely successful."

Chase's Diary: "Oct. 26, 1862, night cold and rainy and the tent leaky. Oct. 27th. Pleasant about 11 o'clock a. m. No drill today. Built a fireplace for my tent this p. m. Works to a charm. Oct. 29: Usual drill a. m. and a drill hitched up p. m. The 5th Detachment upset their caisson

while drilling, and practised dismounting the spare wheel. Righted the caisson and came to camp."

Phillips' Diary has it "At section drill the side of the caisson was broken and middle rails."

#### LETTER OF LIEUT. PHILLIPS.

"CAMP NEAR ANTIETAM  
IRON WORKS, Oct. 29, 1862.

Our stove has at last been completed to our satisfaction. I deployed the contrabands on it and built a chimney 7 or 8 feet high, and it now draws hugely: in fact I do not think the contrabands appreciate it as much as we do, considering the amount of wood it consumes. The men are all pretty well supplied with fireplaces and chimneys of unique if not elegant pattern; chimneys of stones, bricks, mud, and iron pipes, one of them finished off with the bellows nozzle from the blast furnace near by; stoves of mud and sheet iron; stoves above ground and stoves below ground; stoves within doors, and stoves without doors; stoves that heat and stoves that don't; stoves that smoke and stoves that don't; and in short every variety of stoves. . . . Thinking that things looked like a permanent stay, I have had a chair made of a different pattern from the famous chair of Yorktown (see p. 228) but about as comfortable. The frame is of chestnut, the bottom and back of grain bags, and the whole arrangement is very luxurious. I have only one fault to find. When I put it in my tent there is no room for anything else. In the middle of the day it is quite warm and comfortable out of doors, but evenings I prefer to sit inside. Night before last it was quite cold, the water freezing in our wash bowls. We always have our tent pretty warm when we turn in, but it gets quite cold before morning. However, I take advantage of my position, and instead of turning out at reveille I lie abed till the contrabands have got the fire

going. The canal is now in operation to this point and we are in hopes of getting some hay for our horses, at present they have it about a third of the time. Artillery horses have a pretty hard time of it these cold nights. They have to stand out doors without any shelter, have a scant supply of food, and when on the march a large supply of work. They thin out under the treatment amazingly.

I hear that General Burnside has crossed the river below. This afternoon I thought I would have a drill, instead of keeping my guns idly staring at the opposite bank, and the exercises were varied by capsizing a caisson. They were on a side hill when the whole concern, horses and all, went over. The wheel driver executed some airy manœuvres not laid down in the book, but got off without any serious damage. The caisson was somewhat broken but will be repaired by morning. . . . Brig. Gen'l. Butterfield, it is said, has been appointed to the command of a Division under Burnside, and his Brigade is now commanded by Col. Stockton of the 16th Michigan."

Chase's Diary: "Oct. 30, 1862. The 2d Mass. Regiment with Gordon's Brigade, Gen. Banks's Corps, bivouacked near our camp last night, having marched from Maryland Heights. Met H. Longfellow of the 2d Mass. Regt. Usual drill on piece a. m. Hitched up and drilled about 15 minutes. Indications of leaving here tomorrow. A liberal ration of potatoes for dinner today. Detailed for guard p. m."

## MARTIN'S ORDER.

CAMP NEAR HARPER'S FERRY, VA.

Oct. 30, 1862

LIEUT. C. A. PHILLIPS,  
Com'd'g 5th Mass. Battery.  
Lieut.

You will please march at 6 o'clock tomorrow morning and join the Division, which is now in camp near Harper's Ferry. I neglected to notify you of the march this evening, as I was informed



that you would be notified. The bearer of this will remain, and come with you as a guide.

Very Respflly.

your obt. serv't.

A. P. MARTIN, *Capt.*  
Com'd'g Div. Artillery.

On the 30th of October the Fifth Corps commenced its march from Sharpsburg to Harper's Ferry where it arrived on the 31st, and found there the supplies which were needed to render the campaign effective that McClellan had planned to intercept Lee. The entire Army crossed the Potomac at points convenient for the several Corps. McClellan sought by moving South and occupying the Gaps of the Blue Ridge to force Lee to fight him where he chose to give battle.

Scott's Notes: "October 31st the Army moved to Harper's Ferry and crossed the Potomac and Shenandoah Rivers and camped on Loudon Heights, Va."

Phillips' Diary: "Friday Oct. 31, 1862. The Division marched last night, General Griffin in command, General Morell having been relieved. Somehow no orders were sent to me. This morning received orders to join them. Started at 6 a. m. and after trying the shore road concluded to go round by Burkittsville to Berlin. Passed Brooks' Division, Franklin's Corps, and camped near Berlin. Sat. Nov. 1st. Marched to Harper's Ferry, crossed the Potomac and Shenandoah, and joined the Division about 4 miles from the river."

Chase's Diary: "Oct. 31, 1862. On guard last night 3d Relief. Drivers harnessed up about 9 o'clock last night, and awaited orders till 11 p. m., when they unharnessed and remained in camp all night. Reveille at 5 o'clock this morning. Hitched up and broke camp and marched about 6 o'clock a. m. Marched about a mile towards Harper's Ferry, then countermarched, halted, and watered the horses. The road ahead blocked up by baggage wagons. A bountiful breakfast of baked beans this morning. Delightful

morning. Battery took another road and continued the march over the mountains. Marched through Burkittsville and Petersboro' and camped about a mile from the latter. The 5th New York marched ahead of us all day. Saw large numbers of troops moving today. Camped opposite Maryland Heights and Harper's Ferry. Very pleasant march and the weather delightful."

#### FROM LETTERS OF LIEUT. PHILLIPS.

"Snickers Gap, Nov. 3, 1862. . . . Yesterday marched to this place and camped. Have not seen the rebels yet. Porter's Corps is all here. Breakfasted this morning on boiled goose and beefsteak.

#### REVIEW OF THE WEEK.

Nov. 4, 1862. Last Friday afternoon we received orders to be ready to march at short notice. I made all my preparations and waited. About 9 o'clock in the evening I found that Stockton's Brigade had left, and also that the rest of the Division was on the march down the river road. I sent Lull down to make observations, and he reported that the rear guard had just passed, going down to Harper's Ferry. So I went to bed. About midnight an orderly came back from Captain Martin, (see p. 475) stating they were in camp  $1\frac{1}{2}$  miles from Harper's Ferry, and ordering me to rejoin them in the morning. It seems General Morell had been relieved of his command and in the confusion they had forgotten to send me my orders. So the next morning I hitched up and started. About a mile down the road I ran into the tail end of the wagon train of the Division. They had been on the road all night with a prospect of waiting all day. Disgusted at this state of things I turned back and started on the river road. We passed through a

Gap in South Mts. where we found a beautiful prospect. The woods were colored up magnificently, and presented a splendid sight. About noon the road turned into another where we ran into Slocum's Division on the march. We contrived to get in ahead of their wagon train and pushed on. They soon stopped for dinner, and we passed them and kept on for Berlin, where I understood the Division had been ordered. We crossed another range of hills, and passed through Burkittsville at the foot. Here we made a short halt to allow the column to close up. The village was full of wounded soldiers. About 4 p. m. we passed through Petersville and camped about a mile from Berlin. I have learnt that the Division had crossed at Harper's Ferry. Sunday morning I struck across country for Harper's Ferry. Within a short distance of this place I ran into a wagon train which delayed us for some time. After a while we got by, crossed the Potomac and Shenandoah on pontoon bridges, passed around the base of Loudon Heights, and gradually getting up hill, pushed for the interior. About 4 miles from Harper's Ferry I found the Division and went into camp alongside Waterman. Rec'd an order from Gen. Butterfield assuming command of the Division. The next morning we marched in the following order:—

1st Sykes's Div'n. 2d Humphreys' Div'n. 3d Butterfield's Div'n. 4th Sykes's wagons. 5th Humphreys' wagons. 6th Butterfield's wagons. 7th Rear Guard, 2d Maine and Lieut. Scott's Section.

The Division in this order:—

1st Third Brigade. 2d Waterman's Battery. 3d First Brigade. 4th Martin's Battery. 5th U. S. Sharpshooters. 6th Phillips' Battery. 7th 2d Brigade. 8th Hazlett's Battery.

We marched off at a smart rate keeping the Blue Ridge on our right. By dusk we had made about 15 miles and

camped near Snicker's Gap. The country is very good for foraging, and most of the men have had plenty of goose, mutton, pork and chicken. Last night we got orders to have three days' rations in our haversacks, but have not moved yet. Sykes is up in the Gap, and yesterday Pleasanton drove the Rebs over the Shenandoah. A little cannonading, but nothing important."

### NOTES OF LIEUT. SCOTT.

#### FROM HARPER'S FERRY TO WHITE PLAINS.

"On the 2d of November the 2d Maine Regt. acting as rear guard with my section of the 5th Battery, I had an all night's march to Snicker's Gap of the Blue Ridge Mountains. The night was fearfully cold, and we moved rapidly. Nothing occurred on our march from Snicker's Gap to White Plains, where we camped for the night in a raging snow storm. During the day the Battery halted in front of a fine country residence. The men ransacked the place. They found sweet potatoes covered up in the garden, overturned a bee-hive, and we saw the men with honey from the honey-comb running down their faces regardless of the stinging bees. A pig was chased and caught, but had to be given up. Rights must be respected. It was amusing to say the least."

#### THE BEES' BUSY DAY.

#### NOTES OF SERGT. WM. H. BAXTER.

OCT. 15, 1900.

"Time and place have passed from memory, but the scene is vivid before me.—A deserted farm house of the Old Virginia type, pleasantly situated on a knoll, rising gradually from the road, and surrounded by stately trees, with old

fashioned flowers growing along the path up to the front door.

The writer was not much interested in the surroundings, nor at that time much interested in the sentiment of the flowers. They looked pretty; still the attraction was at the rear of the house, where about 50 of the boys were assembled, all talking at once, trying to devise a plan to get the honey from 9 bee hives, which were ranged in a row across the front of the vegetable garden.

As the writer swung around the corner of the house, a shout went up,—‘Here comes Baxter!’

After viewing the situation a moment, we took two clothes poles, fastening one across the end of the other at right angles, giving us a battering ram covering, say, four of the hives. It was arranged that the writer should push the hives over, while the boys should jump in and get the honey, but at the moment of applying the battering ram, it occurred to the writer ‘where do I come in?’ so instead of pushing the hives over and waiting for some one to get the honey, I just pushed and jumped at the same time, landing squarely in the mess, and it did not take many seconds to fill my haversack with honey, bees, dirt, and beeswax. But, suffering humanity! I reached the conclusion as I crawled out of the mob, that what bees I did not sweep into my haversack with the honey, wax and dirt, had crawled into my hair and down my neck, and at every prod of a stinger I could see stars and black spots on the sun, and I ran up to Lieut. Spear, who came riding into the yard at that moment. He whacked me on the head, back, and everywhere I designated that a bee was getting his work in. It was laughable, his following me around that yard, giving me a whack here and there, but I couldn’t stand still, the bees were too busy. Upon getting shed of the bees and greasing the jabs with my pork ration, we started along for the Battery, but on approaching the gate at the head of the lane in rear of

the house, there was old General Griffin, sitting stolidly on his horse, with the Provost Marshal beside him scooping in as they passed through the gate all who had taken part in the raid on the potato mines and bee hives. The writer put on a sweet Sunday school face and like 'Mary's little lamb' passed through in safety. That evening in camp we had a feast. Fried pork spread over with a mixture of honey and dirt, with a bee or two for fresh meat, and a little beeswax to make a good chew to the whole, was a feast fit for anybody when one could not get any better, and fully repaid all the suffering caused by meddling with the business end of those Virginia bees."

---

Chase notes in his Diary Nov. 8, 1862, on the march they passed some of General Sigel's troops in camp. On the 9th Serg't. Morgridge and other convalescents returned to the Battery.

#### LETTER OF LIEUT. PHILLIPS.

"CAMP NEAR WARRENTON, VA.

Nov. 9, 1862.

Thursday morning Nov. 6th we left Snicker's Gap. In the order for marching it said no communication hereafter with Harper's Ferry. The Rebels followed our rear guard occupying the Gap after we left it. In the afternoon we passed through Middleburg and saw plenty of Secesh uniforms, wounded and paroled, about the streets. That night we camped in the fields. The weather was quite cold and raw. The next morning we marched a few miles, to Rectorville or White Plains, arriving about 9 o'clock. Before our tents were pitched it commenced to snow and continued through the day. It was quite warm and comfortable. The next morning we marched to New Baltimore. This



morning we started at six and arrived here at about 8. We have not yet seen any Rebels."

# THE COMMAND OF THE ARMY OF THE POTOMAC.

HEAD QUARTERS  
ARMY OF THE POTOMAC,  
WARRENTON, VA. NOV. 9, 1862.

## General Orders

No. 1.

### Extracts.

In accordance with General Orders No. 182, issued by the President of the United States, I hereby assume command of the Army of the Potomac. . . . With diffidence for myself, but with a proud confidence in the unswervable loyalty and determination of the gallant Army now intrusted to my care, I accept its control with the steadfast assurance that the just cause must prevail.

A. E. BURNSIDE  
*Major General Commanding.*

Corporal Shackley in his Notes of the 9th observed that the removal of General McClellan "caused much dissatisfaction in men of Democratic sympathies."

(To be read to the Company before the Review.)

## MCCLELLAN'S FAREWELL TO THE ARMY OF THE POTOMAC.

HEAD QUARTERS,  
ARMY OF THE POTOMAC,  
CAMP NEAR RECTORTOWN, VA.

Nov. 7, 1862.

## Officers and Soldiers

of the Army of the Potomac:

An Order of the President devolves upon Major General Burnside the command of this Army.

In parting from you, I cannot express the love and gratitude I bear to you. As an army you have grown up under my care. In you I have never found doubt or coldness. The battles you have fought under my command will proudly live in our nation's history. The glory you have achieved, our mutual perils and fatigues, the graves of our comrades fallen in battle, and by disease, the broken forms of those whom wounds and sickness have disabled,—the strongest associations which

can exist among men,—unite us still by an indissoluble tie. We shall ever be comrades in supporting the Constitution of our Country, and the nationality of its people.

GEO. B. McCLELLAN,  
*Maj. Gen'l. U. S. A.*

---

Chase's Diary: "Nov. 10, 1862. Camp in the direction of Warrenton. Reveille at half past 5 o'clock this morning. Delightful morning. General McClellan's farewell address to the Army read to us in line this morning. Company called in line with the other troops to give our old General a parting cheer as he passed us. McClellan with other generals passed us about 9 o'clock. Martin's Battery fired a salute as they approached. General Burnside takes command of the Army, and his address to the troops was read to us in line this p. m."

---

Nov. 11, 1862, under the cartel a large number of prisoners were exchanged, officers and privates: of the privates the balance due the United States was 6000.

Chase's Letter: "Camp near Warrenton, Va., Nov. 11, 1862: Ere this reaches you, you will know that General McClellan has been called from the field, and that General Burnside now has command of the Army. We regret to lose the leader who has taken us into so much danger and taken us out safely, but if he is to take new and increased responsibilities upon himself, then we are satisfied. McClellan has the confidence of the whole Army, and I think, with few exceptions, the love of the people. He has been kicked about more than any other man in the Army, yet he has always been ready to extricate the Army from the traps and snarls in which the ambitious generals have placed it. He has cleaned up all their bad work, and the Army is again in the field with solid ranks.

Our march here was a very pleasant one. We came via Harper's Ferry, a place I have always wanted to see, not on

account of its being the scene of John Brown's short campaign, but the sublimity of its natural scenery. It is an old proverb, 'See Naples, then die,' but I would say, see Harper's Ferry, then be willing to die, and if you can live yet longer then all the better. It is worth a year's service to visit that place. We halted there about two hours, which gave me a fine chance to look around. There seems to be no regularity about the mails of late, and when a mail leaves we generally have about half an hour's notice. . . . Please ask Mrs. T. if she will send me a darning-needle next letter, as I am greatly in need of one."

---

"I parted from my brave old corps; 'twere matter, lad, for tears."

JOHN BOYLE O'REILLY.—*Uncle Ned's Tale*.

#### PORTER'S FAREWELL ORDER.

HEAD QUARTERS

5TH ARMY CORPS.

CAMP NEAR WARRENTON, VA.

NOV. 12, 1862.

#### General Orders

##### No. 25.

By direction of the President of the United States, Major General Hooker has been assigned to the command of this Corps.

It has been my privilege to lead the little band of regulars, the permanent Army of the United States, inheriting the names, the records, and the traditions of regiments that have borne the banner of our country through all its wars.

It has been my privilege to lead noble regiments of volunteers, coming from different states, but becoming equally national through having the same purpose, the same dangers, and the same suffering.

Having shared their perils and privations in the camp, in the bivouac, on the march, and in half a score of bloody fields: to the officers and men of both classes I address myself.

The confidence, which if I may judge by your acts, you have reposed in me, it has been my earnest effort to meet and requite. The personal regard which I am proud to feel that you bear towards me, is reciprocated by an ardent affection and a deep respect, which time cannot efface. The personal good fortune of each of you will be always a matter of heartfelt interest to me. The professional successes you will attain will be doubly grateful to me, inasmuch as they will be identified with the success of our cause.

Among the most gratifying of my thoughts of you will be the assurance that your subordination and loyalty will remain in the future as in the past, firm and steadfast to our country and its authorities.

F. J. PORTER,

*Major General.*

General Fitz John Porter took leave of the Fifth Corps at 4 p. m. and the same evening left for Washington.

At each leavetaking Martin's 3d Mass. Battery fired the national salute of 13 guns, a salute of honor for the retiring commander, as he rode past.

Chase's Diary: "Nov. 11, 1862. Eight hard crackers for a day's ration today.

Nov. 12. In camp all day. Battery called in line to bid farewell to Major General Fitz John Porter this p. m. . . . General Porter appeared to be much affected, and his farewell address was read to us by Captain Martin.

Weather mild and cloudy. Beef steak for dinner!! No meat served out to us except salt pork for the last ten days, until today. Short rations of bread again today. Bought bread for 5 cts. per lb. from commissary. Entered upon my arduous and responsible duties as 2d Corporal of the 2d Detachment this p. m. Nov. 13: Posted guard last night, last half. Morning cold and windy. Drilled on manual of the piece."

#### LETTER OF LIEUT. PHILLIPS.

"CAMP NEAR WARRENTON, VA.

Nov. 13, 1862.

The events of the last few days have made quite an alteration in the appearance of things. On Monday we were astonished to hear that General McClellan had been relieved and General Burnside placed in command. At 9 o'clock in the forenoon Porter's Corps was drawn up on the eastern side of the Warrenton and Gainesville turnpike and Sumner's Corps on the other side, facing inward. Soon

after, General McClellan rode through, accompanied by General Burnside, General Porter and brigadiers and officers of lower grade innumerable. A major general's salute was fired, everybody cheered, and then we all went home. At 11 o'clock General McClellan held a levee at General Porter's Hd. Qrs., where the customary handshaking took place, and then he left.

So ended the second removal of General McClellan. Of course there is a diversity of opinion and feeling on the subject. . . . The siege of Yorktown I pronounced a failure at the time. After the battle of Williamsburg I thought, and still think, that McClellan could have followed the enemy into Richmond. . . . The Army was never in better health or condition than while we were lying idle on the Potomac; the roads were never better. Why we did not move I cannot say. . . . Following close, came the removal of General Porter. Everybody knew that he must follow General McClellan, but nobody knew exactly how it would be brought about. General Porter re-enacted General McClellan's departure in his own: the Corps was all drawn up, salute fired, and cheers given. As he passed the batteries he shook hands with Captain Martin and bade him good bye. General Hooker has assumed command. We now belong to Butterfield's Division, Hooker's 5th Army Corps."

GENERAL ORDER RESPECTING THE OBSERVANCE OF  
THE SABBATH DAY IN THE ARMY  
AND NAVY.

EXECUTIVE MANSION,

WASHINGTON, November 15, 1862.

The President, Commander-in-Chief of the Army and Navy, desires and enjoins the orderly observance of the Sabbath, by the officers and men in the military and naval service. The importance for man and beast of the prescribed weekly rest, the sacred rights of Christian soldiers and sailors, a becoming deference to the best sentiment of a Christian people, and a due regard for the Divine will, demand that Sunday labor in the Army and Navy be reduced to the measure of strict necessity.

The discipline and character of the national forces should not suffer, nor the cause they defend be imperilled, by the profanation of the day or name of the Most High.

"At this time of public distress"—adopting the words of Washington in 1776—"men may find enough to do in the service of God and their country without abandoning themselves to vice and immorality." The first General Order issued by the Father of his Country after the Declaration of Independence, indicates the spirit in which our institutions were founded, and should ever be defended: "*The General hopes and trusts that every officer and man will endeavor to live and act as becomes a Christian soldier defending the dearest rights and liberties of his country.*"

ABRAHAM LINCOLN.

### FROM LETTERS OF LIEUT. PHILLIPS.

"CAMP IN THE FIELDS,

Nov. 20, 1862.

Last Saturday General Hooker reviewed the Division. After it was through he had a reception at General Butterfield's Hd. Qrs. While Butterfield was in command of the Division he introduced a change in marching orders. He published a circular containing six forms for marching as follows:—"

#### COPIED FROM PHILLIPS DIARY.

##### Form 1.

1st	First Brigade Battery.....	25 minutes
2d	Second Brigade Battery.....	25 minutes
3d	Third Brigade Battery.....	25 minutes
4th	1st U. S. S. S. Battery.	
5th	Ambulances.	

---

##### Form 2.

1st	Second Brigade Battery.....	25 minutes
2d	Third Brigade Battery.....	25 minutes
3d	1st U. S. S. S. Battery .....	10 minutes
4th	1st Brigade Battery.	
5th	Ambulances.	

---



## Form 3.

1st	Third Brigade Battery.....	25 minutes
2d	First U. S. S. S. Battery .....	10 minutes
3d	First Brigade Battery.....	25 minutes
4th	Second Brigade Battery.	
5th	Ambulances.	

---

## Form 4.

1st	1st U. S. S. S. Battery .....	10 minutes
2d	1st Brigade Battery.....	25 minutes
3d	Second Brigade Battery.....	25 minutes
4th	Third Brigade Battery.....	25 minutes
5th	Ambulances.	

---

## Form 5.

1st	First Brigade .....	20 minutes
2d	1st U. S. S. S. ....	5 minutes
3d	All the Batteries .....	20 minutes
4th	Second Brigade .....	20 minutes
5th	Third Brigade .....	20 minutes
6th	Ambulances.	

---

## Form 6.

1st	All the Batteries .....	20 minutes
2d	Third Brigade .....	20 minutes
3d	Second Brigade .....	20 minutes
4th	First Brigade .....	20 minutes
5th	1st U. S. S. S. ....	20 minutes
6th	Ambulances.	

---

## FROM LIEUT. PHILLIPS' LETTER.

"So now it is only necessary to send an order 'The Division will march tomorrow at 6 a. m. in Form 1.' Then the First Brigade marches at 6 followed by a Battery, the Second Brigade at 6.25, Battery following. Third Brigade and a Battery at 6.50. Sharp Shooters at 7.15 &c &c. Captain Martin designates the batteries to follow the Brigades. Monday we marched at 6 in 'Form 1,' following the Sharp Shooters, and camped about four miles beyond Warrenton Junction, having turned off the railroad to the left. Tuesday we marched in 'Form 2,' following the Second Brigade, and yesterday we marched in 'Form 3' follow-

ing the Sharp Shooters. We arrived at this place at 2 o'clock.

Camp near Falmouth, Va. Nov. 26, 1862. On the 17th we marched down to Warrenton Junction then down the railroad towards the Rappahannock a few miles, and then struck across country for Fredericksburg. That night we camped in the fields. The next day we resumed the march; marched about 4 miles and camped. There we remained Thursday, Friday, and Saturday. Sunday morning we were again on the move. About noon we passed the Artillery Reserve in camp about 3 miles from Falmouth. We then switched off the main road, and leaving Falmouth on our right marched through the woods. At 7 o'clock in the middle of the woods, dark as midnight, we came to a mud hole. Here we stuck: horses got mired, wheels sank to the hub and things looked pleasant. Our horses had had nothing to eat for two days. We doubled up—put ten horses on a carriage, and hauled through. By 12 we had got through. Just beyond the mud hole the road was very narrow, with a bank about 6 feet high on each side. As the Battery wagon came through at full speed with the horses on, the drivers missed the road and drove up on the bank. As the Battery wagon got well on the top, over it went into the road below, and landed bottom side up, the pole horses in a heap, and their driver getting out of the way with a lame leg. Here was 'a pretty kettle of fish.' The Battery wagon weighs over 4000 lbs., and is no easy thing to handle. However, we managed to clear the horses, and then binding on a rope, we soon righted it. Our camping ground fortunately was only about half a mile ahead, and we arrived there about 10 o'clock. As we were crowded with infantry we moved yesterday about a mile, to this spot, where the 4 batteries have a large field all to themselves. We are on the northern side of it, and about 5 miles from the railroad from Acquia Creek to Falmouth,

and about six miles from the latter place. It is quite a pleasant spot, and we mean to enjoy it while we are here."

In Corporal Shackley's account of the overturning of the Battery wagon he says, "The wheeldriver was so injured as to be taken to camp in an ambulance."

Corporal Chase gives this description:—"Battery decoyed into a narrow road through a slough where most of the pieces and caissons were mired in the ruts, and the Battery wagon upset, completely inverted. Obligated to double up most of the teams to draw out the pieces and caissons. Fourteen horses hitched to the 2d Detachment's caisson to extricate it. All hands ordered to the rear to right the Battery wagon. Succeeded in righting it with ropes and levers, and the whole Battery went into park about ten o'clock p. m. Very scanty rations. Weather clear, cold, and frosty. A good night's rest. Marched about seven miles today and camped near Falmouth, Va."

#### RECRUITING SERVICE.

HEAD QUARTERS  
CENTRE GRAND DIVISION,  
CAMP NEAR POTOMAC CREEK, VA.  
Nov. 24, 1862.

Special Order  
No. II.

#### Extract

. . . 2d Lieut. Frederick A. Lull, Battery E. Mass. Artillery, is detailed to proceed to Cambridge, Mass. for the purpose of securing and bringing back recruits that are there.

He will execute this duty with dispatch and rejoin his Battery without any unnecessary delay.

By command of

MAJOR GENERAL HOOKER.  
(Sd.) JOS. DICKINSON,  
*Asst. Adj't. General.*

HEAD QUARTERS  
5TH ARMY CORPS,  
Nov. 25th, 1862.

Official:

(Sd.) F. W. PERKINS,  
*A. A. A. G.*

Official:

A. P. MARTIN *Capt.*  
*Com'd'g Division Art'y.*

Chase's Diary: "Nov. 25, 1862. . . . Lieut. Lull went home. On the 25th General Burnside issued a circular containing the following words:—

'Hereafter no salute will be fired in this Army unless by authority from these Head Quarters.'

Nov. 26 1862. In camp (near Falmouth by the side of the Acquia Creek and Fredericksburg R. R.) all day, trying to live till the 27th, Thanksgiving Day. Scanty rations of bread and pork. Weather cold and cloudy.

Nov. 27th 1862. Thanksgiving in Massachusetts. Ten crackers and a ration of fresh beef, boiled, for our rations.

Nov. 28th 1862. The engine 'Government' passed here this a. m. The first one through from Acquia Creek since McClellan's retreat. A drill on the piece a. m.

William Wilcox died today of consumption. Nov. 29. Company called in line and after a brief service followed the remains of Wm. Wilcox to their final resting place. A short drill on the manual of the piece this morning. The engine 'Osceola' passed up this morning."

Corporal Shackley: "William S. Wilcox died Nov. 28, 1862, and was buried in this place." He was from New Bedford.

---

#### FROM A LETTER OF LIEUT. PHILLIPS.

"CAMP NEAR FALMOUTH, VA.

Nov. 30, 1862.

Things here roll on in a monotonous kind of way. We have now been encamped here about a week, doing nothing in particular. Everybody expects the Army to move, and nobody knows why it does not. I see some of the papers are beginning to bring up the old story of Burnside's being disappointed by the Quartermaster's Department, the non-arrival of the pontoon train, just as they did in McClellan's

time. The railroad from Acquia Creek to Falmouth is now in running order, and cars run over it daily. Everything is apparently ready. Why wait till Jackson has joined Lee before attacking? Although the railroad is completed, supplies are not forwarded very rapidly, five cars being the longest train that has gone up yet. The work of unloading &c at Acquia Creek does not seem to be pushed very rapidly. . . . Meantime we must wait and hope. This forenoon was occupied with inspection, which I have every Sunday, if possible. My horses are in poor condition, as are all the rest of the batteries'. Forage of late has come very irregularly, and two meals a day has been rather the exception than the rule. All the horses out here have been affected with a sort of hoof rot, which has troubled the batteries very much; some batteries losing 30 or 40 horses. Men are about as scarce as horses, in fact I have more horses than men. We have now pretty comfortable quarters. Our two tents are pitched facing each other, the space between enclosed by a high evergreen hedge, with small doors, and a fire constantly burning in the middle.

Dec. 1, 1862: The first day of winter and no movement yet. General Butterfield is having his tent lined with blankets, which does not look like an immediate march. The men are stockading their tents, building log houses &c. These things however do not prove anything. Nobody here wants or expects an inactive winter like the last, spent in looking at the Rebels. Last night Captain Gibson and Quartermaster's Sergeant Upton of the 35th stopped here all night, and I gave up my bed to Captain Gibson, turning myself in on a pile of hay. The guard at our quarters was instructed to keep the fire up all night, and by keeping the tent open I slept warm with my overcoat on. Our diet now is rather monotonous. The usual hard bread forms the basis of all culinary attempts. We have some very good bread now: salt pork adds an occasional relish to the bill of

fare, salt beef is now esteemed a delicacy, while potatoes and rice are things of the past. This morning we had baked beans cooked in our subterranean oven. Tomorrow we expect to have broiled salt mackerel, roast beef and other luxuries. Blake ran afoul of a sutler, who had some cheese, 40 cts. a pound, some chow-chow all engaged by a Brig. Gen'l, and ginger cakes. He managed to get a bottle of chow-chow and this with cheese and crackers, help down our meals considerably. We have now got to roasting meat to perfection in a very simple manner. We dig a hole in the ground about two feet across, and two feet deep, build a fire in it, and when our oven is heated put in the meat in a kettle, cover with coals, pile on the dirt and let it roast."

Chase's Diary: "Dec. 1, 1862. . . . Commenced preparing winter quarters. Dec. 2. Posted the guard last night, first half, and today. Weather delightful. Dec. 3d. Drill on the piece a. m. Finished stockading, and completed my tent for 'Winter Quarters.' "

#### GEN'L BARRY TO GOV. ANDREW.

William F. Barry, Brig. Gen. Inspector of Artillery, in a letter to Gov. Andrew dated Washington, D. C. Dec. 3, 1862, names several Massachusetts batteries, which at different times had been under his command, including the Fifth, and adds:—

"The officers and men of these batteries have been generally distinguished for a high order of intelligence, for aptitude in acquiring the theory and promptness in executing the practice of their special service. They have generally been conspicuous for good discipline, and as far as they came under my observation, for courage and conduct under fire."



GENERAL ORDERS OF DEC. 4. 1862. FIRING GUNS.

HEAD QUARTERS

ARMY OF THE POTOMAC, CAMP

NEAR FALMOUTH, VA.

Dec. 4, 1862.

Orders: Extracts.

. . . par. 3.

In no case, except when firing canister at short range, should the fire exceed from each gun one round in two minutes; and that rate should only be reached at critical moments when the distance, numbers, and formation of the enemy are such that the fire is sure to be effective.

At all other times one round in four or six minutes is as rapid firing as should be permitted. The value of the Rifled Cannon consists principally in its accuracy; accuracy requires careful pointing with close observation of the effect, and these require time. Twelve shots in an hour at an object over 1000 yards distant, the time being spent in careful loading and pointing, will produce better results, than fifty shots will ordinarily produce from the same gun in the same time.

The campaign allowance of 250 rounds per gun, carried with the Division is calculated to suffice for a general action, and the combats which usually precede it, and under ordinary circumstances an officer who expends all his ammunition in a few hours, renders himself liable to a suspicion that his reckless expenditure was prompted by a desire to quit the field. In future, Batteries will not be permitted to leave the field or their position under this plea. The guns and cannoneers will remain on the ground until ammunition is furnished. As soon as one caisson of each section has been emptied, the empty caissons will be sent to the rear, under charge of a non-commissioned officer to replenish at the ammunition train.

If the expenditure of ammunition continues to be as extravagant as heretofore, it will be impossible to keep the Army supplied. . . .

By command of Maj. Gen'l Burnside.

HENRY J. HUNT *Brig. Gen'l,*  
*Chief of Artillery.*

Chase's Diary: "Dec. 6, 1862. About three inches of snow on the ground this morning. Scraped the snow from the guns and pieces and hitched up for a general inspection a. m. Left park and obliques into line a few rods from camp, and immediately countermarched and returned to park and unhitched: 'a false alarm.' Dec. 7, Sunday. Last night and today very cold. Frederick Manchester left for home today."

Chase's Letter of Dec. 8, 1862: "Well, here we are, as usual, 'waiting,' like Micawber, 'for something to turn up.' Shovels, picks and siege guns are as usual going to the front, and they may turn up some new feature in the war, similar to our old one at Yorktown, several months ago, but when the performance is to commence has not yet been announced, and in fact we do not think much about it. I have entirely outgrown the childish interest I used to take in the movements of the Army, and I now take about as much interest in war matters as I did in the rise and fall of steak, when I was at work for \$1.25 per day. 'Variety is the spice of life,' and although we have had quite a variety, yet there seems to be a sort of sameness to our way of existing here, and we want a *new* variety. General Joe Hooker now commands our Corps, and as he has been a successful fighting man, I trust he will be in future. Thanksgiving passed off very quietly here. I did not hear of any drunken carousals, or sickness from hearty eating. We had *nearly* as much as we could eat of prime mess pork and hard bread, and all the various viands we make of it."

Diary: "Dec. 9th. Inspection of the Battery by Captain Weed, 5th regulars, at noon today. Went through a short drill in presence of Captains Weed and Martin, and returned to camp. Three new recruits came to us this evening. Dec. 10th. Ordered to fit our ammunition for action. The 4th Rhode Island Battery broke camp and moved to the front p. m. One more recruit came today. Dec. 11th. Reveille at half past three this morning. Broke camp, packed up, and hitched up, and left camp about half past six a. m. Cannonading commenced in the direction of Fredericksburg about five o'clock this morning. . . . The ground frozen solid. Bombardment of Fredericksburg, with but slight intervals of cessation, from about 5 a. m. until 5 p. m. Battery halted about a mile from Fredericksburg and remained hitched up until sunset, when we

bivouacked for the night. The city of Fredericksburg on fire in several places p. m."

Captain Phillips' Diary: "Thursday, Dec. 11, 1862. Broke camp (near Falmouth, Va.) at daybreak and marched towards the river. Batteries had been in position the night before and the bridges were thrown over under their fire. Our troops crossed towards evening. We camped near the river. Abandoned a horse. Dec. 12th. Hitched up all day and got about  $\frac{1}{2}$  mile nearer the river."

From Lieut. Scott: "On the morning of the 12th of December, 5 days' rations were taken, the Battery hitched up and early were on the march towards Fredericksburg, 5 miles distant. Within two miles of the city we stood all day, camping at night in and near a wood, where we suffered through the night from the cold, chilly atmosphere that prevailed. The ground was partly covered with snow."

Chase's Diary: "Dec. 12th. Cannonading in the direction of Fredericksburg commenced again this morning about 8 o'clock. Left camp about 9 a. m. and proceeded towards Fredericksburg; halted near the R. R. and remained hitched up until about 4 p. m., when we unhitched and bivouacked for the night. An artillery duel across the river between the opposing armies this p. m. A brisk cannonading on both sides. Weather perfectly delightful."

Phillips' Diary Dec. 13th, 1862. "Crossed the river about 4 p. m. Came into Battery and opened. The enemy fired on us from several guns in commanding entrenchments, killing Corporal E. M. Platts and several horses. Withdrew at dark and bivouacked in the city, sleeping in a house. Fired about 100 rounds,—47 Hotchkiss shell, 60 Schenkle Perc. Fuze Shrapnell."

Chase's Diary: "Dec. 13, 1862. Fine morning. A very brisk and heavy cannonading commenced this a. m. about 9 o'clock. Packed up, and hitched up about half past 8

a. m. Heavy cannonading at 12 m. The flank of the enemy's artillery plainly visible. A sharp musketry fire, apparently in the city, commenced about  $\frac{1}{2}$  past 12 p. m.—A steady firing of artillery and musketry. An awful battle is raging—3 p. m.—in and about the city. Troops moving to the front. Left our camp and moved towards the front about  $\frac{1}{4}$  past three p. m.

Four p. m. Battle still raging. Incessant firing both of artillery and musketry since the battle commenced. The balloon 'Eagle' up during the engagement. Battery halted on the way to the front. Troops fast moving forward. Quarter past 4 p. m. Battery crossed the Rappahannock over a pontoon bridge and passed through the city and took a position and commenced shelling the enemy with shrapnell with 4 second fuze. The enemy replied to our fire with well-directed shots.

Acted as No. 4 and 6 man during the engagement. Battery fired about 120 rounds at the enemy and limbered up and left the field. Corporal E. M. Platts seriously wounded. Lost 5 horses. Halted in the streets of the city, and let the horses remain hitched up all night. Posted the guard, first half, this night. Weather during the day perfectly delightful, and the night very mild. One hour's rest tonight. Dec. 14th, Sunday. Mild, pleasant morning. Musketry fire commenced about 6 o'clock this morning, just outside the city, and artillery firing began about half an hour later on the left. Corporal Platts died of his wound last night. His remains decently interred this morning. Robert Brand also wounded yesterday.

Battery ordered to the front about 9 o'clock this morning. Left the street with four guns, and placed them in the same position we occupied yesterday. Remained in position all day and night. No firing by the Battery this day. Infantry and sharpshooters cracking away all day with irregular fire. The enemy plainly visible and their camp fires in full

blaze in our front. Guns in position close to the Fredericksburg Alms House. Provisions, bedding, and other pauper fare very acceptable to us, this day and night. Slept near our guns and had a good night's rest. No fighting today."

#### LETTER OF CAPTAIN PHILLIPS.

"CAMP NEAR FALMOUTH, VA.

Dec. 31, 1862.

I was in the fight but as I did not go in until about 4 p. m. on the 13th I did not see the principal part, nor could I see the whole of the field. I had a view of the rebel batteries, and they were kind enough to send quite a number of their shells towards the spot where I was, so that I ascertained their guns to be 12 pdrs. and 3 inch chiefly. I lost one man and several horses. We were in position on the left of our Right i. e. Franklin on our left. The right of the Battery rested on a brick kiln, the left on the Fredericksburg Poor House. The Telegraph Road and the stone wall were 1000 yards in front of us, at the foot of a hill, and half way up the hill was the line of rebel batteries, earthworks with embrasures for the guns. The rebels fired at us, with great perseverance, till dark, and then we returned to Fredericksburg and bivouacked in somebody's empty house. The next day we returned to our former position, and remained there all day, but this time the rebels didn't shoot at us. We spent the night in the Poor House, and the next day, after dark, returned to Fredericksburg, where I slept in the library of the Young Men's Christian Association. The next morning we re-crossed the river. As for the reason why we did not drive the rebels out of their works, in my opinion it was simply from a want of adaptation of the means to the end. The history of all modern wars shows the folly of expecting the best of infan-

try, unaided, to drive out even poor troops from behind breastworks. All such attempts only repeat Bunker Hill over again, and when, as in this case, the troops opposed were of equal experience and bravery, the attempt becomes more strange. I do not learn that our artillery was used to any advantage at Fredericksburg. We had a couple of hundred guns mounted on the northern shore, all very well for shelling the city and covering the bridges, but useless for any other purpose. Some  $4\frac{1}{2}$  siege guns undertook to throw shell at the enemy, while the fight was going on, and killed more of our own men than of the enemy: they generally do. The fact is we have no general who has shown himself able to handle infantry, artillery, and cavalry so as to make them co-operate together. Malvern Hill is the only battle that I have been in where the artillery was even decently managed, and there the number of pieces was so small that it could not have been mismanaged, very well. As usual, however, they had a battery of siege guns a mile in the rear, pitching shells round at random, killing two men in the battery next to me. And as for cavalry, they have not been of the slightest use in a single pitched battle: there is not a single cavalry charge recorded in the annals of this war. You may say the country is not suitable: there could not be a better spot to manœuvre a battalion of cavalry than the battlefield of Malvern Hill, and they were just what was wanted at that fight. However, I do not want to be blaming Burnside . . . if he did make a blunder at Fredericksburg it does not begin to compare with Gaines Mills. I do not understand why he crossed where he did, instead of crossing lower down, and I do not understand why he does not cross again."

Phillips' Diary: "Sunday, Dec. 14, 1862. Buried Platts this morning. About 10 a. m. returned to yesterday's position. . . . Martin's Battery was placed on our left. No shots exchanged. I slept on a sofa in the Poor House."



## LETTER OF CAPTAIN PHILLIPS.

"IN BATTERY BETWEEN FREDERICKSBURG

POOR HOUSE AND A BRICK KILN.

2½ p. m. Sunday, Dec. 14, 1862.

The paper on which this is written (heavy ruled paper with a torn edge) came out of an account book from the Poor House, and I am sitting in a cushioned chair writing this. After marching round for several days we got started out of camp yesterday noon for the front. Hazlett and Waterman went into position the night of the 10th and took part in the shelling of the 11th. Night before last we camped near Falmouth railroad station. About noon we started and marched down opposite the lower part of Fredericksburg. The infantry of the Division crossed over, and about 3 o'clock Captain Weed sent for my Battery, Martin's remaining on the other side. I crossed and came into battery on this ground, my guns pointing over a crest of a hill. Our infantry were deployed in front, and the enemy about 1000 yards in front of us, their infantry at the bottom of a hill behind a stone wall, and their batteries on top of the hill, 100 ft. higher than we were. As soon as we got in position, we opened on them and they on us. We devoted our attention to their infantry without minding their batteries, while their artillery paid close attention to us. They made some good shots, the Poor House being riddled through. We stayed in position about an hour, and fired 107 rounds. Corporal Platts, a fine young fellow, was killed by a shrapnell shot. Brand, a new recruit, slightly bruised and badly frightened by a shell which killed the horse he was on and another one. Five horses killed and several scratched. Mine was struck in the flank. Lieut. Scott struck by a spent shell, but not hurt, &c. &c. At dark we withdrew and halted in the streets of Fredericksburg. I bivouacked my men in one house, and turned in myself in

an upper chamber in another. Scott and I found a good bedstead and spread our blankets and went to sleep. The slatted bottom,—there being no bed,—felt a good deal like a gridiron, but we managed to get along. The ventilation was quite good, one shell having gone through the head board of the bed, another through the bureau, and half a dozen through the walls. Several stairs were knocked out, and the house was in a general state of dislocation. We started a fire in the stove, out of chairs and washstands, and after a cup of coffee and a piece of beef steak I turned in and slept till morning. This forenoon we came out again to this position. We have kept our guns out of sight, and have interchanged no shots with the enemy. Martin's Battery is on our left. A pretty brisk picket firing is going on on our front, but nothing important. The men have found some flour in the Poor House and are cooking flap-jacks at a great rate. The looting process has brought to light a varied assortment of articles: tin ware, plates, cups, dishes, clothes &c.

Monday morning: We remained in battery all day yesterday, without firing or being fired at, and last night after a supper of beef steak and fried onions, we turned in in the Poor House. I lay down on a sofa, Scott and Blake spread a feather bed on the floor, and we got along quite comfortably. This morning I drew my chair up to the table, and eat my breakfast in a very civilized manner. We are now, 8 a. m., waiting for something to turn up.

Fredericksburg Poor House, Monday noon, Dec. 15, 1862. For some reason or other our mail has been interrupted for the last fortnight, and no letters have reached us during that time. I have sent on to Washington to have it forwarded. The inhabitants of the building stayed in it till a shell came through the window, when they left in a hurry, except one old darkey, who improvised a bomb proof in a corner of the cellar and held on. The keeper of the

institution was a Mr. Waite who lived here with a large family, including Mr. Dana Magee his son-in-law, hailing from Connecticut, who appears to have carried on the manufacture of tin ware in an upper chamber. They do not appear to have had time to carry off much of their property, and as the house was well up to the front, our men had quite a chance to forage. We found five barrels of flour, all gone now, and the men have been quite busy making flapjacks and pancakes. Cups, jugs, plates, kettles, and all the *et cetera* of housekeeping, were quite plenty, and proved quite useful to a lot of hungry and ingenious men. I had some very good soft bread baked, and foraged an old fashioned bake kettle, which will work in well in our future campaigns. . . . We had quite a noisy place on Saturday. . . . I had to send two guns to the rear as I had not men enough to work them. I want my recruits badly, and I have written Lieut. Lull to hurry them up. The city of Fredericksburg is pretty well cleaned out. Every house that I have seen has from 10 to 50 holes through it, and all the furniture &c. has been smashed by shells, burned up or carried off. The fences are all gone, and a general state of desolation apparent."

FROM A LETTER OF CAPTAIN PHILLIPS.

JANUARY 5, 1863.

"One thing I will say, I don't have any skulkers when I go into a fight, but every man was at his post when we came into battery, and only two men went to the rear without orders: one to help Platts off the field: the other, a raw recruit, was holding two horses by the bridle, when a shell took off both animals' heads, and he got knocked down somehow. Startled at such an unaccustomed event he fancied he was wounded, he did get struck on the shoulder by the horses or a piece of shell."

ORDER FROM CAPTAIN PHILLIPS TO SERGT.  
PEACOCK AT THE BATTLE OF  
FREDERICKSBURG.

WRITTEN IN PENCIL.

SERGT. PEACOCK.

When an empty limber comes back to you, send one of the caisson limbers to the front, and fill up the empty limber from the middle and rear chests. When one of the two caissons is empty, have another full one sent up to you. Send the empty caisson to the Division Ordnance Train, probably across the river near our old camp. It is denoted by an American Flag marked 1st Division, 5th Army Corps, and Capt. Batchelder has charge of it. Put the caisson in charge of the most intelligent driver, and tell him to fill it up and keep account of the ammunition he gets and return without delay.

CHARLES A. PHILLIPS,

*Capt.*

Phillips' Diary: "Dec. 15, 1862. Remained all day in position. At dark marched to Princess Anne street. Halted and bivouacked in the building of the Young Men's Christian Association."

## NOTES OF LIEUT. H. D. SCOTT.

" 'Yet we faced the gay battalions  
All undaunted, to the death.' "

About 3 p. m. of the 13th of December, 1862, after the Battery had been standing in harness nearly two days, we were ordered to cross the river. After crossing the Rapahannock on a pontoon bridge, at the lower part of the city of Fredericksburg, laid near a railroad bridge which had been destroyed, we filed into Water street, which runs parallel with the river. We halted and stripping for the fight, the caissons were parked in the garden of a house near. Edwards' [Captain John Edwards, 3d U. S.] Regular

Battery with guns stood in the street, having been in position in front of the Heights occupied by the rebels in rear of the city, when they had been driven out by the enemy's fire in 15 minutes. We thought if that Battery could not stay longer, how long would we be likely to stay? But we were in for it. Passing up a near by street at right angles with the river, we went into position on sloping ground where we were covered from the enemy's fire on Marye's Heights, the left of the Battery resting close to a two story brick building which had been the city's asylum for the poor. Our right rested on a bank where the clay had been dug out for brick-making, and near the railroad, which passed near, curving past our front. The ground was cramped, and the guns were in reduced intervals, close to one another. We could see the fight going on to our right over the plain, where Edwards' Battery had been. The brick house stood on the side of the hill, the ground receding rapidly to its north front facing the city, thus forming a basement. A well not far from the basement, could not be reached, as the rebel sharpshooters on the left of the house had it in full view. Several dead men lay around it and during daylight any one going to the well had a bullet about his ears. While going into position we had not been molested. We commenced firing at the rebel batteries with our rifled guns. After loading them, we would run them up the slope by hand, so the muzzles would clear the bank, take aim and fire, the guns running back to be reloaded. The enemy 1000 to 1200 yards away caught on to us, and opened their fire which was kept up till darkness closed the scene. Fortunately we were well protected, but they did not spare us. Most of their shot passed over our heads, into the town behind us, and the noise, as the shot raked through the city, was terrific and very demoralizing. Some of their shots striking the higher ground in our front, would ricochet, passing clear of our heads, but we worked with a will, men

and all. As the ground grew soft we had hard work to run the guns up, and at last had to take men from another gun to accomplish it. I remember of being so thirsty, that cotton wool soaked in water would have been refreshing.

All this time a disastrous fight was going on, for the 5th Corps on our right, the plain being fairly covered with the blue coats which we could see in part. Still we kept up our fire. As one of my drivers dismounted to arrange his harness, not far from where I was standing, on higher ground, a solid shot passed my left elbow, causing it to be black and blue, struck the vacant saddle of the driver, and passed through two horses, killing them instantly. The horses were at once turned into the pit, and 4 horses of the team remained. A shot took the head off the Bugler's horse, and Corporal Platts was killed by a bullet from an exploding shell. Two men were slightly wounded, but there was no other loss.

As night shut in we returned to Water street, where we had left the caissons, and occupied a room in the second story of a house. We made a fire from such wood or furniture as we could find, spread our blankets on a slatted bedstead and Phillips and I passed a miserable night, trying to adjust ourselves to the ever widening space between the slats.

Sunday, December 14th, 1862, opened clear and quite warm. We hardly knew what would be our fate this day. Everything was as still and solemn as a New England Sabbath. We took the shutters off one of the houses and made a box in which the body of Corporal Platts was placed. A grave was dug in an adjoining garden, a chaplain of the Brigade read the service, and after the body was covered a board was placed at its head, giving his name and Battery. It was a solemn time as Platts was a great favorite. At 10 a. m. we were ordered into the position occupied the day before, and in this movement we were not molested. Not a



gun did we hear during the day. Here the horses stood in harness two days, and the weather was favorable. The brick basement of the house on our left was occupied. Finding a barrel of flour and a colored slave, who had been stowed away, we set him to work making pancakes, and we fared high. A feather bed was found which we made up on the floor, and that made up for the uncomfortable night previous. Mahogany chairs upholstered in haircloth, were used by the men to sit upon, among the horses and guns.

Monday the 15th Dec. 1862, we remained all day in the same position. Some picket firing was heard during the day, but it quieted down to a gloomy silence. From the second story of the brick house spoken of, we could see the field covered with the blue coats of the dead which they enclosed. The rebels in their fire of the 13th on us had bored the brick house through and through. Looking through an opening about the size of a peck measure, we could see the rebel line of sharpshooters. Holding my head close to one of these openings I was a mark for one of them. A bullet struck the brick alongside my face. I was more careful after that. However we were not molested except by an alarm in the night by picket firing near us. We turned out in haste but soon quieted down again.

Monday night, after dark, we were ordered to retire into the city with as little noise as possible. Getting the Battery together on Water street we moved up the street to near the centre of the city. We halted, and the Battery stood until near daylight. The street was full of artillery and soldiers. Going into a large building on the street, which had been used as a hospital during the day of the battle, we found it lighted. Evidently it had been a public library as it was surrounded by shelves containing books of all kinds. In one corner were the legs and arms of the soldiers that had been amputated. Piling books on the floor for a pillow, we lay down and tried to sleep, but it was of no use. The sit-

uation was not pleasant; we did not know but what the enemy would be down on us before morning."

### LETTER OF LIEUT. SPEAR.

"CAMP NEAR FALMOUTH, VA.

Tuesday, Dec. 23, 1862.

Two weeks ago tomorrow night, we received orders to pack up and be ready to move on the following morning. At 3 o'clock we were routed up and commenced the striking of tents, and at daybreak moved towards Fredericksburg, but on account of the rebels in the city, our forces were unable to lay a pontoon bridge across the river until Friday night, and we remained encamped this side of the river until Saturday, when the battle commenced and we were ordered across the river to join in the fight. We lost 8 horses and had 2 men wounded; one slightly, one dangerously. About 9 o'clock we received orders to vacate our position in the field, and move down into the city, and so down into the city we go, and after unhitching the horses and feeding them, we all went into a large house, built up fires in the fireplaces, and then turned in for sleep. At 3 o'clock the next morning we were up again, and all went to work feeding horses and cooking breakfast. This was Sunday morning. At 7 o'clock we were ready for the fight, with the exception of one thing. While all were eating breakfast one of the Boys came along and told us that Corp'l E. M. Platts, who was dangerously wounded the day before, had died. So I went to work, got out a fatigue party, had a grave dug, and a rough coffin made, and we buried him. He was beloved and respected by all, and one that always did his duty, both in camp and on the field of action. He was called by the company 'Corporal Eddie.' After burying Corp'l Platts, we received orders to move up on to the field, and occupy the same ground that we did the night before. So up we go again in the face and eyes of the

enemy, only 1300 yards from their artillery, and 700 from their infantry.

As there was not much firing that day, except now and then a volley of musketry, we of course did not have much to do. On the left of where the Battery was stationed was a large two story house, and we commenced ransacking it to see what we could find. I was among the first to enter. The first thing I came across was a closet full of glass and crockery ware, and some of the best that I ever saw, but as I had no chance to carry any, I only took a couple of goblets, and gave them to Captain Phillips. The next things found were 8 barrels of flour, any quantity of potatoes, onions, &c., and in double quick time the Boys had fires built in the stoves and were frying fritters, boiling potatoes, &c. We lived in gay style during Sunday and Monday, for we remained in this position until Monday night at dusk, when we received orders to go to the upper part of the city. So we packed up our things and left the field, and remained in the city until 4 o'clock Tuesday morning, when we received orders to cross the bridge, for our forces were evacuating the place. Tuesday night we arrived back in the same camp which we left the Thursday before, and which camp we now occupy. I brought back from across the river about a  $\frac{1}{2}$  bbl. of flour, besides potatoes &c. So have had good food."

#### SPEAR'S NOTES OF JULY 24, 1901.

"Our position at Fredericksburg, Va. on the right of the Poor House, and directly in front of Marye's Heights, was occupied by a battery of regular artillery, but the fire from the Confederates being so concentrated, it was obliged to retire, and Captain Phillips was ordered by General Weed to cross the river with the 5th Battery and endeavor to hold the position, which we did, owing in part to the lateness of the day.

During this fight tobacco was selling at ten dollars a pound, and the last night of our being in Fredericksburg the men of the Battery had broken into a warehouse and found all kinds of the weed, and carried back across the river enough to sell to the sutler, and the proceeds of the sale, one hundred dollars, was the starting of a Company Fund. (See p. 865 Peacock.) Of course some, if not nearly all, needed a drink, and so hunted for whiskey. One crowd with candles was in a drug shop, when the welcome cry from upstairs was heard,—‘We have found some,’ and it started to ascend when the candles were blown out, and a terrible rattling noise on the stairs was heard, and all rushed to the street more frightened than when in battle. After gathering courage we examined the situation, and ascertained that some grave joker had found a skeleton, and thrown same down the stairs.”

#### LETTER OF SERG'T. W. H. PEACOCK.—PLATTS' AVENGING SHOT.

“CAMP NEAR FALMOUTH, VA.

Dec. 30, 1862.

Our Battery was engaged at the Battle of Fredericksburg, and a warm time we had of it. We were in close action for nearly two hours, and the way shell and balls flew around us was a caution. On my Gun two horses were killed, but none of my men hurt. The shell that killed the horses passed through one of them, striking near me as I was getting the time on a patent shell. I had it between my knees, when—bim! something hit me, knocking myself and shell over in the mud. Picked myself up, felt of my head, found that all right, then my breast and legs, and they were whole, but at the moment it seemed as if I could feel something go into me. It proved to be nothing more than stones and mud, which the shell had kicked up when it struck the ground. One of our men was killed: Eddie Platts of Bos-

ton, a pretty little boy, only 16 years old. He was a great pet with the boys, by his being so young, and always having such a pleasant smile on his face—even in death. He was under me over a year, and a short time ago was promoted to Gunner in another Detachment. He had just given the order to fire, when a Schrapnel ball passed through his body. We carried him to the rear, and he died in about 12 hours. He was buried in a garden, on one of the principal streets of the city, amidst a terrible shelling of the place by the Rebels. I think the last gun he fired fully avenged his death, as it was a splendid shot amidst the rebel infantry. How we escaped with so little loss I am unable to tell, for a Regular battery was driven from the same position only a short time before we went in, with the captain and twenty men killed. Four of our Guns took the same position next day, and remained for two days, but did no firing. My piece being disabled recrossed the river, and I was put in charge of the caissons on a street in the city. I took possession of a nice house, all furnished, and took comfort for two days. Fresh pork, flour, meal, etc. in abundance. At night of the third day, the Guns were ordered to move to another part of the city. We halted on a street for a short time, when some of the boys discovered a large store filled with flour, tobacco, beans, meal, preserves, etc. of all of which we got a good supply. I took all my used up horse was able to carry, about 25 lbs. After leaving this street we moved on to another, and halted in front of a large building, which we were ordered to occupy for the night. . . . Since writing the previous page a sudden order came for us to hitch up immediately. So I threw this letter into my knapsack, packed up, and took, as I supposed, farewell of my log house, but as we were about driving out of park, the order was countermanded, so we had to unharness and fix up our quarters again. It is generally the time when we consider ourselves less liable to move, that these sudden orders come.

It is reported that our Army expects an attack from the Rebels. As I have my house arranged I will proceed from where I left off:—

All of the night we were in the city it was still as death, yet both sidewalk and street were full of soldiers, most of them asleep, under arms, previous to an evacuation in the morning. In the building I mentioned was a large room, which we were ordered to sleep in, but some of the boys, myself among the rest, wished to examine the rest of the house, so we started off in the dark in pursuit of plunder. Almost the first thing we fell over was a pile of legs, arms, feet, etc., that our Doctors had amputated the day before. We left that room satisfied, lit a candle, and went into another room, and there it was filled full of dead men, mostly rebels. We had seen enough at 12 o'clock at night in what seemed to us a haunted house, so we returned to the room assigned to us, turned in and slept sweetly for about four hours.

At daybreak next morning, we all recrossed the river, and returned to this camp. So ends our pleasant visit to Fredericksburg."

---

#### NOTES OF CORP'L W. H. BAXTER.

Oct. 15, 1900.

"We were in camp between Acquia Creek and Falmouth, about 1 mile from Stoneman's Switch. Tobacco was scarce among the boys, not so much from the scarcity of the article at the sutler's as from the scarcity of money to buy it with, and it was a most amusing sight to see some generous, whole-souled fellow possessed of a piece of the weed, sneak from camp to some lonely spot, where he could fill up the old dudeen and enjoy a smoke all by his lonesome, congratulating himself that no one knew he had any. Oak leaves were plentiful, but there was not much virtue in them.



Orders came to march, which finally ended in the Battle of Fredericksburg under Burnside. We were assigned to the Centre Grand Division, and directly under command of Captain A. P. Martin, who commanded the Brigade Batteries in this battle.

We were stationed on a knoll just outside of the city, with the Poor House on our left and a Brick Yard on rear right. Some of the boys cut quite a figure when arrayed in the dresses and bonnets we found in the house. It seems to us now that nothing under heaven could keep the mischief-loving boys of the old Fifth under control, except a shot in the wind.

After exercising a few hours at the Guns with the Johnnies for targets, night came on, when we were ordered out of the line into the streets of the city, we supposed to prevent the possibility of being rushed by the Rebs during the night.

The Young Men's Christian Association Rooms were allotted to us for a sleeping place. They had been used for a hospital during the day and the pile of legs, arms, hands, and feet with the shoes on, piled up in one corner, was not calculated to give that peace of mind conducive to a healthy night's rest. The writer was Corporal of the Guard that night, and while walking along the street occupied by the Battery heard a commotion at the door of a large storehouse, and upon arriving there, what a sight for a hungry man! Tobacco scattered all around and every few moments would be launched into the street a case of it, which opened upon contact, scattering its contents broadcast. This avalanche of the precious weed was caused by some of our boys on the top floor of the warehouse, rolling the cases to the chute, which ran from the rear of the top floor to the sidewalk at the front door, which accounted for their quick exit from the building after gliding down the chute.

But, hark! 'Provo, Provo,' echoes on the night air. Tramp, tramp, down the street they come!

Those of us on the outside were not in it, but stood around to see the outcome of the connection between the boys on the inside and the 'Provo' on the outside.

The 'Provo' did not venture to go up the chute, as they were afraid of being swept out of sight by one of the cases on its way down, so they sought entrance at the rear door, and when they had gained it the fun commenced. The slide down that chute the boys took that night could never be forgotten. Some came down on their feet; others in a stooping position; others on a board, but one, Billy Lapham, afterwards killed at Bethesda Church (see p. 858) took the slide sitting in the chute with nothing under him but one thickness of trousers and 'shoddy' at that. Splinters and blisters were as thick as feathers. We hustled him across the street, and after a time we got him picked. While the operation was being performed, his remarks were varied and to the point, and the writer has always thought that they were exceptionally appropriate to the occasion.

We were happy. Tobacco in plenty. Smoke, smoke, smoke, the soldier's solace.

The next morning at 3.30 we received orders to cross the river and move back to our old camp, where we enjoyed the results of the raid on the tobacco warehouse for many a day."

---

Chase's Final Notes on Fredericksburg: "Dec. 15, 1862. Guns still in position. All quiet up to about 12 m., when a vigorous artillery and infantry firing commenced on the Right front. An occasional Minie ball whizzes over our heads from the enemy's sharpshooters. Rations brought to us today. Spend my time reading history and Byron's poems from the Alms House library. Weather very fine. Remained in position until after dark, when we left the field

and halted in the main street of the city. Left the place, where we first halted, to make room for the infantry, but finally came back to the same place, halted, and occupied the building used as a library for the Young Men's Christian Association of Fredericksburg. Amputated limbs in the library room, and an adjoining room filled with the dead, slain in battle. Shovels and picks sent for this evening, and we expect to go behind breastworks in the morning. Whiskey served to us this night. Laid down for a short rest, and after about an hour's noise and confusion, all was still, and 'nature's sweet restorer' came to our relief. Stores and dwellings ransacked and robbed during the night by the troops. Tobacco very cheap and plenty. The streets and houses lined with sleeping and carousing soldiers.

Dec. 16th. Routed out about half past four this morning, and at once recrossed the river and after many delays reached the ground we left on the 13th instant. The 4th Detachment capsized their caisson into a ravine on the roadside, killing three horses, but doing no other damage. The 6th Detachment broke the pole of their caisson while coming into park. A heavy rainstorm commenced about six o'clock a. m., but the weather cleared up fine about 9 a. m. Hitched up, and left for our old camp ground which we left on the 11th inst., about 9 o'clock. The road very muddy. The 3d Detachment broke down their caisson and left it on the road, but returned for it with another limber p. m. Reached our old camp ground, near Falmouth, Va., about 2 p. m. and pitched our tents in the same old spots as before. Made comfortable quarters and quietness reigned again."

#### LETTER OF THOMAS E. CHASE.

"CAMP NEAR FALMOUTH, VA. Dec. 31, 1862.

. . . I do not know as I can interest you by any new ideas about the late battle, unless I tell you my experience.

To tell you that it was a wholesale butchery would only be to tell you what you already know. The city was shelled and millions of property destroyed to keep a few sharpshooters at bay. The city was evacuated by the enemy and could have been held by our artillery from this side, but to take the Heights, in the rear of the city, by storm, was like a corps of newsboys armed with Colt's revolvers trying to take Gibraltar. But the people wanted something desperate done. They could not wait for the slow but sure process of sieging. Shovels and picks are played out. Storm them out! That's the way! Make a dash!

Well, they were desperate, they made a dash and what followed? A useless waste of blood, and regiments of mutilated humanity to attest the folly of such a movement.

We crossed the river about 4 p. m. Saturday the 13th instant. We passed through the city and took position in front of the enemy's fortifications. Before we had run our guns into position the enemy commenced shelling us with well directed fire. We commenced firing with our full battery but being short handed and the ground soft, we could not work six guns, so we blazed away with four. . . . We held our position until it was so dark that we could not see what to fire at, when the firing slackened on both sides and we left the field. We resumed our position again Sunday morning, but for some reason we did not discharge a shot all day. On Sunday we found the body of a man belonging to the 2d Maine Regt. who was probably killed by a shot directed at us the night before. He had been to the front and fought, and in his lifeless hand was a 'pass' from the surgeon to go to the rear. When almost to the rear, and in a place of comparative safety, he was struck down. His coat was literally torn from his body and one arm nearly severed. Fredericksburg is one vast scene of destruction. . . . If the papers and 'our specials' tell you that the troops are hopeful, cheerful, &c., I will say that

these encouraging words do not apply to any troops I have seen. They are disheartened, and nothing but the restoration of our old Corps will relieve that despondency."

### INDEX TO CAMPS.

On a fly leaf of the Diary of Corporal Thomas E. Chase is the following useful index to camps:—

"Oct. 2, 1862. In Camp at Fort Corcoran, Arlington Heights, Va.  
 Oct. 8th at Rockville, Md.  
 Oct. 9th & 10th Frederick City, Boonsboro' and Sharpsburg.  
 Oct. 21st Antietam Iron Works.  
 Oct. 31st Burkittsville and Petersboro', Md.  
 Nov. 1st Berlin, Knoxville. and Harper's Ferry.  
 Nov. 2d Snicker's Gap, Va.  
 Nov. 7th White Plains.  
 Nov. 9th Near Warrenton, Va.  
 Nov. 23d Near Falmouth, Va.  
 Dec. 16th Near Falmouth, Va.

Notes of Corporal Jonas Shackley: "The horse of James Winters, the Bugler, was killed in one of the streets of the city. . . . In the march back to camp one of the caissons was thrown into a ravine, *turning over two or three times.*"

---

### NOTES OF LIEUT. SCOTT.

"About daylight the 16th Dec. 1862, we crossed the Rap-  
 pahannock on an upper pontoon bridge, following the river  
 bank down stream until the road following the bank of a  
 ravine led up to the plateau above. The rain had begun to  
 pour, and the ground getting soft in passing up the ravine  
 one of the caissons slid off the bank to the bottom below,  
 but an infantry regiment coming along, by the use of ropes  
 it was soon placed upon a firm foundation. One of the  
 drivers was quite badly hurt.

Soon the last of the Army was across, and the enemy  
 were on the banks of the river again. Moving back about

half a mile from the river, we pitched our tent, and with the water running down the hill under us, we found rest for the remainder of the night, glad we were so well out of the fight.

While in the fight at Fredericksburg, General Griffin had instructed Captain Phillips to confine the most of his fire to the Telegraph Road, coming past the centre of the rebel lines, to prevent reinforcements from their flank on their Right. The rebel lines were not assailable at any point. General Griffin was pleased with the part the Battery took on that day.

The fight at Fredericksburg was most cruel. Changing commanders almost in the face of an enemy will not always be successful, and the Army, for the most part, were so bound up in McClellan! No time was given the men to understand the new Commander. In fact they foretold his defeat in advance. Jealousy and politics had taken possession of the Army of the Potomac."

Chase's Diary: Dec. 17, 1862. Back from Fredericksburg to the camp near Falmouth, Va.: "Refreshing sleep last night. In camp all day. Filled the chests with new ammunition. Weather fine but rather cold."

#### LETTER OF CAPTAIN PHILLIPS.

After one more reference to the last night in Fredericksburg on Princess Anne street, where they "pillowed their heads on dictionaries" and tried to sleep, Captain Phillips proceeds as follows, in a letter dated Camp near Falmouth, Va. Dec. 17th 1862:—

"Every effort is being made to prepare for another brush, and I have reported my Battery ready for service. My carriages and harnesses are pretty well cut up. One saddle was knocked all to pieces by a shell, and two horses had their heads shot off rather injuring their bridles. After I had recrossed the river one caisson tumbled off a bank 10



or 15 feet high owing to the road giving way, and killed two horses, broke the caisson-stock and smashed things generally. The traces were all cut up in clearing the horses. How the drivers escaped death is a wonder to me. However, our damages are now about all repaired, and I am ready to try our luck again on the other side as soon as the order is given. Captain Martin says that General Wilcox complimented us very highly. We had 5 men who have only been with us a week, and they thought they had a pretty good breaking in. Fredericksburg is pretty well sacked, and the men had a good chance to get the great desideratum of a soldier, tobacco. From the quantity I have seen I should judge that we brought off about a ton of it; every man having 15 or 20 pounds. We found 5 barrels of flour (see p. 508) in the Poor House, and a barrel of salt, another article that the Rebels are popularly supposed not to have. Furniture and dishes *ad libitum* were brought off, and our table is now ornamented with an elegant glass sugar bowl and salt cellar, while we all have china cups to drink from. We were not in season, however, to make the most of our opportunities, and we unfortunately crossed into the lower and unfashionable portion of the city.

Dec. 18. P. S. I enclose a proclamation of Governor Letcher which I found kicking around in Fredericksburg. Lieut. Blake's brother is among the missing. He was in the 18th Mass. Regt. and fell in a charge on the Rebel lines. The last seen of him he put his hand to his head exclaiming 'I am shot.' "

---

Chase's Diary: "Dec. 21, 1862. Promotion of Lieut. Phillips as our future Captain received in line this a. m."

Lieut. Phillips' promotion is dated Oct. 18, 1862. It took all that time to get round.

## GENERAL BUTTERFIELD'S FAREWELL ORDER.

HEAD QUARTERS 5TH ARMY CORPS,  
Dec. 24, 1862.

By the orders of the Major Gen'l commanding the Army of the Potomac, Maj. General Meade is placed in command of the 5th Army Corps. Duty not less than inclination prompts the sincere and heartfelt acknowledgment of the devotion to duty, the cheerful obedience to orders, and the kindly spirit which has been evinced by the subordinate commanders of this Corps during the time it has been under my command.

Words fail to express my proper appreciation of the unparalleled bravery and soldierly qualities, exhibited by its officers and members during the late battle of Fredericksburg, and the operations connected therewith. On duty with and of the Corps since its organization, I may be permitted with pride to say that neither remarks from me or the gallant record of my senior and successor, will be necessary to insure to him the reception and support due his rank and position.

(Signed) DANIEL BUTTERFIELD  
Brig. Gen'l.

Dec. 26, 1862, Maj. Gen'l George G. Meade assumed command of the 5th Army Corps.

---

Chase's Diary: "Dec. 25th, 1862. On Board Steamer 'Commonwealth' of the New York and Stonington line one year ago tonight *en route* for Washington, D. C.! Finished our tent and dedicated the fireplace."

## FROM LETTER OF LIEUT. SPEAR.

"Friday morning: (Dec. 26, 1862.) Yesterday was Christmas, and now one year has passed away since I left my native state. What scenes and changes have taken place during the past year! but I hope before the end of another year comes creeping along that this cursed rebellion will be at an end, and all persons now engaged in this civil war at home with their friends and families. For breakfast yesterday had *baked beans* and *soft bread*, for dinner baked beans and *pudding*, and for supper boiled rice."

Chase's Diary: "Dec. 29, 1862. Battery drilled half an hour on the manual this morning. The promotion of 1st Serg't. J. E. Spear to Jr. 2d Lieut. read in line by Serg't. Smith, acting Orderly."

Lieut. Spear's commission is dated Oct. 18, 1862.

#### LETTER OF CAPTAIN PHILLIPS,

"CAMP NEAR POTOMAC CREEK,  
Dec. 29, 1862."

I sent a man to Washington a few days ago after ordnance stores, and this gave us an opportunity to replenish our mess stores. We got half a barrel of flour, and calculate to have soft bread now right along. Among other things which Serg't. Nye brought back from Washington was a barrel of brown bread. We took what we wanted and he disposed of the rest to the men. By the way they rushed for it I thought they appreciated it. We are now in winter quarters, i. e. the men are all comfortably disposed of in such huts as they can construct. Of course they do not know how soon they may have to leave them. I have built unto myself a log house 9 ft. by 10, covered over with a tent fly, and have a good solid floor, a capital bedstead, a door with hinges and a latch, and a fireplace which smokes. This last, however, is owing to the fact that it is not quite finished. Tomorrow will complete the job. As it is I manage to have a great deal of comfort, and think I have rather the best quarters in this vicinity. I have not carpeted the floor or papered the walls, but probably shall if we remain here long enough. It is quite a luxury to have a place where I can walk round, hang up things, and where the wind does not blow. I shall be quite busy for the next 3 weeks with Rolls, Quarterly Returns &c.

Dec. 31, 1862.

My log house, chimney and all, is finished, at last, and I manage to enjoy it very much. Such luxuries as solid

walls and floors are only appreciated in camp. As it is, when I come in evenings, hang up my cap, put on my slippers and sit down in my easy chair in front of a big, blazing fire. I am nearly as comfortable as in a parlor at home. I only want a few books to make the evenings pass quite cheerfully. Newspapers are quite a treat, when they come; but they are hardly numerous enough to occupy my spare time. We thought yesterday that we were going to be routed out of all these comforts. About 11½ a. m. Captain Waterman, acting Chief of Artillery in Captain Martin's absence, came by and said that he had just received a note from Division Head Quarters that the Division would march at 12. We got all ready for a start, but in half an hour Captain Waterman sent over that he had received an order to detail Lieut. Hazlett's Battery to accompany the Division, so we subsided into our *statu quo ante*, and went on with our dinner. Meanwhile I believe the Division marched off.

Lieut. Spear's commission has arrived, so that we have four in our mess now. A glass sugar bowl (see p. 508) that I obtained in Fredericksburg figures conspicuously on the table, also, two glass sauce dishes. If Burnside intends to get to Richmond before summer he must be moving soon. Last winter the rainy season commenced January 10th and it did not stop raining till the 1st of July. So we must expect some rain soon.

In my opinion Fredericksburg could and should be taken in a week. We could have routed the Rebels when we were over there before, had our artillery been properly handled, but we cannot do anything until our generals learn to use this arm. . . . I do not understand what he (Burnside) is waiting for. We have men enough, and the rebels must be driven out of the works towards Richmond, and the sooner we are at it the better. The roads are good, weather

good, health of the Army good,—in a month all these will be bad.”

### LETTER OF LIEUT. P. W. BLAKE.

“CAMP NEAR FREDERICKSBURG.

Jany. 1, 1863.

Our Division went on a reconnoissance day before yesterday up the Rappahannock River some 15 miles, as far as Burnett's Ford. They crossed the river and took some prisoners, and destroyed a bridge, and were ordered back by some authority at Washington.

The Division got back today. We hitched up our Battery to go, but the order was countermanded, and only took the regular Battery D. U. S. Army.

We are encamped alongside of the railroad that runs from Acquia Creek to Fredericksburg, near Potomac Creek that runs across the railroad. You can see by referring to the map. I made a dot where we lay at the present time. I have dotted the course we came last summer from Acquia Creek to Manassas Junction, the last Bull Run battle, to Hall's Hill where we started from last spring. From Sharpsburg, Maryland, I have dotted the course we came this fall to where we are now. I must close now. I will tell you the fighting part when I get home.”

---

Scott's Notes: “The first of January, 1863, the Battery was camped at Stoneman's Switch on the Fredericksburg and Acquia Creek Rail Road, where it had been previous to the battle of Fredericksburg, as winter quarters. The winter was unusually severe, there being no less than 20 snow storms.”

## LETTER OF CAPT. PHILLIPS.

"CAMP NEAR POTOMAC CREEK,

Jan'y 4, 1863.

Although newsboys come rather irregularly, and the Post Office Department does not take great pains to forward papers regularly, still we manage to get an occasional 'N. Y. Herald' or 'Philadelphia Inquirer' or 'National Republican,' while the 'Boston Journals' sent from home all arrive, though sometimes sadly behind the times. The high price of paper and consequent rise in the 'dailies' does not affect us out here where the standard price of a N. Y. paper has always been 10 cents with an occasional rise to 15.

My log house is better built than the average; the logs being fitted snugly together so as to dispense with mud as much as possible. The dimensions of the edifice are 9 ft. by 10. It is six feet high at the eaves so that I can stand up anywhere, a great comfort, I assure you. The gable ends are built up with logs, and the roof is composed of a tent fly which admits the light. In one end of my room is my fireplace, quite capacious and comfortable if not elegant, two bricks and two stones form the andirons. From the fireplace rises a chimney of stone and mud, which answers all the objects of a chimney, and draws beautifully. Opposite the fireplace is the door, a good, substantial door of pine boards, with a latch and 'fixins.' The apartment is floored with boards which were once parts of packing boxes to convey Ordnance Stores to the Battery. On the left hand as you enter is my bedstead built up substantially of fragments of hard-bread boxes, where I stretch my weary limbs on a mattress stuffed with husks. I have also a feather pillow, trophy from Fredericksburg, which adds materially to my comfort. This side of the room is wainscoted with pieces of hard-bread boxes, which keep me from contact with the pitch pine logs, and give an elegant appearance.



The remainder of the room is 'papered' with empty grain bags which look more cheerful than bare logs. On the side opposite to my bed, in the corner next the door is my washstand holding my wash bowl, soap, and all the luxuries of the toilet. Pendant over this is my looking-glass. . . . In the middle of this side is my writing desk, an elegant structure of planed boards. In the corner by the fireplace is my wood box filled with wood. My trunk stands between my desk and washstand. Sabre, haversack, canteen, field glass, overcoat, caps &c. hanging round the walls complete the picture, which in my eyes is a very comfortable one. In the course of my travels I have not seen any more comfortable quarters. I have an easy chair, and in the evenings I can draw it up to the fire, and put my feet, not on the mantel-piece, for there isn't any, but over the fireplace, in the most civilized way imaginable. My quarters have excited the admiration of all my visitors, and on the whole I consider myself a lucky man. I have a fire-shovel, from Fredericksburg, and only need a pair of tongs to make the set complete. Then we are living like princes. We have a Dutch oven and plenty of flour and have fresh bread and cakes every day; roast beef or beef steak for dinner regularly, pickles, apple sauce, for side dishes, and regular potatoes and onions. Some officers of the 33d were over here yesterday, and were quite taken down by the style in which we did things.

The fact is, a man has to have experience to know how to live in the army, and we do not calculate to live on hard tack and salt junk as long as we have any money. Artillery officers have an advantage over infantry officers in the fact that we can carry round about as large a mess kit as we choose, and however large a stock of eatables we have on hand, we can get it along on the march.

January 5th. All quiet on the Rappahannock! I am afraid this phrase will become as stereotyped as the similar

one in regard to the Potomac, and that Burnside, if not careful, will become as sluggish as his predecessor. Now is the time for Burnside. If he remains still, Lee's army will be off to reinforce the Western Rebels, while we shall be held at bay by empty entrenchments and visionary hosts. If Burnside strikes now, we shall attack the foe at every point, and he cannot hold them all. If our generals expect to do anything, why don't they give our artillery a chance to operate, and not send infantry to dive into ditches, or run their heads against a stone wall? . . . I have made an addition to my articles of comfort and luxury, in the shape of a boot-jack. After mature deliberation I came to the conclusion that I needed a boot-jack out here, as much as I did at home. I cannot pull my boots off a bit easier than I could two years ago, so why should not I have a boot-jack? The argument seemed to me perfectly logical and the consequence thereof was a boot-jack as aforesaid.

The Army is getting quite discontented on the subject of pay. We have not been paid since the 1st of July. The recruits who come out start with a couple of hundred of dollars in their pockets and do not care much about pay for some time; consequently they are not very popular with the Army and the '200 dollar men' stand a chance to do the hardest work. They are very apt to be detailed on fatigue parties &c.

There is a great rush for furloughs just now. All our generals are gone off, and a colonel commands the Division. (Col. Barnes of the 18th Mass.) I expect soon to hear of colonels commanding army corps in the great scarcity of brig. generals. It seems as if Congress had made enough to furnish at least one to a Division. . . . One of my new men that Lull sent out, after a short career, tumbled off his horse and laid himself up for a couple of months, and in consequence of such accidents as these, my numbers just about hold their own. . . ."

Chase's Diary: "Jan'y 7, 1863. Posted the guard last night and today, 1st half. Morning drill as usual. Hitched up and drilled by sections p. m. A good, lively drill. Weather very fine, but rather cold p. m. Counter-sign 'Buffalo.'" (See p. 797.)

Diary of Private John E. Dyer: "Thursday, Jan'y 8, 1863. 'Boots and saddles' sounded at 9 a. m. Hitched up and marched about 1½ miles towards Falmouth, to be reviewed by Generals Burnside, Hooker, and staffs. Arrived back at camp about 3 o'clock p. m. Captain Phillips acting commander of Division Artillery today, vice Martin absent. Saw two ladies at the Review."

#### LETTER OF CAPTAIN PHILLIPS.

"CAMP NEAR FALMOUTH, VA.

Jan'y 9, 1863.

I am glad the 1st of January is past and freedom an established fact at last, and I think we can now see the beginning of the end. Everything, in my mind, points to the exhaustion of the South and in the tone of their papers and speeches and above all in Jeff Davis's proclamation, I can see indications which show that they are conscious of their inability to carry on the struggle, when the issue is once fairly made between freedom and slavery.

I have read Butler's farewell address, and like it much. Like all his other actions it is characteristic of the man. I think that however much fault we may find with the small details of his conduct, there is no man who has stamped his mark and his own characteristics so strongly on the present age as Benj. F. Butler; no man who has done so much to bend public opinion, or has seen more clearly the proper issue of this struggle.

We had a Review yesterday . . . in all say 15,000 men. About half an hour before we started Captain Waterman

sent over that he was too sick to go out, and as Captain Martin was off on a furlough, I would have to act as Chief of Artillery. Now I am able and willing to handle my own battery, but I did not relish the idea of having the care of four batteries stuck on my shoulders. (Martin's, Waterman's, Phillips', Hazlett's.) However I made the best of it and started the batteries out. Arrived on the ground we formed on the designated ground, and waited. Pretty soon things looked as if the show was about to commence. So I stationed myself in front of my battalion and prepared to roar myself hoarse. Inflating my lungs to their full capacity I bellowed forth:—'Attench ho-o-o-o-o-n'—short stop to rest and puff up.—'Draw—Sabre!'—another interval, during which General Burnside with 100 officers more or less after him, rode down to the right of the line: then after due preparation,—'Present—Sabre!' and the four batteries presented sabre.

General Burnside then rode down our front, and, as he passed, bowed, and appeared to recognize me in my new dignity. When he had reached the left flank, more puffing up preparatory to,—'Carry—Sabre!' Then we waited while he reviewed the infantry, when they broke into column and passed in review, we following the whole Corps. The passing in review was well executed, not a single halt being made. This through with, we all went home as fast as we could, cold and hungry, to pitch into a late dinner.

So ended my first public appearance as 'Chief of Artillery.' . . .

As far as practical efficiency in action is concerned the 5th Battery is equal to any in the Division, and my men will stand to their work in as hot a fire as anybody. There are some indications of an advance before long. The sooner we move the better.

Jan'y 11th. I don't want you to think I did anything remarkable at Fredericksburg. I put my guns just where

I was ordered to put them, and kept them there till I was ordered to leave, blazing away at the enemy meanwhile, and I suppose anybody else would have done the same thing. Still as praise of me benefits the Battery I am willing to take it all, though whatever is due, is due to the men of the Battery. I will not deny that the fire was rather hot, and that we replied quite energetically and accurately, but this was owing to the coolness with which the men stood to the guns, and the sergeants aimed the pieces, and to no particular merit of mine. However, as everywhere else, the men do all the work, the commander gets all the praise.

My new officer Spear is quite an acquisition, just what I expected of him, well fitted for the post. He is a very smart fellow, and has a wonderful capacity of adapting himself to his position. When he was a corporal he was that and no more, promoted Orderly Sergeant he became at once an Orderly all over. As soon as he received his commission he slid at once out of the enlisted men, and became an officer as gracefully as if he had been an officer all his life. . . . Deaths and discharges have cleared off nearly all the old non-commissioned officers, and most of the sergeants and corporals now are of my appointing and I think I may say are good ones. After the battle of Fredericksburg I issued a new batch of warrants in which I took occasion to reward some who had done well there."

Non-commissioned officers are sergeants, of various grades, and corporals. They are appointed by authorities lower than the President. Commissions are issued by the President. The papers issued to non-commissioned officers are called warrants.

Chase's Diary: "Jan'y 12, 1863. Lieut. Scott left camp for home on furlough. Jan'y 13th. Posted the guard last night, and today—last half,—Countersign 'Rhode Island.' "

## BATTERY HEAD QUARTERS.

## LETTER OF CAPTAIN PHILLIPS.

"CAMP NEAR FALMOUTH, VA.

Jan'y 14th, 1863.

I envy Mr. Bouncer in 'Verdant Green,' who, in his regular letters to 'the Mum,' used to insert a couple of pages from the Oxford Guide Book. I do not know whether such a practice would be universally agreeable, but I can, if desired, send home a weekly sheet of Artillery Tactics.

At 6 a. m. or thereabouts,—Scott's watch and mine are the only ones in camp, and we are not exact in our calls,—reveille sounds. I wake up and find the air chilly: I roll over. In a few minutes enter Henry with an armful of kindling wood, who forthwith proceeds to make a fire. I watch the process with interest. The fire started, exit Henry with my boots. An interval of time elapses, at the end of which Henry again makes his appearance on the scene with my boots all blacked, fills up my washbowl, puts more wood on the fire and disappears. I meditate, I look at my watch, I conclude to get up. Since we have got civilized habitations, we have adopted the civilized habit of lying abed, and we breakfast at 8.

By the time my toilet is completed, there comes a knock at the door.—

'Captain, breakfast ready.'

'All right,' I reply, and grab my stool and travel to the next tent, where I find the table set with all the luxuries of the season: hot bread, cakes or toast, cold ham, or cold roast beef, apple sauce, and coffee,—no milk. So, we sit down and '*pitch in*,' which expression aptly describes the process of eating in camp. After breakfast, I return home, where I find my bed made up, floor swept, furniture dusted &c. So I take my seat at my desk and prepare for business. Some days I have numerous callers. Serg't Nye with some



requisitions to be signed, or the Orderly to ask some questions about the morning report book (see p. 445) whether this order is to be read at roll call, or only copied into the order book &c. Then come some men after a 'pass' to see a brother, cousin etc. in the 33d Regiment. All these applications disposed of I take up any standing business. Then perhaps I write a letter, stopping every few minutes to sign a requisition, answer a question, or give a 'pass.' Serg't. Nye, may be, comes in with a big bundle of papers, and wants me to look over a Quarterly Return. So the forenoon wears on. At 10 Drill Call sounds, and the Detachments fall in for a drill on the piece, and for half an hour the park resounds with,—'Detachments Left,' 'Detachment Posts,' 'Load by Detail—Two,' &c. 'By Hand to the Front,' 'Prepare to Dismount the Piece,' 'Change Posts,' 'Fire,' 'Load,' etc. etc. This is superintended by the Chiefs of Sections. At 11 Hay Call sounds, when we have any hay. At 12 Dinner Call.

We dine at one, at which time John,—black individual,—knocks on the door and announces: 'Dinner ready.' For dinner we have roast beef, potatoes, onions, apple sauce &c.

At 2 o'clock the Buglers sound 'Boots and Saddles,' and the Battery is hitched up for Battery or Section Drill. If the former, I go out and manœuvre round a couple of hours. At 4 we return just in time for 'Water Call.' At 4½ 'Feed Call'; at 5 the 'Assembly' for 'Roll Call'; 5¼ Guard Mounting, after 'Guard Mounting,' supper; after supper, the Officer of the Day hands in his report: list of the sick, list of delinquents with their offenses, and a statement of any remarkable occurrences during the day.

I return home and send for the Corporal of the Guard. He presents himself.

'Corporal, arrest these men, and bring them up here!'—giving him a list of the delinquents. Then I put on my magisterial frown and await the culprits.

'Smith reported absent at reveille; any excuse?'

'No, sir, only I didn't wake up.'

'That's no excuse; Fatigue duty for 24 hours.'

'Brown, you are reported for running your horses going to water.' No excuse. 'Corporal, put him on a caisson for three hours!'

'Jones, you are reported for disrespectful behavior to your Sergeant.' Long, and not very logical defence by Jones, who is adjudged guilty. 'Corporal, give him two hours on the spare wheel!'

After finishing this not very agreeable business, perhaps I stroll into Blake's tent and chat awhile or play a game of euchre.

By seven o'clock the mail arrives, and we all adjourn to read our letters if we have any; 9 o'clock generally sees us in bed.

So pass the days, one after the other. A good supply of books would render it a not very disagreeable kind of life, but these things cannot be. We could not carry the books if we had them. I do not go visiting much and do not have a great many friends in the Division. I have quite a lot of speaking acquaintances, but I stay at home mostly."

---

Chase's Diary: "Jan'y 15, 1863. Ambulance removing the sick today.

Dyer's Notes: "Friday, Jan'y 16, 1863. Predictions of leaving here soon. Commenced packing up p. m. All sorts of rumors afloat."

## LETTER OF CAPTAIN PHILLIPS.

"CAMP NEAR FALMOUTH, VA.

Jan'y 16, 1863.

'All quiet on the Rappahannock' gives place to 'Advance of the Army of the Potomac.' We have rec'd orders to be ready to march at an early hour tomorrow morning. The

order to march has not come yet but will probably be along tonight. . . . Of course I am sorry to leave my comfortable quarters, in fact after a long halt it is always unpleasant to take the first start, but 24 hours marching cures that. As a remarkable fact, too, my health is always a little better, if possible, on the march. I doubt very much whether we shall have another fight at Fredericksburg. The rebels never wait for a second assault on an 'objective point,' but always retire to a second line of defence, and the energy all bottled up for a fierce attack is wasted on empty fortifications. Well, we shall see what we shall see."

#### EXTRA INDUCEMENTS OF THE ARTILLERY SERVICE.

January 17th: "I dislike the habit of officers running to Washington, and do not want to get into it myself. Why is it, I wonder, that so few men of wealth and education, when going to war, select the artillery in preference to other arms of the service. . . . Out of my class only one besides myself has entered this arm—Lieut. Hayden in the 2d U. S. Artillery. An artillery commission certainly offers higher inducements than an infantry one: the duties are pleasanter, the pay higher, the position more independent, and higher esteemed in the Army. Why, I am as independent as a Brigade commander, while a captain of infantry has no moment he can call his own. While the hours for infantry drill are established by orders from Division Hd. Qrs., artillery drills when it chooses. I govern my camp as I please, and am supreme in my authority over the men.

Artillery is superior for the display of intellectual abilities, though a military life kills off everything of the sort. Artillery, too, gives a better opportunity for distinguishing one's self; a captain of a battery being as likely to be mentioned as a colonel of a regiment. Sections, too, are often detached, and, when joined with infantry, the infantry offi-

cer in command of the whole rarely attempts to interfere with the Lieut. of Artillery in the management of his arm. Then as far as material comforts are concerned, artillery officers can live in the field about as comfortably as generals. A late order establishing the field allowance of tents, allowed to each line officer of infantry one *shelter tent*, to each full battery of artillery three *wall tents*. That is to say, I am allowed one wall tent, which is all that is allowed to a Brig. Gen'l, while a captain of infantry has to content himself with a shelter tent, ground dimensions 6 ft. by 3, height 3 ft. At this very time, while we are living in very good style, many an infantry officer has to content himself with his salt junk. If an officers' mess in an infantry company manage to get along a kettle, a coffee pot, a frying pan, and a few cups and plates, they do well, while we carry all the pots and kettles we choose. And yet, with all these extra inducements the commissions in artillery are not so eagerly sought after as one would imagine." The same date: "'There's many a slip 'twixt the cup and the lip.'" Last night instead of an order to march at 5, came an order to be ready to march at 1 p. m. tomorrow."

Dyer's Notes: "Sunday, Jan'y 18, 1863. Drill in the morning and a hitched up drill p. m. Jan'y 19. On guard tonight."

Phillips' Letter Jan'y 18th: "The Army seems to have some difficulty in making the movement now contemplated, whatever it is. We were to be ready to march at one o'clock today, but at midnight last night came an order suspending the former order for 24 hours. Congress has authorized 100,000,000 legal tender notes to pay off the Army, and I hope to see the Paymaster round here soon. There has been, undoubtedly, a great deal of suffering on account of the long delay. In military affairs there is the same necessity for speedy action. I am sanguine, if our generals will work together, but if any man with two stars on his

shoulder is to be allowed to imperil the cause of the country from personal feeling and jealousy, then we might as well back out."

## BURNSIDE'S FLANKING MOVEMENT CALLED "BURNSIDE'S MUD MARCH."

### HIS ADDRESS TO THE ARMY.

HEAD QUARTERS,  
ARMY OF THE POTOMAC,  
CAMP NEAR FALMOUTH, VA.  
Jan'y 20, 1863.

#### General Orders

##### No. 7.

The Commanding General announces to the Army of the Potomac that they are about to meet the enemy once more.

The late brilliant actions in North Carolina, Tennessee and Arkansas have divided and weakened the enemy on the Rappahannock, and the auspicious moment seems to have arrived to strike a great and mortal blow to the Rebellion, and to gain that decisive victory which is due to the country.

Let the gallant soldiers of so many brilliant battle fields accomplish this achievement, and a fame the most glorious awaits them.

The Commanding General calls for the firm and united action of officers and men, and, under the providence of God, the Army of the Potomac will have taken the great step towards restoring peace to the country and the Government to its rightful authority.

By command of

Major General Burnside.

LEWIS RICHMOND

*Ass't. Adj. General.*

Chase's Diary: "Jan'y 20th, 1863. Cloudy morning with a cold snowy air. The agreeable intelligence announced to us in line, that we are again to meet the enemy. Packed up. Struck tents and hitched up about 11 a. m. and left our park about 12 m. Head of column halted about 150 yards from camp and remained until about 3 p. m., when we marched about two miles—towards Fredericksburg—and went into park for the night, on the side of a hill, about 4 p. m. Some of the men pitched tents, and others laid on the ground under the tarpaulins. Commenced raining

about 6 p. m. and rained all night, with but a few minutes cessation. My tent blew down about half past 11 p. m. Abandoned the ruins of my tent and spent the remainder of the night by a bivouac fire. A long night! Thoroughly drenched with rain. A crowd of drowned out, forlorn, cold and shivering unfortunates hovered around the fire trying to keep alive the vital spark and dispel our miseries by cracking jokes. One by one the men gathered round as they were drowned out by the 'rising waters.' No water call or roll call tonight.

Jan'y 21st. The storm unabated. Reveille and roll call as usual. 'Boots and saddles' sounded immediately after roll call. Packed up our wet tents and blankets and hitched up. Doubled up the teams, and with the help of the infantry succeeded in getting the pieces and caissons into the road. The ground soft, and it was almost impossible to move the pieces, caissons &c. Started on our march about 8 a. m. and marched about a mile and halted for today and night. Left one horse, and two others dropped dead in the harness. A very soft and disagreeable march. Obligated to double up the teams many times today. Reached our camp ground about 1 o'clock p. m. Pitched our tents in a piece of woods. Plenty of good water near by. Made coffee, and spread our wet blankets for a bed on the water soaked ground; built huge fires and made ourselves comparatively comfortable. Battery wagon drawn into park by eighteen horses. The wheels sink about a foot in the mud, and men to their ankles. Very rainy all day. Tattoo and roll call about half past 4 p. m. Jan'y 22d. Very rainy all last night. Morning cloudy, with some rain. Tolerably good night's rest last night, but the ground felt quite cold through five blankets. Slept with Daniel Shackley. Reveille at the usual hour this morning. Whiskey issued to us this morning. We remained in camp all day. Made several improvements in our quarters today and kept quite comforta-



ble although the weather continued cloudy with considerable rain all day."

Dyer's Notes: "Jan'y 20, 1863. . . . My tent blew down three times during the night. Weather very cold. Jan'y 21st. . . . Ground soft and awful wheeling . . . sat down to a scanty supper and went on guard. Rained hard all night. Jan'y 22. . . . Whiskey issued out this morning. Large ration. Remained here all day. Whiskey again at night. Rain at intervals all day. Our mail and one day's rations came up today."

Notes of Corporal Jonas Shackley: "Late on the 20th January, 1863, we got out of camp, but could only make about two miles, and turning into a field spread our tents and tarpaulins for shelter. Rain soon began to pour and in a short time the ground was flooded and our blankets became saturated. We rolled our blankets and used them for seats and waited for the morning. Morning came, and the Battery attempted to march, but the roads were so horrible that after struggling all day we had made only about two miles. Went into camp by the edge of a forest, and having plenty of fuel made ourselves quite comfortable.

Remaining in this place until the roads had been repaired we doubled our teams, and taking half our carriages at each trip returned again to our old camp at Stoneman's Switch, arriving there on the 24th."

#### FROM A LETTER OF CAPTAIN PHILLIPS.

Written in the camp where they waited for the roads to be repaired.

"CAMP IN AN OAK WOOD,  
Thursday Evening,  
Jan'y 22, 1863.

On Tuesday we marched, i. e. at 1 p. m. we started, got a couple of hundred yards and halted till three. Then we slowly proceeded, and just before dark camped in a field

close by the spot where we were reviewed a short time ago. Hazlett and Waterman had been detached to join with the Reserve Artillery in covering the crossing of the troops at Hooker's Crossing. Where that is I do not know. During the course of the night it commenced to rain and blow. . . .

The next morning we started, the rain still continuing. Our caissons got stuck at the first start and continued to stick very frequently. About 1 p. m. after marching perhaps 3 miles, we went into camp, i. e. the head of the column did, the rear being still behind. I sent back horses and the missing carriages commenced to appear: some with 10, some with 12, and some with 18 horses on. Finally, they all got in, and we made ourselves comfortable. The mud is about the same quality as we used to have on the Peninsula, but I found my horses not so good. Four gave out on the road, and were abandoned dead and dying. . . . Friday morning, no move yet."

Phillips' Diary: "Thursday, Jan'y 22d, 1863. . . . The Army evidently *in statu quo*, in the mud. 23d. . . . The Army has commenced to move back to camp corduroying as it goes."

From another letter of Captain Phillips, written where they camped in the "piece of woods."

"CAMP IN AN OAK WOOD,  
Thursday Evening, Jan'y 22, 1863.

. . . Our camp is pitched in a grove of oak trees, and in pleasant weather might be quite romantic, but the rain which has continued so far deprives the scenery of its poetical aspect. The tents of the men of all shapes, sizes and colors, are scattered through the woods, each one with a blazing fire in front of it. The woods are already cleared out somewhat and it is lucky for us that firewood is so near. A spring not 50 yards off furnishes an abundant supply of very good—chocolate colored—water. Our floor is rather muddy, but with an abundant supply of blankets we sleep

very comfortably. I am afraid that this unlucky rain storm will endanger, if it does not entirely prevent, this movement. Only 5 or 6 miles from camp, we are almost entirely cut off from our supplies. The roads are impassable for wagons, and as my rations were out tonight, I had some more sent up on horseback. Our wagons have not started, but the Vandals have invaded our old camping ground. The tents of the men are inhabited by a numerous population of sick, stragglers, etc. The new tenants of my old house have burnt up my wainscoting and bedstead, the door and floor will go next.

Our present locality as near as I can guess is a short distance above Falmouth, near Richard's Ford. I am sitting on the ground writing this by the light of a candle elevated on a tin pail. A large fire blazes in front of our tent which makes it quite comfortable. The men are singing and talking and enjoying themselves."

Dyer's Notes: "Friday, Jan'y 23d, 1863. A good night's rest. Morning damp and cloudy. Our mail came today; also rations:—beef, pork, potatoes, onions, bread, coffee, whiskey &c. The sun came out about 11 a. m. P. m. very fine. Artillery and teams moving back to their old camps. Sent men back to our camp to rout out the infantry from our quarters."

Diary of Corporal Chase: "Jan'y 24th, 1863. Reveille at half past 3 this morning. Struck our tents and packed up for a march back to our old camp. The elements have prevailed. An advance is impossible and retreat nearly so. Burnside chooses the latter and the troops are moving back as fast as possible. Doubled up the teams and started for our old camp—with the caissons only—at daylight. Reached our old camp about 11 a. m. and the drivers after feeding their horses returned for the guns with doubled teams. Not much trouble in reaching camp although the

road was in a very bad state. Guns reached camp about half past 3 p. m.

The infantry who occupied our quarters in our absence showed their evil propensities by demolishing chimneys and burning our boards, poles, crutches, and other valuable property. My tent was an exception to the fearful destruction: found chimney 'riz' 15 inches. It now 'draws' wonderfully! Pitched my tent in the old stockade, and in one hour have good quarters. Weather fine."

Dyer's Notes, Jan'y 24th, have the remark about the camp that "although very wet it was very acceptable."

Phillips' Diary: "Saturday, Jan'y 24th. Started back at daylight with the caissons and forge, 10 horses on the former and 12 on the latter. Arrived in camp. Sent back for the pieces and Battery wagon. Found my house in pretty good condition."

Dyer's Notes: "Sunday, Jan'y 25th, 1863. No coffee for breakfast. A trifling mistake. Nobody to blame. 'All in the three years.' Plenty of boiled rice and molasses for supper. Weather warm and pleasant."

#### CAPTAIN PHILLIPS BACK IN HIS LOG HOUSE. MAKES OBSERVATIONS ON THE PAST WEEK'S MANOEUVRES.

"CAMP NEAR FALMOUTH, VA.

Jan'y 25, 1863.

I am back in my log house again, after four days' wandering in the mud. This rain storm has been very unfortunate, and has completely discomfited the Army of the Potomac. On Friday as soon as I learnt definitely that we should return, I sent back a sergeant and squad of men to clear out the stragglers and interlopers with whom our huts were sure to be filled, and to clean up and make ready.

When I arrived I found things in pretty good order. The inhabitants of my house, whoever they were, had burnt

up all my furniture, but thanks to their selfishness and regard to their own comfort, had left the floor and door, which was all I cared for. The bedstead has been again erected, and the other furniture will soon be put in, with suitable alterations suggested by experience.

#### MORE ABOUT THE 20th. CAMP ON THE HILL.

Hazlett and Waterman left camp before the Division and took position on the bank of the river. The weather was cold and lowering, but it looked more like snow than rain. We pitched our tent and Blake, with commendable forethought ditched it round about. Captain Martin, who was by our fire, laughed at him, and asked him if he thought it was going to rain. Shortly after we got to bed it commenced to rain and blow. Fortunately our tent was tight and our pins held, so we slept through it comfortably. Captain Martin and his officers were not so lucky. Some time in the night the wind got under their tent and over it went leaving them outdoors! Immediately arose a great outcry for the Corporal of the Guard, and the tent was finally re-pitched, not without the wetting of sundry blankets etc. The next morning we started, the rain still falling. The first step recalled to mind the old marches of the Peninsula campaign . . . but the weather was colder. We marched all that forenoon in the same way that I used to write about last spring. About noon we went into camp, having marched perhaps two miles. I selected a spot right in the edge of some oak woods. I found the ground where I put my carriages rather soft, and Captain Martin suggested the next day that I had better put up a flag to show where my caissons stood!

Otherwise, it was an excellent camping ground. The tents were pitched in the woods, sheltered from the wind. Plenty of firewood was growing all around us, and the fires were soon blazing merrily."

In addition to what he had already written about sending back men on horseback after rations and forage, he says:—"By this means I not only supplied myself, but was able on Friday to feed Captain Waterman's horses, he being short of grain.

We remained in the woods Wednesday afternoon, Thursday and Friday, sleeping and eating in great comfort. The weather was lowering all the time, the rain drizzling down at intervals. However, we kept a big fire going all the time in front of our tent, which generally smoked us out of it, and got along first rate.

Thursday appeared to be spent in deliberation, and in bringing up supplies on horseback. By this time, of course, the rebels were aware of our movements and success was almost impossible. We could not move forward. I suppose it was as muddy on the south side of the river as on the north, and the enemy, probably inferring the reverse, hung up a board on the bank opposite the intended crossing, having inscribed thereon 'General Burnside Stuck in the Mud.' At least so goes the story. On Friday the retrograde movement commenced. By daybreak the road was lined with infantry corduroying mud holes, and soon after the artillery began to file by: guns and caissons with any number of horses and without much regard to order. At daylight Saturday morning, Captain Martin and I started back."

## HE REVIEWS THE FREDERICKSBURG CAMPAIGN.

"Second repulse from Fredericksburg by the mud. We were absent from camp four days. Don't blame the generals for the rain storm. . . . The utmost stretch of generalship is to place a regiment behind a battery from a traditional idea that artillery needs an infantry support. Just



look at Fredericksburg. We had 300 or 400 pieces of light artillery at our disposal. The enemy in our front were strongly intrenched. The natural course would be to get up artillery and knock down the intrenchments before commencing the assault.

Instead of this, the infantry were set full tilt at a stone wall and did not get over it, as of course they could not. After the failure of the attack a few batteries were put into position, though I hardly know what they were to do. Dickinson's Battery [L. & M. 3d U. S.] opened on the rebels and the principal effect was to draw the fire from 20 guns on the hill so hot as to drive the battery off the field. Soon after, I was ordered into position near where Dickinson had been. I was not put there to silence the enemy's artillery fire, our usual occupation, but to fire at the infantry behind the stone wall. I was not told to knock down the stone wall, but to fire at the road. So I blazed away, bursting shell and shrapnell over the road. Of course it was a good pyrotechnical display and may have frightened a few timid rebels, but the idea of its having done them any great injury is absurd. I do not know to this day what I was supposed to be accomplishing. I obeyed orders and did not ask questions. Our infantry stated that after I opened fire the rebels' musketry was not quite so hot, and it is possible that some rebel may have been deterred from poking his head over the wall by the idea that a shell might be coming over in that vicinity, but it seems to me an inopportune moment for such a display. If I had been placed there to prepare or support a charge, I should understand that I was part of a design, but, as it was, I do not see that I did any good, and I do not imagine I injured a dozen rebels. Meantime I was the recipient of very flattering attentions from the 20 guns on the hill, though owing to my being in a sheltered position no great injury was done. Still the sensation was sufficiently disagreeable to show

what would have been the result had we had a dozen batteries up there.

Contrast all this with the Battle of Murfreesboro' where Rosecrans did what every great general does; he massed his artillery, and repulsed the rebels."

## CHAPTER XVI.

### THE BATTLE OF CHANCELLORSVILLE.

MAY 1-4, 1863.

"But, as he rode along the ranks, each soldier's head was bare,—

Our hearts were far too full for cheers,—we welcomed him with prayer."

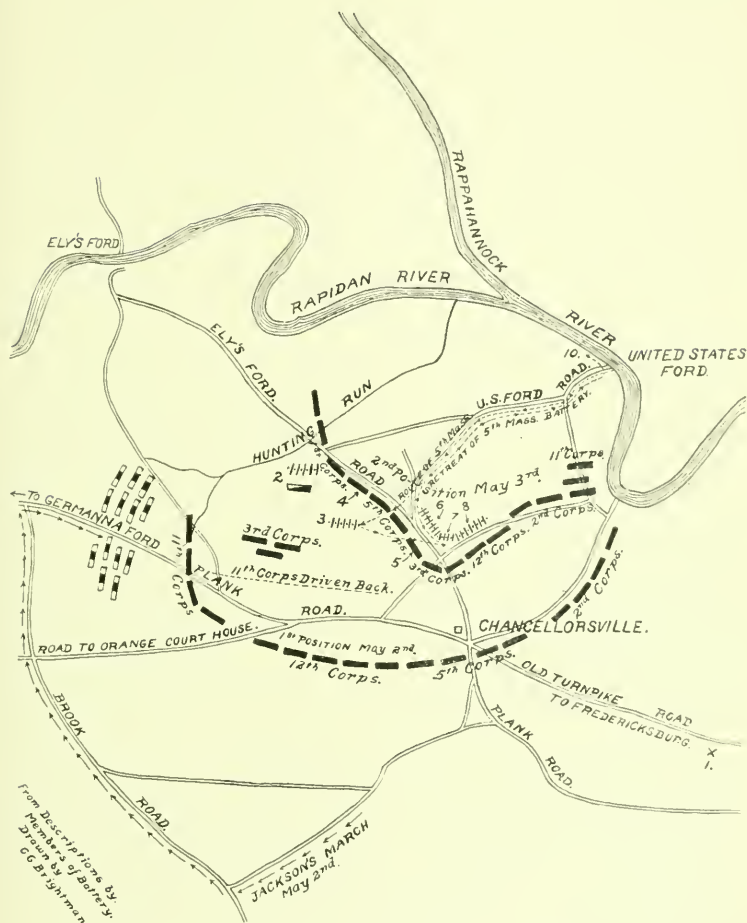
JOHN BOYLE O'REILLY.—*Uncle Ned's Tales.*

On the 26th of January, 1863, General A. E. Burnside having been relieved from the command of the Army of the Potomac at his own request, Major General Joseph Hooker was placed in command. Among his first Orders was one discontinuing the Grand Divisions of the Army instituted by his predecessor and returning on February 5th, 1863, to the organization with the corps as a unit. The Ninth Corps was sent to Fortress Monroe, Major General George G. Meade was placed in command of the Fifth Corps, and Brigadier General Charles Griffin still held the command of the 1st Division, attached to which was the Artillery Brigade commanded by Captain Augustus P. Martin, consisting of the 3d and 5th Mass. Batteries, the 4th R. I., and the 5th U. S. Battery Lieut. C. E. Hazlett.

It was during this period of reorganization that General Butterfield devised the system of corps badges to be fastened upon the centre of the top of the cap, see p. 20.

On the 11th of April, 1863, General Hooker disclosed his plan of turning the enemy's left flank and severing his communication with Richmond by making use of the Cavalry Corps, the organization of which he had himself originated. He designed that the cavalry should establish

# CHANCELLORSVILLE.



1. Place where Sykes & Griffin encountered the enemy April 30<sup>th</sup> & May 1<sup>st</sup>. 2. First position of Cavalry & Artillery April 30<sup>th</sup>. 3. Position of 5<sup>th</sup> Mass. Battery May 2<sup>nd</sup>. 4. Griffin's Division. 5. Humphreys' Division. 6. 28 guns. 7. 4 guns. 8. 24 guns. Massed by Captain Weed May 3<sup>rd</sup> & 4<sup>th</sup>. 9. Position of 5<sup>th</sup> Mass. May 3<sup>rd</sup> & 4<sup>th</sup>. 10. Place where part of Battery halted by mistake during the retreat of May 5<sup>th</sup>.



themselves so securely that they would be able to check Lee's retreat, while the Army fell upon his rear, or, at least compel him to fall back by way of Culpeper and Gordonsville with his supplies cut off. But the cavalry, under General George Stoneman, on account of heavy storms and swollen rivers, were kept in and around Warrenton Junction until April 29th, when it crossed the Rappahannock at Kelly's Ford, about 20 miles northwest of Fredericksburg, where the Eleventh, Twelfth, and Fifth Corps had rendezvoused; other corps crossing at Banks's Ford and United States Ford, and all moving down the river towards Fredericksburg.

The Division of Griffin and Sykes of the Fifth Corps crossed the Rappahannock at 11 a. m. of the 29th and preceded by cavalry, who encountered a small force of the enemy's cavalry, forded the Rapidan, in water 3 feet deep and a swift current, at Ely's Ford. After passing Hunting Run, Griffin's Division was halted to await developments at United States Ford, where it was erroneously reported the enemy had appeared in force and made trouble for the cavalry. It having developed that the enemy had not obstructed the passage of troops at United States Ford, Griffin's Division proceeded to Chancellorsville, which it occupied at 11 a. m. of the 30th of April.

The post town of Chancellorsville 76 miles northwest of Richmond consisted of one house, the Chancellor House, a public house built of brick and occupied by the Chancellor family. It was in a very exposed position. It was at one time General Hooker's Head Quarters and while standing on the piazza he was wounded.

From this Hotel one road led to Fredericksburg, one to Gordonsville, one to Spottsylvania, and one to Ely's Ford. About 3 p. m. of the 30th, Griffin advanced a Brigade to support the cavalry at Banks's Ford, taking the Old Turnpike in that direction about 2 miles from Chancellorsville,



where they found the enemy posted advantageously on a ridge of hills; their artillery commanding the road.

Both Griffin and Sykes, the 1st and 2d Divisions of the Fifth Corps were bivouacked in line of battle, the right resting on Chancellorsville, and the left extending in a north-east direction towards the river. The Eleventh and Twelfth Corps, after overcoming comparatively slight opposition at Germanna Ford, arrived at Chancellorsville, 10 miles distant from Fredericksburg, about 2 p. m. of the 30th. The Twelfth occupied a line nearly parallel to the Plank Road in the woods, its left resting near Chancellorsville, and the right near a church about  $1\frac{1}{2}$  miles off. The Eleventh was on the right of the Twelfth, its right resting on Hunting Run. Where the Ely's Ford road crosses Hunting Run there was a force of cavalry and artillery.

General Hooker arrived at Chancellorsville from Falmouth, on the evening of the 30th. At 11 a. m. May 1st the Confederates moved forward on the Plank and Old Turnpike roads, the advance accompanied by artillery. They struck our forces under Sykes, who was ordered to withdraw. The Union line was well protected by breastworks which had been constructed out of logs, but the rebels' artillery swept the roads by which our troops were to advance.

The left of Hooker's line extended from Chancellorsville to the Rappahannock; his right westward two miles, covering the Germanna Ford road. He formed line of battle on the night of May 1st in front of Chancellorsville at right angles to the Plank Road, with cavalry on his left flank.

At 4 p. m. of May 1st the Third Corps took position parallel to the Plank Road.

Near sunset of May 2d, the rebel general Jackson crossed the Orange Court House and the Culpeper roads, and moving down the Germanna Ford road, made an assault on the Eleventh Corps and overwhelmed its right flank, and reaching a gap left between the Third and Eleventh Corps com-

pelled the left of the latter to fall back, but were met as they poured through the gap by the Twelfth Corps artillery, by whom, assisted by portions of the Twelfth Corps infantry, whose absence from that part of the line had left the gap, recalled from the support of the Third Corps on a reconnoissance, the enemy's advance was checked, and the midnight battle of the Third Corps, which Walter F. Lansil has so thrillingly placed upon canvas, resulted in the restoration of the line of the Plank Road and the original breast-works; together with the recapture of the guns and caissons that were lost, and the capture of two of the enemy's guns and three caissons.

During the night of the 2d, by General Hooker's orders, the Fifth Corps moved out and occupied the road from Chandler's house to Ely's Ford, the left resting at Chandler's, the right connecting with the First Corps. Griffin's Division occupied the left of this line.

Sunday, May 3d, the day on which the main battle was fought, the enemy was engaged with the Third Corps, a portion of the Second Corps and part of Humphreys' Division of the Fifth Corps, though it was Hooker's intention to have the main battle fought along the Ely's Ford and Mineral Spring roads. These supports were to hold the enemy in check while the Third and Second Corps were moving to new positions, which they accomplished with a considerable loss.

By General Hooker's order the whole line withdrew to a new position north of the Chancellor House, covering the Ely's and United States Fords, the right of which was occupied by the First and Fifth Corps, and at the junction of the Ely's Ford and Mineral Spring roads Captain Stephen H. Weed placed 56 guns: 28 on the right, 24 on the left and 4 at the junction.

The Chancellor House about 2 o'clock, soon after it was abandoned as Army Head Quarters, took fire from the

bursting of shells, and was destroyed. The woods also took fire, and there was a forced suspension of hostilities, but suffering indescribable of the wounded and dying left to the mercy of the flames. In the mean time General Sedgwick had crossed the Rappahannock and occupied Fredericksburg. He too was defeated and compelled to retire to the northern bank of the river.

In the afternoon of the 4th General Griffin with the 1st Division made a reconnoissance in the direction from which the attack had come the day before, ending with a sharp fight.

In the midst of a terrific storm, on the night of the 5th, Hooker commenced the withdrawal of his troops across the river by way of the United States Ford, the Fifth Corps forming the rear guard. By 8 o'clock on the morning of the 6th the last of the Army had crossed, and by 4 p. m. all the bridges were safely withdrawn to the top of the hill, and the Army returned to the old camping ground across the river from Fredericksburg.

### THE MEMBERS' STORY.

#### LETTER OF CAPTAIN PHILLIPS.

"CAMP NEAR FALMOUTH, VA.

Jan'y 27, 1863.

I heard yesterday that Burnside, Sumner, and Franklin had been relieved, and Hooker appointed to command the Army of the Potomac. This has been so often foretold, that it will surprise nobody. We want a general who can develop the qualities of his subordinates, not one who crushes every display of energy. Napoleon's secret of success was his marvellous power of making others work."

Dyer's Notes: "Jan'y 28, 1863. A snow storm commenced last night. At dark tonight still snowing. Have got a good fire so I am all right."

Chase's Diary: "28th: Very stormy in the evening—rain and snow—and 'a crowded house.' 29th. . . . Roll call omitted this morning. . . . The weather grew very warm and pleasant as the sun rose, and the snow is fast melting away. The ground very muddy. *Plastering* tent tonight as usual."

## LETTER OF SERG'T. W. H. PEACOCK.

"CAMP NEAR FALMOUTH, VA.

Jan'y 28, 1863.

. . . Not a man in the Co. had on a dry thread. All soaked through with rain, and we all suffered much from the cold and exposure. To make my situation more uncomfortable my horse fell with me in about two feet of mud, covering me from head to foot. Finally every Gun, caisson, and other carriage, settled in the mud up to the hubs, and there we left them and took to the woods upon a side hill, where we remained two days, when we made an attempt to get back to camp. After fifteen hours hard work, with the assistance of fifty mules and all our horses, we succeeded in reaching our old quarters. We are very short of money in the Battery, not having been paid by the Gov't for nearly eight months."

## LETTER OF CAPTAIN PHILLIPS.

"CAMP NEAR FALMOUTH, VA.

Jan'y 29, 1863.

It looks less like moving than ever. This morning the snow is 4 to 6 inches deep, and things look very winterish. Rather more cheerful than the snow storm was the arrival of the Paymaster with a trunk full of greenbacks and postage currency. We received our pay for four months from July 1st to Oct. 31st inclusive, and consequently feel quite rich. You have no idea how pleasant the inside of a paymaster's trunk looks, all pigeonholed and stuffed with

greenbacks. I remember the time when paymasters carried round canvas bags full of gold and silver, but these have disappeared and the specie currency is represented by \$5 worth of nickels. I received three of these, and intend to keep them as curiosities, it is so long since I have seen anything but paper. For convenience I took \$10 in postage currency, and I find it looks very pleasant, being new and clean; its appearance changes for the worse after 6 mos. use."

Dyer's Notes: "Jan'y 30, 1863. Pieces and caissons painted today. Mud ankle deep."

Chase's Diary: "Jan'y 31st, 1863. Posted the guard last night and today first half. Lieut. Scott returned from furlough."

Scott's Notes: "Jan'y 31, 1863. Snow here in drifts some 2 ft. deep on a level. Eve pleasant. Commenced duties as Officer of the Day. The horses of the Battery were infected with glanders, and 18 were condemned to be shot."

February 2d Lieut. Scott rode through some of the camps towards Fredericksburg. He notes in his Diary of the 3d that Lieut. Dunn of Martin's Battery had resigned and gone home.

February 2d Corporal Chase cut his left foot instead of a stick of wood. Wound carefully dressed by Mr. Gale.

Chase's Diary: "Feb. 3d, 1863. My foot very painful all night and today. The men very busy building new houses and remodelling old ones. Cellars and basements strictly prohibited by the Doctors. Order to that effect read in line Feb. 2d. Feb. 5th. My foot convalescent. Helped to fell trees and draw up logs for fuel, and other light work p. m. Lieut. Blake left camp on furlough."

## LETTER OF CAPTAIN PHILLIPS.

CAMP NEAR FALMOUTH, VA.

Feb. 5, 1863.

I have painted all my carriages, but one, the paint having given out, and they now look quite fresh and clean. I have also floored the stables to keep the horses out of the mud, and am now keeping the men busy on their huts, having issued an order that all subterranean residences must be forthwith abolished. It is very desirable I find, to keep the men at work. General Hooker's General Order No. 3 orders that not more than 2 men in a hundred shall have furloughs at the same time. Of course this is as much as saying that 2 *can* go, and the effect has been to set every man to applying for a furlough though he never thought of it before. I do not blame the men for wanting to go home, but I do not think the system adapted to strengthen the army."

Scott's Notes: "Feb. 5th. Order for two days' rations to be ready to support. Snow going fast."

Dyer's Notes: "Feb. 6, 1863. Orders received at Head Quarters to be ready to move at an hour's notice. A loaf of bread served out to each man at supper time. Announcement read in line that General Burnside was relieved from command at his own request, General Hooker to be his successor."

Chase's Diary: "Feb. 6. . . . Trains running all last night. Commissary stores going down the next day."

Phillips' Diary: "Feb. 7. Warm and pleasant . . . the 9th Corps is going off with Burnside. Dr. Schell called to bid good bye having been ordered to Washington."

Dyer's Notes: "Saturday, 7th Feb. 1863. Benj. F. Story left camp to go home on a furlough, today, of ten days, to visit his family in Charlestown, Mass., the first furlough for an able bodied private since we left the state, 13 months



and 13 days. Troops are being transported down the railroad towards Acquia Creek. On guard tonight."

Scott's Notes: "Feb. 7, 1863. Had 18 horses condemned by Lieut. Carroll of the 5th Regt."

Dyer's Notes: "Sunday, Feb. 8, 1863. Battery and Quarters inspected by our officers this a. m."

Scott's Notes: "Feb. 8th. . . . Balloon up on a reconnaissance. General Hooker to reorganize the Army. . . . Reconnaissance returns from Rappahannock. They destroy a bridge. I suppose R. R. bridge at Rappahannock Station. Feb. 9th. Troops still passing down to the Creek."

#### FROM CAPT. PHILLIPS' LETTER FEB. 8TH.

"I think General Hooker is going to work very well, he is getting a very good staff. General Butterfield has great administrative abilities, and is thoroughly acquainted with the tactics and details of the service. General Warren, Chief of Engineers, is considered a very fine Topog. General S. Williams, McClellan's old A. A. G., is back, and has always been considered a very fine staff officer. The corps is announced as the unit for Artillery, so that the post of Division Chief of Art'y will lose its importance. . . ."

Chase's Diary: "Feb. 9, 1863. Spent the whole afternoon in getting half a load of wood to camp. Team got mired in the woods, and we were obliged to throw half of our cargo overboard. An order read in line at the afternoon Roll Call to 'respect and obey' in future Serg't O. B. Smith as Orderly Serg't., John W. Morrison as Serg't. and Wm. B. Pattison as Sergeant.

Feb. 10th. Inspection of the Battery,—and 4th Rhode Island Battery,—by Captain Weed, 5th Regulars, at 12 m. today, after which our roll was called in his presence. Went with the Battery today, although my foot is still

quite sore. Lieut. Blake returned from furlough and Sergt. Page left camp for furlough. Wm. Barry returned from convalescent camp at Alexandria."

Scott's Notes: "Feb. 10th. . . . Battery inspected by Captains Weed, Martin and Waterman."

From Captain Phillips' Letter of the 11th:—"Yesterday in pursuance of the plan ordered from Hd. Qrs. Army of the Potomac, Captain Weed inspected the batteries of this Division, the inspection occupying most of the forenoon. I was able to make a very respectable appearance; my carriages, having been painted, looked quite neat. Captain Weed made no remarks, so that I cannot say how well he was pleased. Captain Martin has sent in his resignation twice, and both times he has been refused. General Hooker has just issued an order that resignations may be accepted when accompanied by a surgeon's certificate of disability, or when it is evident that the officer can be replaced by a better man. Captain Martin says he thinks that he shall call for a Board of Examiners, and if they do not conclude that he is entirely unfit and ignorant, it will not be his fault. . . . Last night, soon after dark, a belated traveller called on me for hospitality. It turned out to be a correspondent of the New York 'Times' named Judd, a graduate of Williams College of the class of '60. Of course I was glad to furnish him with food and shelter. . . ."

Phillips' Diary: "Tuesday, Feb. 10, 1863. Blake got back from Washington. He brought . . . Casey's Tactics, Anderson's Evolutions of Field Artillery, cards, paper, etc. . . . A party of recruits left Massachusetts today. Wednesday, 11th. . . . Spent the day in camp reading tactics etc."

Scott's Notes: "Feb. 12, 1863. Battery D, 5th U. S. Artillery entered in hurdle race, best jumper to have 15 days furlough."

Dyer's Notes: "Feb. 13, 1863. Camp policed today in

good shape. Sounds of revelry heard tonight at Head Quarters."

From Letter of Captain Phillips: "Feb. 14, 1863. Yesterday forenoon, tempted by the bright sun and the dry ground, I started out for a ride. After calling on Lieut. Col. Sherwin (Thomas Sherwin Jr.) of the 22d, Scott and I started off on a round-a-bout trip. Striking the main road we crossed Potomac Creek about a mile below the bridge, and then followed up the stream and recrossed the creek just above the bridge. All expectation of an early movement vanished as soon as we struck the main road. The mud was intolerable, and the deep ruts brought back the Peninsula campaign to our minds. Assuredly no move yet. So great is the confidence felt in the immobility of the Army, that Captain Martin and Lieut. Walcott have sent on for their wives to come out. The introduction of ladies into our society will create quite an excitement, and I shall impress upon Henry the importance of keeping my boots well blacked.

Log houses are almost universal out here, and we have just laid the foundation of one calculated to surpass anything now in existence. Its dimensions are 9 by 18, and it is to be divided into two rooms, one for a bedroom and the other for a dining room. When this is finished we contemplate another of the same size as mine, and then we are going to cut doors and build entries, so as to connect them into one house, the dining and sitting room in the centre and the bedrooms opening into it. Whether we shall remain long enough to finish our grand architectural design is more than I can say."

Phillips' Diary: "14th. Lieut. Spear left on a ten days' leave. Scott commenced a new house 9x18, close to mine."

Scott's Notes: "15th. Many ladies are visiting their friends in camp."

Corporal Chase's Diary: "Feb. 16th, 1863. Company

drilled on the manual of the piece a. m., and a Battery drill at 2 o'clock p. m. Acted as sergeant vice Peacock at Acquia Creek."

Phillips' Diary: "Feb. 16. A large force of men were busy today throwing up earthworks on the hills this side of Potomac Creek. (In a letter Captain Phillips calls their number 2000 or 3000.) It is rumored that our Corps is to be left here to hold the Rappahannock, and the rest of the Army to go somewhere else. *Nous verrons.*"

The 17th it snowed all day, and on the 18th it changed to rain and was the severest storm of the season. B. F. Story returned to camp from furlough on the 18th. Corporal Chase posted the guard and the countersign was "Chicago."

Scott's Notes: "19th. Brigade at work on fortifications part of the day. Lieut. Lull returned from a furlough of eighty-six days. Two recruits came on that day, George Macomber and O'Hara."

Dyer's Notes: "Friday Feb. 20. Delightful day. A moderate wind that has dried up all the mud, and we have a dry, hard park again."

Serg't. Page returned on this day. On the 21st Lieut. Scott finished up his house and occupied it with Lieut. Lull. Edward E. Rice returned from the hospital at Alexandria, and 2 new recruits Purbeck and Trumbull arrived.

#### LETTER OF CAPT. PHILLIPS.

"CAMP NEAR FALMOUTH, VA.

Feb. 22, 1863.

. . . I enlisted a man the other day, and a recruit turned up day before yesterday, having spent two or three months in travelling from Massachusetts to this place, in charge of different Provost Marshals as a deserter. So, on the whole, we are gaining a little. My men are in excellent health and spirits, and I consider the Battery now quite efficient.

. . . When I awoke this morning a snow drift lay in the middle of the room, extending from the bottom of the door, and sundry leaks at the eaves had allowed a feathery spray to cover my coats, pants, &c. Outside everything reminded me of New England; the air was filled with driving snow flakes, and the drifted snow lay a foot or two deep. Blake was even worse off than I, for, inside of his tent the snow lay, as he said, about 7 inches on a level. Scott and Lull in their new palace got along quite comfortably. This wonderful mansion, of which I wrote in my last, was finished yesterday, and is now the wonder of the place. The dimensions are 9x18, the door is in one end. The rear serves as a sleeping apartment, and is ornamented by crossed sabres and other warlike instruments. Drapery curtains, looped up at pleasure, separate this from the front room, which serves as a sitting and dining room. A Sibley stove keeps up a summer temperature, and elegant paper hangings of grain bags create a comfortable appearance and look quite neat and gorgeous. Our dining table stands in the centre, with a rubber table cloth,—we have ordered damask,—and we cluster around the stove to cogitate, converse, &c. &c. At present (Sunday forenoon) we are disposed as follows:—Scott is sitting on his bed reckoning up accounts, today having been a settling day. Lull is lying on his bed reading. Blake is sitting by the door reading ‘Yankee Notions,’ and I am sitting at the table writing.”

Phillips’ Diary: “Feb. 22. A heavy snow storm all last night and today, drifting all around. A parade was ordered at 12 m., weather permitting, to listen to Washington’s Farewell Address, but did not come off. Salutes were fired in the different corps.”

Scott’s Notes: “Feb. 22. . . . No movement outside for two days. . . . Snow nearly 12 inches deep.”

Guard mounting was omitted in the morning. The weather was too stormy for the cooks to make coffee in the

morning. Feb. 23d was clear and cold. Lieut. Spear returned from leave.

Dyer's Notes: 24th. Drill this forenoon as usual on manual of the piece."

On the 24th men were observed at work where a new bridge is to be built across Potomac Creek.

Chase's Diary: "Feb. 25th. Usual drill a. m. Weather pleasant and a lazy day. Nothing to do but chop double-and-twisted logs for exercise."

Phillips' Diary: "Feb. 25th. The rebels drove in our pickets at Hartwood Church, capturing some of our cavalry. Rec'd orders to be ready to march at a moment's notice but not to start."

Scott's Notes: "25th. Took a ride among the camps. Found the going very bad. Snow melting fast. Troops at work on the work at the creek today. . . . 300 of our cavalry captured. (At Hartwood Church.) Feb. 27th. Cavalry return from the front. Rebs retire across the river, taking some prisoners and horses. Balloon up on a long reconnoissance. The Rebs intended to destroy Potomac Creek bridge. 28th. . . . Afternoon took a ride to the Lacey house opposite Fredericksburg, with Lieuts. Lull and Spear. Saw the Rebels at work on rifle pits: also their cavalry pickets. Found going very bad."

Dyer's Notes: "Feb. 26th. Another recruit today."

Phillips' Diary: "Feb. 27th, 1863. . . . Applied for 10 days' leave."

Chase's Diary: "Feb. 28th. Company drilled on the piece a. m. Went to provost marshal's to see about the boxes, instead of drilling. My weight today is 168 lbs.; eighteen lbs. 'premium.' March 1st. Inspected the bridge over Potomac Creek, and the fortifications to defend the same, this p. m. with Serg't. Page."

Phillips' Diary: "March 2d. . . . Capt. Martin went to



Washington to meet Mrs. Martin. Rode down towards the Phillips house to get ambrotypes taken."

Scott's Notes: "March 2d. Drill on pieces. Other batteries of Division out on drill. Mud drying up. Commenced to build another house, for Spear."

Dyer's Notes: "March 3d. Another recruit came today. 22 new horses."

---

#### BREVET RANK.

An Act to Authorize the brevetting of Volunteer and other officers in the United States service.

Be it enacted by the Senate and House of Representatives of the United States of America in Congress assembled, That the President of the United States be, and he hereby is, authorized by and with the advice and consent of the Senate, to confer brevet rank upon such commissioned officers of the Volunteer and other forces in the United States service, as have been, or may hereafter be, distinguished by gallant actions or meritorious conduct: which rank shall not entitle them to any increase of pay or emolument.

Approved March 3, 1863.

---

Phillips' Diary: "March 4, 1863. Cold and blustering. . . . Captain Martin returned from Washington with Mrs. Martin and Mrs. Walcott."

Scott's Notes: "March 5th, 1863. . . . Balloon up on a reconnoissance."

Phillips' Diary: "March 7th. Started from camp at 7 a. m. on 10 days' leave. Reached Acquia Creek at 9, started from there at 2, in the 'John Brooks,' got aground and remained so till 4. Reached Washington too late for the train; put up at the Metropolitan. . . ."

Dyer's Notes: "Friday, 6th March, 1863. No drill, but field movements displayed this afternoon out on the drill ground. 7th. Lieut. T. W. Terry of the 13th Mass. Battery arrived here today on a visit to the officers."

Timothy W. Terry had been Q. M. Sergeant of the Fifth Mass. Battery.

Dyer's Notes: "March 8th. Sunday. Cooking range which the company paid for by subscription came today. Cost, \$50.00.

Scott's Notes: "March 8th. Lieut. Terry leaves for Washington to join his battery at Fort Monroe. Attended divine service at Captain Martin's Head Quarters, conducted by Elias Nason. 9th. Lieut. Spear Officer of the Day. Drill on pieces; Scott. . . . Officers of the 5th invited over to Captain Martin's Hd. Qrs. Band in attendance."

On this day a band of rebel cavalry passed through the Union lines, entered Fairfax, Va. and captured a general and a few privates; also all the government horses in the place, and made their escape.

Chase's Diary: "March 9th, 1863. . . . A 'council of war' was held by the men, and they voted to reform the cook-house discipline and to relieve Waddington and Burt from the cooking department. W. & B. were superseded by Townsend and Trumbull, who entered upon their duties with the new machine today. A new cook-house built and several improvements made."

Scott's Notes: "March 11th, 1863. 2 p. m. hitched up for drill by sections: Lull, Blake, Spear. 3 p. m. guns ordered in position to command Potomac Bridge, fear of a raid by the Rebs. Ordered to report on some bread. Waterman in position near our left. Eve, sharp lookout kept."

Dyer: "11th. . . . We expect a raid from Stuart's cavalry. On guard."

Chase: "11th. . . . A fatigue party detailed to clear up the ground round the guns, and three extra posts for guard added. With Whitcher all the forenoon cutting and drawing wood to camp 'for family use.' A picked up dinner, but hot supper of beef steak and soft bread. A game of base ball started after roll call this p. m. Company ordered

at the evening roll call to be ready to turn out at a moment's notice, and not take off our clothing. 12th. Everything quiet as usual last night."

The same order for sleeping was given for the night of the 12th.

Scott's Notes: "March 12th. Guns still in position. New recruit came in today. Brought in also a deserter. Men employed fitting up camp. . . . Received notice of discharge,—disability,—of Geo. F. Manchester. Signal lights thrown up from Hd. Qrs."

Dyer: 12th. Thursday: "I was called up this morning at 3 o'clock to go on guard. Eighteen men are detached on the guard list."

#### LETTER OF SERG'T. W. H. PEACOCK.

"CAMP NEAR FALMOUTH, VA.

Mar. 13, 1863.

We are hourly expecting an attack from the rebels, who are coming to try and destroy a high bridge of the Acquia Creek R. R. about three hundred yards from our camp. Our Battery is in position on a hill; also the Fourth R. I., and several others. Our pickets are drawn in to lead them on. The guns are all run back some from the brow of the hill, to be out of sight, and we will let them get to the bridge before we commence firing. Such are the orders, when, if they come, a force will cut them out in rear. For two days and nights no man was allowed to go out of camp or undress at night; not even to take off his boots. We think Gen'l Hooker is bound to trap them. I am anxious for the fun to begin, and think they will be surprised when we open up 30 guns on them, but the suspense is great."

Captain Phillips was in Boston.

Phillips' Diary: "March 13, 1863. Dined at Young's with Captain Allen."

Scott's Notes: "March 13th. Ice makes at noon. Guns

still in position. Visited by Captain Martin and ladies. Sunday, 15th. Hitched up Battery. Inspected by 1st Lieut. Scott. Pieces still in position. Martin's and Hazlett's batteries out on Inspection. Eve, snow and hail, thunder and lightning."

Serg't. Pattison left camp on furlough. Captain Phillips in New York on the 15th. Visited the iron plated ram "Dunderberg" building at Webb's ship yard.

Chase's Diary: ". . . Ground covered with hail and sleet this morning. March 17th. 'St. Patrick's Day in the morning.' Grand gala day with the Irish Brigade. Battery drill about an hour, and at 4 o'clock. Acted as gunner for the 3d Detachment."

Captain Phillips March 17th was in Washington on the way to camp. Met Major Rice of the 19th, (Mass. Inf.) Captain Barnard (George M. Barnard Jr.) of the 18th, and Adj't. Patten of the 20th.

## RECRUITS.

HEAD QUARTERS  
1ST DIV. 5TH CORPS,  
March 17, 1863.

Special Orders  
No. 21.

The following named enlisted men, having expressed a desire to serve with the Artillery, are temporarily attached to the Batteries in this command, with the consent of immediate commanders:—

Private	Nelson Thrasher	Co. B.	14th N. Y.	Vols.	to Battery E.	Mass. Arty.
"	Thomas Scott	"	"	"	"	"
"	Samuel F. Brazee	"	"	"	"	"
"	John Lahee	"	"	"	"	"
"	Samuel A. Gorton	"	"	"	"	"
"	William Martis	Co. G.	32d.	Mass. Vols.	"	"
"	Michael Graham	Co. C.	1st	Michigan Vols.	"	"
"	Albert Lindsley	Co. C.	1st	Michigan Vols.	"	"
"	Richard Hornby	Co. G.	"	"	"	"
"	Randall Fox	Co. G.	"	"	"	"
"	Frank Shepard	Co. I.	"	"	"	"
"	Walter Northrop	Co. I.	"	"	"	"
"	J. Van Iderstine	Co. I.	"	"	"	"
"	William Bugbee	Co. K.	22d.	Mass. Vols.	"	"
"	Adolphus S. Crawford	Co. F.	2d.	Maine Vols.	"	"

Private	William H. Foss	Co. F. 2d	Maine	Vols.	to	Battery E. Mass. Arty.		
"	Charles Keene	"	"	"	"	"	"	"
"	William H. Mc Henry	"	"	"	"	"	"	"
"	William H. Jones Co. C.	"	"	"	"	"	"	"
"	Alfred Fork	"	"	"	"	"	"	"
"	Charles E. Foster	"	"	"	"	"	"	"
"	John Murray Co. I.	"	"	"	"	"	"	"
"	F. C. Williams Co. K.	"	"	"	"	"	"	"
"	Robert Joyner Co. F.	18th Mass.	Vols.	"	"	"	"	"
"	Ernest Hein Co. H.	"	"	"	"	"	"	"
"	Richard Downey Co. —	25th N. Y.	Vols.	"	"	"	"	"
"	Fred Bugler Co. F.	18th N. Y.	Vols.	"	"	"	"	"

By command of *Brig. Gen'l Griffin*.

(Sd.) C. B. MERVINE,  
A. A. G.

HEAD QRS. DIV. ART'Y

1st Div. 5th Corps, March 19th, 1863.

Official:

A. P. MARTIN,

*Capt. Com'd'g. Div. Art'y.*

Colonel Clement A. Lounsberry, who entered the service of the United States in the 1st Michigan Reg't. Infantry, and went home at the close of the war colonel of the 20th Michigan, wrote in a letter dated Fargo, N. D. Aug. 17, 1899:—

"It is unfortunate that the part taken by the 1st Michigan in this campaign is lost to history. They, however, lost 35 killed and died of wounds, and 97 missing, from March 1st to June 30th, 1863. The winter previous they had been guarding the Washington and Baltimore R. R., and came to the Potomac early in March. They were at this time brigaded with the 18th Mass. and 13th New York. At Second Bull Run they were with the 18th Mass. in their assault upon the Confederate batteries, advancing under a terrific fire, in which they lost in a few minutes eight officers, and nearly 50 per cent. of the men were either killed or wounded. They went into action with 20 officers and 227 men, and but 4 officers were in camp unhurt, and less than 150 men, when the battle was over.

The regiment had seen service at First Bull Run and was then re-organized 'for the War.' It was originally made up of militia companies, and was the first western regiment to reach Washington, in 'Sixty-One. It was from the cream of that regiment that the recruits mentioned came."

Corporal Shackley's Notes: "March 18, 1863, a number of men from the 14th N. Y., 1st Mich., 32d Mass. and 22d Mass. Infantry Regiments transferred to the Battery."

Phillips' Diary: "March 18th. Started at 8 a. m. in the 'Zephyr' for Acquia Creek. Arrived at 12. Missed the train, took the next one at 3 p. m., and arrived at camp at 4."

Chase's Diary: "March 18th. No drill today. Captain Phillips returned. The advance troops had a skirmish with the enemy yesterday, and the booming of artillery was heard today. A squad of recruits came today. . . . Gorton and Leahy came to board with us. . . ."

Scott's Notes: "March 19th. Battery shooting at target near us. Our pieces in position. Cavalry drive the Rebs at Kelly's Ford. 20th. One man detailed to Battery from 22d Mass. Order for Review of Division on the 25th."

Dyer's Notes: "March 20th. The 1st Brigade went on picket this morning."

March 21st, 1863. Jonas Shackley was appointed Corporal to the 1st Detachment. Patrick Welch was appointed Corporal to the 6th Detachment.

Scott's Notes: "March 21st Rebs undertake to cross the Rappahannock and are repulsed."

Phillips' Diary: "March 22d. . . . Lieut. Blake started on a ten days' leave. Fernald of my class called round in the afternoon."

Scott's Notes: "23d. 2 men from the 22d Regt. Balloons up on a reconnoissance. 24th. Review for the 25th postponed (to the 26th). Rebs seen in force by our pickets. An attack expected."

Chase's Diary: "March 24th. . . . Cutting and drawing up wood for family use, with Gorton and Leahy part of a. m. . . . Sergt. Pattison returned."

From a Letter of Capt. Phillips, March 24, 1863. "While I was off we had a hedge put up around our tents, and a



little more done in the way of fixing up. Our quarters are now a little village by themselves. 25th. About midnight rec'd orders to be on the alert as the enemy was expected to make a dash."

Scott: "25th. Troops turned out 4 a. m. False alarm. 26th. Division reviewed by General Meade. Battery in line."

Phillips' Diary: "26th. Squally in the forenoon. . . . Division reviewed in the afternoon. . . . The artillery crammed up in a heap in the worst part of the field."

Chase: "26th. Went with the Battery to the Review. . . . Reviewed by Generals Hooker, Meade, and Griffin. The Division made a fine appearance, and was witnessed by quite a number of 'the gentler sex,' including Mrs. General Griffin's sisters. Weather fine most of the day, but a slight snow squall about 5 p. m. 27th. On fatigue today . . . the only fatigue duty I've done since last November."

Scott's Notes: "March 27th. Sergt. Morrison goes home on recruiting service with Lieut. (Thomas M.) Cargill of the 3d Mass. Battery. Drill by Capt. Phillips."

Dyer's Notes. "29th. We have had quite a spirited game of base ball today."

#### FROM A LETTER OF CAPT. PHILLIPS.

"CAMP NEAR FALMOUTH, VA.

March 29, 1863.

It is the day after a battle that decides the result, and many a defeat in the hands of an able general is of more advantage than a barren victory. . . . In my opinion if this Army is to make the main attack on Richmond from the North, it should be aided by another force operating from Suffolk against Petersburg and the enemy's communications with the South. There must be 50,000 or 60,000 men around Fort Monroe, Norfolk and Suffolk, and 20,000 could hold these points, leaving 40,000 free to operate

against Petersburg. A vigorous movement upon this place would oblige the enemy to abandon Richmond, or to weaken its defences so much that General Hooker would find it an easy capture. It is not impossible that the main attack may be made on the south side of the James River."

Chase's Diary: "March 31st, 1863. . . . About 3 inches of snow on the ground and rain one minute and snow the next. . . . Cleared up fine p. m. the snow nearly all melted. Spent the day in the tent playing cards and dominoes. No roll call this morning. Eighteen months in service. . . . Gained 'the hilltop of our service' today. Will the descent be as easy as the ascent? 3 spare wheels taken away to-day."

Phillips' Diary: "31st. . . . About midnight received orders to be in readiness as the rebels were at Hartwood Church."

Scott: "31st. . . . Roads very bad and creeks rising. . . . Our pieces still in position."

---

#### FROM LETTERS OF CAPTAIN PHILLIPS.

April 1st, 1863. Camp near Potomac Creek: "Day before yesterday I rode down to the Lacey house, and took a look at Fredericksburg. The inhabitants appeared to have moved back somewhat, and a few ladies were promenading the streets, dressed as stylishly, for aught I could see, as our Northern belles.

April 5th. Last Wednesday, Scott and I rode down to the town of Falmouth where the 20th Regiment is encamped. I have several acquaintances in this regiment; among them Adjutant Patten of the class of '58 and Captain Henry L. Abbott of my class.

A part of the way we went on the same road on which we marched last summer on our way to join General Pope, and it is astonishing what changes have taken place since

that time. Then we marched along a narrow country road through a thick forest. Now nothing is left of the forest. The country presents nothing but a wide expanse of naked, barren hills. Fences have disappeared, and the old road can hardly be traced amid the labyrinth of wagon tracks.

The troops have gradually moved back from the river, and there are now hardly any camps within two or three miles of Fredericksburg. This movement has been more a matter of necessity than of choice, as troops must camp near firewood in winter time.

The town of Falmouth offers nothing remarkable. It consists of 300 or 400 houses, situated in a bowl shaped valley on the edge of the river. Sentinels of the Provost Guard are posted in the streets, and the principal houses are occupied as brigade and regimental headquarters. The population, exclusive of the 20th Reg't. consists principally of tow-headed children and a few clay-faced women. Between the town and the river a line of sentinels are pacing back and forth just as they do round camp at home. This is the outer picket line stationed on a narrow strip of meadow, which runs along the shore. On the other shore is a corresponding line of rebel pickets, posted at rather longer intervals than ours, and more inclined to stand still and sit down. A mill just opposite the town appeared to be a kind of headquarters, as there were half a dozen greybacks lounging round. The 20th had their dress parade while we were there, in one of the streets, perhaps 500 yards from the rebel pickets, who have the privilege of witnessing the show for nothing. An order has just been issued establishing distinctive badges (see p. 20) for the different divisions of the Army. All the members of our Division, officers and enlisted men, are to wear a red Maltese cross in the centre of the top of the cap. I rather like the idea. The object is to prevent straggling, as every man will be compelled to wear a badge and thus proclaim where he belongs."

Chase's Diary: "April 2, 1863. . . . Lieut. Blake returned and Corporal Gibbs left on furlough."

Scott: "April 2d. . . . 3d Army Corps said to be moving to Acquia Creek to embark. Roads drying up fast."

Chase: "3d. . . . Spent the evening playing euchre with Gorton vs. Leahy and B. Graham. 4th. . . . Commenced snowing about 7 p. m. 5th. Sunday. All last night snowing, with a high wind. About five inches of snow on the ground this morning. No roll call last night or this morning, on account of the stormy weather.

Battery arrived in front of Yorktown, Va. one year ago today, when we first heard the guns of the enemy. Lieut. Lull left camp for home."

IN THE MASS. LEGISLATURE.  
RESOLVES CONCERNING MASSACHUSETTS REGIMENTS  
IN THE FEDERAL ARMY.

*Resolved*, That Massachusetts bears in her heart those of her loyal citizens who have gone forth to defend the constitution and the laws, and to establish the integrity of our national government:

That she views with satisfaction and pride their steadfast loyalty, and their gallant achievements:

That she will continue to encourage and sustain them to the full extent of her power, and will send such reinforcements to their aid as the national authorities shall, from time to time, demand:

That never has her determination to support the government, or her assurance of final success, been stronger than today:

That, as she was the first to enter, so will she be the last to leave the field, until every armed traitor has disappeared from the land.

*Resolved*, That his Excellency the Governor be requested to forward copies of these Resolves to the commanders of Massachusetts regiments in the field, with the request that they be communicated to their respective commands.

Approved April 6, 1863.

---

Chase's Diary: "April 6, 1863. Drill on pieces, which are still in position; 12 m. Grand Review of Cavalry by Abraham Lincoln our President,—God bless him."

A CAVALRY REVIEW.  
LETTER OF CAPTAIN PHILLIPS.

"HD. QRS. BATTERY E. MASS. ART'Y.  
CAMP NEAR POTOMAC CREEK, VA.

April 7, 1863.

President Lincoln is on here just now and will, I suppose, review the whole army before leaving. Yesterday he reviewed the Cavalry under Major Gen. Stoneman, about 13,000 in number. The review was announced at 12 o'clock and I concluded to go. So Scott, Blake, and I mounted and set off. The roads were a little muddy, but not very bad. The Cavalry were drawn up in a hollow square covering considerable ground, in fact, there was no one spot from which you could see them all.

An American flag in the centre of the square marked the position of the reviewing officer, and thither we rode and soon found ourselves in a crowd of mounted officers of all grades, from generals to lieutenants; major-generals were quite plenty, in fact, I do not think I ever saw so many before, and there were brigadiers without number.

A guard was placed to keep a place clear for the reviewing officer, and they paid no regard to brigadiers, keeping them back with the rest.

General Stoneman was quite conspicuous, wearing his sash across the shoulder 'Officer of the Day' style.

A little after twelve the President arrived, announced by a salute of 21 guns, fired in poor style by a horse battery. General Hooker rode alongside of him, General Butterfield just behind, and then a numerous, nameless staff, and an escort of Rush's Lancers.

Mrs. Lincoln drove up in a carriage and took a stand in front of the crowd, in which were half a dozen ladies on horseback. Then the President, accompanied by Hooker and Stoneman, started off to review, and an immense caval-

cade clattered after them. Although they rode along the lines at a slow gallop, the process occupied an hour or two. . . . General Hooker is the finest looking general in the army: tall and straight, with light hair and florid complexion. General Stoneman is a fine looking man: tall, and with a long beard. He is a very good cavalry officer. While the cavalcade was riding down the lines, I took the occasion to look round the crowd.

There were lots of major generals that I never saw before. There was Carl Schurz looking very savage, Maj. General Howard with one arm, and Major General Meade. I also met Scott of my class now General Gordon's assistant adjutant general, and S. M. Weld on Benham's staff. By and by the President returned to his station, and the troops commenced to pass in review. This was rather a tedious process, but we sat it through. The 1st Mass. looked very well. After the Cavalry came the batteries of Horse Artillery attached to Stoneman's command, and they passed a second time at a trot. And then the escort of Lanciers came up, wheeled into line at a trot in front of the President in splendid style, and then we went home to dinner. Last night I received an order that the 5th Corps would be reviewed today, but it was countermanded this morning."

#### SOME RECRUITS GO BACK.

By Special Order No. 29, Head Quarters 1st Division 5th Corps, April 7, 1863, the following named enlisted men, temporarily attached to the Batteries of the Division, were relieved and ordered to report without delay to their regiment, the 1st Michigan:—Privates Lindsley, Hornby, Fox, Shepard, Northrop, and Van Iderstine.

#### GRAND REVIEW ARMY OF THE POTOMAC.

From Captain Phillips' Letter of April 9th:—"President Lincoln rode round through the camp, the troops being



drawn up in line on the regimental parades. He rode by our camp about half past one: we presented sabres, he doffed his hat, and the ceremony was over. Yesterday the grand review of the season came off. The 2d, 3d, 5th and one other corps turned out on a large plain near the Phillips house, and in full view of the Rebels. The last corps mentioned being some distance off, I did not learn what it was, I think it must have been the 6th. [In his Diary he says "6th."] . . . The troops were drawn up . . . each corps in three lines of a division each, each division of three brigades in line of battalions and each battalion in column closed *en masse*.

The Artillery did not turn out.

There must have been in the neighborhood of 80,000 or 90,000 men.

About 11 o'clock the President and General Hooker rode up with the usual cavalcade behind, and Scott, Spear, and I fell in with the staff, having made up our minds that this was the only way to see the review. The President rode a dark bay horse, which he has ridden all the time. General Hooker on his usual, tall, white horse. Two little boys about 8 and 12, I suppose junior Lincolns, followed the President.

The 2d Corps was the first reviewed, and the President rode down in front of the 1st Division, and we pelted after him. As we rode along, I began to have some idea of the pleasure of riding in a cavalry charge. Half way down the line we came to a ditch and mud hole, and I expected to see somebody stuck, but the cavalcade all got through somehow, and away we went down the line, round the flank, and up the second line. More ditches and mud, but we pelt along up this line, down the third and round in rear, and the Corps is reviewed. Then we travel through the 5th Corps in the same way; the cavalcade diminishing in numbers all

•

the time; then the 3d Corps was finished up in the same way.

Then the President and General Hooker took position by the colors, and *we*, the staff, formed behind them, packed like dried herrings. It is very pleasant being in a mounted crowd, particularly if the horses round you are of a kicking kind. However, no accident occurred, and we sat patiently for two hours, while three corps passed in review. There was the usual variety of officers and men, but a description would be uninteresting unless from a better pen than mine.

By the time it was all over our appetites were pretty hearty, and we raced home to dinner. We had rather a funny time going and coming. Spear has a great tall horse, that has no idea of stopping after he gets started, and Scott's horse is a little worse, and never stops till you run him into a stone wall or a house. As we were going to the review we started off at a slow trot, but as each horse has a great fancy for being ahead, our trot soon changed into a run, and away we went. After running about half a mile, I reined up, but the others kept on. Spear succeeded in stopping soon after, but Scott kept on till we began to think he was going to Acquia Creek. Finally he got his horse off the road, and ran him into a dense thicket of grape vines which stopped his career. Unless he had done this it is doubtful whether he would have stopped at all, as his curb chain had broken, and the horse had it all his own way. On our return we fell in with Lieuts. (W. H.) Follett and (Lewis V.) Osgood of Martin's Battery, the latter having a horse very much like Scott's. They got run away with twice; the first time the horses were stopped by running into a fence round General Whipple's Hd. Qrs., the second time they rushed through Major General Slocum's staff, over half a dozen ditches, and finally brought up among the tents round General Griffin's Quarters."

Scott's Notes: "April 9, 1863. Ice made. Drill on pieces. Waterman taken his pieces from picket. The President reviews troops on the Potomac: Belle Plains. 10th. Drill on pieces. Company mustered for strength. President reviews troops at Stafford Court House."

Chase: "April 10th. . . . Music at General Griffin's Head Quarters last night by the band of the 33d Mass. Regiment."

Dyer's Notes: "April 11th, 1863. Saturday. Base ball this afternoon."

From Letter of Captain Phillips, April 12th:—"The past week has been noted for reviews. On Thursday, hearing that the President would review the 1st Corps, I started off with Lieuts. Follett and Osgood of Martin's Battery, to see it. Our jaunt proved a long one, and the review seemed ever receding, but after travelling 10 or 12 miles, we found the Corps drawn up on a level plain on the shore of the Potomac River. They had just begun to pass in review when we arrived so that we saw the principal part of the show. The review, on the whole, was quite successful; the field was very smooth and level, the day was beautiful, and the troops marched well. We arrived at home about supper time, tired and hungry.

Friday was very warm and pleasant, and the President reviewed the 11th and 12th Corps. I concluded, however, that I had had enough of reviews and stayed at home.

In obedience to orders I mustered the Battery and forwarded the rolls to the Adjutant General's, for the use of the Provost Marshal General in enforcing the draft. I hope they will fill up the old regiments and batteries at once. I find I have 117 enlisted men on the roll, needing 34 recruits.

This forenoon was warm and a little muggy, and we had the novelty of being reviewed by a foreign officer: Major

General Fogliardi of the Swiss army. I received the information just as I was hitching up for my usual inspection. The batteries were drawn up in a hollow square for review, and the General rode round the square. He did not seem inclined to spend much time in looking round, but rode round as if he was used to reviews. . . . I have read General Butler's speech, and consider it the finest oration delivered for a long time."

General Fogliardi had been chief of staff of Emperor Napoleon III. At this review he wore a cocked hat adorned with cock's feathers. He appeared to be about 30 years of age, and wore glasses. He was accompanied by Colonel Repetti and Lieut. Lubin, the latter acting as interpreter.

Chase's Diary: "Sunday, April 12, 1863. Corporal Gibbs returned from his furlough. . . . April 13th. On guard. Countersign 'Brighton.' . . . Unpacked all the ammunition in the caissons."

Scott's Notes: "April 13th. . . . A general movement of cavalry. Heard of Lieut. Lull's receiving a commission in the 14th Battery."

Phillips' Diary: "Monday, April 13th. . . . Lieut. Spear and I took a ride down to the Lacey house. . . . About 10 p. m. received orders to have 5 days' hard bread packed in knapsacks and 3 days' ready to issue."

Dyer's Notes: "April 14th. This morning we had orders to prepare for a march. Grain bags were made &c. . . . Went to Falmouth and changed ammunition."

Scott: "April 14th. . . . 2d and 3d Army Corps send sick to the rear. Balloons up reconnoitering." (At Falmouth.)

Chase: "April 14th. Usual drill a. m. Went with part of the company to Falmouth Station p. m. to change a part of the ammunition. Took all the caissons and limbers and exchanged the shrapnell for new ammunition of the same pattern. Had another view of the battle ground at Fred-

ericksburg; drank from Washington's favorite spring, and the afternoon passed away very pleasantly. Weather fine. Indications of a movement of the Army."

Phillips' Diary: "14th. Changed Schenkle shrapnell for a newer pattern without the metallic covering. Lieut. Col. Webb inspected horses."

#### GENERAL MEADE IN COMMAND.

April 15th, 1863, Major General G. G. Meade was assigned to the command of the Fifth Corps.

Scott's Notes: "April 15th. Turned in at station 4 horses. Rainy. Country flooded. Movement of cavalry stopped by Reb. cavalry; found enemy at the Ford. Some firing. Lieut. Lull returns from Mass. Went to Falmouth to purchase a horse. None there."

Dyer's Notes: . . . "Troops moved to the front in the hardest of the rain, but had to return, as the roads were too bad to advance."

Chase's Diary: "April 15th. . . . The tent flooded with water. No roll call this morning. . . . Orderly Serg't. Smith left camp on furlough."

Scott's Notes: "April 16th, 1863. . . . Went to the Station. Drew for the Battery 9 horses. Got an order from Chief Q. M. to purchase horse of Gov.: while at Falmouth saw the rebel camp and guns."

Phillips' Diary: "April 16th. . . . Went to see Weston, who has just joined the 18th Regiment with a 2d Lieut.'s commission. April 18th I paid \$120 to Capt. Pierce for my horse."

Dyer's Notes: "Sunday, April 19, 1863. Carloads of sick soldiers passed here going towards Acquia Creek today."

Chase: "April 19th. . . . Trains of cars very busy today, some run with great speed and others, up trains, are heavily loaded."

Phillips' Diary: "19th. Inspection at 1 p. m.; then rode down to the Phillips house with Spear and took a look through the telescope at the Signal Station."

Scott's Notes: "April 20th. The President with Secretary Stanton visits the Army again."

Phillips' Diary: "22d. Received orders to be in readiness to move. At 10 p. m. began to rain."

From Phillips' Letter of the 23d:—"There are several regiments in our Division of two years' troops whose time of service is almost up, and who are making arrangements for going home. I do not imagine any of the men will re-enlist until they have been at home two or three weeks, and spent all their money. However much a soldier may rail at the discomforts of his life, he is as certain to return to it as a sailor is to go to sea again."

Dyer's Notes: "April 23d. . . . Post rations again ordered for the Battery."

Scott's Notes: "April 24th. . . . Our pieces still in position. One piece of artillery put in fortifications at the Creek bridge. Communication open to Rappahannock Station from Alexandria by R. R."

Phillips' Diary: "April 26th. . . . Scott and I took a ride round by Falmouth &c."

Scott: "26th. Saw the Rebels on picket: their horses can be seen feeding."

Chase's Diary: "April 25th. Serg't. Smith and Gardner Groves returned to camp."

Phillips' Diary: "April 27. Pleasant. The Fifth Corps marched this forenoon. Sykes's Division at 10, Griffin's at 11, Humphreys' at 12. One battery with each Division. Waterman's accompanying our Division."

Scott's Notes: "April 27th. One regiment, 13th New York, refuse to march, their time being up. They remain in camp. Seward (W. H. Seward Secretary of State) re-



views one of the Corps. Salute fired. Troops moving up the river. One Brooklyn regiment leaves for home."

Dyer's Notes: "April 27th. . . . The 5th Regulars (Art'y) did not go."

Chase's Diary: "27th. The 10th New York Reg't. of Infantry—Zouaves—passed our camp this a. m. on their way home, free from service. . . . Warm bread for supper per Gov't. Bakers; selling out cheap as the troops are moving. Weather delightful."

### AN INVALID CORPS.

On the 28th of April the campaign opened, and an Invalid Corps was authorized.

WAR DEPARTMENT,  
ADJUTANT GENERAL'S OFFICE,  
WASHINGTON, April 28, 1863.

General Orders

No. 105

The organization of an Invalid Corps is hereby authorized.

The Corps shall consist of Companies, and if it shall hereafter be thought best, of Battalions.

The Companies shall be made up from the following sources, viz.:

First, By taking those officers and enlisted men of commands now in the field,—whether actually present, or temporarily absent,—who, from wounds received in action or disease contracted in the line of duty, are unfit for field service, but are still capable of effective garrison duty, or such other light duty as may be required of an Invalid Corps.

Regimental Commanders shall at once make out, from information received from their medical and company officers, and from their own knowledge, rolls,—according to the Form furnished,—of the names of all the officers and enlisted men, under their commands, who fulfill the following conditions, viz.:

1, That they are unfit for active field service on account of wounds or disease contracted in the line of duty, this fact being certified by a field by the medical officer, as above, after personal examination.

2, That they are fit for garrison duty: this fact being likewise certified by the medical officer in the service, after personal examination.

3, That they are, in the opinion of their commanding officers, meritorious and deserving.

By order of the Secretary of War,

E. D. TOWNSEND,  
Assistant Adjutant General.

Phillips' Diary: "April 28. The Corps has marched several miles beyond Hartwood Church. The 5th and 11th Corps are the only ones that have marched." Hartwood Church was a few miles north of Falmouth.

Scott's Notes: "April 28th. Pieces in position. Drill on pieces. 13th N. Y. Regiment leaves for home. 29th. Our forces begin to cross the river above and below."

Scott's Notes: "April 30th. Battery ordered to report at United States Ford to cross the (Rappahannock) river. Hitched up, broke camp and marched at 1 p. m. At 7 p. m. camped for the night at Hartwood Church (8 miles) near the Chancellor House. Eve, in camp. Travelling today bad. Forge not in camp."

Chase's Diary: "April 30th. Quite rainy. Drivers ordered to fill bags with grain. . . . An order read to us this morning that the recent movements of the Army have been successful &c. . . . Rather hard marching. The trail of the forge was broken, and men were at work all night repairing it. Some of the caissons had much difficulty in marching, and were delayed on the road an hour or more. Teams were sent back to help pull up the delinquents. National Fast by proclamation of President Lincoln."

Phillips' Diary: "April 30th. . . . The 5th, 11th and 12th Corps are across the river. Camped at dark at Hartwood Church, within 100 yards of our camping ground last November. . . . Broke Forge stock."

Dyer's Notes: "May 1, 1863. Reveille at 3 o'clock this morning. Boots and saddles about 5. Hitched up and left camp. We crossed U. S. Ford at 11 a. m. Heard firing ahead all day. Wheeling very bad. Reached the scene of action about 5 p. m., and drove into line at 10 yds. intervals. Fed horses, made and drank coffee, then turned in. Firing ceased about 6 o'clock. On guard."

Chase's Account: "May 1st. . . . A fine May morning. . . . Passed through the village of Eagle Gold Mine, and

halted about  $\frac{3}{4}$  of an hour, halted again for about an hour, and then resumed our march and crossed a pontoon bridge over the Rappahannock, near United States Ford, about  $\frac{1}{2}$  past one p. m. A heavy firing of both artillery and musketry commenced in front about 3 p. m. and lasted until night. A very heavy cannonading commenced about sunset. A hard march today, roads very rough and muddy. Troops in large bodies moving to the front all day. Weather fine, but rather warm marching."

Scott's Notes: "May 1st. . . . Pressed on to join Division. Went into park at 6 p. m. near the Chancellor House. Skirmishing going on with enemy. Horses stood in harness all night. Division tried to obtain Banks's Ford, but were not successful. . . . Waterman's Battery in position last night. At dark quite a heavy skirmish."

Phillips' Diary: "May 1st. . . . The 3d Corps passed us, leaving their knapsacks in the woods.

May 2, 1863, formed line of battle, our left resting on the river. Barnes's Battery on our right (1st N. Y. Light Battery C, Capt. Almont Barnes), Randol (1st U. S. Batteries E and G, Captain A. M. Randol), Hazlett, and Martin on our left, Humphreys' Division supporting us. Heavy firing on our right and centre. All quiet in our front. The 1st Corps came over today. Our position in a beautiful oak grove, strengthened by a hedge abattis (Felled trees, with their sharp branches placed outward, and so interlaced as to present an irregular and thick row of pointed stakes towards the enemy.) rifle pits, &c."

Dyer's Notes: "Saturday, May 2, 1863. Our Battery with Martin's and the 5th Regulars still in park. Been hitched up all night. The 4th R. I. Battery came into park in our rear about 5. . . . We left here about 8 and went into position on the left in a wood on a high hill, commanding a front of 600 acres. Quiet in our post all day. About 5 p. m. heavy firing commenced on our right, and was kept

up at intervals until midnight. A picket by discharging his musket created quite a stir-about on the line about 10."

Chase's Account: "May 2d. Teams remained hitched up all night last night. Removed nothing from the pieces or caissons but our blankets. Cannonading last night kept up until about 8 p. m. Rested very well last night. Battery left the ground occupied last night at 7.30, and marched about  $\frac{1}{2}$  a mile easterly, and placed the guns 'in Battery' in a piece of woods on the brow of a hill where they command a good sweep in front. The infantry are engaged in cutting down the trees and piling up wooden defenses. The position is a good one, well elevated, and the ground hard and dry. Weather delightful. The 4th Rhode Island Battery joined us this morning, having been engaged in a slight engagement last evening. But little fighting up to about  $\frac{1}{4}$  of 5 p. m., when it commenced in earnest on the Right, a sharp firing of musketry and some artillery. The impending storm has probably gathered all its fury and is ready to burst upon us. Everything is all ready for the enemy's reception, and the men are in good spirits. Weather warm. The firing slackened somewhat, but opened more furiously about  $\frac{1}{2}$  past 6 p. m. apparently on the extreme right, and gradually approached *our* front. Shovels and picks sent for, probably to throw up earthworks. The teams have remained hitched up all day, but were ordered to unharness about  $\frac{1}{4}$  past 7 p. m. The firing approaches nearer and nearer the front. Steady fighting until about 8 p. m. Furious fight commenced again about  $\frac{1}{2}$  past 11 p. m. and lasted about half an hour; night mild and very pleasant. . . ."

#### SEDGWICK AT FREDERICKSBURG.

. Notes of Lieut. Scott: "May 3, 1863. Fighting commenced on our right at sunrise. Heavy and one continued crash. Still in line of battle. Hard fighting till 11 a. m.

Our troops hold their own. Lost one piece of artillery on the Right where the fight was. 12 and 2 p. m. cannonading heard at Fredericksburg. All quiet here. Very warm. Expect an attack on our front. Pickets driven in. . . ."

Dyer's Notes: ". . . 3 stands of colors passed here that were captured. The enemy came in on our front: a very few shots were exchanged by infantry. . . ."

Phillips' Diary: "May 3d. . . . The 5th Corps went to the right and the 11th Corps took their places. A house standing within musket range of Lient. Lull's section was burnt down to prevent sheltering rebel skirmishers. A barn followed suit early in the morning."

Chase's Diary: "May 3, 1863. Sunday. The sun rose red and clear. Not a cloud to be seen. Hard fighting commenced again this morning about half-past five. A good night's rest last night. Routed out at 3 a. m. Watered the horses and hitched up. . . . Half past 6 a. m. An incessant roar of artillery and musketry since the battle commenced. About a dozen prisoners of the 33d North Carolina regiment passed by us to the rear. A few wounded men are being brought to the rear. All quiet on the Left. A small squad, probably a General and staff, went out on the road on our left front at 20 minutes past 10 a. m., when picket firing commenced. Men were ordered to posts, but the reconnoitring force came back immediately and the firing ceased. . . . Troops who have been engaged and relieved are coming to the rear with their wounded, in perfect order. Not a minute's cessation of firing since the battle commenced, at half past five this morning, up to half past ten a. m., and the firing continues. . . . The firing began to slacken a few minutes after half past ten a. m., and gradually ceased. Had the luxury of a bath in a clear running brook this morning.

Ordered to go back to the caisson and remain there p. m. Another luxury, p. m., a change of clean clothing. Skir-

mishers went out on our left front at a quarter to 4 p. m. Weather warm but a good breeze p. m. Some skirmishing towards night. . . .

May 4, 1863. On guard last night, last half, with Corporal Proctor at the caissons. Very mild and pleasant. Picket firing commenced at 4 o'clock this morning. Morning very foggy. Major —— of the 60th N. Y. regiment accepted our hospitalities of hard bread and meat, this morning. His regiment was badly cut up in yesterday's fight and himself wounded in the left hand.

A little rain fell in the morning, very warm p. m. All very quiet a. m. Ordered to unhitch and unharness a. m. Ordered to pack up and hitch up about 1 p. m. Drew the caissons in line, and unhitched and unharnessed again. All very quiet along the line today up to 5 p. m. when a sharp engagement commenced in the centre, which lasted about a quarter of an hour. Weather warm. Troops commenced on a new line of intrenchments this evening."

Dyer's Notes: "Monday, May 4th. The morning opened foggy but the sun cleared it off as it rose. The 12th Army Corps came in our front as our support in case of action. All quiet along the lines at 12 m. Sharp firing at 5 p. m. occurred on the right, lasting about 15 minutes. Wrote a letter home from the Field. On guard."

Scott's Notes: "May 4th. Enemy open at daylight on the river at our baggage train across the river. The battery is taken with an Alabama regiment: so report. Enemy keep quiet today. Afternoon a reconnoissance is made on our right. The enemy found in force. Some cannonading on the right. Our Battery still in line. Our rifle pits extend the whole length of the line. Heavy cannonading heard at Fredericksburg, which is kept up late at night. An attack expected."

Phillips' Diary: "May 4th. . . . Kane's Brigade, Geary's Div. supporting us. General Kane in a state of perpetual



excitement. Major (Charles R.) Mudge and Lieut. Fox of the 2d (Mass. Infantry) came round."

FROM A LETTER OF CAPTAIN PHILLIPS.

"May 5, 1863, 8 a. m.

We have been in our present position since Saturday morning in line of battle, but the Rebels have not condescended to attack at this point. We were supported by the 5th Corps when we first came in here, but on Sunday morning they marched off to the right, and the 11th Corps took their place. The fighting on Saturday and Sunday was quite heavy. We could hear the fighting, but of course knew nothing definite. Sunday forenoon was very noisy. In the afternoon we sent out a few skirmishers in our front. Heavy firing is going on occasionally in the direction of Fredericksburg where Sedgwick has crossed. During Sunday night the 11th Corps marched out and the 12th Corps marched in. . . . The 2d Mass. is half a mile to our left supporting Martin. . . . Captain Scott and Lieut. Perkins of my class are wounded. The 2d Mass. has lost 120 men. One regiment near us have the colors of the 4th Alabama, one of the regiments which took our guns at Gaines Mills. The 7th New Jersey took 500 prisoners and 3 colors belonging to the 2d North Carolina. I saw the flags as they went by here: 2 battle flags and one Confederate flag. Our artillery cut the Rebels up awfully. Captain Weed has got 80 guns in position at Chancellorsville, and we have five batteries right along here. Our position is very strong. The line of battle extends along the crest of a hill strengthened by a rifle pit. In front is a road and a ravine, and beyond this an open field, the Rebel pickets being in the edge of the wood beyond, about 800 yards distant. . . . Cannonading has just commenced on the right.

Only a few rounds fired.

All still again."

Phillips' Diary: "May 5th. Nothing new in our front. In the evening marched to U. S. Ford, and crossed about 3 in the morning. The infantry crossed soon after day-break and thus ended Hooker's attempt to cross the Rappahannock."

---

Chase's Diary: "May 5th, 1863. A good night's rest last night. Troops at work all last night putting up defenses near us. Some fighting last night. Went across the river with Serg't. Smith twice for grain this morning. Troops cutting down the woods for defenses a. m. . . . Ordered to take 3 caissons and the Battery wagon to the rear about 3 p. m. Took the caissons of the 1st, 2d and 5th Detachments to the rear, and parked them near the river on the south side. A thunder shower came up about 4 p. m., the rain fell in torrents for about an hour, but rained some all night. Serg't. Smith came to us about 10 p. m. with orders for us to hitch up."

Dyer's Notes: ". . . Marched all night and recrossed the ford and camped about a mile beyond, raining all the time."

Scott's Notes: "May 5th. . . . Very dark. Arrived at the Ford and stayed all night. All the artillery crossing. Infantry and cavalry this side of the River. Very wet and cold. May 6th. 4 a. m. crossed the Ford and on the north heights parked the Battery and fed; the enemy following up the retreat to the River. The whole Army moving back. At 2 p. m. arrived at old camp completely used up. Battery all back in good condition. No loss."

Chase's Diary: "May 6, 1863. . . . Marched all the way but did not keep up with the Battery. Reached camp about  $\frac{1}{2}$  past 4 p. m., about an hour after the Battery came in. A long, tiresome march. Never so much fatigued before. Troops came back today, regardless of order as soon as they recrossed the river. Some cannonading heard in our rear this morning. Found our houses nearly all as we left them on the 30th ult."

In a letter of August 6, 1899, Mr. Chase speaking of the material furnished for the History of the Battery, makes the following allusion to this march:—

“I suppose others, like mine, were written under all the various vicissitudes of a soldier’s life in camp and in battle, so that allowance must be made for imperfections. Some of mine was written while the enemy’s bullets were whistling over us in line of battle—June 27, 1862—and the one written at the battle of Chancellorsville was wet through by a blinding rainstorm. The horse I was riding missed the trail and I came near being mired in a soldier’s grave.”

---

LETTER OF SERG'T. W. H. PEACOCK.

“CAMP NEAR FALMOUTH, VA.

May 6, 1863.

We arrived here from the Battle yesterday afternoon, all safe but awfully muddy and tired. Some men had been all under in mud. We had only a few hours’ sleep in five days, and when we arrived here we were so much exhausted that some had not strength to unharness their horses. Every man dropped where they were halted, and fell asleep. Our Battery was stationed on the Left, but it was a strong position, and we could not coax the Rebels to attack us. We did no firing. No papers are allowed here yet. I should like to see one, to hear if the battle was a victory or a defeat. I think we killed the most men, yet our loss was very heavy. They took our line of rifle pits on the Right, and it cost us some 8000 men to retake them. Each of our guns was behind a breastwork, and they were built in all forms. I engineered our Section. We first cut down large trees, two feet through, leaving four feet of the butts above ground, then we cut up the trees in lengths of some 18 feet, piling them up in front of the stumps four foot high, the flank ends were put on of the same heighth and eight feet

long. In front of all this lumber was thrown solid red clay, eight foot thick, and the height of the logs. It was a strong work, and I was disappointed in not having a chance to use it. The Rebels fought very desperately, and charged our artillery to the muzzle of the Guns. Our loss of artillery men was very heavy. If I had time I could write you incidents enough of the Battle to fill a book. A Rebel captain, hearing heavy firing on the right,—he was a prisoner,—said, 'I would give my right arm to be with my company in that fight.'

It is reported here that our loss was 20,000, and the Rebels' 30,000. The firing on Sunday was the most terrific I ever heard. On both sides probably 150,000 men, and 250 pieces of artillery were banging at one time.

When you answer this please send me \$10, I am all out of money. Write soon. My love to all the folks. If I get killed use my money as you think best for my little sisters."

---

#### CONGRATULATIONS FROM HEADQUARTERS.

HEAD QUARTERS ARMY OF THE POTOMAC,  
CAMP NEAR FALMOUTH, VA.

May 6, 1863.

#### General Orders

No. 49

The Major General commanding tenders to this Army his congratulations on its achievements of the last seven days. If it has not accomplished all that was expected, the reasons are well known to the Army. It is sufficient to say they were of a character not to be foreseen or prevented by human sagacity or resource. In withdrawing from the south bank of the Rappahannock before delivering a general battle to our adversaries, the Army has given renewed evidence of its confidence in itself and its fidelity to the principles it represents. In fighting at a disadvantage, we would have been recreant to our trust, to ourselves, our cause, and our country.

Profoundly loyal, and conscious of its strength, the Army of the Potomac will give or decline battle, whenever its interest or honor may demand. It will also be the guardian of its own history and its own fame. By our celerity and secrecy of movement our advance and passage of the rivers were undisputed, and on our withdrawal not a rebel

ventured to follow. The events of the last week may swell with pride the heart of every officer and soldier of this Army. We have added new lustre to its former renown. We have made long marches, crossed rivers, surprised the enemy in his entrenchments, and whenever we have fought, have inflicted heavier blows than we have received.

We have taken from the enemy five thousand prisoners, captured and brought off seven pieces of artillery, fifteen colors, placed "*hors-de-combat*" eighteen thousand of his chosen troops, destroyed his depots filled with vast amounts of stores, deranged his communications, captured prisoners within the fortifications of his capital, and filled his country with fear and consternation.

We have no other regret than that caused by the loss of our brave companions, and in this we are consoled by the conviction that they have fallen in the holiest cause ever submitted to the arbitrament of battle.

By command of Major General Hooker.

S. WILLIAMS,  
*Ass't. Adj. General.*

---

CAPT. PHILLIPS' REPORT TO CAPTAIN MARTIN.

DUPLICATE SENT TO CAPTAIN WEED.

HD. QRS. BATTERY E, MASS. ART'Y.

CAMP NEAR POTOMAC CREEK, VA.

May 7th, 1863.

CAPT. WEED, Chief of Corps,  
Artillery.

*Captain:*

The Battery under my command left Camp at Potomac Creek on the 30th of April, in obedience to orders from Captain Martin, and marched to Hartwood Church.

On the 1st we marched to near Chancellorsville, and remained in park all night.

The next day I marched about two miles to our left, and placed the Battery in position, supported by Humphreys' Division. I remained there till the evening of the 5th, when by order of Capt. Randol I marched to United States Ford, crossed, and returned to our old camp.

I have not been in action, have lost no men or horses, and the few implements I have lost can be easily replaced.

Your Ob't Serv't,

CHARLES A. PHILLIPS, *Capt.*  
*Battery E, Mass. Art'y.*

Chase's Diary: "May 7, 1863. . . . The guards are like dead men when once asleep. Almost impossible to rouse them. Troops straggling back to camp all day. At work all day repairing and cleansing our caissons."

Dyer's Notes: "May 7th. . . . Orders came in the afternoon to cook up three days' rations, and hold ourselves in readiness."

Scott's Notes: "May 7th. The Rebs in full force at Fredericksburg."

In a letter dated May 7th Captain Phillips says of the march back, that "it was the muddiest, dirtiest time" he ever had. The door, and all the furniture of his house, gone, desk and washstand, but the floor was left.

Chase's Diary: "May 8th. . . . The 1st Brigade of the 1st Division, 5th Corps, started out again this morning to help get up the pontoon trains."

In camp near Potomac Creek, May 9th, Captain Phillips wrote the following review of the recent movement, beginning with the formation of the column:—

"The column consisted of the batteries of the 5th Corps which had remained behind, and marched in the following order:—Hazlett, Martin, Phillips, Barnes, Gibbs. (1st Ohio Light Battery L, Captain Frank C. Gibbs.) The roads were not very bad but our horses were unused to pulling, and the column lengthened out very fast. However, before dark we reached Hartwood Church and went into camp, Captain Martin occupying our old camp, and we occupying his old camp of last November. The next morning we took the road toward the river and after the usual amount of stoppages crossed on the pontoon bridge and pushed on. The road was quite bad, and we made slow progress. When we got over the river we could distinguish firing ahead, though not very loud. During the afternoon we passed the 3d Army Corps which had crossed just ahead of us. They were just unslinging knapsacks, and getting ready for ac-



tion. I saw General Whipple here for the last time, as he was riding along his Division. (Major General Amiel W. Whipple died May 7, 1863, of wounds received at Chancellorsville.) About dark, just after passing a rifle pit which the Rebels had thrown up the day before and had been driven out of that morning, we came to a large open field, full of batteries. On our right was a large brick house, 'Chancellorsville,' and this field was where the fighting took place. The firing ahead was kept up till about 9 o'clock. We remained hitched up all night, and the next morning preparations were made for action. The 5th Corps came in from the front and formed line of battle behind us, extending to the left. About six o'clock we started down a road which cut at right angles the one we had come up on, passing along the front of our Division. After marching about two miles Captain Martin directed me to place the Battery in position on a hill running towards the river, with Humphreys' Division supporting. The 5th Corps formed the left wing of the line extending to the river. The artillery of this wing was arranged as follows, counting from the left:—Randol 4, 12 pdrs., Martin 6, 12 pdrs., Hazlett 6, 10 pdr. Parrotts, Phillips 6, 3 in., Barnes 4, 3 inch, commanded by Captain Randol. Captain Weed commanded the Art'y of the Centre, consisting of 80 pieces. Waterman was between the Left and Centre. Randol, Martin and Hazlett were on a high hill, and their right was separated from my left by a deep ravine on which the line of battle formed a deep re-entering angle. Along our front extended rifle pits, at first mere brush fences, but growing all the time until they became quite respectable entrenchments. Our position was quite strong, as our artillery had a clear range of the country for a thousand yards in front. In the afternoon the attack commenced on our right. We could hear heavy volleys of musketry and artillery, but of course had no idea what was the result. All was quiet in front of

us, and a reconnoitering party sent out through the woods did not find any force of the enemy. So the day wore on and we quietly went to sleep. The next morning stragglers began to come along, most of them wearing the crescent—11th Corps—on their caps, and all these reported the rebels victorious, while all the wounded men said we were beating them.

On Sunday the firing commenced at daylight, and continued till afternoon very heavy. About midnight I was awakened by a trampling round me, and found regiments marching all around me. It was the 12th Corps relieving the 11th. One colonel jumped his horse over the log by which I was sleeping, and marched his regiment over, and before I got up in the morning, the pioneers had carried the log off to the entrenchments. Monday was perfectly quiet all along our lines. About 5 p. m. a thunder storm came on. The weather had been pleasant up to this time. About 9 we were ordered to march to U. S. Ford. It was pitch dark and raining as we started out, but we managed to get along without serious trouble, except that one caisson got stuck in the mud and we had to unharness the horses and work an hour getting it out. We got to the hill near the Ford about midnight, and found a crowd of batteries waiting to go over. So we waited while the rain poured down on our backs and got over about daylight. As soon as we were across we pushed for our old camp, and arrived at home about noon, cold, tired, hungry, and disgusted. I have not found any one who knows why we recrossed. The Rebels certainly had not licked us, and our men were in tip top condition. . . . No newsboys have been allowed up here since we came back."

Phillips' Diary: "May 8th. The general conclusion seems to be that the rebels ran away from us a few hours before we ran away from them."

Scott's Diary: "May 9th, 1863. Went down to Fredericksburg. Rebels plainly to be seen at work repairing breastworks. Our forces returned to old camps. Rebel loss stated at 18,000 last fight. Stoneman went within two miles of Richmond (see Hooker, p. 586) doing them a great deal of damage. Balloon up on reconnoissance. May 10th. All quiet on the Rappahannock. . . . Rebs occupy Fredericksburg."

Chase's Diary: "May 10th. Sunday. A day's rest."

Scott: "May 11th. . . . Stoneman's cavalry returned. Found the people in Rebeldom not in a state of starvation. Brought off many horses. Went to Falmouth. Some of our prisoners, wounded, being brought across the River. 25th New York Reg't. refuse duty, their time being out, and are kept under guard all night."

Phillips' Diary: "11th. Osborne of our class, ass't surgeon of the 1st Mass. Cavalry, came round."

Chase's Diary: "May 12th. . . . The 14th N. Y. Regt. passed our camp on their way home this a. m."

Scott: "May 12th. Ambulance train gone across the River for our wounded at request of the Rebs. Several regiments gone home today. Drill on pieces. May 13th. Official notice of General 'Stonewall' Jackson's death, Rebel Army. Order to this Battery to report to General (Robert O.) Tyler, Artillery Reserve."

Captain Phillips resumes his comments on the recent battle in a letter dated May 13th, 1863:—

"We crossed the river in good style, obtained a good position: the performance of the cavalry was splendid, and must have alarmed the enemy. But again we fell into the usual blunder of allowing the Rebels to attack us in detail. Even then, when their whole force was concentrated in an attack on our right wing, we kept them back. Only a portion of our Army was engaged. Of their three Corps commanders Jackson, Longstreet and A. P. Hill; Jackson was

killed, and Hill wounded, and it is known that all the available forces of Longstreet's Corps were engaged. Well, after we had driven them back, cut their lines of communication and captured their trains, and two days had passed, during which they did not venture to attack us, why then, we retreated across the Rappahannock and reoccupied our old camps!

Our Corps is being reduced very much by the expiration of the term of service of the 9 mos. and 2 years men. Humphreys' Division of 9 mos. Pennsylvania Regts. will have but two regiments at the end of this week. The 12th, 13th and 14th N. Y., 2 years men have left our Division and there are several more to go. . . .

Things look so much like a permanent occupation of the camp, that I am almost inclined to plant vines and flowers round my door. At any rate, it will do no harm if we move: morning glories, sweet pease &c. It will give me an opportunity to resume my botanical studies."

Dyer's Notes: "Thursday, May 14th. Orders came for all the infantry men in our Battery to report to the 5th U. S. Battery. They left about 8 o'clock."

Scott's Notes: "May 14th. Large guns, 100 pounders, being taken up to Falmouth. The R. I. Battery ordered to report to Artillery Reserve instead of 5th Regulars."

Chase's Diary: "May 15th. Broke camp about 8 o'clock this morning and marched about 1½ miles towards Falmouth Station. Remained hitched up until about two p. m., when we unhitched and laid out a camp."

Scott's Notes: "May 15th. Broke camp and moved to within a mile of Fredericksburg, in sight of the enemy's lines, and camped with the Volunteer Reserve Artillery, 14 batteries, all under the command of General Tyler. Camped under the direction of Major (John A.) Tompkins of Rhode Island. Assigned to 1st Brigade, Major Freeman McGilvery, 7 batteries."

"This move was a hard one for the 5th Battery," was a later comment of Lieut. Scott, "but it proved to be only temporary, for the interest of the movement then on foot."

The Battery was inspected by Captain George W. Adams, Battery G, 1st R. I. Acting Assistant Inspector of Division.

Dyer's Notes: "May 15th. Started in the direction of Hooker's Head Quarters. After marching half an hour we drew up into line about half a mile from his Head Quarters where we were inspected: then unhitched and pitched our tents. Encamped in a large field."

May 16th was passed in preparing camp accommodations half a mile from General Hooker's Head Quarters.

Scott's Notes: "May 16th. . . . Went down to the river in front of Falmouth. Rebs at work on their works. General Barksdale in command."

#### LETTER OF CAPTAIN PHILLIPS.

"CAMP NEAR FALMOUTH, VA.

Sunday, May 17, 1863.

We have ceased to belong to the 5th Army Corps. An order was published last Wednesday, stating that the artillery in the different corps would be reduced, and certain batteries in each corps were ordered to report to Brig. Gen'l Tyler commanding Artillery Reserve. The batteries in our corps were Randol's (E & G) 1st U. S. Artillery, Hazlett's D, 5th U. S. Artillery, and mine. Waterman's was subsequently sent in place of Hazlett's. In accordance with this order, I reported to General Tyler, and on Friday marched from our old camp, and camped near a house formerly Gen. (D. B.) Birney's headquarters, and not a great ways from the Phillips house. . . . We are camped on a dry, barren plain, without a tree in sight, and yesterday we found it very dusty. We have our tents pitched so that their fronts form three sides of a square, with a fly, covering the centre, form-

ing a cool and shady porch, in which I am now writing. Our camp is roomy, clean, and rather pleasant than otherwise. We have a good view from it of the hills back of Fredericksburg, rebel camp, etc. There are 13 other batteries encamped round us. . . . We are partially brigaded in brigades of four batteries. The weather is now quite warm and tents are very comfortable. We brought our floors along with us, and have found very good sutlers round here. This forenoon I had my usual inspection. . . ."

Phillips' Diary: "May 18th. . . . Lieut. Scott thrown off his horse."

Scott's Notes: "May 18th. Battery to be inspected by Captain Adams. . . . 11 a. m. inspection. Started with Captain Phillips on horseback, to go to Captain Martin's. Horse ran with me, and threw me against a tree, but did not hurt me beyond a few bruises."

Chase's Diary: "May 18th. On guard today at Head Quarters of Major Tompkins . . . with W. H. H. Lapham, M. Coleman, and B. Doherty. Head Quarters at the residence of Mr. Thrashley. 19th. Relieved from guard this morning about 8 o'clock."

Dyer's Notes: "May 19th. . . . This evening the string band across the road gave us a moonlight serenade. On guard."

Scott's Notes: " . . . Mr. Gale of this Battery detailed as hospital steward Div."

Dyer's Notes: "May 20th. . . . Today the Battery drew rations from the Commission, such as vinegar, hard tack, and beans. Vinegar dealt out at night."

Chase's Diary: "May 21, 1863. Usual drill a. m. Went to see the Rebels go through their brigade drill, at 'Water Call' p. m. Witnessed the above performance just across the river near Fredericksburg. Weather very warm. Rode Serg't. Peacock's celebrated war-steed 'Gabriel' to see the drill p. m."



Corporal Chase says of this horse in a note dated January 20, 1901:—"Alexander's 'Bucephalus' was no account compared with 'Gabriel'; when he was fattest his ribs stood out in high relief like the ridges of a washboard, and when he was lean, it was no worse. He would eat anything and everything, man included."

### THE HORSE GABRIEL.

NOTES OF SERGT. PEACOCK, JAN'Y 26, 1901.

"About my old horse 'Gabriel,'—he certainly was a wonderful horse, and had a great affection for the Battery. On a march, or in a battle, I never hitched him. He would remain right with the Detachment horses until I wanted him, but gave me great trouble to drive away from the Battery, especially when on the move. Sometimes a carriage would break down, and I would be ordered to the rear to attend to it. I would turn Gabriel away from the Battery, but he would not budge. Often I was compelled to dismount and tie him to anything I could find, and wait until the Battery was out of sight, then I could manage him. He also was a great jumper, and would leap a wall or stream of water as easily as a rabbit. Sometimes he would take a notion to run away with me. After he had done this several times, our Blacksmith, Mike Hewitt, made me a long mouth bit, that reached well up into his mouth. To overcome this, Gabriel would bend his long arched neck, and get his chin on his chest. This checked the power of the bit, and he would run when he felt like it.

In leading the horses to water, when near it, he usually made a dash for it, going in almost up to his ears and giving me a good wetting.

Aside from these failings, he was a good horse, and we were much attached to one another.

Serg't. Stiles told me when I saw him last, that after Gabriel was condemned and turned into the Corral, he felt

so bad about it he got an order and went there and brought him back to the Battery, cared for him, and put him in shape so he rode him for some time.

While the Battery had so many horses killed and wounded Gabriel was never hit. My recollection is that Lieut. Scott rode him off the field at Gettysburg when he was wounded."

Scott's Notes: "May 22, 1863. . . . Order came for a commissioned officer to accompany the horses at all Water Calls to and from water. Usually done by a sergeant.

#### LEFT SECTION TURNED IN.

May 23d. Orders came to consolidate the Battery, turning in 2 guns, thus making us a 4 gun battery. Complement of men, present and absent, 118 men, 5 officers. This news was not well received by the company, but we were supposed to submit. Turned in Left section complete, to Major McGilvery at Acquia Creek."

Chase's Diary: "May 23d. Usual drill a. m. Ordered to make the equipments of the Right and Centre sections good from the Left section p. m., as two guns are to be turned in."

From Captain Phillips' Letters Sunday, May 24, 1863:—"The batteries in this Division have been reduced to four guns, on account of the small number of the men, and I think it will add to their efficiency. I have not men enough to man six guns, and can manage a great deal better with four. Major Tompkins informs me that the arrangement is merely temporary—until the batteries can be filled by the draft, and no officers will be mustered out.

I am sorry to say that everybody is moving to new and pleasanter camps. Hooker moved a day or two ago, and we shall move this week. My sorrow does not arise from any love for our present camp, but from the fact that these

movements do not look like an early advance. The roads are in splendid condition. We have not had a drop of rain for a fortnight, and the whole country is parched and baked hard. I don't understand why we don't go ahead."

Diary: "24th: Rode over to the 19th Regt."

Chase's Diary: "May 25th. Lieut. Spear and J. Winters left camp on furlough today. . . ."

Scott's Notes: "May 26th. Lieut. Lull goes to Acquia Creek to turn in the Left section."

Phillips' Diary: "May 27, 1863. Moved camp at 8 a. m. to near White Oak Church. Camped in the edge of the woods."

Chase: "27th. Marched about 2 miles easterly. . . . Reached camp about 12 m."

This was in the direction of Belle Plains.

Scott: "May 27th. . . . Camp at White Oak Church. A good situation in woods on a hill, quite a relief from the sandy plain we have just left. . . . Horses well-sheltered in a grove."

Chase: "28th. Quarters being built with much care."

Dyer: "28th. All hands busy fixing up around their quarters, cutting stumps, sweeping &c."

Scott's Notes: "May 29th. At 9 a. m. attended meeting of members to form a court martial at Major Tompkins' Hd. Qrs. Present Major Osborne Pres't. Captains Huntington and Douglass. Adjourned till Monday, same place. 5th Corps and other troops moving up River. Enemy quite active and said to have crossed the River. Turned in 26 horses. 4th Detach. equalized."

Chase's Diary: "May 29th. Lieut. Spear returned. An order read in line assigning Sergt. Pattison to the 1st Detachment and Sergt. Simonds to the 3d. Sergts. Peacock and Page still retain the same positions as formerly. Plenty of whiskey, ale, and gin for the men in camp, for sale and

gratis this p. m. The men of the Left section assigned to the Right and Centre sections today."

Scott's Notes: "May 30th. Rode over to Falmouth. Road very dry and dusty. Fifth Corps said to be at Kelly's Ford."

May 31st Lieut. Scott was appointed Judge Advocate. The court met and adjourned from day to day.

Chase's Diary: "May 31st, 1863. Sunday. The Battery with the 1st Ohio, Battery H, (Captain James F. Huntington) was inspected by Major McGilvery of the Volunteer Reserve Artillery and the officers of the two batteries. Weather very warm a. m. but a good breeze p. m. A fire was started in the woods in the rear of our camp, and the 'Assembly' was blown, and all hands sent to check the fire, which we succeeded in doing after some hot work. On guard yesterday and last night, first half. Battery H (Ohio) and E (Mass.) got mixed up some last night about 10 p. m. and Lieuts. Lull and Spear had to advance, and succeeded in scattering the guerillas. Some whiskey afloat and several knockdowns.

'All quiet along the lines' at 11 p. m."

Dyer's Notes: "Sunday. May 31st. A number of the boys are on mounted passes. June 1st. Today about 20 extra men were put on fatigue for a week."

#### THE 10TH NEW YORK LIGHT BATTERY.

Phillips' Diary: "June 1st. Captain Huntington marched about noon to Banks's Ford. Received 19 men from the 10th N. Y. Battery."

Scott: "June 1st. . . . Battery drill by Captain Phillips—the dust blowing in clouds."

Chase: "June 1st. A lively drill about 9 a. m. in presence of Major McGilvery: changed the wheels, dismounted the pieces, etc. Weather very warm.

June 3d. Battery hitched up at 8 a. m. and drilled about an hour and a half under command of Captain Phillips, and

afterwards drilled about an hour with the 10th N. Y. Battery under command, both batteries, of Major McGilvery. . . . Drilled on the manual half an hour p. m."

Captain Phillips rode over to Falmouth and visited Col. Devereaux of the 19th Mass. Infantry.

Dyer: "June 4th. Orders came early this morning to prepare to move. Everything got in readiness at 5 a. m. About 7 o'clock orders came to unhitch, unharness, and pitch our tents. . . . 19 men . . . came over tonight."

Chase's Diary: "June 4th. . . . The 1st Ohio, Battery H, hitched up the second time, and left the camp. Edward E. Rice left camp to accept a commission this a. m.

Some of the batteries have left their camps, and others still remain."

Scott: "June 4. . . . Only 2 batteries moved up to the Ford. All troops under arms. Alarm false."

Captain Phillips' Letter: "June 4th. A little brook runs along our front, where we water, and there is a wood in rear of our park in which our tents and horses are placed. . . . Our own tents are in among the trees, and we have built a green arbor where we swing a hammock and enjoy ourselves."

Scott: "June 5th. . . . Went to ride towards Belle Plain and Potomac Creek. Went outside Picket line. Received orders to draw another section, making us a six gun battery again: 33 horses from the 10th New York, and 19 men. Five p. m. firing on the Rappahannock below the city. Sixth Corps after shelling the rebels out, crossed the River. Went down to the River. Saw some skirmishing. The 5th Battery was inspected by Major McGilvery. The men were encouraged, and the Battery stood well in drill and inspection."

Dyer: "June 5th. Heavy firing heard in the direction of Fredericksburg at 6 o'clock p. m."

Chase: "Bugler Winters returned from furlough."

Captain Phillips' Letter: "June 5th 8 p. m. The 6th Corps crossed at Franklin's crossing of last December, about sunset. No serious resistance. . . . All furloughs stopped. Saturday forenoon: I have just got my two guns and horses. No movement yet. All quiet on the river."

## THE GUNS COME BACK FROM THE FOURTH RHODE ISLAND.

Notes of Private John E. Dyer: "Saturday June 6, 1863: At reveille we were notified we were to have two more guns again, and the men's names were read who were assigned to these Detachments, I being assigned to the 5th Detachment, Sergt. Morgridge.

Two guns came to us from the R. I. Battery, *our old Peninsula pieces.*"

Scott's Notes: "June 6th. Harris's Light Cavalry camped near us during the night, from Yorktown. . . . Some skirmishing on the river. Our troops in position. Rebs. obstinate."

Phillips' Diary: "June 6th. . . . Obtained two guns and caissons from Captain Waterman, and 32 horses and one section of harness from Lieut. C. T. Bruen, 10th N. Y. Battery."

June 6th a sergeant of the 10th N. Y. was assigned as sergeant of the 6th Detachment of the Fifth Mass. Battery, vice Simonds in charge of the 3d.

Dyer's Notes: "June 7th. Brigade inspection. . . . Regulations read in line at 'Retreat.' On guard."

Scott: "June 7th. Am Officer of the Day. . . . Our troops still across the river. Some cannonading this afternoon. Harris's Light Cavalry gone to Warrenton.

June 8th. . . . Went to the River. Our forces still across, having thrown up rifle pits."



Captain Phillips' Letter: "June 8th, 1863. Yesterday being very pleasant, after a brigade inspection I rode down to the river to take a look at our troops on the other side. The bridges are laid at 'Franklin's Crossing.' At this point the hills on the other side are nearly two miles back from the river, and the plain between the hills and the river is occupied by our troops. Our pickets are within pistol shot of the woods which cover the hills, while our main body lies just over the river. Part of the Corps is over, and the rest is on the flat on this side ready to cross. Everything seemed very quiet. A few rebels in the edge of the woods, but no other demonstration.

The 5th Corps is stretched along the river from Banks's Ford to Bealton: Huntington's Battery is at Banks's Ford: Ames of our Brigade at United States, (Capt. Nelson Ames Battery G, 1st N. Y. Light.) Martin at Kelly's. Captain Huntington was in here at noon, and reports all quiet where he is. The river is very low. A slight thunder shower Saturday night, is all the rain we have had since the storm when we recrossed the river from Chancellorsville, and the country is very dry. . . . I have the finest set of horses I ever had or saw. When I was reduced to a four gun battery I of course turned in the meanest ones I had, and last week when I received two more guns I went over to the 10th N. Y. Battery and picked out the best horses they had. So I have a lot now that will not stick at anything."

Scott's Notes: "June 10, 1863. Battery drill by Captain Phillips. Some firing up River said to be a cavalry fight at Culpeper. Detailed on Court Martial. June 11th. . . . Am off duty to-day attending Court Martial at Major McGilvery's. . . All quiet on the river here.

Fight at Ellis Ford with Stuart's cavalry."

Dyer's Notes: "Thursday June 11th. An inspection of knapsacks this afternoon."

Scott's Notes: "June 12th, 1863. . . . Went down to

the river. Our troops still across. Our forces mounting six 100 pdr. Parrotts."

Letter of Captain Phillips: "June 12. Some movement is going on here. We have received orders to reduce baggage, and this morning I sent off knapsacks &c., allowing the men to retain merely a blanket and change of underclothes. The 3d Corps marched last night, and the 1st Corps this morning up river. The Battery is in tip top shape."

Chase's Diary: "June 13th, 1863. Marching orders n. m. Orders to destroy all our surplus camp equipage before leaving."

## CHAPTER XVII.

### THE BATTLE OF GETTYSBURG.

July 1-3, 1863.

#### GENERAL MOVEMENTS

"But yester-eve, so motionless around,  
So mute was this wide plain, that not a sound  
But the far torrent, or the locust bird  
Hunting among the thickets, could be heard;—  
Yet hark! what discords now, of every kind!  
Shouts, laughs, and screams, are revelling in the  
wind;  
The neigh of cavalry: . . . .  
Ringing of arms, and flapping in the breeze  
Of streamers from ten thousand canopies; . . ."

—THOMAS MOORE.

The display of audacity of the southern confederates, which during the Maryland raid of September, 1862, they were well aware had stimulated confidence in their cause abroad, was repeated in June, 1863, with the hope of hastening intervention in their behalf by foreign powers, and was carried into Pennsylvania so far north of the dividing line between that state and Maryland, as to give them, if unmolested, a fair chance of turning the tables on the national army, and of compelling from the national government the credit for intrepidity ever yielded to the ensnarer by the ensnared.

But the account for this bold cavalry dash was to be settled in plain view, for all the world to see and pass judgment upon for all time, in a clear field, divested of all complicating circumstances which could render it unintelligible; on free Pennsylvania soil, and north of the not too

# GETTYSBURG.

The Fight of July 2<sup>nd</sup>



1. Phillips' 5<sup>th</sup> Mass. Battery. 2. Bigelow's. 3. 2<sup>nd</sup> N.J. Battery B. 4. Hart's. 5. Ames'.
6. Thompson's. 7. Peach Orchard. 8. Trostle's house. 9. Second Position of the 5<sup>th</sup> Mass. 10. Lost Part of 5<sup>th</sup> Mass. 11. Meade's Head Quarters.
12. McAllister's Mill. 13. Rebel Batteries Silenced 14. Rebel Infantry Batteries. 15. Low Marsh. 16. Hill upon which the Rebels brought their Batteries. 17. Removed Piece by hand. 18. Road from Taneytown Road to Emmittsburg Road. 19. Part of 5<sup>th</sup> Corps. 20. House and Barn.



loyal city of Baltimore, leaving the sacred cordon of defence around Washington not only inviolable but actually unassailed.

All the important bridges on the Baltimore and Ohio railroad from Martinsburg to Cumberland, Md. had been destroyed. Creeping up through the mountains the rebel cavalry, preceding a Division of infantry, encountering our forces in a series of skirmishes, reached the town of Carlisle, Penn. in the centre of the Cumberland Valley, 18 miles from Harrisburg the capital of the state, on the 27th of June.

Another Division of infantry, moving up by other roads, encamped near Chambersburg, Penn.; another marched to the north east of Gettysburg occupying the town of York, breaking railroad communication between Baltimore and Harrisburg; also, to facilitate their movements the Chesapeake and Ohio canal had been considerably damaged.

Orders were issued to move north to Harrisburg, but crossing the Susquehanna River at Wrightsville, they encountered our forces at the bridge, and soon becoming aware that their progress north was not to be unaccompanied, on the 28th of June, the day Meade was placed in command of the Army of the Potomac vice Hooker resigned, they called together their divergent columns, and leaving a Division at Chambersburg to guard their rear, after attempting to obtain supplies at Gettysburg, and there on the 30th being repulsed by our cavalry under General John Buford, who had come up from Fairfield through Emmittsburg; failing, also, to obtain supplies through the mountain passes in the presence of our troops who were being rapidly reinforced, they determined to make an attack upon Gettysburg, there establishing their lines in positions favorable for artillery on Seminary Ridge, all ready for immediate action in the great battle of Wednesday, July 1, 1863.

The Union General John F. Reynolds had moved up his



Corps, taking up a defensive position. He commanded the Right wing, consisting of the First, Third and Eleventh Corps.

The recoil of the rebel advance had placed the enemy in the vicinity of Gettysburg, a village originally laid out by James Gettys in 1780, situated seven miles from the southern border of Pennsylvania, which separates it from Maryland, and 136 miles by rail from Philadelphia. At the time of which we write, it had become a town of about 3000 inhabitants, and was the seat of Pennsylvania College, founded in 1832. In the near neighborhood are the Gettysburg medicinal springs, and one mile from the centre of the village there rises from the valley Seminary Ridge on which stands the Lutheran Theological Seminary, founded in 1825.

Gettysburg lies between two parallel streams, Willoughby Run and Rock Creek, which here run nearly south, about two and a half miles apart. Between these two streams run three parallel mountain ridges. Rock Creek flows along the foot of Culp's Hill on the east, and finally passes between it and another rocky, wooded eminence known as Wolf's Hill. Culp's Hill commands Cemetery Ridge and Spangler's Hill, another rocky elevation covered with woods, and its intrenchments protected our communications with Baltimore.

West of the town about a half-mile, is Cemetery Hill where Evergreen Cemetery is located. Cemetery Ridge and Seminary Ridge run on nearly parallel lines, north and south. Directly opposite Seminary Ridge about three miles south of Gettysburg are two wooded hills, spurs of Cemetery Ridge, called Great Round Top and Little Round Top.

Both hills were steep and covered with large rocks. Big Round Top has an elevation of 300 feet above the valley. Little Round Top is not so high by 113 feet.

Little Round Top is also called Sugar Loaf Mountain and Granite Spur. It is near a cross road, about a mile and a quarter long, between the Baltimore turnpike and the Emmittsburg road. Great Round Top lies southwest of Little Round Top. The road which led to Emmittsburg, a small town 50 miles w. n. w. of Baltimore and 10 miles s. s. w. of Gettysburg, left the Union Centre at the foot of Cemetery Hill, and diverged rapidly, crossing the field between the two armies, and entered into the Confederate line opposite the Union Left. This road was on rising ground, traversing obliquely the space between the main ridges. Far in the distance to the southwest is South Mountain of the Blue Ridge, in the state of Maryland, west of which the battle was fought September 14, 1862.

Ten roads from surrounding towns focus at Gettysburg viz., Hagerstown, Chambersburg, Harrisburg, York, Carlisle, Mummasburg, Hanover, Baltimore, Taneytown and Emmittsburg.

### THE DISPOSITION OF THE FORCES.

The territory embracing all the movements of the three days' fighting, is five and a half miles long by four and a half broad, covering twenty-five square miles. On Seminary Ridge, about a half-mile beyond the town, which they held, were formed the enemy's lines. The Right of the Union forces turned, at the junction of the Emmittsburg road with the Baltimore turnpike, to the east and south, with the rebels between the extreme right and Rock Creek. The battle lasted for three days, commencing on Wednesday July 1, 1863. The engagement of July 1st was west and south of the town, our Left resting on the Millerstown road; the Right being prolonged to Rock Creek on the Harrisburg road.

The First and Eleventh Corps on July 1st had been overborne by superior numbers, and forced back through Gettys-

burg, with great slaughter, but held the field until the remainder of the Army of the Potomac came up. General Hooker in command of the Army broke camp at Fredericksburg June 15, 1863, and was moving northward from the Rappahannock.

On July 2d and 3d the fighting was on the south and east, the Union forces occupying a position south of the rebel army. The troops engaged were the First, Second, Third, Fifth, Sixth, Eleventh, Twelfth, and the Cavalry Corps under General Alfred Pleasanton, with an average for each corps of less than 11,000 men.

Brigadier General Henry J. Hunt was Chief of the Artillery of the Army of the Potomac, Brigadier General Robert O. Tyler commanded the Division of the Reserve Artillery. The First Volunteer Brigade of this Division was commanded by Lieut.-Colonel Freeman McGilvery and was composed of the 15th New York, Light, Captain Patrick Hart, F and G, Pennsylvania, Captain R. B. Ricketts, Fifth Mass. Battery, Captain Charles A. Phillips, Ninth Mass. Battery, Captain John Bigelow.

#### THE POSITION, JULY 2d, 1863.

On July 2d, our Centre rested at the Cemetery, the line extending east across the valley to Culp's Hill, down its eastern slope, across Spangler's meadow, and resting at McAllister's Mill or Rock Creek. The Left wing commencing at the Cemetery extended down the Ridge and in front of it to Round Top.

General Meade arrived at 1 a. m. of the 2d, and approved of the position selected and the disposition of the troops.

#### THE BATTLE LINE.

On Culp's Hill were the Twelfth Corps, General Henry W. Slocum, at their left on Cemetery Hill were the First Corps, General John F. Reynolds, divided and thrown to

the right and left of the Eleventh Corps, General Oliver O. Howard, who occupied the Cemetery. The Second Corps, General Winfield S. Hancock, were placed on the left of the First Corps. The Third Corps, General Daniel E. Sickles commanding—Captain George E. Randolph chief of artillery Third Army Corps—who arrived on the night of July 1st and lay on Cemetery Ridge, took position on the 2d at the left of the Second Corps. Subsequently, abandoning the line drawn from Cemetery Ridge toward Little Round Top he advanced to the Emmittsburg road without, it is asserted, informing General Hancock and thereby leaving a gap of some hundreds of yards between the right of the Third Corps and the left of the Second. One reason given for this change was that the position to which General Sickles had been assigned was low and untenable. Having reached the Emmittsburg road, he formed of his troops an angle, both sides of which were subject to an enfilading fire, one along the Emmittsburg road to the peach orchard, the other from the peach orchard southeast to Devil's Den, a rocky gorge at the foot of Little Round Top.

Early in the morning, General Robert O. Tyler had two Brigades of the Artillery Reserve in park behind the line prescribed for the Third Corps, and by 10.30 a. m. the remainder of the Reserve had arrived, and was parked between the Taneytown road and the Baltimore turnpike. The right of the Third Corps was three-quarters of a mile in front of Hancock's left, and the left a quarter of a mile in front of the base of Round Top. At this time nearly all of the Confederate army had reached Gettysburg, and was in condition for immediate action. The Union troops were rapidly concentrating. General Meade was on the ground.

The Fifth Corps under General George Sykes, which had marched at night from Hanover, 16 miles east, came up at

noon of July 2d, and moved to the Left of the line on and about Round Top. The Sixth Corps, General John Sedgwick, making a hurried march, and coming up later in the afternoon, were massed on the Taneytown road at Manchester, Md., a small village about 34 miles n. n. w. of Baltimore, and 9 miles northeast of Westminster, which is on the Western Maryland railroad. Taneytown, Md., is on the Frederick branch of the Pennsylvania Railroad 22½ miles n. e. of Frederick, and 40 miles n. w. of Baltimore.

The Union lines from Cemetery Hill to Round Top faced nearly west, but from Cemetery Hill to the extreme right it faced east, being about four miles long, nearly semicircular in shape; the two flanks being one and a half miles apart. The Confederate line was nearly the same shape, but about a mile and a half longer, being on the outside, which in some respects was a disadvantage, but the long range of hills afforded more available space for artillery.

The number officially reported as "present for duty equipped" in the Army of the Potomac was 101,262, of which 6,427 were officers, and 7,546 belonged to the artillery arm of the service, but it is computed that the actual strength, including the reserves and all arms of the service, was approximately 85,674, with 354 pieces of artillery.

Major General Meade was in command of the Army of the Potomac, General Hooker having voluntarily resigned on account of incompatibility. He could not see his way to act contrary to his own judgment. General Meade's headquarters were in a small house on the south side of the Taneytown Road, a short distance in the rear of the Second Corps the Centre of his battle line. In front of the advanced line of the Left wing was a ravine, and beyond the ravine was a stone wall, which enclosed a wheat field, and south of that was a peach orchard.

From Seminary Ridge descended the Confederate force on July 2d, to attempt to turn our Left near Little Round

Top, and from the same elevation on the same day, they made an equally futile attempt to storm our Centre at Cemetery Hill.

General Sickles' advanced line extended through the Devil's Den, along the Emmittsburg road, and across Plum Run. It was to turn this line and obtain possession of the ground, that the rebel general Longstreet made the memorable assault of the 2d of July, on Ward's (Colonel George Hull Ward's) Brigade of the Third Corps, which soon extended along the line. The design of the enemy was either to turn our Left flank, or to move directly across country and take the Union army in the rear, and they made choice of the plan to outflank.

In the rear of the Third Corps, afterwards reinforced by the Fifth Corps and the infantry of the Sixth, were the Brigade of batteries commanded by Colonel McGilvery, which included the Fifth Mass. Battery.

Between two and three o'clock the rebels, who were directing the fire of their artillery upon the troops at the Peach Orchard and along the Emmittsburg road, sent their infantry down into the valley. They crossed the Wheat Field, leaped the stone wall, and charged on the Divisions of the Third Corps, which were unable to hold their position, notwithstanding the assistance given them on their right by the Fifth Corps, on account of their inability to hold the two mountain spurs and defend their left flank.

The endeavor to extend their line to cover this exposed ground, scattered their forces, and compelled them to fall back after two hours of hard fighting. The retreat of a Division of the Third Corps on the extreme left forced by this desperate charge, let the determined Confederates in upon the artillery in the gap between the left of the infantry line and Round Top, numbering 30 pieces hurriedly posted there; the extreme left of which was held by the Ninth Mass. Battery, who were in position with the Fifth Mass.



Battery on the cross road to the left of the Peach Orchard, and who at this critical moment were directed to remain on the ground, and continue firing, until other batteries should be sent to their relief. But the Ninth Battery was forced to give way and retire firing, saving five out of their six guns, and so the enemy fell upon the Fifth Mass. Battery, which retired in the same way, and with the Ninth took up a new position farther up the hill from which they again opened on the enemy, whose attack now being enfiladed by the fire from the troops of the Centre of our line suffered great loss. They had encountered a Division and a Brigade of the Fifth Corps coming up from the Baltimore turnpike, who protected the mountain spurs Little and Big Round Top, and drove the rebels back across the ravine, over the stone wall to the Wheat Field which they held for the night.

Our new position was strengthened by reinforcements from the Right and Rear, consisting of Divisions of the First and Twelfth Corps, and later of the Sixth Corps, aided by a cross-fire of the powerful batteries of the Artillery Reserve now posted along Plum Run: so that before nightfall of July 2d, the advantage was on the side of the Union forces, for the elevated position on Cemetery Ridge to which they had been compelled to retire, proved to be impregnable.

While the Third Corps had been making this bold advance and suddenly been whirled back again, the field at the Centre and on the Right was comparatively quiet until dark, when a charge was made on our batteries on Cemetery Hill, by the enemy's troops leaving the town for that purpose, and was repulsed.

Then a night attack was made on the Right wing, by which they gained a temporary advantage, having our works in their possession for a few hours, and seriously threatening our Rear. All failed, however, through the alertness of our

artillery, which was placed in a position to protect the weak portions of our line on the Right, and at daylight on the 3d, our infantry, after a sharp contest, had repossessed themselves of the works, and frustrated the attempt to cut off our communications with Baltimore. On July 2, 1863, the sun set at 7.23. After dark a council of war was held, at which all the corps commanders were present, and it was resolved to retain the present positions, and fight it out on those lines on the morrow.

## THE BATTERY MOVEMENTS.

“Who are these hangers-back, these  
dark-robed ones?  
They are the mothers who are reft of  
sons;  
The wives whose dearest lie all unca-  
ressed  
Afar with vital stains on brow or  
breast:  
The children orphaned at the mouths of  
guns.”

—RICHARD BURTON, *The Background Group*.

The following minute narration of the movements of the Battery leading up to the Battle of Gettysburg, has been collated with the most painstaking accuracy, from the Diaries and Letters of 1863, as well as Notes of a more recent date, from the pens of Captain Phillips, Lieuts. Scott and Blake, Serg't. Peacock, Corporals Thomas E. Chase and Jonas Shackley, Privates John E. Dyer and Louis E. Pattison.

---

We left our camp near White Oak Church, Saturday afternoon June 13, 1863, between 4 and 5 o'clock. As we had been expecting to move with the Artillery Reserve for some time, we were all ready, and started out on the road to Stafford Court House. The road was quite good, but dusty. Weather very warm until about 7 p. m., when a thunder-

storm came up, but very little rain fell. We of course encountered the usual delays from wagons, teams etc. A short distance before reaching Stafford Court House there was a steep hill, which seemed to have caused most of the delay. Half a dozen wagons, a caisson, and a forge, were tumbled over on either side, but we got up without a halt. We were on the march all night. Drove out on the side of the road at 4 a. m. of Sunday the 14th. Ceased raining. We fed our horses, made coffee, and after a halt of half an hour and a scanty meal, we started and pushed on for Brooks Station and Dumfries on the Potomac. The roads were good, though very dusty, and we travelled briskly. Went about two miles on a wrong road; countermarched, and took the right road. Reached Dumfries about noon and made another short halt. After dinner we started again, and with constant halts pushed on till dark. Then for some inexplicable reason, the column halted and remained till nine, moving during that time about a quarter of a mile by fits and starts, then another halt of two hours. All the delay was caused by a hill ahead, up which our Battery went with halting. After passing this hill we kept on at a pretty good jog. We had marched all day and all night, a hard march for man and beast, and were pretty well played out. At 7 p. m. when we had made coffee, we lay down to rest, but before we had rested 15 minutes we were called to "Attention." Not a wink of sleep Saturday night, and but one hour's sleep Sunday night. About sunrise, Monday, June 15th, we crossed the Occoquan River by fording it at Wolf Run Shoals. Halted at 6 o'clock, and unhitched and unharnessed; watered, fed and groomed our horses, made coffee, and rested about an hour. About 9 a. m. hitched up and marched about 3 miles beyond Fairfax Station, and went into park in a large field just at the edge of a fine grove of hard wood, about  $\frac{3}{4}$  of a mile from Fairfax Court House, at 1 p. m. When we arrived we were very





dirty, very hungry, and very sleepy. Take it all through it was a pretty good march. We were on the road 44 hours, and marched over 50 miles without sleep or rest of any account. Some of the men went to sleep on horse-back, and one sergeant rode quite a distance ahead of the Battery, fast asleep.

On this march, Major McGilvery's wagon got stuck in a mud hole the other side of Dumfries, and the driver got discouraged and left it, reporting to the Major on his arrival in camp. The Major sent back after it, but as several thousand infantry had passed over the same road, nothing was left but a drowned mule and a few fragmentary evidences of the contents. By this accident the Major lost his trunk, clothing, papers, tents, mess stuff, and was in a very destitute condition. On the morning after we reached Fairfax Court House, Captain Phillips found him breakfasting off hard bread and coffee, and insisted on giving him something better, which he was fortunately able to do, as his larder was pretty well stocked.

The night of the 15th all had a good night's rest. Reveille at the usual hour on the morning of Tuesday, the 16th. Rested in camp all day. At night shelter tents were issued to the men. Inspection of the Battery at 6 p. m. in light marching order by Major McGilvery. News came that the rebels were in Chambersburg. The Rappahannock evacuated. Roll call in the evening at 8 o'clock. Turned out at 9 p. m. Drew two days' rations of coffee, salt pork and bread, and strapped on 4 bags of grain to each caisson and two to each gun, at  $\frac{1}{2}$  past 9 p. m., to be ready to march the next day: then turned in again.

On this day Captain A. P. Martin was put on detached service,—commanding Artillery Brigade, Fifth Army Corps, by Special Order, and Lieut. Aaron F. Walcott assumed command of the Third Mass. Battery.



Reveille at 4 o'clock June 17th. Rebels said to be in Maryland. Fifth Corps at Manassas; other corps on the march toward Leesburg. Struck tents, hitched up and packed up for a march. After waiting about an hour orders came to unharness and stretch the picket line. Turned in our grain, and quietness reigned again.

June 18th. Battery hitched up about half past 9 a. m., and was inspected by Major McGilvery. A sergeant and five gunners were sentenced to stand on the caissons, for not knowing what they had never been taught about the "time" and "elevation" table. They were ordered to stand there until they learned the table, but were relieved in about  $\frac{3}{4}$  of an hour as ignorant as before. The men had raw pork for dinner.

June 19th. Big drill on the manual of the piece in the afternoon and harness by detail. Cavalry fight at Aldie. The Rebs are driven.

June 20. All the 2d Corporals called to Head Quarters and questioned about the "time table" etc.

On the 21st heavy cannonading was heard to the northwest in the direction of Bull Run. Fighting all day at Thoroughfare Gap. Cannonading at the rate of 6, 15, 12 rounds per minute.

June 22d, the Battery hitched up and drilled in the morning: company drilled on the manual in the afternoon; also the drivers harnessed their horses by detail. The men were kept at drill on the piece, harness drill and battery. Nothing but famine rations of fat pork had been served out to the men for two or three days, and they were being reduced to a state of suffering and tyrannical discipline as fast as possible. No coffee allowed the "Non-Coms." for twenty-four hours, as punishment for not suppressing noisy and disorderly conduct of the men at tea time. "Non-Coms." had coffee as usual, without having to go after it. Pork

without—anything else—for dinner. About 400 rebel prisoners pass, from Thoroughfare Gap.

This day Lieut. Spear was appointed acting assistant adjutant general in McGilvery's Brigade. Some cannonading to the west.

June 23d, laid out a new camp in the grove and cleared the ground of rubbish. Two rows of tents were arranged, and we now had a neat, orderly camp. Captain Waterman's battery had been transferred to the Sixth Corps, and Captain James F. Huntington (of Battery H, 1st Ohio, Light) had been transferred to the 3d Brigade of the Artillery Reserve, taking command of the brigade. The only infantry in our neighborhood, was the Sixth Corps, and we knew nothing of the whereabouts of the rest of the army. We heard firing occasionally to the westward, and knew the result when we got the newspapers. Two batteries of our brigade, Ames' (Battery G, 1st N. Y. Light, Captain Nelson Ames) and Dow's (Sixth Maine Battery, Captain Edwin B. Dow) started this morning for Edwards Ferry. News came of the cavalry fight at Middleburg on Sunday. Two pieces of artillery, 3 caissons, 1 blown up, and the enemy driven towards Ashby's Gap. Major McGilvery gone to Washington.

#### LETTER OF CAPTAIN PHILLIPS.

"CAMP NEAR FAIRFAX COURT HOUSE.

Tuesday morning, June 23, 1863.

As things began to look like a permanent camp, I have taken to drilling, and yesterday I had the camp pitched over again. We have sent on to Washington, and are now living on such luxuries as tomatoes, pease, string beans, squash, asparagus &c., bottled ale for dinner, and oranges and bananas for dessert. I wish our men's fare was as good, but they are at present living very poorly, on hard bread

and salt pork, no soft bread, no vegetables, not even salt beef, and what little fresh beef they get is hardly fit to be eaten. And as if to prevent them from improving the bill of fare the sutlers are not allowed to come out from Washington,—rather aggravating, to be within 15 miles of a good market and not allowed to buy anything.”

---

June 24th, about 125 rebel prisoners passed in the morning. The men of the Battery had boiled fresh beef, for a change. At supper time by request of the cook, Corporal Jonas Shackley called Tucker (bugler) to sound the call and the men repeated it along the line. As a punishment the Captain stopped the coffee for half an hour. As soon as the issue was resumed the calls for Tucker were heard, and the Captain stopped the coffee entirely and ordered that the non-commissioned officers go without coffee for 24 hours. *Perhaps* they did. Corporal Shackley did not ask any one for coffee, but it was in his tent at meal time.

#### LETTER FROM LIEUT. P. W. BLAKE.

FAIRFAX COURT HOUSE, VA.,

June 24, 1863.

“*We* are now 15 miles from Washington, but the d—l knows where the rebels are. We had a rather hard march up here, 48 hours without rest. The way that most of the corps came was the old road that we came to Bull Run last August. There was only one spring on the road; the men and horses suffered greatly for the want of water. There were 20 men in one corps who dropped down dead on the march. Most of our infantry are around the mountains somewhere. Wounded are being brought in every day from the mountains, ours and rebels.

I suppose there are a good many who are joining General

Debility's army at present up north. I hope the rebels will come to New York and other places, and stir them up a little. My duty is rather laborious at present, one officer (Lieut. Scott) is on court martial, and another (Lieut. Spear) is on the Major of the Brigade's staff."

## VETERAN VOLUNTEERS.

WAR DEPARTMENT,  
ADJUTANT GENERAL'S OFFICE.

WASHINGTON, June 25, 1863.

General Orders  
No. 191

## FOR RECRUITING VETERAN VOLUNTEERS.

In order to increase the armies now in the field, volunteer infantry, cavalry, and artillery, may be enlisted, at any time within ninety days from this date, in the respective states, under the regulations hereinafter mentioned. The volunteers so enlisted, and such of the three years' troops now in the field, as may re-enlist in accordance with the provisions of this order, will constitute a force to be designated "Veteran Volunteers."

\* \* \* \* \*

By order of the Secretary of War,

E. D. TOWNSEND,  
*Assistant Adjutant General.*

June 25, 1863. Reveille and roll call just at sunrise. "Boots and Saddles" at 8 a. m. Broke camp and packed up, and left Fairfax Court House with the Artillery Reserve at about 9 a. m. Marched all day and evening. The Brigades marched in the following order: Ransom, Huntington, McGilvery, DuPeyster, Taft,—

DuPeyster switched off for Washington. The Ninth Mass. Battery joined our Brigade. We started towards Washington, but changed the direction of our route, and marched towards Edwards Ferry on the Potomac River. Passed Leesburg station at 4 p. m. Roads good, especially the Leesburg turnpike, a macadamized road. We had much halting until the last two hours of our march, when

we moved very fast, a good part of the time "double-quick." Upset one caisson about 5 p. m., and broke the stock, but not so badly as to detain us. We righted the caisson and proceeded. At 6 o'clock it commenced raining and rained all night. About half past 6 we passed through Dranesville. Halted for the night a mile from the river about 11 p. m., but did not unhitch. The men made coffee and lay down on the wet ground by the fire without shelter except a rubber blanket. They passed the long, dreary, wet night in misery, being wet to the skin and not a wink of sleep.

June 26th. Friday. Morning rainy, and the sky very cloudy. Horses still standing in harness. Left park about  $\frac{1}{2}$  past 7 a. m., and marched about a mile to the bridge across the Potomac at Edwards Ferry. There were two pontoon bridges across the river. Our Battery crossed the bridge on the right. There were 65 boats under the bridge. Length 1400 feet. We crossed at half past 8 a. m., and went into Maryland. Camped about half a mile from the bridge and stopped here all day and all night on the plantation of a man of the name of Fisher. We had marched about 28 miles. Heavy masses of troops and wagon trains on the move all day. The Fifth Corps passed in the afternoon. Signs of a long rain at dusk. Everything was water-soaked. The men made tents of their tarpaulins and had plenty of wheat straw.

June 27th, 1863. Anniversary of the battle of Gaines Mills. Cloudy morning. We packed up and marched about 8 o'clock a. m. Marched through Poolesville, Uniontown, Barnesville, and Monocacy Junction, crossing Monocacy River twice. Marched round Sugar Loaf Mountain, Md. The road was quite rough, and we capsized one of our wagons, but did no serious damage. After getting off the mountain the road was quite smooth, and we travelled quite rapidly. No infantry marched on the road we came. We marched about 27 miles, a considerable part of it being

"double-quick." We reached Frederick, Md. about 10 p. m., passed through it where we went into park about a mile north of the city, on the Gettysburg road. There were only three cannoneers present to stretch the picket rope, and some did not come up until the next day. The men went to bed supperless, too much fatigued to make coffee, but they had a good night's rest. The people of Frederick were very hospitable to us.

June 28th, Sunday, we were routed out about the usual hour, and remained in camp all day. Turned in some condemned horses. Many of the men were allowed "passes" to the city. The Captain went into Frederick in the afternoon and evening. The city was full of soldiers and they heard a rumor that General Meade had relieved General Hooker. Captain Phillips saw General Hooker in the town; also General (Alfred) Pleasanton who was at the City Hall. The Third and Eleventh Corps went through in the afternoon.

#### EXIT HOOKER.

HIS FAREWELL TO THE ARMY OF THE POTOMAC.

HEAD QUARTERS ARMY OF THE POTOMAC.

June 28, 1863.

General Orders  
No. 66.

In conformity with the orders of the War Department, dated June 27, 1863, I relinquish the command of the Army of the Potomac. It is transferred to Major General George G. Meade, a brave and accomplished officer, who has nobly earned the confidence and esteem of this Army on many a well-fought field.

Impressed with the belief that my usefulness as the commander of the Army of the Potomac is impaired, I part from it: yet not without the deepest emotion. The sorrow of parting with the comrades of so many battles, is relieved by the conviction that the courage and devotion of this Army will never cease, nor fail,—that it will yield to my successor as it has to me, a willing and hearty support. With the earnest



prayer that the triumphs of its arms may bring successes worthy of it and the nation, I bid it farewell.

JOSEPH HOOKER,  
*Major General.*

ENTER MEADE.

HEAD QUARTERS  
ARMY OF THE POTOMAC,  
June 28, 1863.

General Orders

No. 67.

By direction of the President of the United States, I hereby assume command of the Army of the Potomac. As a soldier, in obeying this order—an order totally unexpected and unsolicited—I have no promises or pledges to make.

The country looks to this Army to relieve it from the devastation and disgrace of a hostile invasion. Whatever fatigues and sacrifices we may be called upon to undergo, let us have in view constantly the magnitude of the interests involved, and let each man determine to do his duty, leaving to an all-controlling Providence the decision of the contest.

It is with just diffidence that I relieve in the command of this Army, an eminent and accomplished soldier, whose name must ever appear conspicuous in the history of its achievements; but I rely upon the hearty support of my companions in arms to assist me in the discharge of the duties of the important trust which has been confided to me.

GEORGE G. MEADE,  
Major General Commanding.

---

AS REWARD: A MEDAL OF HONOR.

WAR DEPARTMENT,  
ADJUTANT GENERAL'S OFFICE,  
WASHINGTON, June 29th. 1863.

General Orders

No. 195

The Adjutant General will provide an appropriate Medal of Honor for the troops who, after the expiration of their term, have offered their services to the Government in the present emergency; and also, for the Volunteer troops from other states that have volunteered their temporary service in the states of Pennsylvania and Maryland.

By Order of the Secretary of War.

E. D. TOWNSEND  
Assistant Adjutant General.

June 29, 1863. Reveille at half past 3 a. m., packed up, hitched up, took rations of bread and raw pork, and after waiting three hours in a pouring rain, got on the road about 6 a. m. Marched through Frederick City. Had a halt for about an hour, half a mile from the place we left. Very rainy. Passed through the village of Walkersville, Md. about 10 a. m. Marched about three miles and halted for about two hours, to allow wagon trains and troops to pass us. Passed through Ladysburg and reached Woodsborough about half past 4 p. m. Marched very steadily until about 9 p. m. when we halted for the night. Roads very hard and good. Marched apparently about 25 miles through the pleasantest part of the country. The men reached camp very much fatigued and footsore, and had a good night's rest. We had been marching in the direction of the Pennsylvania line about ten miles distant. The camp was now about two miles from Taneytown.

June 30, 1863. Cloudy and rainy. Reveille as usual. Hitched up and left park about  $\frac{1}{4}$  past 10 a. m., and we were until  $\frac{1}{4}$  past 4 p. m., going about three miles, the roads were so full of troops. About 15 rebels passed us in the afternoon. Passed through Taneytown, Md. and went into park about a mile from the town, and about 5 miles from the Pennsylvania line, where we remained until the morning of July 2d, when we marched to Gettysburg. The camp was a very pleasant one, quite near a mill stream, and "all hands" had a good bath. Here we had plenty of hay for the animals. Lee's forces said to be at York and Harrisburg, Pennsylvania.

#### DUTY AND THE DEATH PENALTY.

HEADQUARTERS ARMY OF THE POTOMAC,  
June 30, 1863.

Circular:

The commanding general requests that previous to the engagement soon expected with the enemy, corps and all other commanding officers

will address their troops, explaining to them briefly the immense issues involved in this struggle. The enemy are on our soil. The whole country now looks anxiously to this Army to deliver it from the presence of the foe. Our failure to do so will leave us no such welcome as the swelling of millions of hearts with pride and joy at our success would give to every soldier in the Army. Homes, firesides, and domestic altars are involved. The Army has fought well heretofore. It is believed that it will fight more desperately and bravely than ever, if it is addressed in fitting terms.

Corps and other commanders are authorized to order the instant death of any soldier who fails in his duty at this hour.

By command of Major General Meade.

S. WILLIAMS  
Ass't Adj't. General.

---

July 1, 1863. First anniversary of the Battle of Malvern Hill. In camp, but liable to move at any moment. Rumors of fight at Gettysburg, the death of General John F. Reynolds of the First Corps, and the capture of a Brigade of rebels. Extra wagons sent to the rear. Our forces formed line and held the enemy. Fight heavy. A ration of fresh meat—raw—and 3 days' rations of coffee served out in the morning. Two Brigades of the Reserve marched at 7 p. m.

Thursday, July 2, 1863, the Battery crossed the celebrated "Mason and Dixons line," and entered the state of Maryland. (This dividing line was partially re-surveyed in 1765, by two learned mathematicians and surveyors, Charles Mason and James Dixon, of London, employed by the proprietors of the two colonies of Penn and Calvert, and afterwards completed by other engineers. A stone was set up at the end of each mile, and every fifth stone, which was larger than the others, had on the north side the arms of Thomas and Richard Penn, and on the south side the arms of Frederick, Lord Baltimore. The preliminary work of restoring the historic landmarks of Mason's and Dixon's line, for many years the dividing line between the free

states and the slave states of the Union, in order to establish some portions now in doubt, was begun by a commission appointed by the state governments of Pennsylvania and Maryland and the U. S. Geological Survey, in September, 1900. The original stones which remained in a good state of preservation have been reset in solid cement bases, and iron posts are put up in places where the old markers have disappeared.)

July 2, 1863. First call at half past 2 a. m. We packed up and left camp about 4 a. m. Marched to the edge of Taneytown but countermarched, and took the road towards Gettysburg. Saw some prisoners and wounded men coming to the rear. Travelled very fast most of the time. Heard cannonading in the direction of Gettysburg about 10 a. m., and musketry skirmishing about half an hour later. Marched about 12 miles before halting. Weather damp and cloudy. Halted in a field, with close intervals, and cleared the guns for action.

#### THE FIGHT OF JULY 2D.

Two letters of Captain Phillips, one written soon after the battle, and the other after an interval of more than four months, give in detail his views of the situation, with accompanying plans, drawn from the indelible impressions made upon his mind while the contest raged the fiercest around him at his post, one of the most conspicuous positions on the field.

The first bears the date: "Camp near Littlestown, Penn. July 6, 1863."

"The long barns which abound in this country had all been converted into hospitals, and everything portended a fight. Some little shelling was going on, and we could see our troops in line on the hills in front. About 3 o'clock the fighting commenced, and Hart's and Bigelow's Ninth

Mass. were sent to the front. I was ordered up at 4, and found the shelling pretty lively. I took position between Hart and Bigelow, and threw a few shells at a rebel battery, which was about silenced. The following diagram will explain our position. (See Plan of Operations.)

The woods on our left were occupied by our infantry, and skirmishers were deployed in the ravine in front of us. The line of battle extended some distance, and our infantry was placed on our flanks; there was none immediately in front or rear of Hart, Bigelow, or myself. Thompson was on a knoll higher than my position, which concealed the rebel line in that direction from my sight.

About five o'clock the rebels charged across the fields into the woods on our left and drove back our line on our right. We poured a very uncomfortable enfilading fire into them as long as they were in sight in the fields on our left, and could have driven them back if the infantry and artillery on our right had held their ground. But Thompson was driven back, losing one gun, Ames retired, and Hart left the field, and our whole line of infantry fell back.

We had been for an hour very much annoyed by the enfilading fire of some batteries on our right, which were pouring in shell in a very uncomfortable way. We could have silenced them if we could have seen them.

At the same time that our right fell back, the rebels had got so far into the woods on our left that their musketry became very annoying. Finding that the place was getting too hot, Major McGilvery ordered us to retire, which we executed very successfully. The horses on my left piece were knocked over, and we started the piece off by hand. Lieut. Scott was pushing the piece off when a bullet struck him in the face passing through both cheeks, and breaking the roof of his mouth. Fortunately it missed his eyes and teeth, and he will easily recover. We fell back across the fields, and took up a new position about 1000 yards to the

rear. The rest of the Brigade had gone still farther to the rear, taking with them my caissons and three of my pieces which had got beyond my control while I was looking after the rear of the column. Lieut. Scott's wound also created a little confusion. However, I got three pieces in position, and blazed away at the rebels. Lieut. Dow's 6th Maine Battery was on my left, and did good service. The rebels brought their batteries on the hill we first occupied, and commenced a pretty vigorous shelling, but I fancy they found that two could play at that game. I blazed away till dark, and used up all my ammunition, when I was relieved and retired to get the Battery together. (The guns had been carried about a mile to the rear.) I finally got them together by daylight.

I suffered pretty severely in this day's fight: 3 men were left dead on the field, and one died the next morning in the hospital. Some 30 horses were killed, but all that the rebels made out of me was one limber and harness, and these we got off two days after. Bigelow suffered still worse. Four of his guns were left on the field, but were all saved eventually. Lieut. Erickson was killed, Captain Bigelow and Lient. Whitaker wounded. This battery did splendidly, particularly considering it was their first fight. They were exposed to a very hot fire of musketry and could not have saved their guns."

The remainder of this letter refers to the fight of July 3d, and his letter dated Camp near Kelly's Ford, Nov. 21, 1863, contains the following regarding the second day's fight which was also on the 2d of July:—The letter was addressed to his brother George.

"I received your letter and plans of Gettysburg the other day and have indicated our position as accurately as possible on the enclosed plans. (These plans have been consulted in the present work.)

As I went into position on Thursday under a hot fire,



and came out under a hotter one, I did not get a very clear idea of localities.

On the morning of July 2d we left Taneytown, and came into park on the right of the road. We stayed here till 3 p. m. when McGilvery's Brigade went up, one after another, to take position with the Third Corps which had been advanced in front of the rest of the line. As we came up we were formed in position on the road running from the Taneytown to the Emmitsburg road. The left of the Brigade rested on the woods held by the Fifth Corps, and the right stood in the peach orchard. We were arranged in the following order, commencing from the left:—

Ninth Mass. Captain (John) Bigelow.

Fifth Mass. Captain Phillips.

A New Jersey Battery belonging to the Third Corps. (Battery B, 2d New Jersey Artillery.)

15th N. Y. Battery, Captain (Patrick) Hart.

Battery C, Penn. Art'y, Captain (James) Thompson.

My left piece stood in the road. Hart was a little in advance, but soon fell back.

Four of Thompson's Guns faced the same way as the Brigade, the other two faced to the right where a rebel battery was enfilading our line in a very uncomfortable manner. Some rebel batteries in front of us on the wooded hills were firing pretty lively, but soon after we got into position we silenced them, and the only artillery fire that did us any serious damage was the enfilading battery on our right. As the peach orchard was on higher ground than where I was, I could not see any of the rebels in this direction, nor the Third Corps. About 5 o'clock the rebels started a heavy column across the field in front of us towards the woods held by the Fifth Corps. We blazed away at them all the time, but most of them contrived to get into the woods. A second column followed right after with similar luck though they suffered worse than the first. Some of them tried to

get behind the house and barn in our front, and after the fight 120 dead South Carolinians were found in the enclosures round them. All this time it was pretty noisy on our right, and happening to look that way, I saw our infantry coming back through the peach orchard. Hart and the New Jersey Battery (Battery B, 2d N. J. Artillery) left at this juncture, and Thompson got out of the way losing one gun. I ordered Lieut. Lull with the Right section to retire 200 yards and come into position again. At this moment Major McGilvery ordered us all to retire, and we fell back. My horses were rather mixed up, dead ones being rather more plenty than live ones, but we managed to limber up and get off. The Right Section, being all ready, got off first, the Centre Section followed, and then the Left. Unfortunately, as we were going to limber up the left piece the horses were all shot, but we managed to haul it off by hand. By this time the rebels were between us and the peach orchard blazing away with great carelessness, and one of them hit Lieut. Scott as he was dragging off this piece. However, we managed to drag it down into the hollow by Trossel's house, and the sergeant brought back a limber, and we went off.

During this retreat a circumstance occurred which annoyed me very much. While I was in the rear the head of the Battery got mixed up with some other batteries by Trossel's house, and Captain Hart, as he informed me afterwards, not seeing any officer, took charge of three of my guns, and carried them off a mile to the rear. So when I caught up I found only three guns. McGilvery had got the 6th Maine in position behind Trossel's house, and I came into battery on his right. The Ninth Battery was not so lucky in getting off. They ran into a stone wall and lost four of their guns, the rebels getting up very close on to them. When we got to our second position, the rebels were in the peach orchard blazing away at us, but it was pretty

dark and we did not suffer much. We stayed here till dark, when the rebels were pretty well checked, and then, as I was out of ammunition, I retired across the Taneytown road, and unhitched for the night. By midnight I got the whole battery together and went to sleep."

This letter is continued in the history of the Battery on July 3d. In his Notes of that date he says:—"We whipped them handsomely yesterday (the 2d). I saved all my guns, though I had to haul one  $\frac{3}{4}$  of a mile. The Ninth Mass. Battery close by us did splendidly. The artillery suffered very much."

### THE PROLONGE.

With relation to the use of the prolonge Captain Phillips thus wrote in a letter dated Camp near Sharpsburg, Md., Thursday Evening, October 16, 1862:—

"The long rope coiled on the trail of the gun is called the 'prolonge.' It is used when you want to retreat and to fire while you are retreating. To do this the order is given 'Fix prolonge to fire retiring!' Then, in the lucid language of the book, 'the limber inclines to the right, wheels to the left about, and halts 4 yards from the trail. No. 5 uncoils the prolonge and passes the toggle to the gunner, who fixes it in the trail by passing it upwards through the lunette, whilst he attaches the other end to the limber by passing the ring over the pintle and keying it. At the command 'Retire!' the cannoneers face about, all march on the left of the piece except Nos. 1 and 3. They keep their implements in their hands &c. &c.' That is to say, they go on loading and firing, but the horses all the time dragging the gun away from the enemy. The prolonge is also very useful in many other ways."

In the rear of the axle-tree of the limber is a pintle-hook to receive a strong ring on the end of the trail called the

"lunette." It has a key. A "toggle" is fastened to one end of the prolonge by three rings and a thimble which is worked into the rope; another thimble holds a hook at the other end of the rope.

## SCOTT ON THE FIGHT OF JULY 2D.

## NOTES OF 1863.

"Camp of the Artillery Reserve July 2, 1863. Morn cloudy. Orders to march at 4 a. m. Hitched up and moved on towards Gettysburg. One limber of Taft's (5th N. Y. Battery Captain Elijah D. Taft) Battery blown up on the road, one man killed 10 a. m. Arrived at the front 12 m. All the Artillery Reserve hitched up and bunched in the rear of the line of battle near the Baltimore turnpike. Near us was the Ninth Mass. Battery, Captain John Bigelow. Nothing could be seen from where we were of the line of battle. All was quiet. Hitched up at 4 p. m. Fighting commenced at 5 p. m., when the ball opened in earnest. Ordered to the front. I was talking with First Lieut. Christopher Erickson of the Ninth Mass. about the probable result of the coming contest, when the batteries, one by one, began to start out in a hurry. A staff officer rode up to Captain Phillips to direct the Battery to the front. The order to strip for action came quickly. All incumbrances were thrown aside, and we started out on a trot across the field, passing by the foot of Little Round Top, over stone walls and other obstructions. We could see, as we advanced, the terrible fight that was going on. The air was already full of sulphurous smoke. The Battery in full jump had hard work to keep Captain Phillips, who was with the staff officer, in sight. An officer rode up to me and said: 'The Battery is wanted at once on the Round Top.' I said, 'There is my captain ahead. I know no other.'

Passing the Trostle house we swung into a rocky lane

leading to the Emmittsburg pike. Gunners on the limber. One man was thrown and his arm was broken by one of the limber wheels, and he was out of the fight. Passing half way up the lane spoken of, we swung square to the left into an open clear field, which we crossed at a rapid rate. Overtaking Phillips at the edge of a lane running at right angles from the Emmittsburg pike past Little Round Top, the Battery was thrown quickly into line by a right oblique movement, thus bringing the Right section on the left.

Six batteries were in this line, Bigelow's Ninth Mass. close to our left. Though no enemy could be seen in our immediate front, the smoke of the enemy's guns could be seen over a rolling, open country in a line of woods, some 1500 yards, more or less, distant.

The order 'Commence firing' was given, and with our rifled guns shot and shell were thrown, with what effect we could hardly tell.

At last a Battalion of Artillery came out of the woods on a gallop. Down the slope they fled, and on a ridge, half the distance before mentioned, went into action. We had them in full view, and we opened on them fiercely, but we had them in range but a short time, when their infantry came down obliquely on the Third Corps stationed on the Emmittsburg pike and peach orchard. The Right section obliqued its guns and opened on this line leaving its fire on their artillery.

Up to this time we had met with no material loss in the Battery that I was aware of.

The charge of the rebel line was a magnificent sight, too much for the Third Corps. It had to retire, and commenced to fall back in our rear to Cemetery Hill. The batteries on our right were falling back. The Centre and Left section on the right were leaving. The Right section had orders to fix prolonge and fire retiring. The horses were faced to the rear. The prolonges were strung out. Now came the

time that tried the men of the section. The order was given to 'Limber up' the guns, as the enemy were almost upon us. The horses of the right piece were killed with the drivers. The prolonge was taken hold of by Captain Phillips and the gunners, and pulled off the field. The left piece of the section was limbered up after a struggle, in which I dismounted from my horse and through the confusion and excitement, with the assistance of one cannoneer at the trail threw the lunette on to the pintle hook and gave the order 'Drive on!' At that moment the driver, Henry Soule of New Bedford on the lead, dropped from his horse, J. Sanford pole driver's arm was broken, and as the muzzle of the gun passed me a shot went through my face and I was out of the fight. I threw my hand up, thinking my face was gone. The blood flew and I was gone.

Coming to a realizing sense that I was alive, I rose up and saw the rebel line near me, colors flying. I did not like the idea of being a prisoner in their hands and started for the rear. The field where the Battery had stood was clear. I did not notice limber or dead men and horses of the Battery, in fact did not think I should get far alone, but Sergt. O. B. Smith of the Battery came to my assistance with his horse, and mounting me upon him led me off the field.

The utmost confusion prevailed near the Trostle house and barn. The Ninth Mass. Battery had been severely handled. Four of the guns were held by the enemy for a short time, but the guns of the Fifth Battery covered them at its new position 700 yards in rear of the first position. Captain Bigelow told me afterwards that Captain Phillips with his guns covered them so completely that the enemy could not take them off and they were afterwards recovered.

Corporal Graham hauled the limber of the First detachment from under the fire of the enemy's pickets with a little help during the night after the battle. Seven men of the



Battery were killed or died from wounds on the field. Twelve were wounded, and the loss of horses was about fifty. Had not the order to fix prolonge been given I am of the opinion that the Right section would have left the field without loss. No time was given for drill movements and such time was lost that we came near annihilation. Colonel McGilvery gave Phillips great credit (see McGilvery's Report p. 667) for the part he took in the Reserve Artillery on this occasion. The Artillery Reserve lost heavily in this fight. I have often talked with General Henry J. Hunt chief of artillery on the part the artillery took. He thought they did not get half the credit belonging to them. Certainly the men of the Fifth Battery did their duty bravely and well, without any distinction of office or place.

I was carried to the rear from the Trostle house to near Rock Creek and the Baltimore turnpike by two men of the Battery, one of them I recollect was Charles Stiles. I rested on the bank of the Creek during the night alone, as best I could. No room near the hospital. The next day, the 3d July, 1863, I could move about. The heat of the day was oppressive. I could hear the cannonading of the artillery, and wished I could have been with the Battery. I was threatened with lockjaw and suffered severely. I fell into the hands of a field surgeon whose name I never knew. He dressed my wound after an examination and said:—

'You may thank your stars and your God today, for the slightest variation of the shot, you would never have known what hurt you.'

It would have been suicide to have continued with the battery further, and I remained with the hospital department until I could get transportation home. The hospitals were crowded with the wounded. Every available house, barn, or church was crowded. First Lieut. Erickson of the 9th Mass. Battery whom I conversed with before going into

the fight of the 2d, and was but a short distance from me, was shot through the head and instantly killed. First Lieut. Alexander H. Whitaker shot in the knee, was in the hospital, but died before reaching home. Provisions were short. I had \$5 with me with which to help those who were worse wounded than I was myself. I gave up 3. During the day I met General Griffin of the Fifth Corps, who formerly commanded Battery D, 5th Regulars, of Bull Run fame. He had been sick and had just arrived from Baltimore. Knowing me, he inquired after the Fifth Battery. I told him what I knew. He was much pleased and said in complimenting Captain Phillips, that he considered him one of the best artillery officers in the Volunteer service, and he would not except the Regular.

The Fourth of July, 1863, was a rainy day, but General Lee was on the retreat. On the 5th the army was on the move, and at 12 noon the Fifth Battery moved out of Gettysburg with the Artillery Reserve, and to me it was like parting with my best friend as the Battery passed out of sight."

## NOTES OF CAPTAIN SCOTT.

JANUARY 30, 1901.

"I had nothing to do with the Right piece of the section. Captain Phillips speaks of the Left piece. The Right section of the Battery was on the left, and as being in command of that section I have spoken of the Left piece of the section as the Right piece. Phillips was right, however. Phillips gave the order to fire retiring. I repeated it. Before the order could be executed, Phillips gave the order, 'Limber up!' which I repeated. The horses facing the rear, with the prolonge stretched, had to be reversed. Here I think if the section had gone to the rear they might have got clear. The horses of the Left piece were shot but with the Right piece the limber came about. Mounted on my horse

I saw Phillips, with the end of the prolonge over his shoulder, leading his horse, pulling off the field. Cannoneers pulling and pushing the Gun. I saw but one cannoneer near my Gun. I jumped from my horse and he at once left the field. With one man I limbered the Gun. You can imagine I had no easy task,—the horses and drivers uneasy, and it was a mere chance that we did not have to leave the Gun."

In regard to the charge of the rebel artillery from the woods (see p. 630) he adds the following:—

"I saw the charge and the battery in our front, but I directed the fire of the section to their infantry. I do not think we silenced their batteries entirely that day."

#### FROM LIEUT. SCOTT'S DIARY.

"July 6, 1863. Morn cloudy. In hospital. Wagon trains moving. Sick being cared for. Our forces in pursuit of the enemy. Afternoon cloudy. Very quiet. The enemy said to be very much discomfited. Gettysburg full of wounded. A great many rebels left behind and prisoners taken.

July 7, 1863. Took the cars for Baltimore and at 11 p. m. went to the hospital in a bad condition.

July 8, 1863. In the hospital at Baltimore. Got a pass and took the cars at 8 p. m. for New York. Very feeble.

July 9, 1863. Arrived at New York at 5 a. m. Went on board of steamboat for Newport, which left at 5 p. m. Very sick this night.

July 10, 1863. Arrived at Newport R. I. at 4 a. m. Went to my home and called a doctor (Butler) who attended me." (The entries in the diary are from July 11th to July 25th. "Sick this day.")

"July 25, 1863. The wounds healing some."

---

Lieut. Scott's leave of absence lasted until September 25, 1863. On the 24th he arrived at Washington at  $\frac{1}{2}$  past

6. Got a "pass" and went to Alexandria. At 3 p. m. took cars for the Front. Arrived at Culpeper at 9 p. m. Stopped at Almy's, 1st Division, 1st Brigade, 2 miles south of Culpeper. Batteries in line of battle.

"Friday, Sept. 25th, 1863. Morn pleasant. Went to the Battery and reported to Captain Phillips. Troops about to move."

---

#### FROM CAPT. PHILLIPS—THE GUIDON.

To a little nephew, written at the camp near Warrenton July 31, 1863:—"In the fight of the 2d they had a battery right in front of us shelling pretty lively when I went into position, and when we came up they had got the range pretty well. I placed my guidon, which is almost as large as a regimental flag, on the right of the Battery, and the rebels must have aimed at it, for their first shot killed the two wheel horses on the Right piece and broke the carriage pole all to pieces. All the time we were there we had to work pretty hard changing harnesses as fast as the horses were killed. The way we do it is this,—I send to the rear and have spare horses brought up, and then as soon as a horse is killed, the driver sets to work, takes off his harness and puts it on a new horse. This takes some time, as an artillery harness is very heavy, and they generally have to take it all to pieces to get it off a dead horse, and when the enemy's infantry get within musket range, they can kill horses faster than we can change them. That is the reason we had to leave one limber on the field.

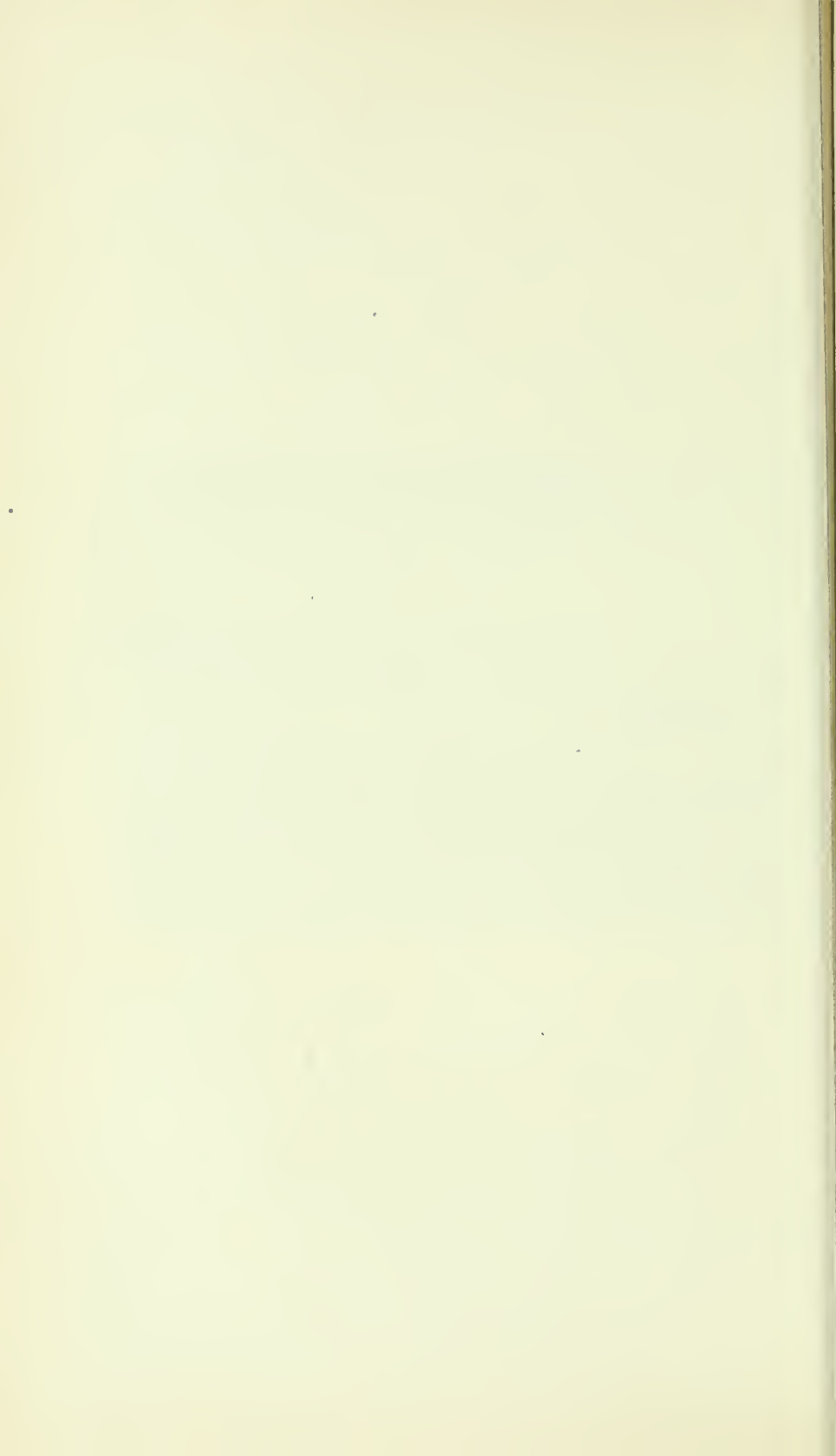
When we were ordered to fall back the enemy were within pistol shot on both flanks. We limbered up all the pieces but the Left one. One wheel-horse on this had been shot a few minutes before, and we had just got the harness on a new horse, when, before we could hitch him in, down went the other wheel-horse and the leaders, and we found we

must pull it off ourselves or leave it, so we hitched on the prolonge, and the cannoneers pulled the gun off lively. Lieut. Scott was pushing away on the carriage when he was struck. The shot came from our right, and I think must have been a bullet from a smooth bore musket. The enemy in that direction were firing buck and ball cartridges.

One of my sergeants came pretty near being hit. One bullet went in close by his coat buttons, and came out in the middle of his back, having made the circuit in his coat lining. Another bullet struck the top of his gun while he was aiming it, and glanced through the top of his cap. One wheel on my Left piece had seven spokes hit by shell, and a piece of shell sticking in the hub. On the whole, the old iron flew round pretty lively. What bothered us most was a battery on our right which we could not see, and which was throwing case shot at us very carelessly, and every minute a shower of bullets would come in, *whoosh*,—just like a heavy shower of hailstones. . . . They seemed to have a wholesome dread of getting in front of our guns, but made for the woods on our flanks, and having driven our infantry out of these, we concluded to retire, and so fell back a little way in good order. If some of the batteries in our Brigade had not got frightened, we should have given the Rebs a hotter fight than we did, but as soon as the order was given to fall back, Hart and Thompson fell back at least two miles . . . I felt pretty mad when I found out that they had carried off some of my guns and caissons with them, so that I had only about 70 rounds of ammunition left. Major McGilvery was rushing around, and trying to form a new line, and so I came into battery again. I lost several men in this second position, and they got up a story that I was killed, because a staff officer was killed about 10 feet from me. We stayed till dark, using up all our ammunition, and then I went back and brought up Seeley's (Capt. Frank Seeley, Battery K, 4th U. S. commanded by Lieut. Robert James)







Regular battery to relieve me. I was up all night hunting up my carriages, and did not find some of them till the next morning."

### SHACKLEY ON THE FIGHT OF JULY 2D.

Corporal Jonas Shackley, one of those who "brought off the last gun" in a letter dated Dec. 11, 1900, thus explains the composition of the Battery:—"The Battery was composed of six guns, numbered from one to six. No. 1 was the right piece, and was in charge of Sergeant Wm. B. Pattison. No. 2 was in charge of Sergt. W. H. Peacock. The 1st and 2d detachments formed the Right section under First Lieut. Henry D. Scott. Each full detachment, or gun-team, comprised a corporal who aimed the gun, seven cannoneers, and a corporal who had charge of the caisson.

Corporal Benjamin Graham was Gunner and Corporal Jonas Shackley was chief of caisson in 1st detachment, Right section."

### NOTES OF SHACKLEY, 1863.

"July 2, 1863, arrived at Gettysburg about 10 a. m. Went into line in close order near the Taneytown road, until about 4 p. m. Ordered into line of battle, mounted the cannoneers and went on the gallop. The ground being rough Corporal Eagan was thrown and his arm broken in two places: which ended his services in the army. John Moudorf was also thrown but not seriously hurt, though he did not go to the front that day.

The Battery went 'On the Left into line,' which placed the 1st detachment on the Left of the Battery, next to the Right section of the 9th Mass. Battery, which joined the Right of the Fifth Corps on Little Round Top. The Third Corps was on our right in the Peach Orchard. The two batteries filled the gap between the two Corps, with no infantry support.

Longstreet's Division advanced obliquely across our

front toward our Left, at a distance of from five hundred to three hundred yards, and the writer (Jonas Shackley) could see the rebels fall and the gaps closed at each discharge; our guns loaded with canister.

The right wheel horse of the 1st piece was soon shot, and the harness was taken from him, and put on Bugler James Winter's horse, but meantime he was wounded twice and left loose with the harness on, and came into camp in the night bringing the harness on him.

The 9th being driven from their position, and we outflanked on our left, our ammunition nearly exhausted, Captain Phillips gave the order to fix prolonge and fire retiring. The limber was reversed with the five horses. Almost instantly all but the right swing horse went down. The prolonge was toggled to the trail, but not hitched to the pintle-hook. Captain Phillips gave orders to break the sponge staves and leave the piece. Corporal Graham broke the staves. The Captain then ordered by hand to the rear, and taking the prolonge over his right shoulder, and assisted by Corporal Benjamin Graham, A. K. P. Hayden, and Corporal Jonas Shackley, brought the gun 500 or 600 yards to the rear, when we met Sergt. Wm. B. Pattison with the limber of the caisson, and, limbering up, proceeded to the next ridge of ground, and together with the 5th piece went into battery and fired at the enemy on our former position. The limber was left, with 7 horses.

While coming to the rear, the advance of the Sixth Corps marched in between us and the enemy. Captain Phillips exclaimed 'Thank God, there's the Sixth Corps!'

Soon after beginning our movement to the rear First Lieut. Henry D. Scott was shot through the face, but not fatally.

Soon after sunset we went into park near Rock Creek, and collected what was left of the Battery. The 1st piece fired 84 rounds on this day.

After getting into park Lieut. Peleg W. Blake, Sergt. Wm. B. Pattison, Corporal Benj. Graham, and Corp. Jonas Shackley, went back to the field to try to recover our limber, but the rebel pickets were close to it, and the officers of our pickets would not permit us to pass through. So we returned to the Battery."

#### NOTES OF CORP. BENJAMIN GRAHAM.

Corporal Benjamin Graham, when he was urged to contribute something from his store of recollections of the war to the history of the Battery, observed that it brought back to him the times when Captain Phillips would send for him and say:—

"Here Graham, here is another letter from your mother, who is wanting to know if you are dead or alive. Now sit on that limber, and answer it!"

#### ARMOR IN THE WRONG PLACE.

##### GRAHAM'S NOTES OF NOV. 12, 1900.

"Just before we went on the field in the fight of July 2d, we drew up in line just off the Taneytown road to wait for orders to see where our position should be, and just then the rebels opened fire on us, and as good soldiers we all laid as close to the ground as possible. The right piece was on the Left, as it always was when there was any trouble ahead, and we were sheltered by some large rocks, when our lead driver of the piece was hit by a fragment of a shell and had to go to the rear. The steel vest that he wore did not protect him in the right place.

#### BRINGING OFF THE LAST GUN.

When the order came to retreat on the afternoon of the 2d and Captain Phillips gave the order to 'Fix prolonge' and 'Fire retiring,' as Gunner it became my duty to attend to that. After I had fixed the prolonge, I gave the order

to 'Drive on,' and when they did not move stepped to one side of the limber to see why, when I discovered that all six of the horses were down. Then I asked the Captain what I should do. Captain Phillips said 'Bring the Gun off if you can, if not, leave it.' I replied to the Captain that we would stay by the piece as long as the piece would stay by us. I then unhooked the prolonge from the pintle-hook. (The pintle-hook is in the rear of the axle-tree and ordinarily receives the lunette, or strong ring of the trail.) By that time the Captain had dismounted. He seized the end of the prolonge with one hand, while he held his horse by the bridle with the other, and then, with the assistance of James Kay, William L. Purbeck, A. K. P. Hayden and myself, we started to the rear, and after going a few hundred yards, the Captain mounted his horse, and said he would send up assistance. We four then drove the piece down the lane near the Trostle house, where we met Corporal Shackley with the limber. We then limbered up and drove to about where the railroad is now, where I saw the Second Corps coming in.

I ordered the piece to halt, and went in action for the second time, where we stood until after sundown. It was here where little Purbeck was wounded.

The men manned the Gun in this manner:—Hayden No. 1, Purbeck 2, 5, 7, Kay 3 & 4, Shackley 6, Graham, Gunner.

‘WHO WILL CARE FOR MOTHER NOW?’

We had not been in action long, when a shell from one of the reb. batteries exploding on our right, struck one of General Hancock's aides-de-camp, and his horse; the horse falling on the officer. The officer was calling for help, and the horse was whinnying, as much as to say, 'Help me, too,' when little Purbeck, a good, smart boy, only 17, saw the man and horse down, and started to go over towards them, when he, too, got hit in the side with a piece of shell.

He was taken to the rear and to the hospital, where he died that night, and as he was dying he uttered these words,—‘Who will care for Mother now?’ They suggested the song which became immensely popular.

As I understand it, he was a widow’s son and his mother’s only support. The words were written by a sergeant of the 22d Regiment, and the music by some man in Boston. There was not a braver boy in the army than Purbeck.

#### BRINGING OFF THE LIMBER.

After we had supper on the night of the 2d about 9.30 p. m., Captain Phillips came to me, saying,—‘Graham, you take four men and the prolonge, and go and see if you can get that limber.’

I picked out the ones to help me, Kay, Hayden, and one other whose name I have now forgotten. We got along all right until we came to the picket line, for the limber was 200 yards outside of the line and within 100 yards of the rebs line. The picket halted us, and we made our business known, and he sent for the Officer of the Day. When he came we told him what we wanted, and after a long talk he allowed us to proceed, and when within about 100 yards of the limber, I had the men to lie down, and then I crept on my hands and knees to where the limber was, the dead horses still hitched to it, and in trying to unhitch them the chains on the traces and on the pole yoke would rattle, and for every rattle of the chains I would get a volley from the rebs.

I was some time in trying to get the horses loose, for one of them had fallen across the pole, and the limber and horses were struck several times while I was trying to get them loose. I had to lie down in between them, and when I had everything ready I gave a signal, and the others came up to help me, and it did not take us long then to take



the limber down to the Trostle house, where we found in waiting for us, William Pattison, with two horses, and after shaking hands with the pickets and bidding them good night, we returned to camp."

#### ABOUT THE FIRST DETACHMENT.

Louis E. Pattison became company clerk on the reorganization of the Battery in 1862, and held that office and also worked on a gun until his discharge at the expiration of his term of service Oct. 8, 1864, as they were always short of men until the last campaign. He was succeeded as clerk by John S. Doane. He was in the 4th detachment in charge of Sergt. Baxter who succeeded Page.

In a letter dated Nov. 1, 1900, he says of the detachment in charge of his brother William B. Pattison, that being on the right it always seemed to have to bear the brunt of nearly all the actions.

#### GRAHAM ON THE GUN.

"Our gun number was 8.85½ pounds, and we had that gun from the time it came to us until I was wounded on the 12th of May, 1864. I asked some men of the 10th N. Y. Battery, as they passed us as we were drawing the Gun from the field in the fight of July 2d, and as Shackley was coming in with the limber, for a sponge staff. I had brought in the sponge staff and worm as we started to draw the Gun off the field, so if we had to leave the piece, they could not turn it on us. But on getting back the limber I found that there was only one round of ammunition left in it, and that was a case of canister."

#### THE WHEEL OF THE 1ST PIECE.

Shackley notes in his Diary of July 30, 1863, record, that "We turned in the wheel of the 1st piece, which was disabled

at Gettysburg on July 2d, 1863, by having seven spokes knocked out or broken. It was an object of much interest to thousands of men on the march south."

His attention having been recently called to this note of Shackley's Graham said:—

"I remember the wheel well. It had seven fellies (portions of the circumference of the wheel) and fourteen spokes, and every felly and spoke was hit but one spoke. One of the spokes had a piece of shell fast in its centre, and the left side of the piece looked as if you had dipped your fingers in black lead, and then marked the side of the piece with them. There were hundreds of spots on the Gun to show where it had been hit. It makes me shiver even now to think that I was sighting the Gun while all that was going on, but I did not shiver then. The boys will all remember how I kept singing. I could hear them say, 'Hear Ben!'—'Hear Ben!'—I was not singing because I was brave. It was my duty to stay there, and I was like the little boy in the dark cellar, he had to whine to give him courage. It is too bad we lost sight of that wheel, for it ought to be in the State House with the flags."

#### LIST PRESERVED BY CAPTAIN PHILLIPS.

In the back of his Diary for 1864, Captain Phillips preserved the following list:—

"Men who brought off the right piece at Gettysburg:—

Corp. Graham.

" Shackley.

Private Barry.

" Kay.

" W. H. Wells 10th N. Y.

" Hayden."

#### NOTES OF FRANCIS P. WASHBURN.

##### A DRIVER ON SIMONDS' GUN.

"We were in position near the Peach Orchard, and Pickett's men came on, only to be mown down by our fire

which was something terrific. The enemy advanced in echelon (a formation of troops, where battalions or brigades follow each other on separate lines like the steps of a ladder) presenting a soldierly front in each line. We had been given orders to reserve our fire, and were as restless as colts. Finally, word was given, and we began by pouring shrapnell into the ranks of our foe. As Pickett's troops neared our position, we loaded with single canister, and after changing front to bring our guns to bear more directly on the centre of the enemy, we loaded with double canister, which we sent down into their ranks, making great gaps, only to be filled in again by those fearless fellows. Just as Pickett's men were within 25 yards of us, Captain Phillips sang out 'Triple shot with canister boys!'

We could see their begrimmed faces looking at us with intense hatred before that shot was fired which mowed down those poor fellows. The reality of war was never more vividly impressed on my mind than during that awful carnage, with the fearful result of that one shot of triple canister, and I believe it is the only time that we fired such a shot. Captain Phillips raised his sabre, and with the cry 'We've got 'em now,' gave the order for single shot. It was a fearful slaughter of the enemy. The slaughter of our horses was so great that we were nearly crippled, 59 being killed. In that battle we fired 700 rounds."

#### FROM THE DIARY OF CORP. CHASE.

"July 2, 1863. Reports that the 11th Corps broke again yesterday, and that our troops were beaten. Battery halted about 10 a. m. in a field in rear of the line of battle, and about 1½ miles from Gettysburg. Battery remained in the field until about 4 p. m. when we advanced, and took position in the line of battle on the right of the 9th Mass. Battery, and commenced shelling the enemy with slow firing. The enemy advanced batteries in front of us, and opened

a very destructive fire upon us; they also advanced their line of infantry, who kept up a murderous fire on us. Fired all our canister at the enemy and fixed the prolonges, and some of the pieces fired retiring. Limbered up and fell back as many as three times, and retired about 100 yards each time. Many of our men fell: some never to rise. Lieut. Scott seriously wounded in the jaws and face; a frightful looking wound, perhaps dangerous. Lieut. Scott left the field,—when the pieces did,—and went to the hospital. Edward Fotheringham, John W. Verity,—formerly of the 10th N. Y. Battery,—killed. Henry Grafferman of the 10th, slightly wounded. Of our men, John Hathaway, William L. Purbeck, Martin J. Coleman, H. W. Soule, W. E. Estee, John Sanford, Henry Fitzsimmons, John Agen, George Trumbull, and Bernard Doherty, all wounded. Was shot through the flesh of my left arm just above the elbow, while retiring with the Battery. The ball just touched the bone and benumbed my two little fingers; bone uninjured. Acted as No. 3 and 4 man from the time the Battery went into the engagement until we came out. My wound bled profusely, but did not become very painful until I left the field. Left the field about dusk, having been engaged about three hours in the hottest position we ever occupied. Brought off all our pieces and caissons, but lost horses. The pieces and caissons went into park in different parts of the field, having separated when they came out of the fight. Worked on Serg't Peacock's piece, 2d detachment, and on Serg't Morgridge's, 5th detachment. My person and clothes very tired, bloody, and dirty, and my wound very painful in the evening. Lost my bundle from the caisson, with everything except what was about my person. Found the caissons and had my arm bandaged. Weather through the day cloudy, muggy, and the heat oppressive. The hardest day's work I ever did up to date. Wm. E. Estee probably mortally wounded. Darkness quelled the dreadful storm.

and in the evening and through the night all was still, as though death was satisfied with the slaughter of the combatants. Remained around a bivouac fire all night, chatting with two intelligent rebel prisoners from the 8th Georgia Regiment, Longstreet's Corps. Exchanged buttons with one of them."

---

This was the situation at nightfall of July 2, 1863, when, as in Campbell's "Soldier's Dream,"

"the sentinel stars set their watch in the sky;  
And thousands had sunk on the ground overpowered,  
The weary to sleep, and the wounded to die."

---

#### THE ACTION OF THE BATTERY.

##### OBSERVATIONS.

#### FROM THE HISTORY OF THE NINTH MASS. BATTERY.

"Our place in the park was on the left and rear, and in the southwest corner of the field, nearest the part of the line of battle occupied by Gen. Sickles' 3d Corps. A little after 4 p. m. (July 2d) an aide-de-camp rode up to the wall near the left piece of our battery, inquired for Colonel McGilvery, commanding the brigade, and said, 'Capt. Randolph, chief of artillery of the 3d Corps, sends his compliments, and wishes you to send him two batteries of light twelves.'

Colonel McGilvery turned around and said 'Capt. Hart and Capt. Bigelow, take your batteries and report to Capt. Randolph!' (Colonel McGilvery in his official report says the "5th Mass. Battery Captain Phillips," instead of "Capt. Hart." See p. 667.)

The distance across the field was 300 yards, up a slope to a road: fences all down.

Our position was between the Peach Orchard and Wheat Field, on the left of the 5th Mass. Battery, and nothing in sight on our left. The position was swept by Confederate artillery, and some were wounded while going in battery."

General Henry J. Hunt, Chief of Artillery of the Army of the Potomac, is quoted as saying in a paper published in the *Century* of December, 1886:—

"Although already much cut up he (Bigelow) was directed by McGilvery to hold that point at all hazards until a line of artillery could be formed in front of the wood beyond Plum Run; that is, on what we have called the Plum Run line. This line was formed by collecting the serviceable batteries and fragments of batteries that were brought off, with which and Dow's Maine Battery, fresh from the Reserve, the pursuit was checked. . . . When, after fully accomplishing its purpose, all that was left of Bigelow's Battery was withdrawn, it was closely pressed by Humphrey's 21st Mississippi, the only Confederate regiment which succeeded in crossing the Run. As the battery had sacrificed itself for the safety of the line, its work is specially noticed, as typical of the service that artillery is not infrequently called upon to render, and did render in other instances at Gettysburg besides this one."

The Adjutant General's Report of the state of Massachusetts has the following in the narrative of the Ninth Mass. Battery:—

"Canister could be brought to bear only on the centre of the rebel line, while its wings, comparatively unhurt, closed in on either flank.

After suffering the losses enumerated . . . the enemy firing from our limber chests, and the exit through the stone wall blocked up with dead animals, the command was ordered to fall back and necessarily left four of its pieces on the field. (Horses being killed.) Covered, however, by the efficient fire of the Fifth Massachusetts Battery, Captain Phillips, the guns were all afterwards secured."

#### FROM CAPT. BIGELOW'S LETTER.

Captain Bigelow wrote a letter June 2, 1879, to the *Philadelphia Times* in which occurs the following reference to the Fifth Battery:—

"Owing to large stone bowlders interfering with my left section, I ordered Lieut. (Richard S.) Milton to take it out and to the rear. In accomplishing this most of the horses were shot, and one of the pieces was drawn off by hand, but the right and centre sections remained until overwhelmed by the enemy, who came in on their unprotected flanks. While we were thus engaged, McGilvery succeeded in placing the Sixth Maine, Dow, and 5th Massachusetts, Phillips, Batteries in position on the high ground in my rear, Cemetery Ridge proper. When I was raised from the ground, the enemy who had come in on the flanks of the Battery, were standing on the chests shooting down my cannoneers who were still securing their guns: but McGilvery was ready. I ordered my men to stop firing and get back to our lines as best they could. Dow and Phillips immediately opened fire on their positions,



and the enemy's advance in this direction was stopped, although there were no infantry on our line for some time afterward."

### THE FIGHT OF JULY 3D.

"With bristling bayonets glistening in the sun,  
The stubborn ranks, inspired by victories won,  
Pressed grimly on, unmindful of the storm  
Of shot and shell that felled full many a form.  
Until an earthquake shook the startled earth,  
As though the fiends of hell were given birth.  
The Federal guns now belched volcanic wrath,  
Which carried untold misery in its path.

'Strike! Strike! for freedom and your native land!'  
And bayonets clashed in contests hand to hand.  
Oh, fierce the struggle, but they break! they fly!  
And God to freedom gives the victory."

—BREVET COLONEL HORATIO C. KING.

Thirty-second Annual Reunion Society of the Army of the Potomac

---

Edwin Forbes who made the famous sketches on the battle fields, in his description of the field of Gettysburg on the morning of July 3, 1863, says:—

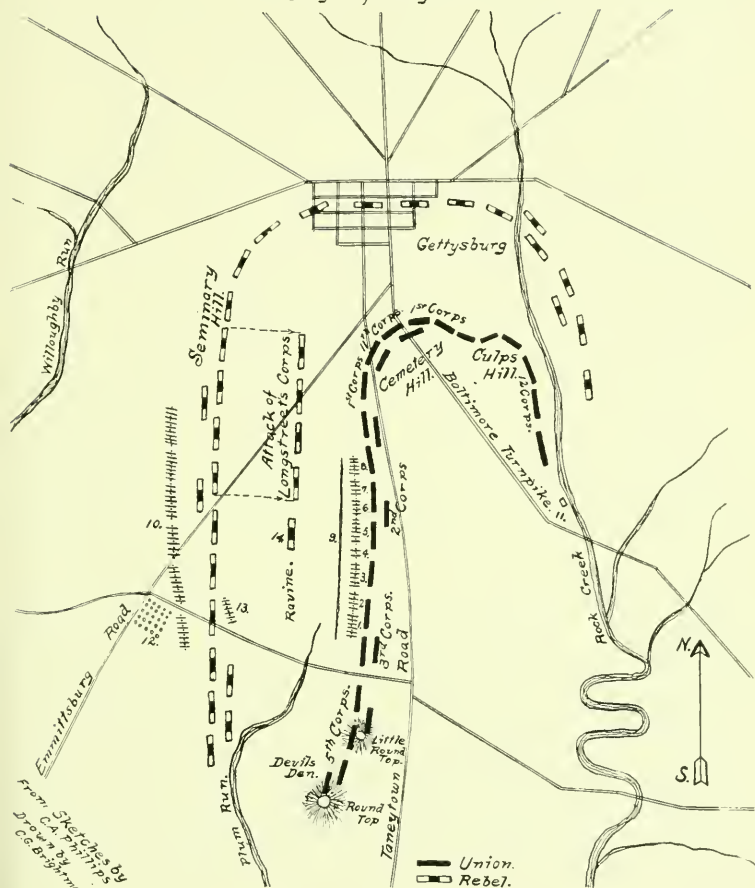
"A great convulsion of nature could not have made more universal destruction; everything bore the mark of death and ruin. The whole slope was massed with dead horses."

### THE DISPOSITION OF THE FORCES.

Slocum with the Twelfth Corps and Wadsworth's Division of the First, held Culp's Hill, reclaimed from the rebel general Ewell in the early morning. Howard's Eleventh Corps and Robinson's Division of the First, were on Cemetery Hill, then extending to the left came Alexander Hays Brigade of the Second Corps in two lines; the front being posted behind a low stone wall until the line turned westward where it was lower, with a rail fence on the top of the wall. Farther along, in front of John Gibbon's Division of the same Corps the only protection was an ordinary rail

# GETTYSBURG.

The Fight of July 3<sup>rd</sup>.



1. Ames' 2. 6<sup>th</sup> Maine. 3. 2<sup>nd</sup> N.J. Battery B. 4. Rank's Section 5. 1<sup>st</sup> Conn.  
6. Hart's 15<sup>th</sup> N.Y. 7. Phillips' 5<sup>th</sup> Mass. 8. Thompson's C. Penn. Art'y.  
9. Parapet or breastwork of rails and dirt, 2 ft high, sheltering a Division  
of infantry as well as the Batteries. 10. Rebel guns. 11. McAllister's  
Mill. 12. Peach Orchard. 13. Guns advanced by the Rebels. 14. Florida  
Brigade captured by a Union Brigade.



fence put together by the troops for the occasion. Next came General Abner Doubleday's Division of the First Corps; then General J. C. Caldwell's Division of the Second Corps; then the Third Corps with D. B. Birney's Division in the front line; then the Fifth Corps, closing up the line to Round Top, and the Sixth Corps principally in reserve.

At eleven o'clock on July 3d the battle ceased on the right. The Federal line was that to which it had been forced back on the previous day, and almost as it was at noon of July 2d, before the Third Corps moved out to the Emmitsburg road and the Wheat Field, except that the Fifth Corps extended the line on the left, occupying Little and Big Round Tops.

The assault of the enemy was made upon the ground occupied on July 2d, by the 2d and 3d Divisions of the Second Corps.

The Artillery Reserve, commanded by General Henry J. Hunt, were posted from General H. W. Slocum's Head Quarters near the Baltimore turnpike, to the extreme left of Great Round Top.

At one o'clock p. m., the enemy, whose artillery had been placed on the most commanding positions, from Benner's Hill on the right to Seminary Ridge opposite Round Top, opened fire on our batteries out of a line of artillery three miles in length, concentrated on a clump of trees held by Webb's Brigade of the Second Corps. There were 150 guns on the rebel side, 80 effective guns on ours. The battle on the Union side according to General Henry J. Hunt, was a purely defensive one. The Confederates fired two hours without interruption from our guns, and ceased. Our troops were protected by whatever shelter they could pile together. Then followed absolute silence. The Confederates have observed the fire of the guns, attached to the Corps as described from right to left, dying down—the Second Corps batteries had nothing left but canister,—and believe all our guns are being silenced. They advance the

attacking column, a long line of skirmishers to the number of 18,000 across the field and up the slope of Cemetery Ridge, and the rebel flags of Virginia and the alleged Confederacy wave for a moment over the low stone wall in front of Webb's Brigade in the very centre of the Union position.

In another portion of the field a desperate battle was being fought by cavalry; Custer's Michigan Brigade against the rebel general Stuart for the possession of the road to Baltimore.

The ill effects of the bombardment of the Union Centre were more easily avoided by those who occupied Cemetery Ridge than those lingering on the plain behind it. Headquarters and ordnance stores were reached by the flying shells, and had to be removed farther to the rear, while General Meade and staff rode forward nearer to the line of battle on the Ridge, a much safer post of observation than the open plain.

#### GENERAL O. O. HOWARD'S STORY.

General Howard thus wrote in an article published in the *Atlantic Monthly* for July, 1876:—

"Longstreet is said to have brought together in his front, opposite the low ground north of Little Round Top, fifty-five long range guns, and Hill massed some sixty more a little farther towards and opposite to our centre. . . . As there seemed to be actually no place of safety, my staff officers sat by me nearly in front of four twelve-pound Parrott guns that played over our heads, almost every available space being covered with artillery.

At half past two p. m. we ceased to fire. . . . The firing of the enemy lulled, and I could see, better than the day before, their infantry in line; at least a quarter of a mile of it was exposed to my view, as it started from Oak Ridge opposite our left. It was like an extensive parade; the flags were flying, and the line steadily advancing. . . . As soon as they were near enough, Osborne, Wainwright, McGilvery, and other artillery chiefs, started the fire of their batteries; first with solid shot, making hardly any impression, soon with shells exploding near and over and beyond the advancing line. . . . When nearer the canister

was freely used, and the gaps in the enemy's line grew bigger and harder to close. Soon this array came within short musketry range of our full long line in their front, all concealed by temporary cover, breastworks, stone walls, and trenches. As if by some simultaneous impulse, the whole line fired and continued to fire, rapidly, for perhaps five or ten minutes. As the smoke rose I saw no longer any enemy's line. There was running in every direction. Regiments of ours from Steinwehr's position to Round Top, were moving into the valley, with their flags flying, and apparently without much order, taking flags, guns, and provisions, and bringing them in."

### FROM HYDE'S "FOLLOWING THE GREEK CROSS."

General T. W. Hyde thus describes the assault:—

"On they came, it looked to me like three lines, about a mile long each, in perfect order. They cross the Emmitsburg pike and our guns, eighty in all, cool and in good shape, open first with shot, and then with shell. . . . But a tremendous roar of musketry crashes out, and I know the big guns are firing grape and canister now. And soon they appear again, and this time the colors are together, like a little forest, but the men are dropping like leaves in autumn. . . . From a hill I was fortunate enough to see the defeat of Stuart's cavalry by Gregg. All it looked like was a dust cloud with flakes of light in it, as the sun shone upon the swinging sabres."

It is said that a motion in the British House of Commons to recognize the Confederate States, would have passed but for the news of the victory at Gettysburg.

### THE POSITION OF THE BATTERY.

At daylight July 3, 1863, we took position to the right and rear of our position on the day before. At 10 a. m. General Hunt, chief of artillery, made an inspection of the entire line. "Phillips' Fifth Massachusetts 6 3-inch," is mentioned as one of the batteries on the left of the Second Corps, between Thompson's Pennsylvania and Hart's New York.

At 3 o'clock when Longstreet's Corps charged we enfiladed them terribly. Powell the historian says:—



"the rifled guns of the Union Artillery, having no canister, were withdrawn from the line, and the double-shotted 12 pounders were left to do the work."

Captain Phillips in his letter written at Littlestown, Penn., July 6, 1863, in relation to the fight of July 3d proceeds as follows:

"The next morning I went into position at daylight, and everything remained quiet till one o'clock. Finding that the rebels were massing artillery in our front, the Major ordered us to throw up a parapet, which we afterwards found conduced very much to our comfort. About one they commenced the most tremendous cannonading I ever heard. They must have had 80 or 90 guns in position. As artillery ammunition was rather short, we had been ordered not to reply to their batteries, and so we could lie still and enjoy it. My men were entirely sheltered by our parapet, and about the only damage done was to kill 8 or 10 horses.

Viewed as a display of fireworks, the rebel practice was entirely successful, but as a military demonstration it was the biggest humbug of the season.

About half past one General Hancock ordered us to reply, thereby showing how little an infantry officer knows about artillery. The rebels were not doing us any harm, and if they wanted to throw away their ammunition I do not see why we should prevent them. However, we obeyed orders. Fortunately, Major McGilvery came up and stopped us before we had fired a great while.

After firing an hour and wasting all their ammunition, and probably fancying that they had achieved a great result and silenced our guns, Longstreet's Corps made the grand charge of the day. This charge was made on our right, so that the rebels, in crossing the fields, exposed their right flank to an enfilading fire from our position.

As soon as the rebel line appeared, our cannoneers sprang to their guns, and our *silenced* batteries poured in a rain of

shot and shell, which must have sickened the rebels of their work. I never saw artillery so ably handled, or productive of such decisive results. It was far superior even to Malvern Hill. For half an hour our line was one continuous roar of artillery, and the shot ploughed through the rebel ranks most terrifically. Then our infantry went in and repulsed the rebels, taking a great many prisoners.

During this charge an event took place, which must have convinced the rebel artillery officers that they had something to learn. They advanced a 12 pdr. battery about 200 yards on our left, and blazed away. We let them get well at work, and then the Major turned four batteries on them, and in less than ten minutes not a cannoneer was left to work the guns: all were dead or had 'skedaddled.' The guns stood out in the field till late in the afternoon, when we allowed the rebels to take them off, as it cost too much ammunition to keep them off, and they could have removed them after dark any way.

After the repulse of the grand charge, a ridiculous demonstration took place in front of us. A Florida Brigade advanced and got into a ravine about 200 yards in front of us, when a Brigade of ours got the other side of them and captured the whole concern! This finished the rebels for that day, and the next day their batteries had disappeared, but our forces, instead of advancing, by which we might have gained a decisive victory, spent the whole day in skirmishing, allowing a line of rebel pickets to conceal from us what was going on in their rear,—I may be mistaken, but this is the way it struck me.

Saturday forenoon we retired to the Rear and rested, and yesterday we marched to this place. My losses for the two days foot up 1 officer wounded severely, 4 men killed, 16 wounded,—2 probably mortally—40 horses killed, 690 rounds fired. There were, of course, the usual number of narrow escapes, but I was not wounded even in my coat or hat."

In a letter dated December 16, 1901, Private Louis E. Pattison says of the reference of Captain Phillips to the action of General Hancock:—

"Phillips' comment upon Hancock's action at Gettysburg in ordering the artillery fire, is exactly what the rank and file thought.

Had Hancock let Hunt manage the whole line of artillery, the rebel column would never have reached the clump of trees, and a counter charge should then have been made by our Army, which would have been successful, and much of the slaughter of 1864, would have been avoided. Our Battery was only excelled by D, 5th U. S."

---

From the letter of Captain Phillips sent with the plans from the camp near Kelly's Ford Nov. 21, 1863:—

"At daylight the next day (July 3d) McGilvery placed his Brigade in position. He had 37 guns placed close together, arranged as follows, commencing from the left:—Battery G, 1st N. Y. (Capt. Nelson Ames) 6 guns, 6th Maine (Captain Edwin B. Dow) 4 guns, New Jersey Battery (Battery B, 2d N. J. Art'y), 6 guns, N. Y. (Rank's Section) 2 guns, 1st Conn. 6 guns, 15th N. Y. (Capt. Patrick Hart) 4 guns, Fifth Mass. (Phillips) 4 guns,—I did not have men and horses enough for six,—C, Penn. Art'y (Capt. James Thompson) 5 guns. ["Rank's Section" was a section of Battery H, 3d Pennsylvania Heavy Artillery, which served that day as Light Artillery, commanded by Captain William D. Rank.]

The rebel batteries were arranged along the crest in our front, the peach orchard being full of them. From the woods on our left to the right of our Brigade we threw up a little breastwork of rails and dirt, about two feet high, very useful and convenient. A Division of infantry were placed on this line between our guns, and only one man in the whole Division was hurt by the rebel artillery fire, and

he was foolishly lying about 10 feet behind the breastwork.

About noon the rebels opened a grand cannonade from their whole line, and for an hour and a half we had a grand Fourth of July performance. During the whole of this time the reports averaged by actual count 70 or 80 a minute. I don't know what the rebels expected to do, but it was certainly a very foolish performance.

We hitched our horses to trees, placed all our men snugly behind our heap of dirt, and rather enjoyed it than otherwise. To be sure they made a great noise, and the shells whistled round our heads so thick that a timid man hardly cared to stand up and look round to see what was going on, but we did not care about running away, when it was a great deal safer to stay where we were. I suppose the rebels thought they were blowing everything to pieces. The attack of Longstreet's Corps was on our right, but we had a splendid range on them as they came across the fields, and must have injured them badly. The country was so open that they had no shelter from our fire and as we nearly enfiladed them, we could not help hitting them at every shot; so when they were repulsed they evidently did not care about going across the same open fields, but retreated more to our right, where they could get into the woods easier."

Corp'l George L. Newton in Notes dated Oct. 24, 1899, adds the following to the quotations from Captain Phillips: — "I remember some years after the War ended, I was with Captain Phillips in his office in Boston, and we were talking over old times, and he told me that the Battery fired nearly  $5\frac{1}{2}$  tons of ammunition at Gettysburg during the fighting on the 2d and 3d of July."

#### LETTER OF SERGT. WM. H. PEACOCK.

"July 5, 1863.

CAMP NEAR THE BATTLEFIELD OF —, PA.

I came out of the fight all right. Our Battery was engaged two days, and a terrible time we had of it. . . . The

9th Mass. Battery lost 38 men killed and wounded. Captain Bigelow of Brighton was shot through the side; not a fatal wound, I hear. On my Gun one man was killed and five wounded, out of 10 of us. The second day we gave them an awful whipping. I think we will have another battle before the rebels leave this state, or Maryland."

FROM CORPORAL CHASE'S DIARY.

"July 3, 1863. Not a wink of sleep last night: wound very painful. Four of our pieces left for the front about 6 this morning, the other two pieces, caissons, battery-wagon and forge advanced about half a mile nearer the front about 10 a. m. Cannonading began again this morning at daylight. Kept with the caissons this morning. Met Lieut. Lombard of the 16th Mass. Reg't. Not much fighting until 1 p. m. when a terrific cannonading commenced, and at 3 p. m. has not slackened. Wm. L. Purbeck died of his wounds this a. m. and his remains were buried. No hopes of the recovery of Wm. E. Estee this a. m. Battery engaged again this p. m. John Canty and John Olin wounded this p. m. Olin slightly. The battery-wagon, forge teams, two guns and caissons, started to the Rear when the heavy firing commenced. Serg't. Nye came to us this p. m. with rations. A furious cannonading kept up until about 4 p. m. when it gradually slackened. The men on our pieces in front report that the enemy is shelling them terribly. Quite a large lot of rebel prisoners—about 800—passed us about 4 p. m.; among them several commissioned officers. The prospect looks more and more favorable for us this p. m. Martin J. Coleman and Henry W. Soule still missing. D. K. Shackley slightly bruised by a fragment of shell p. m. Very quiet up to the front at 6 p. m., but little cannonading at this time. Many of the rebel prisoners today badly wounded. Our guns partly sheltered from the fire by breastworks, but many of the caisson horses were killed.

My wound very sore today and somewhat inflamed. Weather cloudy and quite cool. Stragglers warned of the wrath to come if they incur the indignation of General Meade by skulking. Wm. Greeley made delirious by the wind of a shell p. m.; sent him to the hospital. W. A. Waugh slightly bruised by a piece of shell. More hopes of Wm. E. Estee tonight. John Canty's right arm amputated to-day. M. J. Coleman still missing. The 5th detachment exchanged gun (see p. 923 Captain Fitzhugh) for one with a charge wedged in from a New York battery.

July 4, 1863. All quiet this morning. Not as much as a 'bunch of crackers' to be heard, except the grinding of hard crackers this morning. Quite a comfortable night's rest last night. A little rain fell in the night. The dead body of H. W. Soule found on the field where we fought on the 2d inst. by Lieut. Spear this morning. Serg't. Smith reports that we have already lost forty horses in the two days' fighting. Had a good bath this morning and feel quite refreshed. My wound doing well but very sore. Martin J. Coleman found on the field seriously wounded, a. m. He was brought to the rear and carried to the hospital.

The 5th and 6th detachments with guns, caissons, and the battery-wagon, forge and team, moved to a field near where we halted before going into action on the 2d inst., in front of the 11th Corps hospital. The whole Battery in park in the above field. A thundershower came up about half past 3 p. m. and rained very fast for about an hour. Went on the battlefield after the shower p. m. Many bodies of both Union and rebel soldiers were unburied. Saw 20 dead horses within the space of half an acre, probably horses belonging to the 9th Mass. Battery. Put up tents and 'turned in' on the wet ground! A party of our men went out on the field p. m. and buried the remains of Fotheringham, Verity, and Soule.—Distant cannonading heard in the evening. Weather cool and comfortable with some rain.



Some of our men went out beyond the outer pickets for the limber of the 1st detachment gun and brought it to camp; a hazardous job. The rebel pickets fired upon them without effect.

July 5, 1863. Sunday. Went to the hospital this morning and had my wound dressed. No hopes of the recovery of Martin J. Coleman. J. Hathaway seriously wounded. J. Canty comfortable. All quiet today. Lieut. Scott came to us a. m. Battery hitched up and joined the column on the march for Frederick City, Md. Went to the hospital of the Reserve Artillery with all our wounded, p. m., hospital on the Baltimore turnpike about three miles from the battlefield. Hospital a good dwelling house and a barn. All hands had a plentiful supper of broiled mackerel, bread and coffee. Remained with the wounded till 11 p. m., with G. Trumbull, attending to their wants. Two of our men up all the time and were relieved every two hours.

Our Battery, with the Volunteer Reserve, passed the hospital about 6 p. m. on the march to Frederick, Md. Lieut. Scott left here with us.

July 6, 1863. Quite a comfortable night's rest last night. The wounded men rested very quietly most of the time. Hard bread and coffee with a little beef steak for breakfast. Some clean clothing given to those of us who needed it most. By request of M. J. Coleman wrote to his father that he could not live, and that the letter would probably be the last he would hear from him. The Dr. has no hopes of Coleman's recovery. Boiled meat and broth for dinner, ham, bread and coffee for supper. Went to see some rebel prisoners in the hospital,—wounded,—p. m. Their hospital was a small church and a cemetery, graves serving as pillows.

July 7, 1863. John M. Canty died last night about 11 p. m. and was buried this morning. Arose at 2 a. m to help watch with the wounded. A good, plentiful breakfast

of fried ham this morning; boiled fresh meat, and a good broth for dinner. Lieut. Scott with other commissioned officers left us today for home. Ham for supper. Weather quite cool and comfortable.

## DYING WORDS OF COLEMAN.

NOTES OF AUG. 13, 1899.

Martin J. Coleman was mortally wounded at Gettysburg and was brought to a temporary hospital where I was. I did not know that he was seriously wounded until I asked the surgeon how he was getting on, and he told me he could not live long. Soon after Coleman sent for me to write a letter for him. I could relate other instances to show the spirit and material of the old 5th Mass. Battery, but writing that letter was the most pathetic act I was called upon to perform while in service. He dictated this to me:—  
'Dear Father: I have not long to live. I have tried to be a faithful soldier, and I die for the flag.' "

FROM NOTES OF CORPORAL SHACKLEY, 1863.

"On the 3d July we went into line with only 3 guns, not having men and horses to serve more.

## THE WOUNDING OF JOHN M. CANTY.

After the enemy had shelled our lines, and had begun their advance, we commenced firing. John Canty was driver of the pole team of the 1st caisson—the limber of the Gun was left on the field on the previous day,—and was kneeling on his right knee, his right arm behind the horse's left fore leg, his left hand holding the bridle rein. Corporal Shackley, assisting No. 5 to serve ammunition, had a Schenke combination shell on the ground, between his knees, trying to turn the cap to set the time-fuze, when a shell came and took off the horse's leg above the knee.

Canty's arm off above the elbow, and the horse's right hind foot off above the ankle with such force as to tear the shoe clear of the foot, and the shoe struck the Corporal on his left wrist, and made him lame for nearly a week. The skin was not broken, but turned very dark, the sleeve of his blouse having protected it to some extent. The shell fell to the ground under the Corporal's nose and he picked it up, and threw it away.

Canty died of his wound. The shell did not explode."

In relation to the battle Shackley wrote in a letter at the time:—"We have had two days of as hard fighting as has been done in this war, but as long as I have health I will not grumble."

#### NOTES OF JOHN E. DYER, 1863.

"July 3, 1863. A thick morning. Firing commenced about daybreak. Our Battery, with four pieces, went to the front at 6 a. m. At 1 p. m the most awful cannonading commenced from the enemy, and was kept up until 3½ p. m. During the time we silenced one of their batteries. General Longstreet reported taken with part of his men. Slept on the field.

July 4, 1863. Independence Day. Still on the field. Went over it, and among the wounded found Coleman and J. Hathaway. Took a blanket, put one in at a time, and brought them off. About 7 a. m. we left our position, and went to the rear with all our pieces and caissons, but with a loss of 21 men killed and wounded, also 41 horses killed. This is a great loss for artillery."

#### NOTES OF CORPORAL GRAHAM.

##### FINDING THE BODIES.

"On the afternoon of the 4th Captain Phillips ordered a sergeant to go down on the centre of the field, out beyond our pickets, where the rebs had left one of their guns the

day before. So he mounts a horse and starts down. When he got to the picket line his heart failed him, so he came back. Then the Captain came to me, and he says, 'Graham, you go down on the field, and get me that pole-yoke from that limber.' So I went out on the centre of the field, and tried to get it, but as I had no wrench, and there was none in the limber chest, I had to leave it. I walked from there in the centre of both picket lines, to the position we occupied on the second day. It was there where I found poor Henry Soule. He was the first one that I found. He was under a small apple tree. Fotheringham was nearer the position of the Battery.

From the field I went into the Trostle house, where I found John Hathaway and Coleman. They were both badly wounded. The rebels had stripped Hathaway of all his clothing. When I found him he was sitting in a chair underneath a mirror, and I saw him in the glass first, and he gave me quite a fright, for the only thing he had on was a white sheet. He looked more like a ghost than a man. I asked him if there were any other of the boys in the house, and he said he did not know, so I looked the house over from garret to cellar, and there, behind the chimney, found Coleman. I tried to get an ambulance to take them to the rear, but it was of no use. I went back to the Battery and reported to the Captain. He had the men make some stretchers, and had Hathaway and Coleman taken to the field hospital, where they died in a day or two. The last I saw of Henry Soule they were digging a grave under that apple tree, but I did not stay to see whether he was buried there or not."

The last resting place of Henry W. Soule is in Oak Grove Cemetery, New Bedford, Mass.

"You may lean your backs against comrades now,  
They'll moisten your lips, and they'll kiss your  
brow,

For they fought like men, and a man may weep  
When he lays a man to his last long sleep."

—RICHARD MANSFIELD.

## REPORT OF CAPTAIN C. A. PHILLIPS.

HD. QRS. BATTERY E, MASS. ART'Y,

July 6, 1863.

MAJOR MCGILVERY, *Com'd'g 1st Brig. V. A. R.*

MAJOR:

I have the honor to forward a report of the battery during the action of July 2d and 3d.

On the morning of the 2d I marched from Taneytown towards Gettysburg, and came into park near the battlefield. At 4 o'clock I was ordered into action, and took position on the right of Captain Bigelow and left of Captain Hart. The enemy soon opened a heavy artillery fire on our front and right, one battery on my right which I could not see, giving us a very hot enfilading fire. Towards 5 o'clock the enemy succeeded in forcing back our lines on our right and left, and the battery was subjected to a heavy musketry fire on both flanks. Accordingly upon receiving the order from you, I limbered to the rear and retired. The horses on the left piece were shot before limbering, and we were obliged to bring the piece off by hand, leaving the limber,—this was however brought off on the 4th. Lieut. Henry D. Scott was shot in the face and severely wounded while bringing off this piece. After retiring about 1000 yards I came into battery by the side of the 6th Maine Battery, Lieut. Dow com'd'g, and remained until my ammunition was expended, when I marched to the rear, and went into park for the night.

At daylight on the 3d I was ordered to the front, and took position to the right and rear of the position of the day before, on the right of Captain Hart, and left of Captain Thompson. Under your direction the guns were protected by a slight parapet, which proved of very great service.







About one o'clock the enemy opened a heavy fire from a long line of batteries, which was kept up for an hour, but beyond the noise which was made, no great harm was done. Having received orders from General Hunt, and from you, not to reply to their batteries, I remained silent for the first half hour, when General Hancock ordered us to open. We then opened fire on the enemy's batteries, but in the thick smoke probably did very little damage. By your orders we soon ceased firing. Soon after a charge was made by General Longstreet's Corps, and from my position I was enabled to pour a heavy enfilading fire into the rebel infantry. After the repulse of this charge, another was made by a Florida Brigade within range of my guns. During the charge of General Longstreet, the rebels advanced a battery of 12 pdrs. on our left, whereupon the batteries of the 1st brig. were ordered to concentrate their fire on it, which was done with such good effect that the rebel cannoneers were driven from their posts almost immediately, and left their guns in the field.

I remained in this position until Saturday forenoon.

I beg leave to express entire satisfaction with my officers and men. During the two days I fired 690 rounds, lost 1 officer wounded, 4 men killed, 16 wounded, 40 horses killed, and a number disabled. A number of small implements were lost during the falling back of the first day, but the only losses of material which interfere with the efficiency of the Battery are:

- 1 Wheel Harness for one horse.
- 4 Sets Lead Harness.
- 2 Wheels.

I am very Respectfully

Your ob't Serv't,

CHARLES A. PHILLIPS, *Capt.*

*Battery E, Mass. Art'y.*

LIST OF KILLED AND WOUNDED OF BATTERY E, MASS.  
ART'Y AT THE BATTLE NEAR GETTYSBURG,  
PA., JULY 2<sup>D</sup> AND 3<sup>D</sup>, 1863.

NAMES.	RANK.		
Henry D. Scott	1st Lieut.	wounded	face
Thomas E. Chase	Corporal	"	arm slightly.
John Agen	"	Arm broke	
Wm. L. Purbeck	Private	Killed.	
Henry W. Soule	"	"	
John G. Sanford	"	wounded	side slightly.
Henry Fitzsimmons	"	"	leg severely
George R. Trumbull	"	"	foot slightly.
Martin J. Coleman	"	"	Knee and Arm mortally.
William E. Estee	"	"	hip severely
William H. Dunham	"	"	shoulder slightly
John F. Hathaway	"	"	breast severely
John M. Cauty	"	"	arm amputated.
Daniel K. Shackley	"	"	arm slightly
John H. Olin	"	"	hip severely.
William A. Waugh	"	"	arm slightly.

LIST OF KILLED AND WOUNDED OF THE 10<sup>TH</sup> NEW  
YORK IND. BATTERY NOW SERVING WITH BATTERY  
E., MASS. ART'Y AT THE BATTLE NEAR GETTYS-  
BURG, PA., JULY 2<sup>D</sup> & 3<sup>D</sup>, 1863.

NAMES.	RANK.		
Edward Fotheringham	Private	Killed.	
Henry Graffelman	"	Wounded	b——y severely
Thomas Fairhuret	"	"	shoulder slightly
William M' Kern	"	"	groin severely.
John W. Verity	"	Killed.	

In the Roll of Honor, published in Fox's "New York at Gettysburg," names of soldiers in New York Regiments and Batteries, who were killed or mortally wounded at that Battle, are :

10<sup>TH</sup> INDEPENDENT BATTERY L. A.

Fotheringham Edward, Private.  
Verity John W., Private.

Temporarily attached to the 5th Massachusetts Battery.

In relation to the Third Day's Fight Captain Phillips wrote his little nephew, under date July 31st, 1863: "On the next day we had a splendid exhibition of fireworks got up by the rebel chief of artillery for our amusement. For about an hour and a half there were at least 100 shots a minute, and the banging and whizzing round was so constant as to be quite confusing. Just before it commenced Lieut. Lull and I were lying in a little shelter tent, but when the shower came we concluded to get behind a pile of dirt, and it was lucky we did so, for in less than five minutes a shell struck the shelter tent and knocked it all to pieces . . . But when the infantry came out we jumped up and went at it hammer and tongs. We had a splendid chance at them, and we made the most of it . . . The prettiest thing, however, was the way we silenced a rebel battery which they brought out into the field. We let them get into position and all ready, and then we went at them. For about five minutes the shells were bursting round their heads pretty thick, and when the smoke and dust cleared away we could see one horse, but no men left. The guns stood just where they placed them, but they did not fire another shot."

## LETTER OF LIEUT. J. E. SPEAR.

"The Major referred to here is Major McGilvery of Maine, who commanded several batteries on Sickles' line when he was forced back the second day. I was on his staff as Assistant Adjutant General." Note by Lieut. Spear July 24, 1901.

"HEAD QUARTERS 1ST BRIG. VOL. A. C.  
CAMP NEAR FREDERICK, MD.

July 7, 1863.

Well here we are back to Frederick, Md., which place we left one week ago last Monday morning. The first day,—

Monday,—we marched as far as Middleburg, Md., and there we went into camp for the night. The next morning,—Tuesday,—we broke camp and marched that day about ten miles, to Taneytown, where we went into camp, and remained until Wednesday morning, when we were ordered to move, but orders were countermanded, and we remained until Thursday morning, when we broke camp and marched towards Gettysburg, Pa., and we went into park about 2 o'clock, near the Battlefield.

At 4 o'clock the Major received orders for his batteries to move into position, and they were placed near the centre of the 3d Corps on the Left of the line of battle. As soon as the batteries were placed in position the rebels opened a heavy artillery fire on our front and right. Towards 5 o'clock the enemy succeeded in forcing back our lines on our right and left, and the batteries were subjected to a hot musketry fire on the flanks. Some of the batteries then commenced to retreat before the order was given by the Major, but Capt. Phillips and Capt. Bigelow of the 9th Mass. Battery, remained until the Major gave the order to retire. When retiring Capt. Phillips and Capt. Bigelow lost a great many men and horses, and had to pull some of their pieces off by hand. After retiring about 1000 yards these two batteries came into position and remained there until all their ammunition was expended, when they went into park to the rear of the Battlefield.

At daylight on the 3d we were ordered into position near the centre of our line, and here the men built a slight parapet to protect themselves from the shells and bullets of the rebels, which proved of very great importance, for it saved the lives of many men. About 1 o'clock p. m. of the 3d the enemy opened a heavy fire from a long line of batteries, which was kept up for an hour, but beyond the noise made no great harm was done. Soon after the firing ceased, the rebels made a charge, and from our position

we were enabled to pour a heavy enfilading fire into the rebel infantry.

After the repulse of this charge, another was made by a Florida Brigade within range of our guns. These were very soon repulsed, and we remained in position until the day after, when the rebels commenced to retreat, and we commenced to march and head them off. We expect to move towards Antietam."

REPORT OF COLONEL FREEMAN MCGILVERY.

FOUND AMONG THE PAPERS OF MAJOR CHARLES A. PHILLIPS:

"Report of the part taken by the 1st Brigade Vol. Division Artillery Reserve, and other Batteries under my command in the Battle near Gettysburg Pa. July 2d and 3d 1863."

The list of batteries composing the Brigade is here given, then follows the Report:

"GENERAL R. O. TYLER, Commanding Artillery Reserve A. P.

*General.*

I have the honor to respectfully report that my Brigade being in park at a central position near our line of battle at half-past three o'clock p. m. on the 2d of July, I received an order from yourself to report to General Sickles with one Light 12 pdr. and one Rifled Battery.

The 5th Mass. Battery, Captain Phillips, and 9th Mass. Battery Captain Bigelow were marched immediately to a position occupied by General Sickles, near a belt of oak woods considerably in front of the prolongation of the natural line of defenses of our Army on the Left Centre, in which General Sickles' command was engaged with the enemy.

By General Sickles' order I made an examination of the ground, and placed the two Mass. Batteries in a position that commanded most of the open country between the woods held by our troops on the Left Centre and the woods and high ground occupied by the enemy on their right. A New Jersey Battery immediately on the right of the two Mass. Batteries, was receiving the most of the fire of two or more rebel batteries. Hart's 15th New York Battery reporting at that time, I placed it in position in a Peach Orchard on the right and a little to the front of the New Jersey Battery. The four batteries already mentioned presented a front nearly at right angles with the position occupied by our troops facing towards our left, the fire of which I concentrated on single rebel batteries, and five or more were driven in succession from their position.



Captain Thompson's F and C consolidated Pa. Battery of my Brigade, took position on the right of the 15th New York Battery, two sections of which battery fronted and fired in the direction of those heretofore mentioned and the right section fronted to the right and opened fire on a section or more of rebel artillery posted in the woods at canister range, immediately on the right of the batteries under my command, the enfilade fire of which was inflicting serious damage through the whole line of my command. At about 5 o'clock a heavy column of rebel infantry made its appearance in a grain field about 850 yards in front, moving at quick time towards the woods on our left where the infantry fighting was then going on. A well directed fire from all the batteries was brought to bear upon them, which destroyed the order of their march and drove many back into the woods on their right, though the main portion of the column succeeded in reaching the point for which they started, and sheltered themselves from the artillery fire.

In a few minutes another and larger column appeared at about 750 yds. presenting a slight left flank to our position. I immediately trained the entire line of our guns upon them, and opened with various kinds of ammunition. The column continued to move on at double quick, until its head reached a barn immediately in front of my left battery at about 400 yards distant, when it came to a halt. I gave them canister and solid shot with such good effect that I am sure that several hundred were put *hors du combat* in a short space of time. The column was broken; part fled in the direction from whence it came, part pushed on into the woods on our left. The remainder endeavored to shelter themselves in masses around the house and barn. I visited the position after the battle where the column in confusion massed up around the house and barn heretofore mentioned, and found 120 odd dead belonging to three So. Carolina Regiments. This mortality was no doubt from the effects of the artillery fire. The asperities of the ground in front of my batteries were such as to enable the enemy's sharpshooters in large numbers to cover themselves within very short range. At about a quarter to six o'clock the enemy's infantry gained possession of the woods immediately on the left of my line of batteries, and our infantry fell back both on our right and left, when great disorder ensued on both flanks of the line of batteries. At this period of the action all the batteries were exposed to a warm infantry fire from both flanks and front, whereupon I ordered them to retire 250 yards and renew their fire. The New Jersey Battery mentioned being out of ammunition retired to the rear. The 15th New York Battery also retired from the field. Captains Bigelow and Phillips, who were under my observation about all the time, evinced great coolness and skill in retiring their batteries. Captain Phillips with Lieut. Scott and four men hauled off one piece by hand, every horse on the limber having been shot down. Lieut.

Scott was shot through the face whilst at this work, and it is a mystery to me that they were not all hit by the enemy's fire, as they were nearly surrounded and fired upon from almost every direction. Captain Bigelow retired by prolonge, firing canister, which with Captains Phillips and Thompson firing on his right in their new position, the enemy was checked effectually in his advance for a short time. Captain Thompson, having all the horses killed from the limber of one of his pieces whilst retiring, was compelled to leave the piece, which fell into the hands of the enemy.

The crisis of the engagement had now arrived. I gave Captain Bigelow orders to hold his position as long as possible at all hazards, in order to give me time to form a new line of artillery, and justice demands that I should state that Captain Bigelow did hold his position, and execute his firing, with a deliberation and destructive effect upon the enemy in such a manner as only a brave and skilled officer could, until one officer killed and the others wounded and more than half his men either killed or wounded and his horses all shot down at the limbers, he was forced to leave four guns and retire. Lieut. Milton brought two guns safely to the rear. In the meantime I formed a new line of artillery about 400 yds. to the rear, close under the woods, and covering the opening which led into the Gettysburg and Taneytown road, of the following batteries and parts of batteries: Battery I, 5th Regulars, and a volunteer battery which I have never been able to learn the name of. Three guns of the 5th Mass. Battery, Two of Captain Thompson's Pa. Battery, and commenced firing on the enemy's line of infantry and artillery which had formed in the open field only about 7 or 800 yards in our front; a brook running through low bushes parallel to our front midway between ours and the enemy's lines, being occupied by rebel sharpshooters. As soon as the 6th Maine Battery reported, which was just before sundown, I ordered canister to be used on the low bushes in front, which compelled them (sharpshooters) to retire. About this time Pettit's 1st N. Y. Battery reported, and took a position on the right of the 6th Maine. At this time the enemy's fire, artillery—was very rapid and heavy. The unknown volunteer battery heretofore mentioned left the field. The guns of Battery I, 5th Reg. were abandoned. Captain Thompson's guns being out of ammunition were sent to the rear. Pettit's 1st N. Y. Battery remained only a few minutes, and left while I was directing the fire of the 6th Maine and a section of the 5th Mass. Captain Phillips, which remained in position and kept up a well directed fire upon the enemy's lines until they had ceased firing, which was about 8 o'clock. I then placed Captain Seely's Regular Battery Lieut. James, in position near Lieut. Dow's Battery, with instructions to watch the enemy closely and fire upon any advancing column, or reply to any artillery that might be opened upon us. There ended the engagement of the 2d of July. A detail was now made from the 6th

Maine and Seely's Battery, to go to the front and haul off the guns of Battery I, 5th Regulars. Lieut. Dow I instructed to procure an infantry detail and go to the front and haul off the guns of the 9th Mass., all of which was accomplished. The Guns of the two batteries, numbering 8, were brought safely to the rear, and arrangements made to secure their safe transportation in the event of any contingency that might necessitate a retreat or other movement. During the engagement my horse was hit four times in the fore shoulder and breast by musketry, once on the fore leg by shell, and once on the hip by spent solid shot, of which wounds he soon after died. During the night I ascertained the whereabouts of all my batteries and early in the morning of the 3d of July brought them into line on the low ground on our left centre, fronting the woods and elevated position occupied by the enemy along the Gettysburg and Emmitsburg road, a point at which it was plain to be seen they were massing artillery in great force. The line of batteries under my command commencing on the left, which rested on an oak wood occupied by our infantry were in numbers and kinds of guns, as follows:—

Ames' Battery G, 1st N. Y., 6 Lt. 12 Pdrs.

Dow's 6th Maine Battery 4 Lt. 12 Pdrs.

A New Jersey Battery 6, 3 in. Guns.

One Section New York Artillery, Lieut. Rank 2, 3 in. Guns.

[Rank's Section, Battery H, 3d Penn. Heavy, see p. 654.]

1st Conn. 4 James Rifled & 2 Howitzers.

Hart's 15th New York Ind. Battery 4 Lt. 12 Pdrs.

Phillips' 5th Mass. 6, 3 in. Rifles.

Thompson's Battery F. & C. Consolidated Pa. Art'y 5, 3 in. Rifled.  
Total 39 Guns.

In front of these batteries I had a slight earthwork thrown up, which proved sufficient to resist all the projectiles which struck it, and the commanders of batteries were repeatedly ordered that in the event of the enemy's opening a cannonading fire upon our lines to cover their men as much as possible, and not to return the fire until ordered.

At about half-past 12 o'clock the enemy opened a terrific fire upon our lines, with at least 140 Guns; this fire was very rapid and inaccurate, most of the projectiles passing from 20 to 100 feet over our lines. About one half hour after the commencement some general commanding the infantry line, ordered three of the batteries to return the fire. After they had fired a few rounds I ordered the fire to cease, and the men to be covered.

After the enemy had fired about an hour and a half, and expended at least 10,000 rounds of ammunition with but comparatively little damage to our immediate line, a slow, well-directed fire from all the guns under my command was concentrated upon single batteries of the enemy of those best in view and several were badly broken up, and suc-

cessively driven from their position to the rear. At about 3 p. m., a line of battle of about 3 or 4000 men appeared, advancing directly upon our front, which were completely broken up and scattered by our fire before coming within musket range of our Guns. Immediately after appeared three extended lines of battle of, at least, 35,000 men, advancing upon our centre. Those 3 lines of battle presented an oblique front to the guns under my command, and by training the whole line of guns obliquely to the right, we had a raking fire through all three of their lines.

The execution of the fire must have been terrible, as it was over a level plain, and the effect was plain to be seen. In a few minutes instead of well ordered lines of battle, they were broken and confused masses, and fugitives flying in every direction.

This ended the operations of the batteries under my command at the battle of Gettysburg.

In conclusion I feel it my duty to state that the officers and men of the batteries in my Brigade behaved in the most gallant manner on the 2d of July, where the battle raged most furiously. Part of the 5th and 9th Mass. and C. & F. Consolidated Pa. Art'y, contested every inch of ground, and remained on the field to the very last. The 6th Maine Battery came into action in very opportune time, and rendered very valuable service. Captain Irish (Nathaniel Irish) of Battery F, Pa. Artillery, acting voluntary aid to me, was hit on the thigh in the early part of the engagement by solid shot, but would not leave the field until ordered by me to do so to have his wound dressed, and notwithstanding a serious contusion which he was suffering under, reported to me on the morning of the 3d of July, and remained with me during the day, ready to discharge any duty.

Captains Phillips and Bigelow's conduct was gallant in the extreme.

F. MCGILVERY *Col.*

*Me. Art'y Comm'd'g.  
Brigade."*

This copy of Colonel McGilvery's report was not dated, but the note accompanying it was written at

HEAD QUARTERS 1ST BRIGADE  
ART'Y RESERVE A. P.  
September 17, 1863.

*Captain:*

Herewith I send you a true copy of my report of the part taken by my Brigade in the Battle of Gettysburg, and as I have no other copy, you will greatly oblige me if you will cause a copy to be written for

yourself, and return the one I send you as soon as you have done with it. I shall try to come over and see you this evening.

Very truly yours,

F. MCGILVERY.

CAPT. PHILLIPS

*Com'd'g 5th Mass. Battery.*

## THE MONUMENTS.

"The brave men, living and dead, who struggled here, have consecrated it far above our power to add or detract."

—ABRAHAM LINCOLN.

Immediately after the invading forces had been driven out of Pennsylvania, Governor Andrew Y. Curtin, the "War Governor" of that state, with the co-operation of the governors of states represented on the field, proceeded to secure a suitable site of seventeen acres adjoining the village cemetery, for the interment of the soldiers who there fell in defense of the Union, and purchased it in the name of the state of Pennsylvania, which assumed the expense of maintenance, while the cost of re-interment and the erection of a suitable monument, was borne by the several states in due proportion. For this purpose, Massachusetts appropriated \$9,471.83; her burials numbered 159.

Unknown 979. Total for all the states 3,555. But this does not, by any means, represent the actual loss of the Union army in killed and wounded. Many bodies were exhumed and taken North for burial, and some of those buried in the cemetery died of disease after the battle. The headstones for the known and unknown cost \$20,000. The work of disinterment on the battlefield and removal to the cemetery beautifully located on the highest ground of Cemetery Ridge, commenced October 27, 1863.

Major General Darius N. Couch of Taunton, Mass., was in charge of the arrangements for the dedication in these grounds, November 19, 1863, of a monument which cost



\$50,000. The Hon. Edward Everett, ex-governor of Massachusetts and ex-president of Harvard College, delivered the oration in the presence of the President of the United States, members of his cabinet, foreign ministers, governors of many states, and an immense concourse of people, and President Lincoln made his famous Gettysburg address.

In 1864, the legislature of Pennsylvania passed an act establishing "The Gettysburg Battlefield Memorial Association." In 1867, and 1868, Pennsylvania appropriated \$3000 for the purchase of land on the battlefield, which was used in the acquisition of land on Culp's and Cemetery Hills and Little Round Top.

On July 1, 1869, the national monument was dedicated; address by General George G. Meade, an oration by Governor O. P. Morton of Indiana, and an ode by Bayard Taylor.

In 1872, the cemetery was transferred to the care of the National Government in whose charge it has since remained, and generous appropriations have been made for its improvement by congress; titles to lands on the battlefield being acquired.

Congress in 1873, and 1887, donated a large number of cannon and cannon balls to the Gettysburg Battlefield Memorial Association, which have been effectively used; the cannon being placed in positions occupied by the batteries during the battle.

Tablets as markers were erected on Little Round Top by Grand Army Posts of Pennsylvania, but the first regimental monument erected on the battlefield, was that of the Second Massachusetts Infantry, Twelfth Corps, in 1879. It is near Spangler's Spring, which is on Culp's Hill just in the rear of the Twelfth Corps line. The next was in 1880, the 91st Penn. Infantry, Fifth Corps, on Little Round Top. In 1883, an appropriation of \$5000 was received from the state of Massachusetts, which was the first grant of money for the erection of monuments on the field.



At a meeting of the Gettysburg Battlefield Memorial Association May 5, 1887, it was resolved that hereafter regiments erecting monuments on the grounds of the Association would be required to locate and place them in the position held by the regiment in the line of battle, but that they would not be prohibited from erecting such markers on the field to indicate *secondary* or *advanced* positions, as the Association might determine.

February 11, 1895, the Secretary of War was authorized by act of congress to receive from the Gettysburg Battlefield Memorial Association a deed of conveyance, embracing about 800 acres, and on May 22, 1895, at the last meeting of the board of directors, the land owned by the Association consisting of 600 acres and 17 miles of driveways,—earthworks having been preserved or reconstructed whenever practicable,—was transferred to the United States Government. It is now under the care of three government commissioners, and is known as "The Gettysburg National Park."

The total amount of expenditures made by the various states, 18 in number, on account of the Gettysburg battlefield, including purchase of land, cost of monuments and contributions to the work of the Memorial Association, exclusive of appropriations for the National Cemetery, is \$680,228.33, of which Massachusetts' share is \$30,000.

#### THE 10TH N. Y. IND. BATTERY.

FROM "NEW YORK AT GETTYSBURG," EDITED BY LIEUT. COL. WILLIAM F. FOX.

"At Gettysburg the Tenth New York was attached to Phillips' Fifth Massachusetts Battery, and with that command fought in the battles of the second and third day. Of the 21 men killed and wounded in Captain Phillips' command, 5 were from the Tenth New York Battery. In the second day's battle, Phillips was stationed with his six guns on the road leading from the Wheatfield to the Peach Orchard, where he was hotly engaged. On the third day his battery was in position on Cemetery Ridge, when it participated in the grand cannonade of that day.

In July, 1863, after Gettysburg, the battery (Tenth) under command of Lieut. T. C. Bruen, was stationed in the defences of Washington, where it formed a part of the Twenty-second Corps. The monument is situated on what is now called 'Sickles Avenue,' on the north side of the road leading from the Peach Orchard to the Wheatfield and Little Round Top. The general dimensions are, base 4' 3" x 3' 3". Total height 7' 8". Bronze letter tablet on front 2' 0" x 3' 0". Materials of Construction Quincy (Mass.) granite and Standard bronze. Contractors.—Frederick & Field. Cost, \$500."

## INSCRIPTION.

(FRONT.)

"10th Independent Battery  
New York Light Artillery  
1st Volunteer Brigade.  
Artillery Reserve.  
July 2, 1863  
Attached to 5th Massachusetts  
Light Battery 'E.'  
Casualties.  
Killed 2, Wounded 3.  
Organized as the 2d  
Excelsior Battery  
Mustered into U. S. Service  
April 9, 1862  
Consolidated with 6th  
N. Y. Independent Battery  
June 21, 1864.  
Mustered out June 22, 1865."

## THE FIFTH MASS. BATTERY.

In 1883, the position selected for the monument to the men of the Fifth Mass. Battery, was a short distance farther to the front than that which it now occupies, but it was thought best to place it on the ridge beside those of the Ninth Mass. Battery, and Clarke's Battery (Battery B, 1st N. J.) on Sickles Avenue, Wheatfield Road. It stands near the road running from the Peach Orchard to Little Round Top. It is of pure granite, and was made and erected by the Smith Granite Company of Westerly, Rhode

Island; about five feet square, resting on two bases, and about six feet high, with bevelled top. On the top are two sponge staves crossed. On the front face is the Fifth Corps badge, and within the Maltese Cross are the words:—

FIFTH  
MASSACHUSETTS  
BATTERY.

On the right:—

THE NATION LIVES.

On the base:—

RESERVE ARTILLERY.

On the left:—

7 enlisted men killed.

1 officer and 12 enlisted

Men wounded.

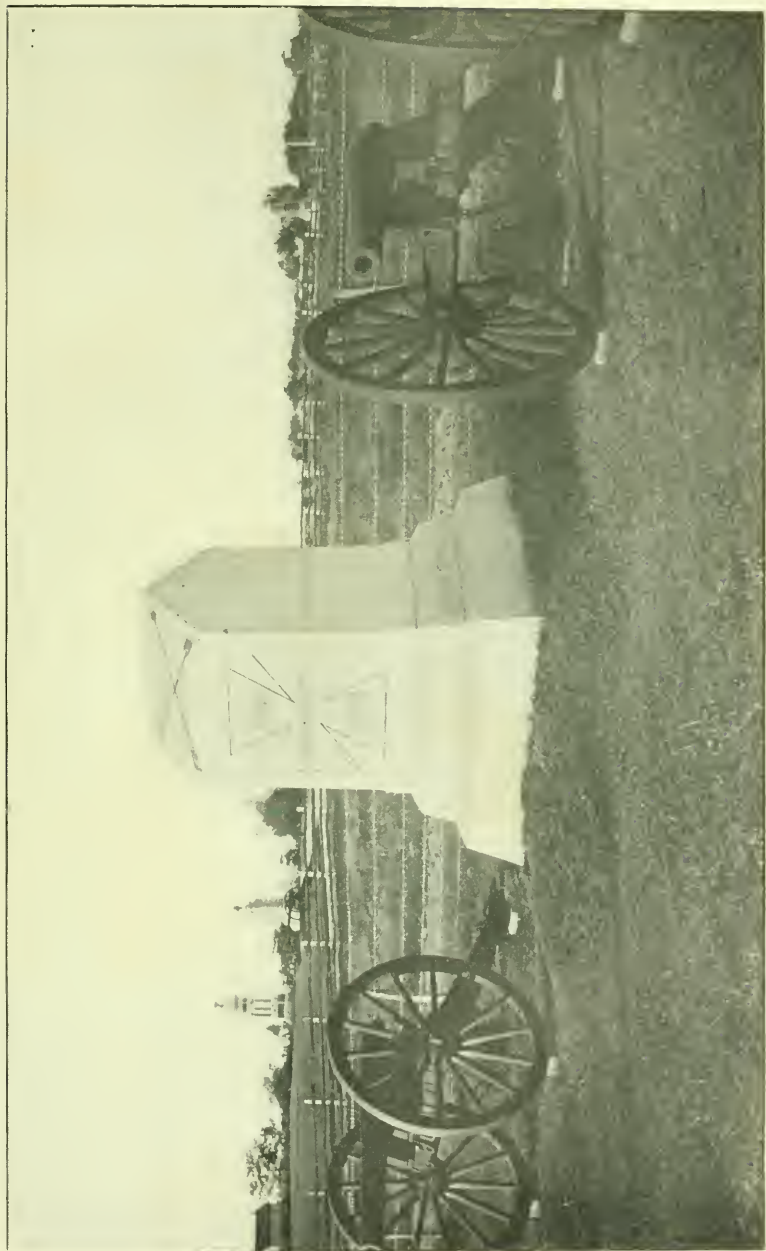
700 rounds fired.

Chs. A. Phillips, Captain  
Commanding.

July 2d, 1863.

The cost of the monument was \$550, the Commonwealth of Massachusetts contributing \$500, and the Battery the remainder.

On July 15, 1885, at a meeting of veteran organizations of the state of Massachusetts, arrangements were planned for its dedication, which took place Thursday, October 8, 1885, between 9 and 10 o'clock, a. m., in a drizzling rain. The members of the Battery present were Captain Henry D. Scott, Corporal Thomas E. Chase, Serg't. Patrick Welsh, Privates John G. Sanford and John F. Murray, and Corporal Rodney Campbell. Captain Scott made the dedicatory address, and remarks were made by Captain John F.





Murray, secretary of the Fifth Mass. Battery Association. At the close of Captain Scott's address "America" and "Auld Lang Syne" were sung.

At 2 o'clock in the afternoon the Fifth Mass. Battery monument, with others dedicated on that day, was turned over by Colonel Edward J. Russell of Worcester, Mass., a veteran of the Fifteenth Mass. Reg't. Infantry, and a member of the Governor's Staff, representing His Excellency Governor George D. Robinson, to the keeping of the Gettysburg Battlefield Memorial Association. The ceremony took place in the hall of Corporal Skelly Post 9, G. A. R.

At the exercises at the Court House, after the decoration of the graves of the Massachusetts dead in the National Cemetery, the following message from Governor Robinson was read:—

BOSTON, Oct. 8, 1885.

TO COLONEL EDWARD J. RUSSELL, Gettysburg, Pa.

Massachusetts will never fail to appreciate the noble heroism and abundant loyalty of her soldiers on the field of Gettysburg. She offers now her tenderest tribute of reverence to the memory of her sons who fell there in defence of liberty and union.

GEO. D. ROBINSON.

The band played "Home, Sweet Home." Among the speakers was Colonel John B. Batchelder of Hyde Park, Mass., the Government Historian of the Battle of Gettysburg, who described successively the movements of the Massachusetts organizations in the battle. The Memorial Association was represented by Mr. David H. Buckler, vice-president of the organization. At 5.30 the exercises closed with the singing of "My Country, 'tis of thee," and thus ended the dedicatory exercises of the Fifth Mass. Battery Monument at Gettysburg. In the words of Lieut. Edward M. Knox, wounded at Gettysburg, in his address at the



dedication of the 15th N. Y. Ind. Battery, Hart's, July 2, 1888:—

“Stand here, oh block of granite  
Against all storms of time!”

### THE HIGH-WATER MARK.

At a meeting of the board of directors of the Gettysburg Battlefield Memorial Association May 10, 1891, the board approved the plan for a large tablet at the “Copse of Trees” or “High-Water Mark,” at the position of the Second Corps, Hancock Avenue. This designation of “high-water mark” was applied by the historian William Swinton in his “Prelude to Gettysburg,” 1867:—

“Into this bunch of woods a few,—it may be a score or two,—of the boldest and bravest that led the van of Pickett's charging column on the 3d of July, 1863, attained. Thus far the swelling surge of invasion threw its spray, dashing itself to pieces on the rocky bulwark of Northern valor. Let us call this the high-water mark of the rebellion.”

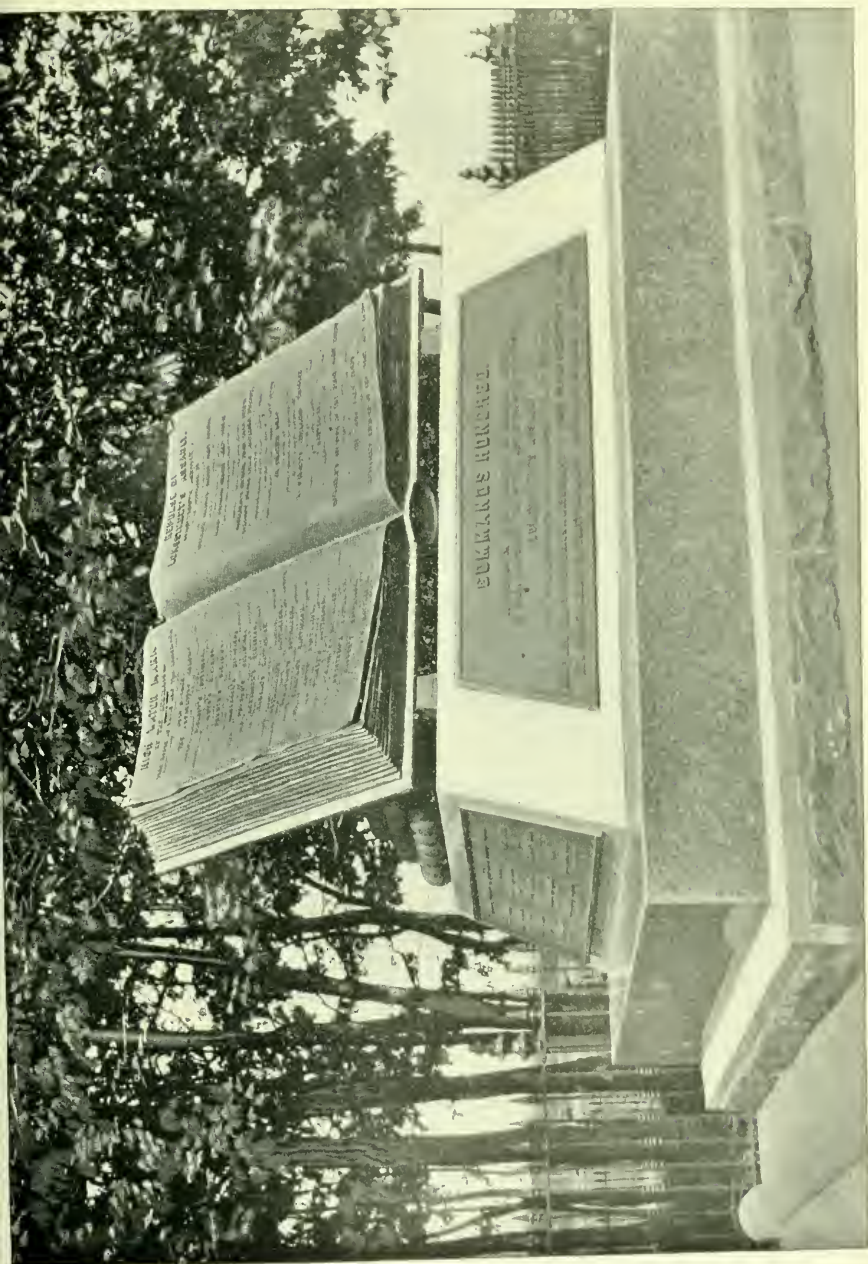
What is called the “bloody angle” was the angle made by Pickett's line crossing the two stone walls. At the northernmost crossing he was stopped. This was the “rocky bulwark” upon which the invasion dashed itself to pieces. The corner was held by Webb's Brigade of the Second Corps, July 3d, 1863.

The inscription on the Right Hand Page of the bronze book is as follows:—

### “REPULSE OF LONGSTREET'S ASSAULT.

Longstreet's assault was repulsed by Webb's, Hall's, and Harrow's Brigade of Gibbon's Division, Second Army Corps.

Smyth's and Willard's Brigades, and portions of Carroll's Brigade of Hay's Division, Second Army Corps, and the First Massachusetts Sharpshooters (unattached).





Portion of Rowley's and Stannard's Brigades of Doubleday's Division, First Army Corps.

Hazard's Second Army Corps Artillery Brigade consisting of Woodruff's, Arnold's, Cushing's, Brown's and Rorty's Batteries, assisted on the right by Hill's, Edgell's, Eakin's, Bancroft's, Dilger's, and Taft's Batteries on Cemetery Hill and on the left by

Cowan's, Fitzhugh's, Parson's, Wheeler's, Thomas', Daniels' and Sterling's Batteries and McGilvery's Artillery Brigade, consisting of Thompson's, Phillips', Hart's, Cooper's, Dow's and Ames' Batteries, and by Hazlett's Battery on Little Round Top and supported by Doubleday's Division of the First Army Corps, which was in position on the immediate left of the troops assaulted.

The Third Army Corps moved up to within supporting distance on the left, and Robinson's Division of the First Army Corps moved into position to support the right."

#### INSCRIPTION ON HIGH-WATER MARK TABLET.

Left Hand Page:—

##### "HIGH-WATER MARK OF THE REBELLION.

This copse of trees was the Landmark toward which Longstreet's Assault was Directed July 3, 1863."

Then follow the names of the organizations composing the assaulting column in which were portions of 4 Divisions of Infantry, and 43 batteries of Artillery.

#### IMPRESSIONS AFTER MANY YEARS.

Captain Nathan Appleton, in a note dated Boston, January 29, 1901, observes in relation to the monuments:—

"After the G. A. R. encampment at Philadelphia in September, 1899, I made the trip to Gettysburg. I had but very little time; enough to see the monument of the Fifth

Mass. Battery, which was not far from that of the Ninth Mass. Before going to them I stopped at the High-Water Mark Tablet, and saw the name of our Battery on one page of the bronze book. It was, of course, to me a very interesting occasion. I ordered of the photographer of the battlefield some photographs which were sent me, one of which is now with the other illustrations of the history of the Battery. I was sorry I had so little time to visit the historic field."

Of the Cemetery at Gettysburg Corporal Thomas E. Chase writes under date of September 24, 1900, soon after his visit:—

"I visited the Cemetery at Gettysburg *alone* at five a. m., and stood by the graves of two of our Battery who fell there, and my thoughts went back to the day I saw them fall. There they sleep, in those acres of graves and monuments,

'Nor couldst thou wish couch more magnificent.'

'No rumor of the foe's advance,  
Now sweeps upon the wind,  
No troubled thought at midnight haunts,  
Of loved ones left behind.'"

---

## FROM GETTYSBURG TO THE RAPPAHANNOCK.

On the Fourth of July, it was ascertained by a reconnoissance that the confederate general Lee was still holding a strong position in the Centre of the line, behind his fortifications on Seminary Ridge, and had wholly withdrawn from the front of the Right of the Army of the Potomac. He was slowly withdrawing his Left wing which menaced our Right. On the morning of July 5th our forces became aware that the rebels were in full retreat by the Fairfield and Chambersburg roads, and the Sixth Corps was ordered

down the Fairfield road in pursuit of them while those making their way south by the Cashtown road and the mountain passes, were looked after by the Union cavalry.

The Right flank of the Army of the Potomac crossed the Antietam on July 12th. The rebels abandoned Hagerstown as Meade came up, but were reported to be standing at bay, being strongly posted on the Hagerstown and Williamsport road. That evening General Meade held a council of war on the subject of attack and decided in the negative, calling forth that shrewd remark, by telegraph, of General Halleck after having been informed of the procedure.

"It is proverbial that Councils of War never fight. . . . Do not let the enemy escape."

July 13th in the night the enemy silently stole away across the Potomac River on their way back to Virginia and during the progress south of both armies they maintained an attitude of watchfulness towards and close proximity to our troops; an attitude which was preserved after each had reached the southernmost point for quite ten months with never a pitched battle, nor an encounter of more importance than the slight trouble at Manassas Gap where Lee's trains claimed for the moment the right of way and then once more stole away in the gloaming.

When the Army of the Potomac moved across country to Williamsport, said to be in pursuit of the enemy, but acknowledged by all to be too far in the rear to be able to make up the time lost, overtake them and prevent their going wherever they felt inclined, Meade had no troops at his command which he could use to head them off; Washington still requiring the same number for protection. Yet, although the army lacked the stimulus of a sure prospect of soon overtaking the flying foe, the future with its hope deferred cast no shadows before, and it is said that between the Antietam and Williamsport crossing the open country



its columns produced one of those magnificent scenic effects so often described but so rarely seen, of a triumphant army moving in "battle array," each Corps, Division, Brigade and battery in line with colors flying and bayonets gleaming in the sun; in the centre moving on two parallel roads, the red artillery ready for instant action.

The Army, like an immense glacier, swept everything before it, leaving nothing standing that it could conveniently convert into use for man or beast, tearing away every fence and wall, every stalk of ripe grain growing in the great fields. Desolation they left behind them, and in their hearts as they approached once more the great river, the painful realization that there was nothing to which to look forward in the way of that decisive action, which was so earnestly desired to end the war, nothing but to march on.

They crossed the Potomac at Berlin, taking the course down the east side of the Blue Ridge to Manassas Gap, and after a short stop and fight there pushed on by way of Warrenton to the Rappahannock River, having the rebel army abreast of them most of the time, till they all settled down on the banks of the rivers in the vicinity of Fredericksburg.

In the mean time the fires of southern invasion having been stamped out in Pennsylvania broke out more fiercely farther north. There was actual riot and the presence of concealed arms in the city of New York, and sufficient cause for anxiety in Boston to warrant the taking of precautionary measures by the Governor of the Commonwealth. On July 14th, three days after the triumphant march across country, bound south, the New York Seventh Regiment then at Frederick City Md., was ordered to New York to report to Major-General Wool at the St. Nicholas Hotel, for the purpose of suppressing the riot. The situation was so critical that the regiment was transported via Amboy, an intimation having been received that the rails

would be taken up at or near Newark. There was a growing discontent in the North with the methods of the leaders at Washington and at the headquarters of the Army, and this feeling was reflected in the rank and file of the Army to an alarming extent. It was reported that 5000 men deserted the Army of the Potomac between May and August, 1863. Other offenses, such as insubordination, sleeping on post, robberies and murders of comrades, officers, and civilians were tried before courts-martial, which were ordered to convene in every Division. The sentences for desertion when reviewed by the President were in most cases commuted from orders for execution to hard labor for six months or two years, forfeiture of three months' pay, or making good the time lost by desertion. On July 16th the War Department issued the following order:—

WAR DEPARTMENT  
ADJUTANT GENERAL'S OFFICE,  
WASHINGTON, July 16, 1863.

General Orders

No. 222

The reward of five dollars, with transportation and reasonable expenses, for the arrest and delivery at the nearest military post or depot, of any officer or private soldier, fit for duty, who may be found absent from his command without just cause is hereby increased to *ten dollars*.

By Order of the Secretary of War.

E. D. TOWNSEND,  
*Assistant Adjutant General.*

Now let the officers and men resume the story of the Battery:—

### THE MARCH BACK.

July 4, 1863. Rainy. The Battery was ordered to the rear to unhitch and rest. Marched about 4 p. m. July 5th across the river to Littlestown having drawn 12 new horses. Abandoned two horses. Arrived about ten o'clock. Still

raining. Serg't Peacock wrote home:—"The mud is awful; everything wet through and no dry clothing. I hope the next fight will end the war."

When the men hitched up on the 5th, it was supposed that the object was to find a better camp, but we found a worse one. Remained in camp at Littlestown all day and night. On the morning of the 7th we were turned out at 3 o'clock and left at 5 a. m. Marched toward Frederick, Md., by way of Taneytown, and camped for the night about 3 miles south of Woodboro. Passed through Littlestown, Taneytown, Woodboro, etc., and about ten o'clock turned off the road into a field and went into park at five yards intervals. Unhitched and unharnessed and fed with hay, watered, made coffee, and turned in for the night. Raining hard.

July 8, 1863. Morning. Raining tremendously. We had roll and water call, then looked out for ourselves. At 10 a. m. orders came to hitch up, which after some growling we did in all the rain, and left for Frederick City, reaching our old camping ground of June 27th about noon. Pitched our tents and intended stopping there for some time.

### ONE OF THE WOUNDED.

From Corporal Chase's Diary:—"July 8, 1863. My arm doing very well. Boiled meat and broth for dinner; beef tea instead of coffee or tea for supper. Weather cool and comfortable.

July 9. Packed up, and all those who were able walked to Gettysburg to await transportation. Arrived at Gettysburg about 10 a. m. Saw about 100 rebel prisoners. Received refreshments from the Christian Commission. The people are all very kind, and welcomed us heartily. Left Gettysburg at 5 p. m. A very long train of cars loaded to their utmost with every form of mutilated humanity. Left on the Hanover Branch of the Northern

Central R. R., passed through Little Oxford, Hanover, and Rock Glen. Weather very warm p. m. About thirteen car loads of wounded soldiers in the train. Many citizens aboard who had been up to see the field!

July 10, 1863. On the railroad all last night, no sleep. Arrived in Baltimore just at sunrise. Cars halted in the street for about three hours, and were pulled by horses through Central Avenue. We finally halted and had a plentiful supply of refreshments,—bread, meat, coffee, lemonade, etc., and then proceeded to the Vol. Citizens Hospital, near Union dock, West's building, where we had our wounds dressed. Left the hospital about 1 p. m., and took cars for Philadelphia. Left Baltimore about 3 p. m. Fell in with the 5th Del. Reg't. at Havre de Grace. Heartily welcomed and very kindly treated by the people on the route. Refreshments quite abundant, and even the little boys as busy as beavers filling our canteens. The people of Wilmington Del., gave us a very enthusiastic welcome; coming out liberally with refreshments and kind words and deeds. Train drove at a furious rate, and reached Philadelphia at half-past ten p. m. Went into the Citizens Vol. Hospital just in front of the depot, and were provided with a good supper and a comfortable bed. Quite a pleasant ride today. Weather warm but not uncomfortable.

July 11, 1863. A comfortable night's rest last night, a good breakfast of soup, flour bread, butter, and coffee this morning. Left the Citizens Volunteer Hospital about 1 p. m., and went to the U. S. A. General Hospital,—'Summit' house,—on the Darby road. Took bed 14 in the 1st Ward. Took a bath, changed all my 'sojer' clothes for the ghostly garb of an invalid. 'Ward One' intended for 87 beds, but 'business' is so 'driving' that about 100 were crowded in. The whole number of patients in the entire hospital 650 tonight, one hundred more than the hospital is intended to accommodate. Weather very warm.

July 12, 1863. Sunday. 'Brushed up,' and obtained a 'pass' until 9 p. m. Left after dinner and took a walk around 'the suburbs,' and returned just at tea time. A comfortable night's rest on a comfortable bed last night. Weather to-day warm. My wound doing very well.

July 13. In quarters all day. Wrote three letters. Weather cool, cloudy, and comfortable.

July 14. Obtained a 'pass' and went to the city a. m. with W. H. Shrove of the 12th U. S. I. and Morris Clark 40th New York. Went through the city from the Schuylkill to the Delaware, and passed through some of the principal streets. The people treated us like heroes, and our trip was a pleasant one. Returned to Summit House about 5 p. m.

News of a great riot in New York City.

July 15, 1863. News this morning of the fall of Port Hudson. Remained in quarters all day.

July 16. Took a walk about two miles on the Darby road p. m. All the patients allowed a 'pass' until 5 p. m. same as yesterday.

July 20, 1863. Obtained a 'pass' and went to the city about 10 a. m., returned about half past 5 p. m. Visited Independence Hall, and was very much interested in the antiquities there. Bought a blouse for \$3.25 and a cap for \$1.12. Weather very fine.

July 21st. In quarters all day. Sent a recommendation for a furlough. 22d. Received a furlough for 15 days.

July 23. Went to the New England Association Rooms and obtained transportation to New York. Left Philadelphia at 11 a. m. and arrived in New York at 2 p. m. Procured transportation to Boston by the Stonington line from U. S. Quartermaster. Left New York in the steamer 'Commonwealth' at 5 p. m. A very smooth passage through the sound. Berth 164.

July 24, 1863. Arrived in Roxbury at 6 a. m."

Corporal Chase was sent from Philadelphia to the convalescent camp near Alexandria, Va., and later was placed on detached duty there when it was made a camp of distribution, and remained on duty there until discharged at the expiration of his term of service, December 14, 1864.

#### THE CAMP AT FREDERICK CITY.

July 9, 1863. Ordered to hitch up this morning at 7 a. m. Got into column. Marched at 12 o'clock through Frederick City on to Boonsboro' and a mile beyond where we found ourselves outside the picket lines; came back and went into park half a mile this side, at the foot of South Mountain Pass. It being 7 o'clock in the evening we watered, fed with hay and turned in. Most of the Army was in our vicinity.

On the 10th the Battery was ordered to join the Artillery Brigade of the Fifth Corps, commanded by Captain Augustus P. Martin.

Turned out at daylight, fed the horses and hitched up. Marched at 8 a. m. and overtook the Corps at Delaware Mills on the Williamsport road. Came up and went into line at 2 p. m. Parked just across Antietam Creek. Third Mass. Battery in position 58 yards in our front. No firing occurred here during the day, but firing was heard about 11 on our right. Marched to Roxbury Mills at 4 p. m.

July 11, 1863, the Fifth Corps formed line of battle and advanced in line across the fields about a mile (see p. 682 "In Battle Array"), and threw out skirmishers, but finding no Rebs made short advances and long halts during the day. When the Fifth Corps formed in line and we left park at 8 a. m., we took position on the right of our old position, about one mile, on a line with the Third Mass. Battery. Not having fired a gun we left here about 3 p. m., and advanced with the Corps  $3\frac{1}{2}$  miles. We then took another position, unharnessed, fed with clover and turned in. The morning of July 12th was misty. We left park



about 11 o'clock a. m., advanced about a mile, were then moved by the left flank a mile or two, and halted in a large field. It rained in torrents for an hour while we stopped. While in the field we took on some grain. Soon after started again, and went into park for the night. Unharnessed, then went foraging for the horses. We are all badly fatigued, with our marches and battles. Since the 13th of June, (1863) we had marched two hundred miles, much of the way over bad mountain roads, and have had rainy weather nearly one-third of the time.

July 13, 1863. The Rebs are reported to be evacuating, but we are not doing anything to find out. Turned out this morning at 2 o'clock. No breakfast for the men. Captain awfully angry. Left and took position at daylight a little farther to the right in an open lot, rather exposed. Hon. Henry Wilson came along. No firing occurred during the day. One wounded horse abandoned. At night we unharnessed, watered, cleaned and fed; then turned in. Commenced raining about 8½ p. m.; continued to do so at intervals through the night. The next day at noon we advanced to near Falling Water, 1½ miles of Downs ville within the enemy's lines and drew up into line. Finding no enemy went into park and made ourselves comfortable for the night. General Lee had crossed the river early that morning.

July 15th we turned out at half past three a. m. and left at 4. Marched all day, through Keedysville, crossed South Mountain by the Middletown pike, returning over the same road we travelled the day before. Passed through Deaconsville and over the mountains into Middletown valley, and about 5 o'clock went into park near Burkittsville. Watered and went after hay, then fed and cleaned off. After a while we eat supper and turned in for the night. A very hard day's work. Abandoned six horses.

July 16. Aroused about half past three and got started

about five, then marched about  $5\frac{1}{2}$  miles through Middletown and Burkittsville to one mile from Berlin, Md., and within about four miles of Harper's Ferry. Here we made camp, pitched tents, etc. Horses pretty well played out. Officers and men pretty tired.

Harnessed up about 4 o'clock p. m. on Friday, July 17th. Left park, crossed the Potomac with the Fifth Corps, and encamped a mile or so from the river at Lovettsville. River high. Seventy-three pontoons in the bridge. The entire Army crossed in three columns, which from the high ground on either side presented an imposing array. Halted for the night at Lovettsville.

July 18th we turned out at  $2\frac{1}{2}$  a. m. and left soon after. Marched about 9 miles, through Bowlersville, and went into camp at 11 a. m. near Wheatland, and pitched our tents. Twenty-five horses were brought up by a squad of men left behind at Berlin, which made a welcome addition to our number. Some of the teams had to be cut down to four horses at this time, and the sergeants were dismounted. We were marching very rapidly. Fifteen miles a day was called good marching, but during this campaign we had marched fifty miles in forty-three hours.

#### REPORT OF CAPTAIN PHILLIPS.

HD. QRS. BATTERY E,  
MASS. ART'Y,  
July 18, 1863.

In compliance with circular of July 16th from Inspector Gen'l's Office A. P., I respectfully report:—

Present July 16th, 4 officers, 99 men.

Lost, Battle of Gettysburg, 1 officer wounded, 4 men killed, 16 wounded, horses killed 40, wounded and since died and abandoned 9.

My Ordnance requisition in possession of Lieut. Follett

Ord. Off. gives all the ordnance required absolutely necessary, 4 sets Lead Harness.

On hand, 101 serviceable art'y horses, 12 quartermaster horses, 3 four horse wagons, 13 unserviceable art'y horses, mostly wounded.

CHARLES A. PHILLIPS,  
*Capt. Battery E.*  
*Mass. Art'y.*

### REPORT OF CAPTAIN PHILLIPS.

HD. QUARTERS BATTERY E,  
MASS. ART'Y.,  
July 18, 1863.

LIEUT. P. F. NASON, *A. A. A. G.*

*Lieutenant.*

In compliance with circular of July 17th Hd. Qrs. A. P., I respectfully report my men in good physical condition, there being only one case of sickness, and that slight.

I have 101 good serviceable artillery horses, and am in good condition for a march.

I am very Respectfully

Your ob't. serv't,

CHARLES A. PHILLIPS, *Capt.,*  
*Battery E, Mass. Art'y.*

---

Sunday, July 19, 1863. Turned out at 3 o'clock a. m., hitched up and started about 6. Marched with the Fifth Corps through and 4 miles beyond Unionville, and went into camp at ten o'clock near Purcellsville. Turned in about 8 p. m. Corporal Shackley recorded his opinion on this day that—"It was a great mistake that we did not attack the Rebs on Monday (July 6), for I believe we

should have destroyed Lee's army. But perhaps it is all for the best, though it is hard to think so."

July 20. Marched at sunrise, passed Watson's Mills, Valley Mills, Uniontown, Greenville Mills, and parked near Rectortown on a hill.

July 21. Received 10 men from Battery D, 5th U. S. Artillery. The next day inspection was ordered for 2.30 p. m., and harnesses and carriages were washed, but at 12 m. we had orders to pack up, and in 50 minutes we were on the road. Marched to near Rectortown over good roads. Blackberries very thick. Went into camp for the night. Some of the men had fried confiscated sheep for supper.

#### RETURNS OF BATTERY E, MASS. ART'Y, JULY 22, 1863.

Number of men on the rolls .....	117
“ “ “ present .....	86
“ required to fill the Battery .....	30
Number of men temporarily attached from 10th N. Y. Ind'p't Battery .....	17
“ present .....	14
Number of men temporarily attached from vari- ous regiments .....	10
“ present .....	10

CHARLES A. PHILLIPS, *Capt.*  
*Battery E, Mass. Art'y.*

---

#### THE FIGHT AT MANASSAS GAP.

July 23, 1863, we left Rectortown with the Fifth Corps at 5 a. m., passed through Piedmont and by a station on the Manassas railroad and went into camp at 3 o'clock in Manassas Gap for the night. The roads were rocky and very bad. Wagons were left behind. The Third Corps

was ahead of us. There was some fighting in the distance, and we stood watching the infantry manœuvre with the enemy. In about an hour we moved ahead about 200 yards, unharnessed and lay down under the open canopy of heaven and went to sleep. Two horses were abandoned.

The next day we advanced about one mile into the Gap, and went into line with the expectation of fighting, but after some hours' delay, returned to our last halting place for the night. Saw seven dead of the enemy.

On the 25th we left the Gap at 4 a. m., turned to the right, passed over the mountains and went back to a place called Orleans, on the way to Warrenton via Farrelsville and Barbour's Cross Roads. Here we encamped again for the night having made about 15 miles. A caisson in Lieut. Rittenhouse's Battery blew up ahead of us. (This was Battery D, 5th U. S.)

July 26th. Marched through Orleans to within three miles of Warrenton, and went into camp to stop all night. During the week we had passed over many miles of road bordered by blackberry bushes, loaded with most delicious berries, which were better than medicine for the men. Abandoned two horses.

July 27. Called up at 3.30 a. m. The men made coffee, fried steak, eat breakfast and then marched about 5 miles through Warrenton to about three miles beyond, and camped. Abandoned 2 horses, turned in eight. Here we received many supplies which we much needed. (In July, 1863, Monocacy Junction, Md. was made the grand depot for the Army of the Potomac.)

July 28th. Routed out again about the usual hour. Had fried fresh pork for breakfast and went blackberrying. Remained in camp in a large field surrounded by the 5 batteries of the Art'y Brigade until Aug. 3d. Weather very hot. Received 25 horses July 30. The men had stewed beans for dinner. About this time a subscription was made

and some brass musical instruments were procured, and a few of the men practised under the leadership of Bugler James Winters. Lack of facilities, however, prevented the attainment of any important results. It was on July 31st that the brass instruments for the Band came to the Battery. On that day Lieut. Scott, absent on leave at Newport, R. I., made the following entry in his diary:—

“Friday, July 31, 1863. Lieut. Lull discharged to receive a captain’s commission in Heavy Artillery.

Officers of Battery (Fifth Mass.)

Phillips, Captain.

Scott Lieut. 1st Senior.

Blake “ “ Junior.

Spear “ 2d Senior.

Appleton “ “ Junior.”

#### LIEUT. FREDERICK A. LULL.

Lieut. Frederick A. Lull became captain of Company K, Second Mass. Heavy Artillery, which had just been recruited, July 31, 1863, and on December 15, 1863, Serg’t. Otis B. Smith, having been discharged for promotion, was commissioned First Lieutenant in the same company, serving at various points in Virginia and North Carolina.

Captain Lull died in Cambridge, Mass. March 22, 1893, and is buried in the Cambridge Cemetery.

---

There was a Battery inspection August 2, 1863, in the forenoon. On Sunday the 3d, we, with the Artillery Brigade hitched up and moved camp a little to the left of our old position. Weather very hot. All busy fitting up camp, building arbors and stables, preparing for a long stay, but at night marching orders came, and we marched till one o’clock the next morning, and went into camp, but moved it later in the day to a place selected for us by



Captain A. P. Martin about 4 miles from Bealton, which we laid out in good style, putting up an arbor over the street between the tents. Soft bread for supper.

August 7, 1863, there was a heavy rain and our arbor fell in about half past six o'clock p. m. and smashed in all the tents on the lower side. Private John E. Dyer being in one it came near smashing him. Three beams fell on him.

August 8, 1863, we were turned out in the morning by the welcome sound of pack up and hitch up. Without any hurry we broke camp at 7 a. m., and left at the head of the line of batteries. Marched to Beverly Ford to guard the crossing of the Rappahannock River where the 2d Division had been for three days. We took position on the banks of the river; four of the pieces, the Right and Centre sections, in breastworks.

## CHAPTER XVIII.

### THE BATTLE OF RAPPAHANNOCK STATION.

BY WAY OF

THE FIGHT AT BRISTOE, NOVEMBER 7, 1863.

"For we shall still find Hope shining, be it for fond invitation, be it for anger and menace; as a mild, heavenly light it shone; as a red conflagration it shines; . . . and goes not out at all, since Desperation itself is a kind of Hope."

—THOMAS CARLYLE.

Thus the opposing armies gradually settled down in their various positions assuming an attitude of mutual watchfulness. All along the line of the Orange and Alexandria Railroad, and on the north bank of the Rappahannock, lay the Union army, the Fifth Corps in a position to control Beverly Ford. Their opponents were stationed at Kelly's Ford on the Rappahannock; in the neighborhood of Stephensburg and Culpeper, with a large force at Madison Court House and at Gordonsville the junction of the Orange and Alexandria and the Virginia Central Railroad; a Division of cavalry at Chancellorsville; an infantry Brigade and a Battery of artillery at Fredericksburg.

There was discontent, discouragement, and dissatisfaction in both armies, and disagreement, disparagement, doubt and recrimination among the chiefs in the councils on both sides. The President of the United States having been informed that a portion of the rebel army had been detached and sent to Tennessee, urged upon General Halleck an immediate move upon Lee's forces by the Army of the Potomac.

Notes and Letters of Captain Charles A. Phillips, Lieuts. Henry D. Scott, Peleg W. Blake and Nathan Appleton, Sergt. William H. Peacock, Corp'l Jonas Shackley, Privates John E. Dyer and Louis E. Pattison.

---

August 9, 1863, on the banks of the Rappahannock at Beverly Ford. The horses of the Battery were grazing for three quarters of an hour in the morning and the men eat soft tack and apple sauce for supper. The pontoon bridge, which was laid the previous day for a Brigade of the Second Division of the First Corps to cross the river, was taken up, the Brigade having returned. The enemy's cavalry pickets were in the woods on the other side.

August 10th, in the morning there was a short drill on the manual of the piece. Four of the guns were in earth-works erected two months previous, but the other two were unprotected. From the hill on which the Battery was encamped, about half a mile below the head of the Rappahannock River they could see for a mile beyond the river's bank, and catch a glimpse occasionally of the enemy's cavalry pickets in the edge of the woods. They were on one of General Pope's battlegrounds, and there were no trees to shade the camp. The heat through the day was intense, but the nights were cool, and there was a heavy dew which did not disappear before 7 o'clock a. m. Flies and mosquitoes were not as thick as at Harrison's Landing, but numberless grasshoppers and crickets hopped about cheerfully by day, and crept over the sleepers by night.

August 12th it rained, and Dyer went down to Ben. West's wagon to sleep, as the water ran under his tent in a steady stream.

August 16th and 17th, 1863, the Battery was inspected by Captain Augustus P. Martin and staff in an adjoining field, after which they drilled some in his presence. There was a fine breeze at 1 p. m.

## LETTER OF LIEUT. BLAKE.

"BEVERLY FORD, RAPPAHANNOCK RIVER,  
Aug. 16, 1863.

Pickets are being thrown across the river today. The Second Army Corps has started for Washington. . . . We are under marching orders. Three days' rations cooked, to be kept on hand. It is very hot weather here, but I manage to keep quite comfortable by keeping in the shade and doing nothing but sleeping and smoking.

How do the drafted like their new occupation? Have they all got substitutes? There were three hundred conscripts came into our Corps last week. Out of the three hundred, two hundred and ninety-nine were substitutes. One drafted man! There is not much raised in this country, and it is very rough on an army that has to depend on what they can forage, when there is nothing to forage."

---

We had Battery drill now every day. In a letter by Captain Phillips, dated August 20, 1863, speaking of the inspection of the 17th, he said:—

"While I was waiting for Captain Martin, Gen. Sykes rode by and put me through an informal inspection. I think however, that we can stand being looked at, and I am willing to stand a comparison with any other battery in the army.

I am happy to state that there is a cornfield close by, and we can have an occasional meal of green corn as well as you.

We have a table to eat on, and when this is set off by our table cloth, cups and saucers, we really look quite civilized.

Blackberries are among the things that were. Our great luxury nowadays is a swim in the Rappahannock, albeit it is outside the picket lines."

## LETTER OF SERG'T. PEACOCK.

CAMP AT BEVERLY FORD, VA.

Aug. 20, 1863.

"We had a hard time of it on our march from Gettysburg to Warrenton; over 50 horses dead on the road, mostly from exhaustion, and from the time we left Falmouth, June 13th to our arrival at this place, we lost over one hundred horses, 7 men killed, and 15 wounded, with many left sick at hospitals, and on the road. Our Battery here is behind breastworks, guarding the Ford, but we are under marching orders, and expect to move at any moment. It is reported the enemy is falling back."

---

Aug. 21, 1863, William F. Nye came to camp with a few stores, and Lieut. F. A. Lull left, to be captain of another battery. 24th, Joseph Alton came back from the Hospital. 27th, Three of the old men and one recruit arrived at the Battery. 28th was the anniversary of 2d Bull Run. 29th, Five deserters were shot, and the Fifth Corps was paraded to witness the execution. [They were said to have deserted from the 118th Pennsylvania Regiment, but Lieut.-Col. William H. Powell, historian of the Fifth Corps, is authority for saying that although assigned to it they had never joined any regiment, so that that organization should not have the obloquy forever attached to it. It was said that one of them had enlisted 12 times.] On the same day three hundred conscripts arrived from the District of Columbia, and it was thought, the weather being good for marching, that the army was waiting for the required number of conscripts to arrive.

August 31, 1863, Second Lieutenant Nathan Appleton arrived from Boston in the evening, and joined the Battery. Dyer's Diary mentions him as "a new lieutenant."

## LIEUT. APPLETON'S LETTER HOME.

"CAMP BY BEVERLY FORD,  
Sept. 1, 1863.

Tuesday Morning.

Here I am, at last, actually a soldier in camp. I hoped to get here by last Saturday, but my horses only got in Washington then, so that I waited until Monday to start for the front. The time was passed in Washington quite pleasantly. I met one or two classmates, saw the Abercrombies, dined one day with Pelham Curtis at the Engineer Brigade, loafed around town, etc.

Early yesterday morning I left Washington with horses, man, and baggage, en route for camp. Such confusion as a government railroad is! I got down as far as Warrenton Junction all right, having bade good bye to Locklyn, who brought the horses on from Boston, at Alexandria, and there I was told that I could not get my horses on any farther. I sent my trunk on to Bealton. Joe, my colored servant, and myself mounted our steeds and proceeded to find our way to camp.

The country around showed the devastations of war. Dead horses and mules, the remains of burnt cars, broken wagons, &c. &c., occasionally meeting the view. We followed up the railroad as far as Bealton, and there struck out for the camp of the Fifth Mass. Battery. We rode along until finally I came up to the Head Quarters of General George Sykes commanding the Fifth Corps, who directed me to the Battery. I found it without difficulty, and appeared there just before sundown, as the officers were sitting down to tea. I soon made myself at home. My first night was passed on the ground in the Captain's tent, with a goodly array of blankets, coats, etc., both above and below me. I awoke feeling perfectly well, no chills, no rheumatism, or anything disagreeable. I had to put my section (two guns,



since 1873 called a "platoon") through the manual of the piece this morning, which you can imagine I did in style.

Afternoon: Rode over and saw George Barnard (captain in the 18th Mass. Regt. on Gen. Charles Griffin's staff) this morning. Saw General Barnes, Colonel Hayes, Captain Martin and other birds.

Our Battery is situated right on the Rappahannock River a little above Beverly Ford, and where the river is divided into two branches. The country all about is beautiful, and the weather, thus far, delightful; warm and sunny during the day, but cold and almost frosty in the night. It is getting autumnal very fast. The whole army is in very quiet and comfortable quarters, and looks as if it might remain so for some time, though we are now under orders to be in readiness for any movement. The Confeds. are somewhere over the river. You had better send any little things that you may want to, by mail. Letters and any kind of newspapers are acceptable. I should like a Boston paper once a week at least.

I wish you would send me a pair of wash leather or common thin buckskin gloves, not gauntlets. I ought to have bought a pair.

September 3, 1863. Officer of the day for the first time. Got through tolerably well."

#### NOTES OF CAPT. NATHAN APPLETON.

MARCH 12, 1901.

"When I joined the Fifth Massachusetts Battery I was twenty and a half years old, which seems to us now very like a boy. I was just out of Harvard, as my good mother said I could not join the army until I had completed my collegiate education. I tried not to put on any airs, but simply to do my duty as a good boy, and I think I then was a very good one.

As I look back now after nearly thirty-eight years of an extremely varied life in many parts of the world, I can think of nothing that gives me a greater thrill and tingle of youth than the recollection of a battery drill when I was a chief of section.

The Battery had six pieces and six caissons, each with six horses. I can see the guidon rushing over the field to take his proper place as the order was given! I can hear the clarion notes of the buglers, and the commands of the captain, Charles Appleton Phillips, than whom there was no braver, or more intrepid artillery officer or soldier in the army.

When the Battery was in line and limbered, the orders might be 'Forward, march!'—'Halt!'—'Action Front!' when the pieces would be unlimbered, and go through the drill of the piece. After that they would be limbered either to the front or rear for some other manœuvres. A favorite one was 'Countermarch, march!' The order from the Captain would be repeated with sabre in the air, by the chief of section. There were a good many evolutions of changing front which Captain Phillips liked to execute.

I had two good horses, one of them exceptionally handsome and spirited, but with a light mouth and easy to handle. There was no assemblage of lookers on, as about fifteen years later, when I was captain of the famous Battery A of the Militia of Massachusetts I had on Boston Common and at the camp at Framingham, of fair ladies and appreciative urchins, but in Virginia we felt and knew we were there for a purpose, and we seemed to have the whole country for our field of manœuvres, that is to say from the great rivers on the east, to the Blue Ridge and the Alleghanies, and so down south to Richmond which was always our objective point."

---

Sept. 2, 1863. Wm. F. Nye arrived in the afternoon with

a load of sutlers' stores,—apples, potatoes, butter, ale, etc. Conscripts continued to come, and the number was estimated at 2000, designed to fill out the Regular Infantry then in New York, where they were sent to quell the riot.

Sept. 3. Captain Phillips wrote home with relation to Lieut. Appleton:—"he is gradually breaking in. I am very well pleased with him, and think he will make a good officer. Captain Martin is trying to get permission to have some target shooting. I went out with him yesterday to measure off the ground."

#### LETTER HOME OF LIEUT. APPLETON.

"September 4, 1863.

I write you on some paper which I bought the other day at Alexandria. I got it for the sake of a map of the country which came with it, the whole done up in a sort of combination portfolio arrangement.

I am getting now quite acclimated, and feel more at home in my work. At first I felt very awkward and green. The men are all very well drilled, and well-disposed fellows generally. We have Battery drill every other day, and then I have to take charge of the Centre section. Drill at the manual of the piece every day, and occasional drills in harnessing the horses. There is a good deal of pleasant variety in the duties of a Battery; attending stable calls, taking the horses to the river to be watered &c. When I am officer of the day I get up at five,—other days at six. We live sumptuously. Nice meat and vegetables for dinner, with a good pudding. We have three dogs belonging to the Battery, one funny little fellow named 'Dixie,' captured in a house in Chancellorsville. The horses, also, are well. 'Folko' is much admired. They are rapidly getting used to bivouacking out in the open air. I rode over this morning and saw Inman Barnard, (For many years the right hand man of James

Gordon Bennett in Paris,) who has come out to stay with his brother, Captain George M. Barnard Jr.

Went to the camp of the 18th Mass. and saw Weston (George Fiske Weston, Harvard class of 1860, died of wounds received at Rappahannock Station) and also Colonel Sherwin of the 22d. Plenty of good fellows all around us. They are trying to get a permit for all the batteries to have some target practice. My friend Stephen H. Phillips, who was in Washington the other day, came out yesterday evening to pay his brother a visit. He is here now,—going home tomorrow. He said that he came along from Alexandria in the cars with Colonel Theodore Lyman who was going out to take his place on General Meade's staff. A good paper to send me is the 'Gazette,' as it has the week's news, including that of society in Boston. As for any news, we hear little of it here, and don't care much, though we get plenty of Philadelphia and Washington papers."

---

September 4th. Nye started for Washington.

September 5th a party of officers including those at Division Head Quarters, who came to return the call of the day before, rode over to Sulphur Springs. They found that the Hotel had been burned by the rebels, but they drank the water and had a most delightful ride. Captain Phillips and his brother were of the party, also Lieuts. Blake and Appleton. There was no drill that day. The ammunition was overhauled and harnesses cleaned.

#### APPLETON'S ACCOUNT OF THE RIDE.

"We went over to one of the White Sulphur Springs in Fauquier county, which you can see on the map is about midway on a straight line from Rappahannock Station to Warrenton. It must have been a great resort for the young F. F. V.s, male and female, a few years ago. The ruins of a

very large Hotel are there; burnt by the rebs about a year ago. Tall pillars are still standing, with saloons, pavilions, outhouses, fountains &c. in great profusion. The water was decidedly sulphurous. General Birney was there with a good many troops. On the way there we stopped a few moments at the camp of the 16th Mass. and saw some of the officers; among them Lieut. Col. Waldo Merriam then in command. (Killed May 12, 1864, at Spottsylvania.) On the way home we fell in with a Brigade review, and noticed the tattered flags of two Massachusetts regiments. It was a delightful afternoon,—cutting across the fields and roads of old Virginia,—sojers on all sides till you can't rest. Please enclose in your next letter a few labels for me to sew on things. I keep getting blankets, and so I want a few more labels. I am officer of the day, and have to go with the horses to be watered in a few moments; attend feed call; stable call at five, guard mounting later,—which is a sort of dress parade,—and then my duties are over for another two days. There is a funny darkey a few yards from camp, who lives in a log hut. His 'Missis' is about three miles away, one of the Virginia Carters, and he is quite independent, cultivating a little patch of ground. His daughter does washing for us. (This shows that the Virginia Carters who have been immortalized since the war by the popular story 'Colonel Carter of Cartersville,' by F. Hopkinson Smith were then a reality.—'I, George Fairfax Caarter of Caarters Hall, Caartersville, Virginia, Late Colonel C. S. A.' etc. etc.)

I send you a piece of real Confederate money, a two dollar bill, which I got from him the other day."

#### LETTER OF CAPTAIN PHILLIPS.

"CAMP NEAR BEVERLY FORD,  
Sunday, Sept. 6, 1863.

I should think foreign nations by this time would begin

to appreciate the improvements we have been making in artillery. It was an unprecedented thing when we breached Fort Pulaski at 1650 yards, but now we have breached Sumter at twice that distance, and thrown shell five miles. There is very little doubt that in Ordnance, both rifled and smooth-bore, we are ahead of the world. I want to see a further trial of the 15 inch guns. There is a great cry now for putting rifled 100 and 200 pdrs. in their places. I am not at all inclined to fall in with this; for long ranges and for breaching stone walls a rifled shot is undoubtedly the best, but the motion of a vessel in a sea way is sufficient to prevent accuracy at long ranges. A vessel must force the fighting at short range, where the greater weight and velocity of the round ball gives it an advantage. The proper place for iron clads is against other iron clads, not against stone walls. For this purpose I think it is the battering power we want, not the punching power, English ideas to the contrary notwithstanding. The fifteen inch shot has only been tried once against an iron clad—the ‘Atalanta’—and three shots spoiled her, while the heaviest rifled shots from Fort Sumter have not seriously damaged our monitors. Indeed some of the accounts mention the 11 inch smooth bores from the ‘Keokuk’ as the most formidable guns the rebels had in Fort Sumter.”

Appleton’s Letter of September 6th:—“We have just had our Sunday morning inspection, which is quite a big affair. Officers, men, horses, guns, and everything, are all cleaned up on Saturday, and on Sunday morning in full rig are inspected by the Captain, or sometimes by the Brigade commander.”

In a list of things wanted sent to him by Lieut. Appleton may be found the following besides wearing apparel viz. “A photograph album, a mirror about 8 inches, stand up at 45°, a riding whip, boot jack, mucilage or glue, hanging watch-case, pocket calendar, cigar case, ‘Old Farmer’s Al-



manac,' camp chair, chocolate, dressing case, buffalo robe."

Appleton's Diary continued: "September 7th we went off about four miles to try target practice with Rittenhouse's Battery of Regulars. I was introduced to Captain William Jay. Called at the picket line on Weston and Captain Dallas. We found by this day's practice that the table of firing was not correct. A Corps review was going on when we were firing."

---

At the target shooting on September 7th we fired 6 rounds from each piece at ranges from 800 to 2600 yards.

On the 8th, we had drill on the manual of the piece in the forenoon, and in the afternoon Martin's Battery in command of Lieut. Walcott and Captain Gibbs' Battery (1st Ohio Light Battery L) went target shooting, and some of us looked on. The tents arrived.

#### MORE TARGET PRACTICE.

Sept. 9th we went over again and fired five rounds. Made some good shots. This time Battery C, 1st N. Y. Lieut. Clark, commanding, was with us. Clog dancing and singing at Head Quarters in the evening. Joe Clarke, a member of the Battery, was a great clog-dancer. This day Wm. F. Nye arrived with peaches and other stuff, so did our licensed Battery sutler.

On a fly leaf of Appleton's Diary it is stated that in the target practice at Beverly Ford September 7th and 9th, 1863, 3 inch guns were used with Schenkle case shot, combination fuze, and in a letter dated September 14th, Captain Phillips thus describes the targets:—"We have been out target shooting this last week, being allowed ten shots to each gun. Our targets were posted at distances of 850, 1266, 1400, 1600, 1700, and 2600 yards. The target at 850 yds. was a little log house, which was pretty well knocked to pieces before we got through with it. The target at 1400





yds. was hit twice by bullets from the shrapnell, and is claimed by Battery C, 1st N. Y. and by us. The target at 1700 yds. was hit once by us. These targets were pieces of cloth about 4 feet square, held up by two stakes. When we fired at the 1700 yd. target one stake had fallen down, and the mark was a good deal smaller than a man. We call it pretty good shooting to hit that a mile off. I believe we did the best shooting, and the regular battery the poorest. So much for regulars vs. volunteers."

FROM APPLETON'S LETTERS OF SEPT. 9TH  
AND 12TH.

"I intended to begin this epistle last evening after 'Taps,' but we had lots of clog-dancing, singing, &c. in camp, and the evening vanished. The darkey part of the establishment consists of Joe, Henry, Christopher, and my Joe. The latter is in his glory here, and is a great favorite. He can be seen going through the camp with a big meal bag over his shoulders, crying out, 'How are you oats?'—He has already attained the soubriquet of 'Vicksburg' and 'Port Hudson,' to which he rejoins, 'How are you, Richmond?' (The joke was that Joe Hunter whom Lieut. Appleton picked up as a servant in Boston, had just returned with some officer from the victorious campaigns of Vicksburg and Port Hudson.) I have had both of my horses out under fire, and they stand it perfectly. The little beggar would put his nose right on the gun, and the magnificent Folko merely gives a slight start. One of the dogs connected with the Battery is named 'Trusty.' He came out from Massachusetts with them. (See p. 83) . . . September 12th, 1863, the day was very hot and in the afternoon there was a heavy thunder shower. It rained in torrents. The men were out all day, mowing grass for the horses,

and got wet through. When they reached the camp they received a ration of whiskey. There was danger of fever and ague in that locality. Two officers of the 32d Mass. Reg't. dined with us. It was reported that 8000 of our cavalry were at Rappahannock Station, and would cross the river at once, and late in the evening we received an order which said that the Corps must be immediately in readiness to move to support the cavalry, if necessary."

In a letter written on the 12th and 13th Lieut. Appleton says of the officers etc. of the Battery:—"The Captain, Phillips, is a fine fellow, plucky, good natured, bright and gentlemanly. The 1st Lieut. Blake is a funny wag, my tent mate Lieut. Spear is a very pleasant companion, young, neat, bright, energetic, and in all respects a perfectly good fellow." Of the rain he says, "It is delicious to lie half asleep, and hear the rain come patter, patter, against the tent, and occasionally feel a big drop tumble on your face. They have got up at Division Head Quarters, about a mile from our camp, a race course, where they have frequent trials of speed in the Brigades and Divisions &c. to find the fastest horse in the Corps. We had a pair of parallel bars erected in camp for exercising. We have not yet had any grand review. We received with joy the good news from Rosecranz and Burnside. Things are looking well all around. A good war picture struck me the other day, which I think no artist has as yet attempted, viz., the tri-daily performance of watering horses. Imagine the horses standing three or four feet deep in the Rappahannock, some quietly drinking, others splashing about, the men on their backs in all kinds of costumes.

The banks of the river where we are, are very prettily overhung with trees. The line of pickets extends along this side." Of his duties he writes, "I am learning things very fast. A week of practice is worth ten years of theory."

## THE INVALID CORPS.

WAR DEPARTMENT.  
 ADJUTANT GENERAL'S OFFICE,  
 WASHINGTON, Sept. 12, 1863.

## General Orders

No. 307

The following named non-commissioned officers and privates, having been duly examined and declared unfit for further field service, but fit for duty in the Invalid Corps, are hereby transferred from their respective regiments, and companies, to the Invalid Corps, to take effect September 1, 1863, and from and after that date will be dropped from their regimental rolls. Commanding officers of companies to which these men have heretofore belonged, will at once furnish the Provost Marshal General at Washington a descriptive list, clothing account, and complete military history in each case. . . .

Drew John J. Private Company E, 5th Mass. Battery.  
 . . . . .

## LETTER OF SERG'T. W. H. PEACOCK.

"CAMP NEAR BEVERLY FORD, VA.

Sept. 13, 1863.

A Division or more of our troops are over the river today on a reconnoissance, and we are under orders to be ready to move at any moment. Firing is going on only about three miles off as I write this. It may not amount to anything, however. We see Rebels over the river every day. One, a few days ago, drove his horse down to the river, and came over the ford by our picket line as cool as could be. Some of our Battery boys were in swimming at the time, when he drove up to a lieutenant of the picket, and says:—'How are you, Lieutenant? Want to exchange papers? Got a cup of coffee for a fellow?'

They gave him all he wanted, and he put spurs to his horse, and rode back to the rebel camp about four miles away. He said they would fight if only two men were left to do so.

We have considerable trouble with some of the conscripts.



but we can soon govern them. Many of them are hard cases, and do not take kindly to army discipline. An infantry camp near us, has a long pole put up about seven feet or more high, that is kept full of conscripts from morning to night, tied up by their thumbs for punishment."

#### DIARY OF CORPORAL SHACKLEY.

"The reconnoissance of 8000 cavalry went on to Culpeper, the First Corps being with them to support. Heavy firing was heard on the 13th and 14th. On the 15th orders came at 4 p. m., to hold ourselves in readiness to move at a moment's notice, and news came later that the advance had captured three cannon.

September 16, 1863, we turned out at 3 a. m., fed, cleaned, watered, ate breakfast. 'Boots and Saddles' was then sounded. Marched at 5 a. m., crossed on a pontoon bridge just below Beverly Ford, and marched through Brandy Station towards Culpeper Court House, the road running parallel to the railroad, and close to it most of the way. We camped for the night within a mile of Culpeper at 3 p. m. in sight of the town. Turned in at 8 p. m. The Artillery Reserve camp was within a mile of us. Major Freeman McGilvery had been made a full colonel. Marched at daylight the morning of the 17th, passing through the town, and came into position  $2\frac{1}{2}$  miles south of Culpeper. Anniversary of the Battle of Antietam."

#### FROM LIEUT. APPLETON'S LETTER HOME.

Written at the camping ground "Somewhere between Culpeper and Cedar Mountain, Va.

It was a hot and dusty march, and I was very glad to roll myself up in my blanket and turn in for the night (of the 16th, the first day's march) under a good tent, however. You have no idea of the way the infantry straggle on a

march. All along the road you could see them in all stages of exhaustion, but they almost always manage to crawl up to their camps by night. We would keep falling in with dead horses, which had been killed in the cavalry skirmish of last Sunday. The next morning we started off again early to march farther on, first going right through Culpeper. It was fun going through a Virginia town, and seeing the people, and the deserted or closely shut up houses. There was a real southern Hotel there, Court House, etc., and everything was crowded with our soldiers, now and then carrying off with them some rebel prisoners. As we were going by a large house I saw a figure standing there who I thought must be Theodore Lyman, but when I was going by him he looked so strange that I did not know him, nor he me. When I had passed we halted and he came up and asked me if I was not myself, and I told him I were, whereupon we conversed. On the 17th I also met Colonel (Francis A.) Walker. A little before noon we formed 'in Battery,' and the other troops in line of battle quite near, and in plain view of Cedar Mountain on one of the 2d Mass. Regt's old battlegrounds, to await the coming of the enemy, who I guess are nowhere near us, as some of our troops were then encamped on the mountain itself. We have not a very pleasant location for a camp: muddy ground, tall grass, weeds &c. &c."

On the 18th September still in position, the men went after hay outside the pickets. Raced horses all the way.

From Appleton's Letter: Saturday, the 19th:—"Alas, you should see my pretty boots now, after two weeks' service!—muddy, disfigured and scratched with brambles: how changed from those boots with which, elate with hope, and radiant with expectation, I left my home! Last night was cold, and today is bleak: my hand being numbed accounts for my *scrubious* chirography. I am going to try a gallop over the country. Yesterday we went foraging to the barn

attached to the house of a Mr. Strother, some prominent rebel character. The house had been ransacked. I went through it and grabbed up a handful of papers to see what they might be. One was a leaf from a manuscript book called 'Commonplace Book,' which had remarks on all subjects, theology, geography, &c."

Later:—"Went out on a ride today to get warm and found I was near the camp of the 1st Mass. Cavalry. Saw all the fellows. Charles A. Longfellow (Son of the poet Longfellow who married Lieut. Nathan Appleton's half-sister. He was thus his half-nephew, a year and some months younger than he) came over and dined with us. They were in a big scrimmage the other day when they were driving off the Rebs. They had then, when I found them, just come in from the front, having been relieved by others."

September 19, 1863, still holding the same position, the men went after cornstalks in the afternoon. The cavalry all came in. Wagoner G. H. Johnson in the Hospital and George Shaw.

"Sept. 20. (Appleton's Diary.) Borrowed 'Modern Painters' of Dr. Howard. Tried to find Sunday service but didn't. (Dr. Howard was an Englishman by birth, at that time surgeon of the Artillery Brigade, afterwards famous for inventing a system for restoring life from crowning.) A great deal of clearing up to be overseered by me. Inspection on the 21st by Captain A. P. Martin.

September 22d. Boxing gloves arrived and there was sparring in camp. Nine spare wheels arrived. Visit from Colonel McGilvery, who accompanied by Captain Phillips rode over to the battlefield of Cedar Mountain, where the 2d Mass. Infantry lost so heavily. The Colonel was in the fight. They rode all over the battlefield, but the traces of fighting were about all gone except the marks of shot on the houses and trees.

The regulars came back from New York on the 22d. The Army was now reinforced by conscripts."

## LETTER OF LT. APPLETON.

"September 24, 1863. The camp is being changed into a gymnasium. We got orders this afternoon to get eleven days' rations ready. If we are going to do anything, now is the time, when the Confeds are perhaps somewhat weakened, having sent away some to oppose Rosecranz and Burnside. Our army is in splendid shape. We must number now nearly one hundred thousand men. The weather is fine and the roads in bully condition. The cavalry are all round making reconnoissances. The arrival of the mail is a great event in camp, and it is truly terrible to find nothing for yourself. It is quite extraordinary that the mails arrive as regularly as they do. We get one every day. I had occasion to do some sewing the other day, and I found that it would be almost as easy for a camel, as for the thread, so kindly presented to me, to go through the eyes of the needles also given to me. Please send me some larger needles and some smaller thread, and then I shall be sure to be all right. Send some *red* thread or silk. Put them in a letter. You ask me about the bed tick, &c. It works to a charm. I sleep on, first, a stretcher from an ambulance, which has four legs, and makes a splendid bed. On this I put my rubber blanket, then the tick, filled by Joe with—I don't know what; then my uncut grey blankets, into which I crawl; then my overcoat; and then a red artillery blanket. We have got the bottom of our tent filled with hemlock boughs, which are clean, smell nice, and remind me that Christmas is coming.

We make tables out of barrel heads and boxes. The washstand is outside! Sabres, boots, spurs, glasses, hats, brushes, &c. &c. are hanging up or lying around in endless confusion.

You would be amused at the attachment my two horses have for each other. The little feller follows Folko all over the country, and they are eternally neighing when they are separated. They begin to think it is getting cold and I shall soon have to blanket them. The 'little un' (afterwards called 'Klein' German for 'little') is the prettier, but Folko is pleasanter to ride with others, as he is not so hard-mouthed. They both look very sleek. The Captain has me recite lessons to him in artillery tactics, which is a good thing, as you have to know a good deal to go through a battery drill without any mistakes."

By the return of Lieut. Scott on the 25th, Lieut. Appleton was relieved of the command of the Centre section, and returned to his regular place as chief of the line of caissons, and when in line he was just four yards in rear of the centre of the Battery. In battle he would be in charge of the caissons, ammunition, horses, etc.

Sept. 26th. Washburn and Fitzsimmons arrived at the Battery from the Hospital.

By General Orders No. 320, Sept. 26, 1863, John Pilling was transferred to the Invalid Corps, the order to take effect September 30, 1863.

"September 27th. (Appleton Notes.) We still remain encamped in the same place. Two Corps have left to assist Rosecranz, some have gone down the Rappahannock; one, the Second, is in advance of us, and what the rest are to do I don't know. Our food is very light and irregular, though in the main healthful. We generally have fresh meat. Canned food can be always bought of the sutler. We eat in camp off crockery. We carry a stove, mess kit, &c., in a battery cart, a vehicle which only two batteries in the service possess, and which always travels with the Battery, not in the rear with the baggage wagons. In this the officers manage to stow away a good many miscellaneous articles handy on a march. I find my knit jacket of very great use. My

little artillery jacket, also, is just what I wanted. You need to have been in service yourself before you can tell all the trifling accessories to comfort.

September 28, 1863, at 10 a. m. 'Boots and saddles' was sounded for review. The Brigade was reviewed by General Meade with his staff, a surgeon of the British army sent here by the Queen, and General Cortes of Spain. The sutler Harvey arrived at the Battery. Lieutenants Spear and Appleton took a ride through and beyond Culpeper to the Artillery Reserve. Dined with Captain Bigelow, saw Phil Mason and Lieut. George F. Barstow.

Sept. 29, 1863. Battery drill on bad ground. Lieut. Appleton took the line of caissons.

Oct. 1st. Lt. Appleton had the fatigue party put up an evergreen chebang in front of the tents, and make two corduroy bridges."

Dyer with Alpheus Haskins for a partner played euchre in the afternoon and came off victorious. His diary does not state who the vanquished parties were.

The three officers' tents faced each other forming three sides of a square, and they messed three times a day together. Lieut. Appleton wrote Oct. 1, 1863: "I have charge of the officers' mess this month, which is pretty good fun, as I have to travel around the country to get grub, visiting sutlers, commissaries, &c. I generally try to do some studying tactics, riding or writing letters in the morning. We dine between 12 and 1. At four the horses are watered, fed, and groomed. About 5 or 5.30 roll call and guard mounting: then tea, after which we sit around the fire and smoke. 'Tattoo' about 7.45, and 'Taps' half an hour later. I retire about eight."

October 4th. Sunday there was Battery inspection by Captain Phillips. Lieuts. Scott and Appleton went to hear Chaplain Clark of the 83d Pennsylvania Reg't. preach.

October 5th they pitched camp over again, reversed tents



and laid out a street. Sixth Corps passing towards the Rapidan.

"There is a short description of the guns which our Battery uses," writes Appleton, "on the 124th page of Gibbon's Artillerist's Manual. We use the Schenkle projectile almost entirely."

October 7th the army trains were moving to the rear.

October 8th the sick were ordered to the rear, which looked like a move. Lieut. Scott in his notes of the day says:—"Battery drill was kept up every day until the 9th of October, when the Battery was ordered to be ready to move at short notice. I had not met Lieut. Appleton previous to joining the Battery, but he was received by the men of the Battery cordially."

Lieut. Scott was pleased to be once more with his old comrades. The entries in his diary of the 10th and 11th of October are as follows:—

"October 10, 1863. At 2 a. m. received orders to march. Hitched up at 3, and moved out on the road to Raccoon Ford 9 a. m. Halted near the Rapidan 12 m. Stood in harness all day. At 6 p. m. back to camp. Orders to move in the morning towards the Rappahannock, the enemy was making a flank movement towards Washington to get in the rear of the Army of the Potomac.

### THE FIGHT AT BRISTOE.

October 11, 1863. Broke camp and marched for Beverly Ford. Passed through Culpeper and Brandy Station, and crossed the Rappahannock River, and camped at the Ford, old camp, at 7 p. m. Enemy's cavalry engaging our cavalry at every point."

Lieut. Appleton tells the story of the 10th, 11th, 12th, 13th and 14th in the following words; commencing under date of the 11th:—"I am sitting, doing nothing, on the

ground, waiting for the enemy to approach if they wish to give us battle. On Saturday at quarter past two in the morning an order came for us to move at two. This being impossible we did the best we could and got off at about four or five a. m. The Corps went off on a little picnic. We marched about four miles towards Raccoon Ford, halted, passed the day, and returned to our camp at evening. It was very strategic. Sunday morning (11th Oct. yesterday) we started off at daylight on the skedaddle to the rear. Went through Culpeper, and then on about six or seven miles and halted. A lot of cavalry passed by, some wounded, riderless horses, &c., they were Buford's men, and had been skirmishing with the Rebs all day, and I guess had rather a hard time of it. They said the Rebs were beyond Culpeper and on the march after us. We soon proceeded, crossed the Rappahannock, and went into our old camping ground at Beverly Ford. Got up this morning at four, marched at daylight again over the river, and formed in position where we now are, half past eleven. It looks as if we wanted to have a battle, but whether the Rebs will come out or not is doubtful. General Sykes and staff are now a little ways off in front of us. We have got a very good position and a large force, and ought to make some show. Our troops are concealed in woods. We see the Reb cavalry in squads three miles off or so, but not a gun do we hear. . . . Tuesday Afternoon (Oct. 13) camp near Bristoe. The only fight we had yesterday was a very pretty cavalry engagement which began late in the afternoon and which we saw perfectly well. We drove the Rebs away, and then the whole force, infantry and artillery, followed up to a short distance of Culpeper, got there at dusk and retired. We left Culpeper this morning at two and marched until five this afternoon, and we are now near Bristoe. I enclose you a specimen of the countersign as we get it. The whole army is supposed to have the same one, and it is sent round to the different Divisions.

Brigades, &c., always done up in triangular form and sealed. (See p. 797.) Our supper will soon be ready. I go to look at the horses. Oct. 14th. Off again at daylight. Took *posish* near Manassas. The Second Corps licked the Rebs. Barnes' Battery engaged. We went after them and then made an about, and marched until two towards Centreville. Slept out in the air. Occasional falls of rain. Hard day and very tired."

Captain Phillips says of the 14th, letter dated Camp near Fairfax, Thursday Oct. 15, 1863:—

"Just as we were starting out after crossing Broad Run on Wednesday, the Rebels commenced to shell our rear. One Division and one battery remained behind, and the rest of the Corps pushed on to Manassas Junction, where we formed line of battle fronting the Bull Run mountains. I was sent into a redoubt where I felt quite secure. The firing in our rear was quite steady, the Second Corps being engaged."

From Corporal Shackley's Diary. "Oct. 10th. Broke camp and marched to Mitchell's station and at 4 p. m. returned to camp. . . . Oct. 12th. Recrossed the River and took position on a hill to watch the enemy. About noon took position in a valley out of sight of the Rebs. Firing began about 4 p. m., and we advanced to Brandy Station, the Rebs retiring as we advanced. A smart cavalry fight took place on the plains towards Culpeper which being in plain sight was quite exciting.

Oct. 13th. At 2.30 a. m. marched to and recrossed the river, and fed our horses. At 7 a. m. marched by way of Warrenton Junction, and camped near Catlett's Station.

Oct. 14th. Marched towards Centreville. About noon the enemy attacked our rear guard,—Second Corps,—and were repulsed with the loss of 4 guns and 450 men. The Battery countermarched to near Bristoe station, about 5 miles, then countermarched again, and marched to near Cen-

treville, where we arrived about 2 a. m. of Oct. 15th, having made full sixty miles, fought a small battle, and crossed a large river within two days.

October 15, 1863. Marched through Centreville and went into park near Fairfax C. H., and fed our horses for the first time since Tuesday the 13th."

#### LIEUT. SCOTT'S ACCOUNT.

"Oct. 12, 1863, crossed the River to its South bank and took a high position overlooking the plain south. Remained in position on the heights until 4 p. m. After a severe cavalry charge the Battery with the Fifth Corps in line of battle, moved south to Brandy Station and halted at 9 p. m.

Oct. 13. Moved out at 2 a. m. in midnight darkness, chilled through to suffering in the frosty air: crossed the Rappahannock on pontoons at the Ford and camped for the night at Bristoe's at 5 p. m. The railroad bridge at Rappahannock was blown up.

Hill's Rebel Corps passing our Right and rebel cavalry following our Rear.

Oct. 14th. Moved out on the road towards Manassas Junction, and crossed Broad Run at 12 noon. The enemy came on our flank shelling our Rear. Attacking the Second Corps they were repulsed with some loss of guns and prisoners captured by the Second Corps. The Fifth Battery was not engaged, but after being tangled up in the dense growth of woods, retired in the darkness of the night with the loss of a pole to a caisson, and one horse. Night pitchy dark. Passed through Manassas, crossed Blackburn's Ford,—Bull Run,—and camped at 2 a. m.

Oct. 15th. 9 a. m. moved through Centreville, camping near Fairfax Court House at 2 p. m. Raining. Every one cold and wet. Enemy moving rapidly for our flank and rear. Fifth Corps at Germantown. Sutlers ordered to the

rear—to Alexandria. News of Curtin's election in Pennsylvania, 30,000 majority. Vallandigham in Ohio defeated."

Private John E. Dyer's Notes of Oct. 10th: "The enemy made a feint on our Left and attacked our Right.

Oct. 13th. . . . After a march of 25 miles we went into camp at 5 p. m pretty tired.

Oct. 15th. . . . Half a ration of whiskey and 2 days' rations of hard tack issued tonight."

#### BY WAY OF THE FIGHT AT BRISTOE.

General Meade issued an order at 11.25 p. m. Sept. 15, 1863, for a forward movement of the Army of the Potomac, to commence at 5 a. m. of the 16th. The cavalry were to picket the front and guard the flank of the Army. The Fifth Corps was directed to occupy the ridge in front of the village of Culpeper, and there it remained till the 13th of October. On the 24th of September the Eleventh and Twelfth Corps were detached from the Army of the Potomac and sent west, and the enemy becoming aware of the fact immediately threw a heavy force upon the Union cavalry, in order to turn its flank and get in the rear of the Army, which design we frustrated by the retrograde movement of General Meade, made with such celerity as to reach Centreville in advance of the enemy but not without serious trouble through a determined attack of the Confederates at Bristoe, and the most severe hardships endured by the troops.

October 16, 1863, reveille was sounded at 7 o'clock. At 5 p. m. "Boots and Saddles." At 6 p. m. the Battery moved out into the road and waited for the Division to march past, then it took its place in the column and marched back to within two miles of Centreville. Rain until 9 p. m. The Battery went into park at ten. Two more batteries were attached to the Corps. The night was very dark. One of the officers' tents blew over. On the 17th the Battery

changed camp to a more suitable one a mile nearer Centreville in a beautiful glade. The pontoon train moved through Centreville. Camped with the Brigade.

#### NOTES OF LIEUT. APPLETON.

"The enemy was manœuvring for position and covering their movements. On the 18th Reveille at 3 a. m. Two batteries moved out with the infantry at sunrise waiting orders. Marched at 10 a. m. to near Fairfax Court House close by our former camp. Awful mud hole on the march. Camped, in the fork between the Warrenton turnpike and the Chantilly road, at 2 p. m. Some cannonading heard towards Bull Run.

On the 19th of October we were ordered to march for Centreville at 6 a. m. with the Fifth Corps. Passed through Centreville at 9 a. m. Raining hard. Marched towards Manassas 2 miles, then towards Bull Run. All the army on the move. Crossed Bull Run on pontoons at noon and bivouacked on Bull Run battlefield of 1862 at 3 p. m. The rebels were said to be moving south having failed to get between us and Washington. The Sixth Corps and train was moving towards Gainesville where we found them at daybreak of the 20th." Scott calls it "a race for position, but they could not be brought to a decisive battle." Appleton says it was moonlight that night—"an impressive evening. Passed by old Reb. huts of 1861."

#### LIEUT. APPLETON'S LETTER.

"HALT NEAR GAINESVILLE,

Oct. 19, 1863.

For the last ten days we have been marching and counter-marching, skirmishing, bivouacking, knocking about by day and night, in fact, I have not slept twice in the same place. Truly the tactics of the Army of the Potomac are extraordinary. Last night we encamped on the battlefield



of Bull Run No. 2, and there were plenty of skeletons and skulls around. Our men buried many of them yesterday afternoon. This morning we started off at three. (Orders were that the Corps should be at Gainesville by daylight.) I have had a taste of real military life lately, and it certainly has its discomforts. My idea of our last week's manœuvre is this:—The Rebs tried to get into Centreville heights before us, but we were just too quick for them. It would be folly to attack us there and that Lee knew, and so they are skedaddling, with us after them. We pass a big part of every day in the saddle. Perhaps we shall push after them well over the Rappahannock. General Meade and staff passed by us an hour ago, and General Pleasanton a little later, with an immense force of cavalry. I have looked in vain for the 1st Mass. cavalry. I tell you, I have seen some splendid sights lately. Forty thousand men marching in solid columns! Our approach to Culpeper after the cavalry skirmish, was magnificent. The poor infantry had a terrible time on the night marches, plodding through the deep mud, crossing streams, &c. I have not got a letter for ten days, as the mails are very irregular on occasions when the army is in motion. I want more money, as I am running the mess, and have to get grub when and wherever I can. It is hard to keep well supplied on the march, as our family consists of five officers, five darkies, and one or two cooks detailed from the Battery. I have only slept out in the air with no covering once, that was when we marched solid, with an occasional halt, from daylight one morning until two or three the next, and then we were off again by ten. It is almost impossible to keep the calendar straight, as all the days are just alike. We have come off decidedly best in the late manœuvring, and taken many prisoners. If the Rebs stand this side of the Rappahannock we shall have a fight in which we ought certainly to whip them.

I have been reading 'Quits' lately, which I borrowed of Guthrie, a young lieutenant in an Ohio battery in our Brigade. I am now reading 'Tom Burke of Ours,' by Charles Lever, which is military and good. I read on the march, as *all* the time in camp you need to eat and sleep. I don't know when you will get this letter. I take a chance man going by to take it."

## FROM DIARY OF LIEUT. APPLETON.

"At noon of October 20th we marched, following the Sixth Corps which advanced early in the morning when we were turned out but stood in harness till noon. Then we marched to New Baltimore arriving at 5 p. m. The railroad from Bristoe south had been torn up and now was being repaired. The army were all moving to this point, following the enemy, then at New Baltimore, closely, and there was a cavalry fight near this place. We were without rations or forage. An order was read on this day to have roll calls at 12 m. and 3 p. m. At New Baltimore we received our mails with letters and lots of papers.

October 21, 1863, we remained in camp all day, the first time since the 10th. We were then at New Baltimore, ten miles from Warrenton. The entire Brigade were encamped there near a rebel family. Rebs recrossed the Rappahannock. On the 22d our other tents were put up and the camp fixed up. Stores were received from Gainesville. The men had fresh meat for dinner. Captain Huntington dined and passed the afternoon with the Battery."

## LETTER OF SERG'T. W. H. PEACOCK.

"CAMP NEAR NEW BALTIMORE, VA.

Oct. 22, 1863.

We have been on one continual march for over a month,

and I have had no chance to write, or do anything else but look after shoeless and dead horses, disabled artillery carriages, etc. I tell you, we have work enough to do after halting from a day's march. Horses, harnesses, ammunition to repack, wheels to grease, and forty other things to do, so by the time we are through, it is time to drop down. This move was a very singular one. Lee would chase us 25 miles or so, then our Army turns around and chases him back, like boys playing 'tag.' We came over the Bull Run battleground a few days ago, and I tell you it was a sad sight, to see our poor fellows only partially buried, and many not buried at all. At the place where we halted you could not move without seeing a skull, arm, or leg of some Union soldier, as we could tell by the blue clothing they had on. A major of our Army, lay near where we were, not having been buried at all. Probably he had not been discovered before. Enclosed I send you some green, that I got near two of the bodies of our men, that were mostly out of the ground, and the spot where McDowell's Corps broke, and so many of our men were killed. I also send a clover leaf from a large Fort built by the Rebels at Manassas, in 1861. My hands are so stiff, and the pen so poor, that I can hardly write."

#### LETTER OF LIEUT. APPLETON.

"CAMP NEAR NEW BALTIMORE,

Friday, Oct. 23, 1863.

I saw in yesterday's (Washington) 'Chronicle' that General Meade was ordered by the War Department to pursue right after the Rebs. I guess by this time they are well across the two Raps. Our army is so infernally cautious we can never do anything. Taking Richmond this way is played out. Either break up the Army of the Potomac or else try the Peninsula, which latter having been

Mac's plan must of course be kept down! I am pleased to see the result of the elections, and I guess they will be a heavy blow to the Confeds and the Copperheads. I hope if we are to go into winter quarters it will be round Washington, where the living is better, and you have a chance of an occasional run up to Washington and a good dinner. You may laugh at one's wanting a good dinner, in fact, at home people have a sort of notion that all a soldier has to do is to look grand and fight battles, march onward, &c., &c., but, out here, it much more consists of the little minutiae of camp life,—eating, sleeping, keeping clean, having your eye everlastingly on the men, and being bothered by a hundred annoyances. But in return, you drink in the splendid October air described by Theodore Winthrop! Oh yes, at the sweet hour of two in the morning, when everything is chilly and damp, and you have two minutes to swallow a cup of boiling coffee! A night move of the Army is a splendid sight! The whole plain as far as you can see, illuminated with ten thousand camp fires,—the shouts of the men, the braying of the mules. How Brigades and Divisions ever find their way is a marvel, but still they always do. I hardly know whether you have been able to make out my last letters. I was sitting in our ambulance by the side of the road writing my last, when some one said that the mail carrier was passing by. So without reading or even finishing it, I bounced it into an envelope, and sent it off. Wherever we go we see dead cavalry horses lying along the roads. I am sorry to hear you say that poor Gus Barker died. (A captain in the 5th N. Y. Cavalry shot by guerillas near Kelly's Ford. Harvard, class of 1863.) Are there to be none of '63 warriors left to chat together over their adventures? It seems strange how we worry and fuss over horses at home, always afraid that they are getting cold, or sick, or something, while here they seem to be perfectly well and not under the slightest cover. I have blanketed my big one

twice since I have been out here, and that was at first, before he had got at all used to things. The little one is rather tough. I can't write well when the wind is blowing my paper about. Dinner, consisting of salt fish-balls, pork, and ham scraps, and a pudding ingeniously made of hard tack and raisins, is almost ready, and I am going to halt.

The same day: Lieut. Spear and I took a ride towards New Baltimore. Nothing interesting going on."

From Appleton's Diary: "Oct. 23, 1863. Camp near New Baltimore. Our little campaign of two weeks seems about over, and we have again settled down to the comforts (?) of a camp. Many think we are to settle down into winter quarters near Washington or Warrenton. I hate to think we are to try to do nothing more. On this day we pitched our tents in line, and on the 24th were ordered at 3½ p. m., to march about sunset in a cold northeast rain-storm. 'Boots and saddles' at 5 p. m. Marched with the Corps to Auburn near Cedar Run, between Warrenton and the Junction, and went into park at 8 p. m., with orders to move at a moment's notice. (Auburn is the name of a post office near the estate of the McCormicks, world famous manufacturers of agricultural implements.) Here General Judson Kilpatrick in command of the Union cavalry, was surprised by the confederate cavalry general Stuart, while Kilpatrick was in bivouac in a hollow; the situation and the state of the atmosphere, a dense fog, aiding the attacking party, who had also a light battery with them, but Kilpatrick not only escaped from the snare but showed fight and beat off the enemy."

---

The next day was Sunday the 25th. The batteries of the Corps changed ground and pitched camp over. Went into position facing south. Very cold. The trains remain behind. Rations were not all up.

## THE MASS. 10TH BATTERY NEAR BY.

From Scott's Notes: "The 10th Battery was attacked on the march with the Sixth Corps. Serg't. Woodfin of the 10th Battery was struck from his horse by a ball passing through his neck from a rebel carbine. Afterwards he was First Lieutenant of the 16th Mass. Battery."

This was while Scott commanded it. Colonel Philip T. Woodfin was Governor of the Southern Branch, National Home for Disabled Volunteer Soldiers, at Hampton, Va., 28 years, and died there August 24, 1901. The bullet that struck him October 13, 1863, and lodged in the back of his neck, Captain Scott took from his shoulder July 4, 1864.

October 26, 1863. Reveille at usual camp hour. Cold and wet. Lieut. Appleton mentions the building of "a large semi-circular fireplace in front of our tent." The men had nothing but hard bread to eat in the morning, but in the afternoon the wagons came up. Some cannonading was heard towards the Rappahannock, and orders were received to be ready to move at short notice.

Private Dyer records that on the night of Oct. 26-27, was seen the first ice of the season. He was on guard that night. Where Corporal Shackley was, ice was half an inch in thickness. On the 27th firing was heard at the south towards the Rappahannock.

## LIEUT. APPLETON'S LETTER HOME.

"CAMP AT AUBURN NEAR CEDAR RUN,  
Oct. 28, 1863.

Rode over to Army H'd Q'rs and called on Theodore Lyman. Burt (the cook) brought us some good grub from Gainesville, 2 turkeys. Cargill (Lieut. in the Third Mass. Battery) called on us from Boston. By the way, how well the Virginians named their streams here, every one is a 'run.' Last Saturday they interrupted the quiet of a rainy



afternoon by an order for an immediate start, so off we went for about five miles and then squatted down again. Colonel Theodore Lyman said that Meade's plan was to try to make them give us battle, but they didn't see it, as each side wanted to get choice of ground. The railroad has been badly injured, and it will take some time for us to put it in running order, though we are working at it pretty steadily. The roads are good now but won't be long. The horses out here have a playful way in the night of gnawing off each others' tails, which they use as a substitute for hay. My big one had a little piece bitten out of his last night, but Joe takes care to put them well off from the picket rope. I guess you will see some good pictures of our late movements in Harper's. I often see their artist sitting by the side of the road, sketching us as we are going over some stream. One thing the Army sadly needs is some good bands of music: even an unappreciative ear enjoys it out here. The other day when we were trying to get our forge through a big mud hole, and two horses tumbled down in it, in succession, a band was playing beautifully near by, and it seemed to me that it had a good deal to do with getting us through safely. If I were a general I would use a good deal of money on drilling a superb band. (After the first year Brigade and Division bands were all that were allowed.)

I see you are to have more fun in Boston in the drafting and recruiting biz. Tell John A. A. (Governor Andrew) that cavalry is what we want now to finish up the work."

#### FROM LIEUT. APPLETON'S DIARY.

"On the 28th one day's ration of soft bread and fresh meat was issued to the men at night. On the 29th our fireplace tumbled down, but we should have been obliged to leave it, anyway, as we had orders to march at 7 a. m. of the 30th

for Three Mile Station on the Warrenton Branch railroad, 3 miles from Warrenton Junction. The whole Corps hitched up and broke camp. Marched at 9 a. m. Marched past Three Mile Station and came into position about 11 a. m., about two miles from Warrenton Junction, near the railroad. The railroad to Rappahannock and bridge were being repaired. The hilly roads over which we marched were very bad. Cars had passed up the Branch the previous evening. The railroad was repaired to the Junction. The corral was moved from Gainesville to the vicinity of Warrenton Junction, and the general headquarters were moved."

## LETTER OF CAPTAIN PHILLIPS.

"CAMP NEAR THREE MILE STATION,

Oct. 31, 1863.

We certainly have not gained anything in the last three weeks. Then we were at Culpeper, now we are at Warrenton Junction; then the railroad was in good order to the Rapidan, now it runs as far as Warrenton, and the track beyond that is destroyed. They can't get in our rear unless we get in theirs; they cannot cut our communications unless we cut theirs."

## LETTER OF LIEUT. APPLETON.

"CAMP AT THREE MILE STATION,

NEAR WARRENTON JUNCTION,

Nov. 1, 1863.

It is almost impossible to remember what day of the week it is out here, they are all so much alike, but outward circumstances need not interfere with one's own ideas of a Sabbath. Don't judge by my writing that I am getting weary of things. Grumbling on paper is assuredly one of the privileges as well as the pleasures of our life in the 'bush,' as Joe calls it. Last night was very cold and windy, and I

found it difficult to keep comfortable. You wake up with a chill, and find yourself high and dry with all your blankets kicked off and then to rearrange them in the dark is fraught with difficulties. I don't know what to make of this last call for 300,000 more volunteers. It looks either as if the Administration expected the fighting to last some time or that they desired plenty of men in reserve. If we could fight the Rebs now, how we should lick 'em! But they have smashed the railroad and run off. I hope they will have no more humbug about the matter of drafting and recruiting, exempting, &c. The labors here are not so terribly severe, but that a man of average strength and health can get along very well. Send out that book of mine which I had at Lynn this summer, entitled 'Youatt on the Horse.' It will be of great use and instruction out here. For my servant Joe, two horses and myself I need 8 blankets, and the Quartermasters are so slow that it takes an everlasting time to get any."

---

The drill was kept up on the pieces, but the horses were without forage most of the time. Nov. 2d the men were digging holes for picket posts. Pontoons had been brought the day before to Warrenton Junction. No forage was to be had for the horses. The Third Corps was said to be moving to the front. On the 3d, forage was obtained for the horses and it was very warm and pleasant.

#### NOTES OF JOHN E. DYER.

"Nov. 5, 1863, good news was received from the Massachusetts and New York elections. The men had boiled pork and stewed dried apples for dinner, and the Artillery Reserve passed by our position towards Catlett's Station. Orders were issued for eleven days' rations. Drill on the pieces. The sutler Gorham arrived in the evening of the

6th and sold out. We had drill on the piece and orders to march at 6 a. m. the next morning, the 7th. Trains of cars were on fire on the railroad.

### NOV. 7, 1863. THE BATTLE.

In the morning at 4 a. m. we were awakened by the joyful sound of the bugle, hitched up at 6 a. m., moved out on the road at 7½, left the camp at Three Mile Station and marched with the Fifth Corps to the Rappahannock River, where the enemy was said to be posted, passing through Bealton. Near Rappahannock Station we halted, remaining there all noon time, and skirmishers were thrown out, the Fifth Corps being deployed to the left of the railroad, which had been destroyed and the rails carried off by the Rebs.

About 2 o'clock in the afternoon, firing was heard in front at Kelly's Ford, where were the First, Second, and Third Corps, and we were ordered forward at 4 p. m.

---

The rebels had thrown up earthworks, which they held, on the north bank of the river, their guns sweeping the low ground in front of them, over which our attack must be made. The work was garrisoned by Hays' Brigade of Early's Division, Ewell's Corps, and Hoke's Brigade of the same Division was sent to reinforce them.

On our side, General David A. Russell was in command of Wright's Division of the Sixth Corps, and made the assault as night was coming on, the 5th Wisconsin and 6th Maine in advance, supported by our artillery fire and the skirmishers of the 121st New York and 20th Maine.

The Fifth Mass. Battery went into position on the left of the railroad, 900 yards below the rebel earthworks, near the bridge. Corporal Shackley noted in his Diary the

fact that "Captain A. P. Martin came to us, and was pleased to say 'You are making some fine shots, boys!'"

The 5th Battery fired 112 rounds, shelling the earthworks till dark, when the infantry charged the Station, captured the fort, with 8 pieces of artillery, caissons and horses, 2 Brigades and 7 flags. There were no casualties in the Battery. The Union loss in the engagement was 370 killed, wounded and missing.

The Battery parked at night with the Fifth Corps back from the river, and on its south side, about a mile from the field.

Nov. 8th, they were aroused at 4 a. m., ate breakfast, and marched at daylight for Kelly's Ford, where they arrived at 10 a. m. At 12 they crossed the river on pontoons and marched about 5 miles beyond, as far as Stephensburg, where they camped for the night near Mountain Creek. The Army was across the river.

Private Dyer wrote: "After rallying on a rail fence we unhitched, and getting supper we turned in for the night." The First and Second Corps were ahead and they heard some cannonading towards the Rapidan.

Lieut. Appleton observes that "General Meade passed us and was enthusiastically cheered."

Nov. 9th, Reveille at 4½ o'clock at Stephensburg. There was a snow squall from the westward during the day, the first of the season. No orders at 8 o'clock. The wagon trains had not come up. "Pindar and train lost," writes Appleton, "and ice made  $\frac{3}{8}$  of an inch in thickness. Snow was seen on the Blue Ridge. The First and Second Corps were at Brandy Station. No firing this day. The Rebs had made preparations here for winter quarters."

"Order in the evening (Scott's Diary) to picket Mountain Creek, north bank, on the morrow."

This creek passes Culpeper. Private Dyer was on guard







that night, which was "a bitter cold night," with Corporal Proctor.

This photograph which was taken by Gorman and Jordan, army photographers in January, 1864, is highly prized by Captain Appleton, who then purchased it. The following is from his Diary:—"The Army was advancing, after its withdrawal back to Bull Run. This picture shows the railroad (Orange and Alexandria R. R.) bridge across the river, the ridge, and the open lowland. The railroad from Warrenton Junction to the Rappahannock had been repaired. The rebels had possession of the ridge, and the open lowland lay between them and our forces. Our Battery went into position alongside of Griffin's Battery D, 5th Regt. U. S. Artillery, commanded by Lieut. Rittenhouse. We fired at the earthworks afterwards captured at the bayonet by the Sixth Corps. We are now (Nov. 9, 1863) a good ways off from any railroad connection. Pontoons have been sent to Fredericksburg."

FROM LIEUT. APPLETON'S LETTER OF THE  
SAME DATE.

"CAMP BETWEEN THE RAPIDAN AND THE RAPPAHANNOCK,  
SIX MILES BEYOND KELLY'S FORD.

We are just in the beginning of what will be a brilliant campaign. I hope soon to write from Richmond. Well, I have been under fire, and don't like it. It isn't pleasant to have shells come whizzing through the woods and see men carried off on stretchers. One piece of shell went between Barnard and myself as we were talking by the roadside. (This was Captain George M. Barnard, Jr., known as 'Rappahannock George,' the officer who mustered him in at Beverly Ford.) I guess we have got the Rebs in a tight place. We hear heavy firing every day. Our affair the other day was brilliant but short. I was in the woods with

the caissons, and as the Rebs fired very high the shells fell just around where I was. No man in the Battery was hit, in fact, I guess I was the nearest to it of any one. I only hope we shall move on soon, and try something more. Gillmore still hammers at Charleston. Cargill and Carroll (Lieut. Carroll, brother of the wife of General Griffin and the Misses Carroll of Washington, a lieutenant in Griffin's Battery) called, and the latter dined. Men's  $\frac{1}{4}$ s (quarters) fixed up. Pleasant game of whist in the evening with Dr. Bell. Perhaps you have seen in the papers something about an 'unknown battery by the side of Griffin's, which did good execution.' That was the Fifth Massachusetts. By the by, the Army is a splendid school for the control of one's angry spirits. Do what you are told and ask no questions. How you sometimes fret under the restraint, like Folko on a slow march!"

#### INVALID CORPS.

Transferred to Invalid Corps to take effect on November 15, 1863, under General Orders No. 365 War Department:

O'Connell, Daniel, Private Co. E, 1st Massachusetts Artillery.

McKeren, William, Private 5th Massachusetts Battery.

. . . . .

#### LETTER OF CAPTAIN PHILLIPS.

Extract relative to the action of the Battery at the Battle of Rappahannock Station taken from his letter of Nov. 15, 1863:—"Although our Battery was engaged as much as any one we have been eliminated out of all the reports, and shall have to fall back on our reserve stock of glory. My own impression is that we did pretty good shooting. I enclose an extract from the Philadelphia Inquirer, which will show what other people thought of it.

'On the extreme right,' says the Inquirer correspondent, 'was Captain Waterman's Battery 1st R. I. Artillery, next to and near it that of Captain Martin, Battery D, 5th U. S. Artillery; Taft's Battery of Reserve Artillery, a little to the right of the centre and on the left of the railroad, at a distance of some twelve hundred yards from the rebel forts, *a battery belonging to the Fifth Corps*, which I regret not to be able to name, particularly as it is said to have worked with excellent effect.'

There were in reality two batteries of the Fifth Corps engaged: Rittenhouse's Battery D, 5th U. S., and mine, though as we were side by side, the general impression was that there was only one. The battery referred to in the extract as 'Captain Martin's Battery D, U. S. Art'y' was Lieut. Martin's Battery something else U. S. Art'y, belonging to the 6th Corps."

"Nov. 10, 1863. (Diary of Lieut. Scott.) Hitched up and moved into quarters vacated by the Rebel Dole's Brigade, 34 houses. These were well built, with fireplaces, and the Battery was made very comfortable, with plenty of wood to burn. The Rebs had made extensive preparations for a winter's stay here, but now have retired beyond the Rapidan. Thirty-four houses were taken by our Battery. Four batteries, 200 between them. Ice made  $\frac{1}{4}$  of an inch. Blue Ridge covered with snow."

In relation to these comfortable quarters Private Dyer said it was "the first time the Rebs ever left anything for our benefit. Much obliged to them for skedaddling."

## NOTES OF LOUIS E. PATTISON.

Nov. 2, 1901.

"Action at Rappahannock Station, Nov. 7, 1863: Our Battery crossed to the left of the railroad going through a piece of woods at a trot, over rocks and stumps, and went

into Battery on the edge of the woods; opening fire on one of the works.

Our guns fired very slowly, the officers watching the effect of the shots, in order at the proper moment to cease firing, when our infantry reached the forts, which they did very soon, I should say in fifteen to thirty minutes, going right into them. They captured over 1,000 prisoners, 8 colors, all the guns, and 2,000 small arms. Their loss is officially given as 419. Confederate loss, 1,674. I do not remember that the Battery had any loss, killed or wounded.

It was a very pretty little action, requiring quick movements and good judgment. We afterwards went into winter quarters on the right of the railroad, near the forts, during the winter of '63 and '64, and cut the woods referred to above, for fuel and houses for quarters."

These quarters were about a mile distant from the camp on Mountain Creek. They had been finished only about ten days previous and occupied by the 44th Georgia Regiment of Dole's Brigade.

On the 11th of November the men cleared up camp and the cooks commenced cooking for the Battery. They found the "Rebs'" or "Johnnies'" quarters quite comfortable, though some of the quarters were not quite finished. Our troops again occupied Culpeper. The railroad and bridge were repaired and the road from Warrenton to Bealton was being pushed through. General Meade was at Brandy Station.

Appleton in his account of the day says:—"The Rebs evidently expected to pass the winter here, and pitched in in fine style, until so agreeably interrupted by us last Saturday. I can well imagine how angry they must be when they know that the Yankees are quietly enjoying their elegant houses. The splendid campaign, which I thought just beginning, seems to have quite fizzled out. All the Corps are, I believe, quietly lying around. Nov. 12. Sat around the

camp and chatted. It looks as if we were to stay here.

---

Orders were given to the men to cover their houses with shelter tents, and take tarpaulins for harnesses. They made harness racks on the 13th, and fixed up tents. On the 14th they had fried liver for dinner and played euchre in the evening. Lieuts. Appleton and Blake with Lieut. Cargill went over the river to the 1st Division. Appleton writes:—"Rained like thunder in the evening, and the house leaked muchly. My bed fell down about the middle of the night."

"Nov. 15, 1863. (Scott.) Ordered to be ready at a moment's notice. Brisk cannonading towards the Rapidan. Railroad nearly completed to the Rappahannock. Drew 11 new horses."

"Nov. 16. (Appleton.) We put on our pretty clothes and were inspected and drilled at 3 p. m. by Captain Martin and staff. First time since Culpeper."

---

\* The inspection consumed one hour and a half, and the Battery went through manœuvres on changing front. The cars were running to Culpeper on the 17th, and the men began building houses for the officers.

Corporal Shackley remarks Nov. 18th: "The winter clothing which was sent to the storehouse about June 10, 1863, was returned today."

Acting Adjutant Holman S. Melcher of the 20th Maine Regiment, remembers the Battery during the winter of '63-'64 "from their very nice cantonment, and the sound of their bugle calls."

From a letter addressed to the Hon. Henry K. Oliver, Treasurer of the Commonwealth of Massachusetts, by Captain Augustus P. Martin, commanding the Artillery Brigade, dated at the Head Quarters of the Artillery Brigade,



Fifth Army Corps, Camp near Kelly's Ford, Va., Nov. 18, 1863, in relation to the services of the Fifth Mass. Battery and its captain on several battlefields:—

"He" (Captain Phillips) "has proved himself to be one of the bravest, coolest and most reliable officers on the field, and one of the most prompt, energetic, faithful and competent officers in camp, within my knowledge. His services and that of his battery at Fredericksburg and Rappahannock Station were of the most valuable character, and have received the highest commendation and praise of his superior officers. He was not under my command at Gettysburg, but I have read the portions of the official report of his commanding officer relating to the services of himself and battery, which was commendable in the highest degree (see p. 667, McGilvery's Report) and was not surpassed by any battery upon that field."

#### FROM LIEUT. APPLETON'S DIARY.

"The 1st Division of the Fifth Corps came up from the Rappahannock, where they had been on picket between Kelly's Ford and Bealton. Two splendid boxes bearing the express marks of Boston filled with jolly grub from home arrived safely, and is being appreciated by the mess. We had singing and a serenade in the evening. Nov. 19, superintended the working on the houses. 20th, we are still ensconced on our 'Georgia Plantation.' My log house has a tent fly for a roof, chimney at the end."

The contents of the boxes were intended for Thanksgiving dinner but were devoured on arrival from fear they would have orders to move as proved to be the case.

#### LETTER OF LIEUT. APPLETON.

"Nov. 20, 1863. Rode over to the camp of the 20th Mass. Regiment Infantry, and dined with John Perry (John Gardiner Perry, assistant surgeon of the 20th), and Rittenhouse supped with me in my shanty. One pleasant feature of our life in Virginia is its delicious uncertainty. You sit wearily in your camp doing nothing one day, and the next morning

you are whistled up at two to start on a big march and perhaps fight. You know that you may any day be detailed to go to Washington on some court martial, or to Boston on recruiting service, and exchange the toils of camp for the gayeties of a metropolis. The prospect of some possible change for the better or for worse is always before you."

LETTER FROM HON. HENRY K. OLIVER, TREASURER OF  
THE STATE OF MASSACHUSETTS, TO CAPTAIN  
AUGUSTUS P. MARTIN.

COMMONWEALTH OF MASSACHUSETTS.

STATE TREASURER'S OFFICE,

BOSTON Nov. 23, 1863.

CAPTAIN A. P. MARTIN, Commander of Artillery Brigade, 5th Army  
Corps. CAMP NEAR KELLY'S FORD, VA.

*Captain.*

Permit me to thank you in the most earnest manner for your very acceptable letter respecting my friend Captain C. A. Phillips. Your thorough commendation of him has afforded me the highest gratification, and will deeply affect his family and many friends in Massachusetts. I have taken the liberty of showing your letter to Gov. Andrew, who was highly gratified at the good name acquired by an officer of his appointing. With your leave I will also send the letter to Hon. Mr. Phillips (Stephen H.) and the Capt.'s family at Salem.

With many thanks I am truly yours,

H. K. OLIVER.

Can a copy be had of that part of the Official Report of Captain Phillips' commanding officer, relating to the service of himself and Battery at Gettysburg. Gov. Andrew would like to see it.

H. K. O.

(See p. 667.)

## CHAPTER XIX.

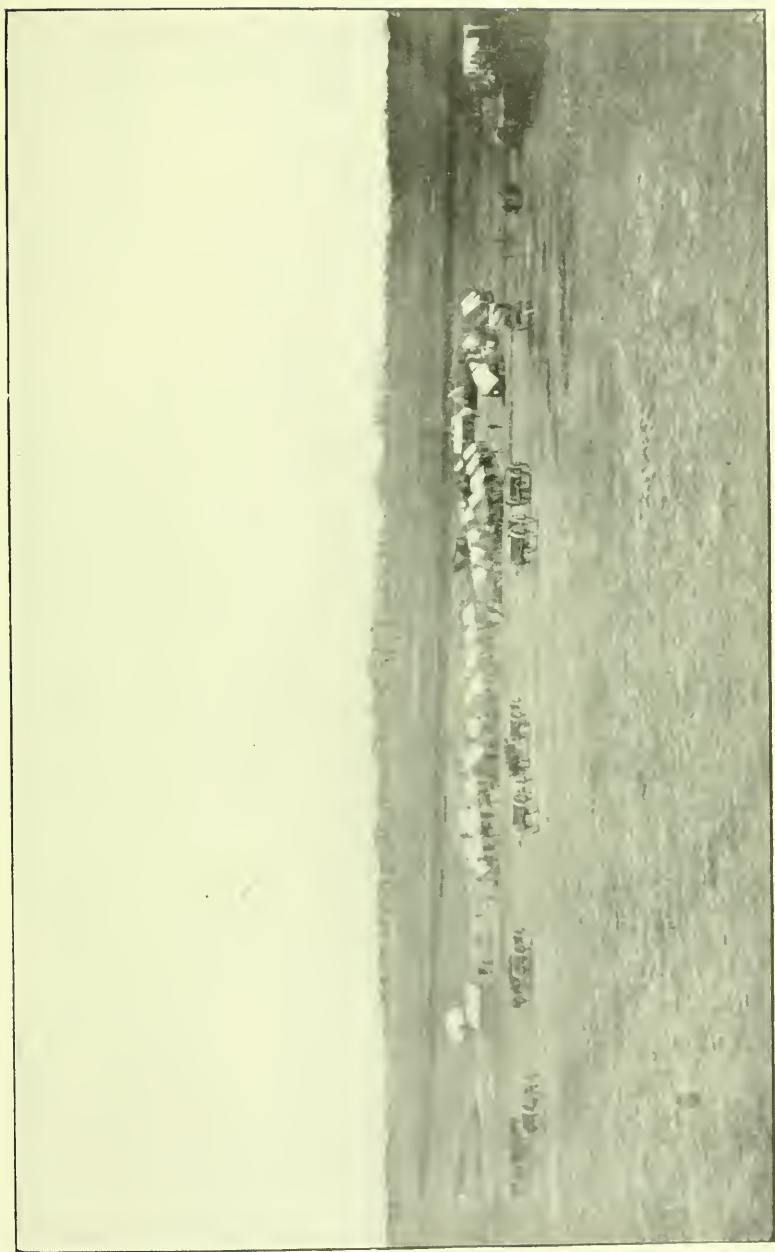
### THE ARTILLERY FIRE AT MINE RUN.

NOVEMBER 27-30, 1863.

"We must forget all feelings save the *one*;  
We must resign all passions save our purpose;  
We must behold no object save our country,  
And only look on death as beautiful.  
So that the sacrifice ascend to Heaven  
And draw down freedom on her evermore."

(Quoted by His Excellency John A. Andrew, at the close of his address to the two branches of the Legislature of Massachusetts in extra session, November 11, 1863.)

The campaign of Mine Run though planned by General Meade for an offensive movement to surprise Lee in winter quarters, and turn his flank by making a rapid advance to Orange Court House, seizing by the way the Plank Road and the turnpike, actually resulted in two fights; one in which cavalry under Gregg was engaged and was delivered by the Fifth Corps on November 27, 1863, and an assault by the artillery, which was to have been supported by infantry, had the plans of the leader been carried out. The infantry, however, failed to bear its part in the attack, General Gouverneur K. Warren by later and closer observation of the strength and position of the rebels having formed the opinion, which was approved, on investigation, by General Meade, that there was no possibility of a successful result. General Warren's command at that time was composed of portions of the Second and Third Corps and comprised nearly one half of the infantry of the Army.





The crossing of the Rapidan was made in three columns. It was to be done so quickly as to compel the enemy to give battle on a ground and at a time of our own choosing, and to be so suddenly called upon to defend themselves as to leave them no time to concentrate their forces. But it would seem, in the light of subsequent developments, that in the nature of the case we had to be too long about it to make this undertaking much of a surprise.

It was on the 26th that the Third Corps followed by the Sixth Corps crossed the Rapidan at Jacob's Mills, and the Second Corps at Germanna Ford, both aiming for Robertson's Tavern to effect a junction of their forces. The Fifth Corps, followed by two Divisions of the First Corps, crossed at Culpeper Ford, its objective point being Parker's Store on the way to Robertson's Tavern and, if possible, to make that point, where it was proposed to concentrate the Army.

The Second Corps, commanded by General G. K. Warren, reached the Tavern about 10 a. m. of the 27th and halted, waiting for the Third Corps under command of General Thomas French.

The Fifth Corps under General George Sykes, after waiting for the Second and Third Corps to cross the river, arrived at Parker's Store at 9 a. m. of the 27th and found the cavalry under General John I. Gregg, who had been instructed to cover the Left flank of the Army, engaged with the Confederate cavalry, and obliged to fight dismounted on account of the dense woods.

The Fifth Corps took position at New Hope Church, and relieved the cavalry, driving away, and completely quieting the rebel cavalry and their infantry skirmishers. Thus far the programme had been carried out according to instructions, but the Fifth Corps was not permitted to advance farther than the intersection of the road from Raccoon Ford with the Orange and Alexandria Plank Road, as the Third Corps had not made its connection with the Second Corps.



The Third Corps had been having its own little encounter with the enemy at Raccoon Ford.

When the pursuit was at last organized and under way, the Second Corps was ahead, and on November 28th found the rebels securely established on the west bank of Mine Run. In the evening of that day the Second, Sixth, First, and Third Corps formed in line of battle in front of the enemy, and at 4 o'clock of the morning of the 29th the Fifth Corps came into line, relieving the Second Corps.

The bank along which for miles the Confederate army was massed and where they had erected strong earthworks, was 100 feet high at this point sloping about 1000 yards, cleared ground to the creek or run. At other points the bank was steep, rocky, and covered with wood. The stream itself was narrow, but the approach to it was swampy and in places an impassable bog. The attempt to attack by assault at this point under these disadvantages, was not given serious thought, and the Fifth Corps having taken the place of the Second, the latter was sent off to try to turn the enemy's Right flank, while the Sixth and Fifth Corps attempted to turn his Left. Warren's two Divisions of the Third Corps were taken from the Centre when the contemplated attack was abandoned in favor of Warren's venture, which it was determined should be the main attack. The batteries of the Centre and Right were ordered to open fire at 8 a. m. of November 30th, and at 9 o'clock the Sixth Corps under General John Sedgwick was to assault with his columns, on the extreme Right of the Union lines.

With its usual precision the artillery opened promptly at 8 o'clock on the morning of the 30th as ordered, but Warren had seen reason, as stated, to abandon his attack and General Meade coinciding with General Warren in his views, the waiting Sixth Corps was thus informed at 8.50, and the suspension of Sedgwick's assault was made permanent. Also as a consequence General Warren relinquished the two

Divisions of the Third Corps which returned to the Centre, and the Fifth and Sixth Corps resumed their former positions. The situation now resolved itself back into its original proportions and relations, except that the artillery fire had let the proverbial cat "out of the bag" by exposing our position and plans, and the Confederates commenced in earnest to reinforce and strengthen their fortifications, perceiving which General Meade withdrew his army and disposed his troops in various well chosen positions, to guard the railroads, as if anything so manifestly injudicious as a Mine Run campaign was farthest from his thoughts. In a note on a fly leaf of "The Officers' Companion," Lieut. Nathan Appleton says "the Mine Run campaign showed the disadvantage of having so many corps commanders."

#### AS RELATED BY MEMBERS OF THE BATTERY.

Nov. 23, 1863. Brigade drill of 4 batteries by Captain Martin from 10 a. m. to  $\frac{1}{2}$  past 2 p. m. Quite an event for the Artillery Brigade, the first one and very well done. Captains Phillips and Barnes acted as majors. Lieut. Scott in command of Fifth Mass. Battery. Lieut. Appleton acted as adjutant.

Orders to pack ready for a march. Twenty-five men came to the Battery this morning, detached from the infantry. The whole army set out to move under an order which said they were to cross the Rapidan, have a long march, and be ready for anything.

Nov. 24th. Hitched up at 5 a. m., moved out on the road at  $\frac{1}{2}$  past 6, in the midst of a big rain storm, and marched about four miles towards the Rapidan—the going was very heavy—then turned round and came back again to camp; arriving at 9 a. m., feeling wet and cross. Ordered to move on the 26th, Thanksgiving Day. Lieut. Appleton in a letter observes that they were unwilling to repeat the experience of

Burnside's celebrated "mud march," and so turned back. His letter proceeds as follows:—"However we were 'under orders,' implying that we shall start tomorrow or next day, if the weather permits. I hope it will keep dry, as I want to advance and let those poor starving fellows out of Libby Prison. Why we have wasted the last fortnight I don't see. Cutting across Virginia fields is different from driving a buggy over macadamized streets."

Referring to the Brigade drill he says: "You can imagine that it was quite a sight to see 24 pieces of artillery, 24 caissons, over 300 horses, and their complement of men, dashing over a field, rattling through ditches, and going through lots of complicated evolutions. Such a sight on Boston Common would draw quite a crowd. I took the part of an assistant adjutant. We are now much better prepared (by the addition of the 25 men) to haul our guns out of mud holes.

I read Mr. Everett's speech at Gettysburg (see p. 673). It was very good, and the ceremonies must have been very impressive."

Nov. 25, 1863. Drill on pieces. Orders came at night to be ready to move the next morning. Extra rations were drawn. It was a splendid, moonlight night, clear and frosty. Reveille at 3½ o'clock, and leaving their pleasant quarters, which they were to see no more, they marched at daybreak of the 26th with the Fifth Corps to Culpeper or Ely's Ford, on the Rapidan River, which they reached at eleven o'clock. At the Ford there was some firing by Battery C, 1st N. Y., Captain Almont Barnes, and Battery L, 1st Ohio, Captain Frank C. Gibbs; also at the Right. At 1 p. m. the Battery crossed the river, marched across country and at 4 struck what Dyer calls "the renowned Fredericksburg Plank Road," marched to Wilderness, not far from Chancellorsville, and bivouacked at the side of the road, leaving the carriages in the road, and hitching their horses

to the trees. This was about 8 p. m. Got supper and turned in about 9 o'clock. During this day's march General Meade ordered a despatch to be read to the troops, announcing the great victories of the Union arms at Chattanooga and Lookout Mountain, under General Ulysses S. Grant.

### THE CROSSING OF THE RAPIDAN.

From Lieut. Appleton's Notes: "After finding that we could cross the river with no opposition, we did so at Ely's Ford, and soon the artillery was climbing the opposite bank, some of the carriages being drawn by ten or more horses, and lagging behind at that. I lunched with the officers of the 9th Mass. Infantry when we stopped for a noonday halt.

And now General Sykes was in a dilemma to find the road and follow the tracks of the infantry. Here I began to act as Aide to Captain Augustus P. Martin, who had only one staff officer with him, and the business of looking after six batteries is extended and responsible.

We cut through the woods, and soon struck the celebrated Germanna Plank Road (a part of the plank road leads from Germanna to Wilderness) which leads to Chancellorsville, and for the possession of which there was at that battle considerable contest. We went on slowly, as many little bridges had to be built, and at dusk the Corps bivouacked where they were, on each side of the road, the troops coming up by degrees, and so falling asleep by the roadside."

Nov. 27, 1863. At 6 a. m. the Battery hitched up and soon moved by a cross road to the Plank Road leading to Orange Court House. The advance skirmished most of the way. The roads were so muddy and rough, and frozen so hard, that many wheels on the gun carriages and other vehicles were broken, but they arrived after marching 8 or 10 miles near New Verdiersville and relieved Gregg's Division of cavalry. Skirmished with the enemy all day. At 3 o'clock p. m. came up with their main body, and were

ordered into action at New Hope Church. Lieut. Scott was wounded in the hand by a piece of shell. Fired until dark. Got supper and turned in for the night on the field. Battery still in position. Heard chopping all night. Some Corps ammunition wagons in the rear had been cut out by the Rebs and William Greeley of the Fifth Mass. Battery was captured with Lieut. William H. Follett who had been commissioned to the Third Mass. Battery, but had never joined. Captain A. P. Martin's mess wagon was captured.

"The Fifth Army Corps" (Scott's Notes) "found the enemy strongly intrenched beyond Mine Run, a treacherous stream. The Fifth Corps occupied the Left of the line of battle, the Right reaching away to Robertson's Tavern. The whole country was almost a wilderness. All the Army was up at this point. On November 27th, 1863, the Fifth Mass. Battery stood in line of battle on a rise of ground in a lane, scrub and brush wood on either side, and a dense forest of pines but a short distance across an open swale. Nothing to be seen in front. On our right we could see a battery engaged, and shell were exploding all about us. A lead horse of the Battery was struck by a piece of shell and dropped on his knees, but was not killed. An officer rode up to Captain Phillips and asked why he was not engaged. Phillips replied that he had no orders, nor could he see anything to fire at. The officer said: 'Use your judgment as an officer. Fire over the woods in your front.'

The Battery filed into the brush on the left of the lane, and opened fire through the woods. No enemy was to be seen, and our troops on the left as far as could be seen were lying on the ground face down, knapsacks on their backs. A lull came in the firing, and the men of the Battery set to work cutting down trees and brush, to enable the cannoneers to get the limber about in case we had to move out. While we were about this duty, a sharp fragment of a shell struck

the forefinger of my left hand, and I rode to a hospital in the rear and had it dressed.

Returning to the Battery, I found it had been decided that the Left was unassailable, and the artillery was ordered to Robertson's Tavern, but remained in position during the night."

#### FROM LETTER OF LIEUT. APPLETON.

"On the 27th off at daybreak, struck a dirt road, which soon led to another plank road parallel to the first, and also in the direction of Orange Court House. On, on, we trudged, and soon we heard heavy cannonading, which every minute grew nearer, mixed now and then with the sharp cracks of the carbine. We soon came to the little village of Mt. Hope Church, where the Corps rushed on at 'double quick' to relieve the shattered squadrons of Gregg, and a splendid sight it was. The cavalry formed in squares by the road side, right glad to be relieved, by the 'Dough-boys,' and our artillery rushing on to the front. Captain Martin soon got the batteries in posish, and in fact the only fighting our Corps did was done by the artillery. I soon heard that Charlie Longfellow had been wounded, and stole the first minute I could get to run off to the hospital, Mt. Hope Church, where I saw the dear boy, lying on the pulpit, and surrounded by the officers of the regiment (First Mass. Cavalry). He looked and talked well, but I did not have but a minute to stay with him, as my biz. then was on the field.

Well, the Rebs retired. Sykes was perplexed. The infantry in the woods, and the sun set.

That night I passed with Captain Martin at Walcott's camp. One man in the Ohio battery was killed, two wounded; also Lieut. Scott of our Battery, wounded in the hand.



I went again to the hospital in the evening, but Charlie had gone, as they had taken off all except the worst cases. I assure you it was not a pleasant sight. Charlie and Bowditch (Captain Henry Pickering Bowditch shot in the right forearm) went off together. Charlie was wounded by a ball just under the shoulder blade, injuring the spine, but missing the vital parts."

Of Lieut. William H. Follett, the ordnance officer who was captured by rebel cavalry between Parker's Store and Mt. Hope Church, Lieut. Appleton says: "He is a jolly fellow, a regular character, whose jokes are well known and laughed at all through the Corps. One of his expressions for the delights of campaigning, taking off the Irish brogue, was: 'Oh, that ever I should lave me nice dacent, clane, fither bed, and come out here and slape in a bag, and be whistled out like a dog in the morning about two o'clock in the night.'"

#### OBSERVATIONS OF CAPTAIN PHILLIPS.

On the expedition across the Rapidan in a letter of Dec. 14, 1863:

"I do not consider the movement a great military success on our part, though I do not know where the trouble lies. I think it was about the coldest excursion I was ever on. The nights were very cold while we were in position on Mine Run, and I do not wonder that some of the skirmishers froze to death."

Of the Fifth Corps Ammunition train he says: "The Corps had started from Wilderness. . . . The Ammunition Train was immediately in rear of the Corps and the 1st Corps immediately in rear of the Train. While the Train was passing along the Dirt Road to cross from one Plank Road to the other, they were attacked by about 100 rebel cavalry. Some of the teams were driven across the

Orange C. H. road into the Cart Path, but the greater number were set on fire in the road and blown up. The whole thing was conducted very quietly, and they might have carried off the whole train if the advance of the 1st Corps had not driven them off. As it was they carried off Lieut. Pond, Ordn. Off. 2d Division, and Lieut. Follett of Martin's Battery, Ordnance Officer of the Artillery Brigade. The wagons carried off and destroyed were, the Artillery Ammunition Train, the Ammunition Train of the 1st and 2d Divisions, and several Head Quarters and Hospital Wagons. It was a very cool operation."

---

On November 28, 1863, they got hitched up by daylight in a heavy rain storm, and the Battery was taken out of line, and marched by the right flank to Robertson's Tavern and parked for the night. The rebels were in position on the west bank of Mine Run, and could be distinctly seen from where they were. They joined the rest of the Army which was massed here and from which they had been cut off the previous day. They went into camp at the Tavern at 7 p. m. Order came to unhitch and unharness at 9 p. m.

#### THE INVALID CORPS.

(War Department.) Nov. 28, 1863.

Under General Orders No. 381, to take effect December 1, 1863, transferred,

Corporal John Egan, Co. E, 5th Massachusetts Artillery.

#### VIEWS OF LIEUT. APPLETON.

"The next morning" (Nov. 28th) "saw a fatal mistake. Our Corps packed up and went—cut through the woods—to Robertson's Tavern, and joined the rest of the Army. We should have stayed where we were, and pitched into the Rebs. A pouring rainy morn and every one feeling

that a big battle was imminent. We frittered away the day, and the next morning, Sunday, the 29th, we went out a mile to the front, and took our place in the line of battle behind some hastily thrown up earthworks. The Second Corps spent the day in marching round to exactly the place we left yesterday, viz., the Left wing. Thus a whole day was wasted.

The two armies were now face to face, battery opposite battery, but still not a gun was fired. The sun set. The night was bitter cold. I slept cuddled up under a tarpaulin in range of the enemy's batteries, with the strange feeling in me, that probably by tomorrow one of the biggest battles this continent had ever seen would be fought, and, God grant, the rebellion finished; that of the splendid army around me by tomorrow night thousands would be killed or wounded."

---

"Sunday, Nov. 29, 1863." (Dyer's Notes.) "Reveille at 3¼ a. m. No bugles blown. Started at daybreak to relieve the Sixth Corps. Marched about a mile. Went into position about 1500 yards from the enemy. In about an hour the Right and Left sections were withdrawn to make room for some 32 pounders. No firing occurred to-day except by our skirmishers. Signs of a big fight tomorrow. Rebs showed a big front today. Very cold."

The line of battle was across the turnpike near Old Verdierville. On the opposite side of the Run were the enemy's works. The guns which took the place of the Right and Left sections, belonged to Battery M, 1st Conn. Artillery.

Lieut. Scott went into the hospital tent. His hand was very painful, and the night was extremely cold. The men slept on the ground without tents. The water in the Run was icy, and the approach to the precipitous banks whereon

the enemy was intrenched was a treacherous swamp to cross which it was said it would take eight minutes, exposed to a terrible fire.

#### THE PROMPTNESS OF THE BATTERIES.

"Nov. 30, 1863" (Dyer's Notes). "opened cold and blustering after a very cold night. Got up at 3 o'clock. No bugles allowed to be blown. Hitched up and moved a little to the rear out of sight of the enemy. The ball opened on our side at 8 o'clock a. m. and continued  $1\frac{1}{2}$  hours—Lieut. Scott took his section into position—but the enemy would not respond. During the day two sections went to relieve the heavy guns of Sergt. Sims, but General Meade ordered us back again. Some ladies passed us going to the rear this morning. Orders came to be ready to move any time during the night."

At 4 p. m. of Nov. 30th parked in the woods and kept up a big fire. At Head Quarters a council of war was held and a backward movement was ordered.

#### FROM LIEUT. APPLETON'S NOTES.

"Nov. 30, 1863. A cold, raw, windy day. An orderly came at four with orders for us to open fire at eight a. m. At 8 o'clock we opened fire with 50 guns. No response from the enemy. We ceased. I saw Colonel Wainwright, whose batteries were next to us, and had a chat with him. A little fire from the Rebs at noon which we soon silenced, a little more at dusk, and the day was over. The red flags floated gaily over the hospitals for in them were no wounded! At night the order came for half the artillery and all the trains and ambulances to recross the Rapidan. We all saw the meaning, we were to retire without a fight."

"Dec. 1, 1863." (Scott's Notes.) "The morning was very cold. Ice made 1 in. thick. A picket said to have been

chilled to death on the line. Phillips ordered with 3 batteries to join the Artillery Reserve to recross the Rapidan. At sunrise we moved out over fields frozen solid that the day before artillery had mired on. At noon with the ammunition and other trains we forded the Rapidan, waist deep, at Ely's Ford, and went into park in a piece of woods. Horses stood in harness all night. The whole Army recrossing the river. The road was blocked with trains moving back to the rear. It would be hard to describe the situation that surrounded us in swamp and woods. With the travel, the road, all had to move on, became liquid mud. We kept up a fire all night and froze one side and burnt the other. I had not seen a more trying time for the men and horses."

"Dec. 1, 1863." (Shackley's Notes.) "The Centre section was ordered to join the others (the Right and Left sections ordered out of the earthworks near Mine Run to make room for Battery M, 1st Conn. Art'y.) and, with two of the Fifth Corps batteries and the Reserve Artillery crossed the Rapidan at Ely's Ford, and went into park about 2 miles from the river. Unhitched, cleaned our horses, then hitched up and remained all night."

The place where they parked was near the wagons at Richardsville, and here they waited to be ready to march with the Fifth Corps when it came along. With them were Gibbs' and Barstow's (Battery F, and K, 3d U. S.) batteries and they were ordered to report to General Tyler at Robertson's Tavern. The column consisted of the Reserve Artillery, and one half of the Corps Artillery. Lieut. Appleton spent part of the time in the rear with four pieces, and part with the other two. He headquartered for the night with the Third Mass. Battery in the pines. "Through the night," he wrote, "sometimes on foot to keep warm, sometimes on horseback and with frequent halts, we had performed the tedious march."

Dec. 2d, about 4 p. m., the Battery resumed the march, moving along 8 miles with the Artillery Reserve. The road was blocked up with trains, as on the day before, and almost impassable. Sun one hour high they were ordered to report back to the Fifth Corps at Stephensburg. At 9 p. m. they hauled out and went into camp near the Third Corps. The rear guard notified them that they would be left in the rear. A pole of one of the caissons was broken. They waited for the wagon trains to pass, for it was impossible to keep in line there was so much crowding of teams for right of way in the darkness and mud, and at midnight marched with the Third Corps 9 miles to Stephensburg, and went into park where the Fifth Corps was,  $1\frac{1}{2}$  miles from Pony Mountain. Arrived at Stephensburg at daylight.

"All the Army" (Scott's Notes) "had retreated across the Rapidan, and this was the 3d time the Fifth Mass. Battery had been with a retreating army across these rivers."

At 8 o'clock of the 3d they fed, and got breakfast, hitched up, passed with the Fifth Corps through Brandy Station, crossed the Rappahannock, and went into camp, for the night, a mile and a half from the Station, pretty well played out. Turned in at 9 p. m. They were to guard the railroad to Manassas. Three batteries remained here; others at Bristoe and Manassas. Hitched up early in the morning of December 4th and changed camp to a more desirable place for headquarters, facing the south, about a mile from the station. The First Corps was sent to the comfortable quarters in the rebel log houses, and the Battery with the Fifth Corps was ordered to guard the railroad from the Rappahannock to Manassas Junction. The guns were put into the earthworks from which they drove the rebels on the north side of the Rappahannock River, at Rappahannock Station.

Lieut. Appleton returned to the Battery from serving on Captain Martin's staff. Lieut. Scott received leave of



absence for 20 days, on account of his wound, and he did not see the Battery again until February 1, 1864, when he found them at the Station on his return.

THE REPORT OF CAPTAIN PHILLIPS  
TO

LIEUT. P. F. NASON, A. A. A. G.

Written at Camp near Rappahannock Station, Dec. 4, 1863.

"Sir: I have the honor to forward a report of my Battery during the late movement of the Army across the Rapidan.

With the rest of the Corps we left camp at Mountain Creek on the 26th of November, crossed the Rapidan at Culpeper Ford, and marched to Wilderness on the Plank Road from Germanna Ford.

The next day we marched on the Orange C. H. road towards New Verdierville. About 4 p. m. I was ordered into position on the left of the road, and received a few shots from the enemy.

First Lieut. Henry D. Scott was struck in the (left) hand by a piece of shell and his hand seriously injured.

On the 28th we marched to Robertson's Tavern: on the 29th at daylight we marched up the turnpike to the heights near Mine Run, and I was placed in position in earthworks. Four of my guns were soon after withdrawn to make room for Captain Pratt's Battery (Captain F. A. Pratt, M, 1st Conn.) of 4½ inch rifled guns. We remained here in position till 5 a. m. December 1st.

On the 30th, in accordance with orders from Captain Martin to open as soon as the firing commenced on the right, I fired a little, but without receiving any fire in return.

On the morning of Dec. 1st I was ordered to report to Brig. Gen'l. R. O. Tyler to go to the rear with my own battery, Battery L, 1st Ohio, Captain Gibbs, and Batteries

F and K, 3d U. S. Art'y, Lieut. Barstow commanding. I immediately joined the Art'y Reserve, then on the march, crossed the river at Ely's Ford, and camped at Richardsville. On the 2d I received orders from General Tyler to rejoin the 5th Corps, which I did at daylight the next morning.

During the engagements of the 27th and 30th I fired 30 rounds. With the exception of Lieut. Scott I have no casualties to report."

#### FROM LIEUT. APPLETON'S LETTER HOME.

"We all suffered a good deal, accomplished nothing, lost nothing, and were *sold*.

Well, here we are, on a bleak and barren hill, doing garrison duty in the little forts which we took from the Rebs at the fight at Rappahannock Station, with the prospect of a long and cold winter before us. Lieut. Spear has been detailed as ordnance officer in place of Lieut. W. H. Follett. The 20th Maine Regiment (Chamberlain's), a jolly set of fellows, are close by us, and I expect we shall have a sort of heavy English military life 'in the barracks.' The train to Washington passes right under our nose, but the rub is to get a ticket, for General Meade is superintendent of the railroad, General Sykes ticketmaster, Captain Martin conductor, and Captain Phillips brakeman, and I can whistle for a seat all day. It will be very easy for any of my friends to visit me, as all they have to do is to get out just as they are going to cross the river, and there we are.

There are plenty of graves all around of the poor fellows who fell in the charge at the fight here three weeks ago, and in our own camp we can pick up the shells our own Battery tossed at it then."

December 5, 1863, they made preparations to stop awhile, but before night had orders to be ready to leave at short notice.

Dec. 6, marched to Rappahannock Station to relieve Battery C, 1st Va. Art'y., Captain Hill, in the works on the north side of the river. Very cold and blustering. Put two sections into the earthworks taken from the enemy Nov. 7, 1863.

LETTER OF SERG'T. W. H. PEACOCK.

"CAMP NEAR RAPPAHANNOCK STATION,

Dec. 8, 1863.

Since I wrote last we have been in two fights, the first a month ago at this place, when we were hotly engaged with the Rebels in the Forts where our Battery is now in position. We were very fortunate in coming out of the fight all safe, although the shells were bursting thickly around us. After the fight we occupied the log houses, working like everything for three weeks, cleaning up the grounds, etc. Orders came to move, and over the Rapidan we went. When near Spottsylvania, on the Plank Road, we engaged two Rebel batteries for about an hour, having Lieut. Scott wounded,—the same lieutenant who was wounded at Gettysburg,—he is now at home. This was our only loss in men; some horses wounded. I think it was lucky for us we were ordered to leave this place as we did, for the Rebel sharpshooters were up in the trees pegging away at us so we were obliged to lie flat on the ground, or all get shot in no time. One bullet struck the ground at my head, so near that I had only to reach out my hand and pick it up, as I lay on the ground. We suffered much on this march being wet through and our overcoats frozen stiff. At this place we are on a hill, the Battery in position, covering the R. R. bridge over the river. It is awfully cold, and we live in nothing but the shelter tents, and sleep on the frozen ground with only one or two blankets under us. The officers tell us to make no preparations for Quarters until we

know for certain where we shall winter. Quite a number of our men are sick from so much exposure. Mr. Story has been quite sick for several days. He sends his regards. I have a severe cold; have not slept warm a night for a month. Many of the men sit round the fire all night to keep warm. I tell you this soldiering is gay sport! Pork and hard bread until one's mouth is so sore he can hardly open it. The Boys talk all the time about when they are going home, as if it was but a few days, when it is ten months. One-half of this time will probably be spent in winter quarters. We all have much confidence in Gen. Meade, and consider him the best officer that could be placed over us."

Dec. 8th orders came to make themselves comfortable for the winter. Dec. 9th the Third Virginia Battery left for Brandy Station. They began to haul logs. Moved their tents up to Captain Hill's chimneys, and commenced building houses. Orders were read concerning re-enlistments of the original members. Dec. 10th, thirty-four of the men re-enlisted for three years or during the war. By Lieut. Appleton:—"Dec. 8th. Perhaps they will send some of us out to Grant, as it is ridiculous folly to keep this big army here all winter doing nothing. Dec. 11th. There are only two lieutenants with the Battery now, so we have to go on duty every other day, and, as the days are very short, we don't have much time to pass in listless idleness. Then the newspapers have to be read, food has to be eaten, and pipes smoked. By the by, talking of newspapers, how solidly satisfactory are the reports of the President, Secretary of War, Navy, &c., &c. They make out good stories, and we feel that we can believe them. 'Old Abe's' proclamation is manly. What an old brick he is, after all! Our men are getting quite interested in this re-enlisting business. Sixteen of the Battery have done so already, and I expect that more will.

Evening: I saw a lot of cavalry going by this afternoon, and I rushed out to see who they were, and on hearing they were Gregg's I waited for the 1st Mass. to pass. I soon espied the burly form of Ben. Crowninshield (Benjamin William Crowninshield, author of a history of the 1st Mass. Cavalry), who said that what there were left of them were going down towards Warrenton Junction."

In a later letter Lieut. Appleton describing the events of the day of the cavalry fight, thus briefly refers to some of Captain Martin's duties at the moment:—"I was riding round after Captain Martin when everything was in confusion, and he was busily engaged in taking care of his six batteries, leaving the caissons behind in one place, rushing up one battery to the extreme front, popping two guns in here, others there, wherever he could find the best shelter, keeping some well concealed in reserve, sending off some with another Division, and having about as much mental and physical work as one man and horse could stand."

#### FURLOUGHS: CAPT. PHILLIPS.

HD. QRS. BATTERY E, (FIFTH) MASS.

(LT.) ART'Y.,

Dec. 11, 1863.

CAPT. P. F. NASON, A. A. A. G.

Sir.

I respectfully request that furloughs of forty-five (45) days be granted to the following members of Battery E (Fifth) Mass. (Lt.) Art'y, who have re-enlisted as Veteran Volunteers under G. O. No. 191, War Dept, series of 1863, and have been duly mustered into the service. If they receive furloughs at the present time I think it would induce many more of the Battery to re-enlist.

Sergt. Harrison O. Simonds.

" Mason W. Page.

Corp'l. Elisha J. Gibbs.

“ Patrick Welch.

Private Henry D. Crapo.

Bugler James Winters.

Private William H. Dunham.

“ Mortier Gale.

“ Albion K. P. Hayden.

“ John F. Mack.

“ George W. Poole.

“ Amos Blanchard.

Very respectfully, &c., &c.

This paper was signed by Captain C. A. Phillips, and on this day twelve men went over with Lieut. Appleton to Corps Head Quarters and re-enlisted. The Battery busy drawing logs. Dec. 12, Serg't Otis B. Smith went home. Lieut. Appleton went over to Head Quarters with seven more men.

### INVALID CORPS.

WAR DEPARTMENT,

Dec. 12, 1863.

Under General Orders No. 394, transferred, to take effect December 15, 1863.

Smith, Benjamin F., Private, Co. E, 5th Massachusetts Artillery.

---

December 13, 1863, Sunday, was the anniversary of the Battle of Fredericksburg. Two boxes came to Lieut. Appleton from Boston, one with clothes. He went to hear the chaplain of the 20th preach a good sermon. Of the camp Captain Phillips wrote Dec. 14, 1863:—"I cannot say much in favor of the location, which is one of the most desolate places around here. The nearest wood is nearly a mile off in a straight line, and there is nothing to shelter us from the



wind which blows pretty strong occasionally, today for instance. We have been hauling logs the last week with much labor and difficulty, and by the end of this week, if we do not move before, we shall be comfortably located in our log houses."

Lieut. Appleton rode Dec. 14th with "Bristow" over to Army Head Quarters, and passed a pleasant morning with Bache, Lyman & Co. "Bristow" was a nickname Captain Martin had given to Lieut. Barstow. On the 15th Lieut. Blake got ten days' leave, and went off at 11 o'clock. Gibbs was made a sergeant, and Alpheus Haskins a corporal. H. O. Simonds was appointed 1st Sergeant. Dec. 16th the Captain got into his new house, and the whole establishment was moved back. The Inspector came. Dec. 17th, Knox auctioneered some confiscated sutlers' goods at Captain Martin's Head Quarters. They were confiscated for selling liquor.

#### LETTER OF LIEUT. APPLETON.

"RAPPAHANNOCK STATION,

Dec. 17, 1863.

I am pretty busy just now, and in fact have about all the practical management of the Battery, as the Captain is not very well and spends most of his time in his log house; Lieut. Scott off with his wounded finger; Lieut. Blake away on a ten days' leave; and Lieut. Spear detailed as ordnance officer of the Brigade, but on the whole I rather like it, for it keeps all my time pleasantly occupied."

Referring to Follett's capture and the ammunition train, he says:—"It was rather an interesting little episode. Lieut. Follett was riding along quietly, with his train of ammunition, a Division of infantry ahead of him in the road, and one behind him, too, when some guerillas suddenly dashed in from the woods, ran out as many wagons as they could, set them on fire, took off the mules, and were awa-

before any troops approached. Lieut. Follett was the only man who showed any fight, and he slashed away at them well with his sabre, but he was easily overpowered, and has already been heard of from Libbey. Sykes did not like the adventure in the least, and well he mightent. While I was an A. D. C. I saw a good many of the little straits which envelop a general's career, and perhaps have grown a little wiser from the initiation. They are subject to mistakes like any other men."

## REPORT OF CAPTAIN PHILLIPS.

HEAD QUARTERS FIFTH MASS.

BATTERY LT. ART'Y.,

Dec. 18, 1863.

LIEUT. J. E. SPEAR, A. A. A. G.

Sir.

In compliance with a telegram from Hd. Qrs. Army of the Potomac, I have the honor to make the following report:—

No. of enlisted men belonging	
to the Batt'y present with the brigade . . . . .	89
No. who have re-enlisted . . . . .	19
No. entitled to re-enlist . . . . .	59
No. not entitled to re-enlist . . . . .	11
No. who will re-enlist . . . . .	4

The above is as near the probable result as it is possible to arrive. In my opinion the number who will re-enlist will much exceed that stated above. The promised furlough is the principal inducement, and the fact that the men who have already enlisted—a week ago—have not yet obtained their furloughs, has rendered the men distrustful and doubting, and they are unwilling to pledge themselves.

The *actual granting* of furloughs is necessary to confirm

the intentions of those who have almost decided to re-enlist, and this class includes at least half the Battery.

Very respectfully, &c., &c.

---

Dec. 18, 1863. The day was cloudy, but the sky cleared with a very strange sunset. Appleton rode over to Head Quarters and raced back with the cars.

Captain Phillips wrote on the 19th regarding the re-enlistments:—

“General Meade is trying to find out how many will re-enlist and go off on furloughs, and it is said if the number is near 20,000, he will fall back to this side of the Rappahannock, and not attempt to hold his present line, with an army temporarily reduced by so large a number. The guerrillas are quite active in our neighborhood, and it is not safe to go outside the picket line, or even inside of it a great way from camp. Major Edmands, of the 32d Mass. was gobbled up the other day.”

Of his log house he says:—“My house was finished a few days ago, and is a very good specimen of log architecture. The logs of which it is built are all split and the split sides put inside, so that the walls can be finished off quite smooth. The dimensions inside are 7 ft. by 15; door in the middle of one of the long sides, and fireplace opposite. It is not yet supplied with a floor, and the other decorations which will make it the abode of splendor and ease. The camp will be a very good specimen of winter quarters when finished.”

During the five months passed here in winter quarters, Lieut. Nathan Appleton sent several communications on matters connected with the army, and especially the artillery, (see p. 52) to officials and to newspapers and the following written in December is the first that ever appeared in the daily press. It was published in the *Washington Chronicle*, and had “Music for the Army” for its theme:—

"Sir. (To the Editor) As you seem always ready to accept and publish any letters from the soldiers, I wish through your paper to express a want which is sadly felt throughout the Army. I mean music.

Since the time when regimental bands were stopped, there has been a great dearth of this pleasant feature in military life. Bugles and drums, under whose notes the soldiers eat, rise, drill, and go to bed, are not enough. The soul-stirring music of brass bands only can supply the deficiency. And why should we not have them? Consider their utility. In the long, lazy days of camp life, they are one of the greatest sources of pleasure which fall to the soldier, and not only a pleasure but a real good. For who can deny the thrilling influence of martial or sacred music? In the heat of battle the opportune playing of a band may turn the fortune of the day. In the burial of the soldier they play their part. A regimental dress parade is tame without them. What is the objection to having them again introduced to the army? It cannot surely be expense, for that is something this country laughs at. If it is the trouble of transportation, then let us at least have them in winter quarters, and let it be arranged so that a few can follow the army on its marches, and help it win some victories. The theory is, I believe, to have a band to each Brigade, but as in this arrangement there is no one to look after the band, it soon tumbles to pieces. If all the musical instruments, now scattered about in the different regiments, were collected together and systematized, there would be music enough for the army. Here is a plan I would suggest: Let one Regiment from each Brigade be selected to have a band, and let this distinction be a mark of honor.

Very truly yours,

THE MALTESE CROSS."

## NATIONAL CHARACTERISTICS.

BY LIEUT. NATHAN APPLETON.

“As I have walked up and down in front of the stable, seeing that the artillery horses are properly groomed, I have often noticed how the national characteristics of the different men appeared in their attitudes, conversation, songs, and gestures, as they stood there at work.

Here is the burly old Irishman, fat, jolly and simple, with his hearty laugh and his full brogue, telling how ‘the bloody baysts’ try to kick him, and next him the fair-haired young German, always merry and half chanting some hymn of the Fatherland.

Again, we see a canny, rough-faced, wiry Scotchman of whom the thistle is a fit emblem, sturdily working away, or aiming some dry repartee at his companion. John Bull the genuine is there also, always dropping his ‘h’ and saying that ‘the ’orses never thrive on so few hoats.’ And then a light and airy Frenchman, a favorite with all, turning his versatility to the best account, and always seemingly comfortable.

The American himself, of course predominates, the true and best type of Anglo-Saxon blood, whether he be the shrewd tobacco loving Yankee, or the more cosmopolitan westerner; whether he is an old salt, rolling in his gait and wearing ear rings, and his arms well tattooed, whether he has left the whirl of the metropolis and daintily tries to avoid Virginia mud, or whether, like Cincinnatus, he is a country ploughboy; all trades and professions have come together,—the half developed boy and the gray haired veteran.

And is it not some great, some glorious object which has called together this mighty band?

‘For Saxon, or Dane or Norman we,’ says Tennyson, yes, and what would he say of us, the people of the United

States? A universal brotherhood, a haven for those of all nations who are smarting under oppression and wrong. They swarm in this country from every portion of the globe, here to possess and enjoy those privileges which they know belong to them as human beings and as the children of God."

The line from Tennyson is from his poem on the marriage of Alexandra to the Prince of Wales.

"Sea king's daughter  
from over the sea.

---

For Saxon or Dane  
or Norman we  
Teuton or Celt or what  
ever we be  
We are all Dane in  
our welcome of thee,  
Alexandra."

#### LETTER OF WILLIAM H. PEACOCK.

Serg't Peacock wrote in a letter dated Dec. 21, 1863:—  
I got my house up three days ago, and I tell you, it seems good to get into some comfortable place, for we have been living in thin shelter tents, sleeping on the frozen ground. I have a very bad cold from so much exposure.

We guard the R. R. bridge at this place. The Battery is in two forts. The guerillas raise the devil with us here, taking men off in sight of their camp, making raids on the trains, &c. They go in small parties looking for victims. Some prisoners they send off: others are stripped of all their clothing and valuables, and let return to their camps. Our boys capture many of them."

---

"December 22, 1863. (Private Dyer.) there was great excitement about re-enlisting."

Dec. 23d. There was a snow storm in the morning.



Lieut. Appleton moved into his log house, and a dozen veterans went on 35 days furlough. The order came from the War Department that recruits in three years' organizations in Massachusetts be discharged with their organizations.

"In this camp" (Notes of Corporal Shackley) "the Battery built log houses for officers, Orderly and Quartermaster Sergeants, Commissary and cooks, and for all the men, nearly thirty houses in all; also a stockade for the horses, enclosing about 50 yards square of ground by digging a trench nearly 3 ft. deep, and cutting trees about 10 feet long, and splitting them in halves, and standing them on end close together in the trench all around the enclosure except six or eight feet for an entrance. All the materials for the houses, the stockade, and all the fuel to warm the houses and do all the cooking during nearly five months, had to be brought from one mile to three miles distance."

There were a good many temporary changes in the Battery. On the 24th Lieut. Appleton took some more men over to Captain Gentry. Orders came to get ready for a raid of cavalry.

On Christmas Day the second anniversary of the Battery's taking leave of Massachusetts, Lieut. Blake got back. The men had pie and cake for breakfast and supper and roast chicken for dinner. In the evening 17 re-enlisted men went home on a 35 days furlough, among whom was Private Dyer's tent mate Edwin J. Butler. Dyer sent his revolver home by Serg't Morgridge. Dec. 26, he was detailed to act as corporal for 35 days, while the re-enlisted men were at home. He took the last part of the night. Orders came to be ready for inspection the next day, but on the 27th, which was Sunday, it rained hard. They went out on the ground, but came back to camp without having been inspected.

Dec. 28, 1863. Lieut. Scott in Newport, sent surgeon's certificate to Adjutant General and to Captain Phillips in the Field. Sutler's goods arrived.

## SUBSTITUTES IN DRAFT.—MONEY PAID.

WAR DEPARTMENT  
ADJUTANT GENERAL'S OFFICE.  
WASHINGTON, December 28, 1863.

General Orders,  
No. 400.

Sec. 2. And be it further resolved, That the money paid by drafted persons under the "Act for enrolling and calling out the National Forces, and for other purposes," approved third March, eighteen hundred and sixty-three, shall be paid into the Treasury of the United States, and shall be drawn out on requisition, as in the case of other public moneys; and the money so paid shall be kept in the Treasury as a special deposit, applicable only to the expenses of draft, and for the procurement of substitutes. For these purposes it is hereby appropriated.

Approved Dec. 23, 1863.

By Order of the Secretary of War.

E. D. TOWNSEND  
*Assistant Adjutant General.*

Dec. 29, 1863. Lieut. Appleton left on the 8 o'clock train for Washington and Boston, on a ten days' leave.

## FROM CAPTAIN PHILLIPS TO CAPTAIN NASON.

HD. QRS. BATTERY E,  
(FIFTH) MASS. (LT.) ART'Y,  
Dec. 29, 1863.

CAPT. P. F. NASON, A. A. A. G.

*Sir,*

In compliance with circular of the 28th Hd. Quarters A. P. I have the honor to report.

No. of men who have re-enlisted in this Battery, 30.

No. having less than 15 months to serve, who have agreed to re-enlist, None.

I am very respectfully &c.

Dec. 30, 1863, Acting Corporal Dyer went over to Head Quarters with sick report in the morning.

December 31st, the last day of the year was very stormy, but was brightened by the sight of a fresh supply of goods to the sutler for New Years which came in on Friday, and opened very cold but pleasant. The Captain's log house had by this time a good floor of pine boards, and he had an easy chair and a camp stool. The fireplace, built of stones and mud, held quite a pile of logs, and kept the temperature as high as necessary for comfort. The men had a New Years Day dinner of stewed turkey, and Lieut. Spear dined with Captain Phillips on turkey which was roasted. The mud of the morning froze in the afternoon.

January 2, 1864. Orders to prepare for inspection. Jan'y 3d, Sunday. Battery inspection in the forenoon. Dyer had company to dinner—dined on bread toast—Andrew W. Almy and Fred D. Alden. He received an invitation to a roast turkey dinner for Tuesday.

Jan'y 4th, there was drill on the manual of the piece in the morning. It began to snow in the forenoon and snowed all day, but the teams kept busy drawing logs for the stable. At dark the snow was three inches deep. Jan'y 5th it had cleared off and Corporal Dyer went over to the Doctors in charge of the sick in the morning, came back and went over to Captain Martin's Hd. Qrs. to the dinner with Andrew W. Almy and Fred D. Alden. The next day he had some cake for supper out of Corporal Proctor's box. On this day Lieut. Appleton left Boston for camp with Captain A. P. Martin at 8 o'clock, and was in camp at 3.30 p. m. January 7th. The air was so cold the snow did not melt in the sun. Captain Phillips had eaves put on his log house as he found the water leaked into the walls. It commenced snowing again at 5 p. m. and continued to snow through the night. Dyer was Acting Corporal of the Guard. Serg't Nye went on a furlough of 35 days.

## CAPTAIN MARTIN'S COMMAND.

DEFINED BY LIEUT. APPLETON.

"Our Brigade is commanded by Captain Martin of the Third Mass. Battery, and he has as big a staff and as responsible a place as any brigadier:—It consists of the Third Mass. Lieut. Aaron F. Walcott 12 lb. Napoleons.

Fifth Mass. Battery, 3 inch Ordnance.

Battery D, 5th U. S.—Griffin's Battery, commanded by Hazlett killed at Gettysburg, now by Lieut. B. F. Rittenhouse, Parrotts, 3 inch.

Battery F and K, 3d U. S. four guns, 12 lb. Napoleons, commanded by Lieut. George F. Barstow.

Battery L, 1st Ohio, 12 lb. Napoleons Captain Frank C. Gibbs.

Battery C. 1st N. Y. 4 guns, 3 inch Ordnance—same as Fifth Mass.—Captain Almont Barnes."

---

January 9, 1864, John H. Olin wounded at Gettysburg returned to the Battery.

January 10th Sunday, the snow melted a very little. Battery inspection in the forenoon. Corporal Proctor entertained Acting Corporal Dyer on roast turkey which came in a box from home. Jan'y 11th Dyer made two benches for their convenience. Captain Phillips attended a council of administration in the afternoon, to choose a Brigade sutler. Mr. Clarke, their sutler, was elected. On the 12th Captain Phillips went home on leave of absence for 10 days, with permission to apply for extension of 5 days. He left Rapahannock Station at 11 a. m. Dyer went over with the sick to the Doctors. He felt "pretty bad" himself, but was "bound not to give up."

Jan'y 13, 1864. Roll call at the usual hour. It was proposed to have a four gun battery drill but Lieut. Blake gave it up. The next day they had a drill on the piece. On the

15th Dyer reported at Captain Martin's Hd. Qrs. at 9 a. m. with 5 men, and Lieut. Appleton wrote the letter to Secretary Stanton on Light Artillery in the Field (see p. 52).

Jan'y 17, 1864. Inspection by Lieut. Blake, Lieut. Appleton called upon Captain Clark of the 20th Maine after inspecting the bridge. Lieut. Rogers called and narrated his adventures. Jan'y 18th the Battery had orders to dig a trench in front of their houses. It rained hard but a system of drainage was laid out. About this date in a letter home, Lieut. Appleton urged the sending of conscripts to the Massachusetts Batteries immediately. He had no doubt there were enough at Long Island in Boston Harbor to fill them all. "This should be attended to," he urged, "as it is hard on the men to have to do guard duty so often."

Jan'y 19th. Colonel John B. Batchelder the Gettysburg man called, and dined with Lieuts. Blake and Appleton. Appleton's horses ran away, over to General Sykes's Head Quarters. Dyer went over to the Doctor's. The hospital had been moved. Jan'y 20th the stockading of the stable was commenced and fifty logs erected. Corporal Proctor went into the woods with part of the fatigue.

January 22, 1864, Lieut. Scott returned to camp. At this time there were a great many ladies, wives of the officers, at the headquarters. They could be seen constantly riding over the country. "Rather a rough life for them at best," was the comment. Lieut. Appleton's man "Joe" built a nice little stable for his two horses. Jan'y 23d was a perfect day, the first one for a long time. Lieut. Appleton rode over and called at the 83d Penn., also at the 3d Brigade Head Quarters, saw Colonel Joseph Hayes and Lieut. Rogers. Very muddy under foot, but the Battery all busy at work on the stable. The 24th was Sunday, and Lieuts. Blake and Appleton rode up to Beverly Ford to the 18th Mass. Regiment. In camp it was decidedly a day of rest.

Fred. D. Alden dined with Corporal Dyer. The 44th Regt. N. Y. V. left for Alexandria at night. Jan'y 25th was very warm, and the mud was beginning to settle. Quite a number of boards were left by the 44th of which they made good use in the Battery quarters.

Jan'y 26, 1864, George B. Trumbull and George H. Johnson returned to the Battery. The next day Captain Phillips returned to camp in the afternoon and Colonel John B. Batchelder who was getting up a plan of Gettysburg, called and stopped all night.

January 28, 1864, the first veterans returned from 35 days' furlough, 12 re-enlisted men, Corporal Welch among them. 29th the second lot of 35 days' furlough men came back. 30th three more came back from furlough. Several more re-enlisted. Orders came to clean carriages and pieces for inspection next day. Jan'y 31st, inspection in camp at 9 a. m. by Captain Phillips. Lieut. Blake started on a 15 days' leave.

Feb. 1, 1864. Two more men re-enlisted. Feb. 2d. Lieut. Appleton came of age. In the evening there was a tempest, rain, thunder and lightning. On the 3d the men went into the woods cutting corduroy for stabling for the horses. Colonel Theodore Lyman called to see Lieut. Appleton.

Feb. 4, 1864, six recruits for the Battery arrived. The 5th was pleasant and the Battery was inspected by Captain Martin at 2 p. m. The Battery, and the officers' and men's quarters were inspected.

February 6, 1864, heard heavy firing all day up to the front, in the direction of the Rapidan, and pontoons went out to the front in the morning, which looked as if they were making reconnoissances. At night furloughs were approved for 11 more veterans. Firing of musketry audible just at dusk. The roads were in good condition, and weather fine for small military operations.



Feb. 7, 1864, Sunday. Lieut. Appleton rode over to the 83d Pennsylvania, and called upon the ladies. Heard that the firing the day before was a reconnoissance over the Rapidan. Fred. D. Alden, Andrew Almy and James Allen, were visitors at the camp. Eleven more re-enlisted men went on 35 days' furlough. Feb. 8th Captain Phillips attended a council of administration to fix sutlers' prices. The band of the 18th Mass. Regiment came down. Serenade in the evening.

Feb. 9, 1864, began drills of raw recruits on the piece. The ladies of the 83d Pennsylvania called. On the 10th the Captain wrote of the stable:—"The great subject of interest in camp is our stable, which has been building for about four weeks, and is not yet finished. It is made of a stockade and floor of split logs, large enough to accommodate 120 horses, and the logs have to be hauled about two miles. I have borrowed two wagons from Brigade Head Qrs., and now have 5 six-mule wagons hauling logs and gravel,—to cover up the mud,—all the time."

Some of the men played euchre in the evening of the 10th with acquisitions from the 20th Maine. The next day Captain Phillips attended another council at Brigade Head Quarters, and six more recruits arrived. Appleton wrote in his Diary: "Dined at 5, with Colonel Joseph Hayes, General and Mrs. Sykes, Messrs. Hayes and others, at 3d Brigade Head Quarters, 1st Division, Fifth Corps. Quite a little party. Mrs. Sykes pretty, and a genuine example of the military lady of the U. S."

By General Orders No. 53, War Department Feb. 11, 1864, Private W. H. Chamberlain was transferred to the Invalid Corps, to take effect Feb. 15, 1864.

Feb. 12th a party from Brigade Head Quarters called. Men busy drawing sand for the streets and park. Dyer discouraged about his leg. On the 13th still busy drawing sand, and Fred. D. Alden supped with Dyer. Lieut. Apple-

ton rode over to Brandy Station and Army Head Quarters, with a party of gentlemen from Brigade Head Quarters, to show them the country. A pretty long ride, but a perfect spring day.

## LETTER OF SERG'T. WM. H. PEACOCK.

"RAPP'K STATION, VA.

Feb. 13, 1864.

Thinking you would like to see a picture of the Hill and River at this point, I enclose one taken from Harpers. [This was in *Harper's Weekly*, of November 28, 1863.--'The Army of the Potomac. Capture by Sedgwick's Corps of the Rebel Works on the Rappahannock near the Railway Bridge. Sketched by A. R. Waud.' As cut from the paper the sketch has been well preserved, and is now in possession of Sergt. Peacock in Chicago, Oct. 10, 1902.] I consider this a very correct cut. I had a good view of our infantry as they charged the rifle pit, and this looks very much like it. Our Battery was shelling them out of the large Fort on the hill, also the pontoon bridge over the River. Our position was 1000 yards in rear of the large work, on a flat. The infantry charged under cover of fire of Battery D, 5th U. S., and our Battery. It was lively work. Our Battery now occupies the large Fort commanding the new R. R. bridge, since built."

Feb. 14, 1864, St. Valentine's Day. Inspection of the Battery at 9 a. m. by Captain Phillips. On the 15th, the men went into the woods cutting stockade for stabling. 16th, Dyer felt pretty sick, but thought he could work it off, and went into the woods cutting wood all day. At night he felt worse instead of better. 17th the mercury was at zero. Dyer went to the Doctor's for medicine. 18th the Doctor ordered him to the hospital. 19th E. J. Butler and William Caswell called to see Corporal Proctor and Dyer

at the hospital. Lieut. Appleton started on a ten days' "leave." 21st. Battery inspection in the forenoon. Edward Smith and William Gunning went over to the hospital to see Dyer, and Robert King came back with them to get some things for him.

Feb. 22, 1864, there was a Brigade drill of the batteries viz., Barnes', Barstow's, Walcott's and Phillips', four guns each. Of this Captain Phillips wrote home:—

“RAPPAHANNOCK STATION,

Feb. 23, 1864.

I am sitting at my desk with my door wide open, and the men are playing ball out of doors. Yesterday we had a drill of four batteries, which lasted four hours, and was very fatiguing. I returned so hoarse that I could hardly speak, as it is rather difficult to give orders audibly when four batteries are rumbling over the ground. . . . Everything is very quiet here, and although the roads are now in very good condition, quite dusty, in fact, I imagine General Meade has seen too much of a Virginia winter, to be seduced into leaving comfortable quarters by such temporary inducements.”

The 23d was pleasant. Oiled harness in the Right section. 24th, Oiled the harness of the Centre section and painted the Right section. Corporal Proctor and Private Dyer rode over from the hospital on an errand for the Doctor, and found the men busy painting carriages and oiling harness. The 25th was pleasant and the painting was continued.

Feb. 26, 1864, the Battery was inspected by Captain Martin. Captain Phillips afterwards dined with Captain Martin. The Battery received 8 recruits transferred from the Third Mass. Battery.

Feb. 27th. Captain Phillips and Captain Nason, his father, and Lieut. Walcott rode to Culpeper Court House.

The Sixth Corps and some other troops moved towards the Rapidan. The Battery received orders at night to be ready to march early in the morning. The men finished a new mess house.

February 29, 1864. Lieut. Appleton returned to camp. The Army is all under marching orders.

## CHAPTER XX.

### THE BATTLE OF THE WILDERNESS.

MAY 5 TO 8, 1864.

"Headlong motions may be made, but let such be repressed; inertia alone is at once unpunishable and unconquerable. . . . Pause with Twenty-five millions behind you may become resistance enough."

—THOMAS CARLYLE.

In the period of two months immediately preceding the movement of the Army of the Potomac from the Rapidan to the James, the spring of 1864, very important changes were made. The organization of the Army itself was reconstructed, and another commander was appointed, fresh from western triumphs like McClellan in '61, but with successes more phenomenal, laurels brighter and more abundant, and more than all anxious millions of American people, graduates of a three years course in the study of the art of internecine war, behind him, who through their representatives in Congress had restored the grade of lieutenant general for the special purpose of placing Major General Ulysses S. Grant at the head of all the armies, with headquarters in Virginia.

But this time there was to be no farewell address from a retiring commander of the Army of the Potomac. General George G. Meade was still to retain the honor of the command, and General Grant says in his Memoirs,—“I tried to make General Meade’s position as nearly as possible what it would have been if I had been in Washington, or any other place away from his command.”

Grant acknowledges that Meade’s position proved embar-

passing to him if not to Meade, and in this instance the defeat of his purposes proved a triumph to American arms, inasmuch as the Army itself felt at once, and from the first promulgation of his promotion to power, the direct magnetic influence of his genius, which left no room for doubt that his position could never be in Washington, nor in any place whatsoever outside the needs and requirements of that Army whose enthusiasm had been repressed and its ambition checked for so long; every battle, whether lost or won, bringing with it its own peculiar concomitant of regret. Reaching out beyond all capabilities known and tried, they fastened upon Grant as the one man in the confidence of the nation, who could be relied upon not only to save them from defeat but to encourage them to follow up their victories.

Having been previously nominated to the grade of lieutenant general, on the 2d of March, Maj. Gen'l U. S. Grant was confirmed in that rank by the United States Senate, and on March 10th, 1864, he was assigned by Special Order of President Lincoln to the command of all the armies of the United States, Head Quarters to be with the Army of the Potomac. These were first established at Culpeper Court House, while General Meade's were at Brandy Station.

General Meade began the changes in the organization of the Army. The First Corps, having been condensed into two Divisions, became the 2d and 4th Divisions of the Fifth Corps, and so went out of existence. General G. K. Warren was placed in command of the Fifth Corps. The Third Corps was abolished. When the five corps were consolidated into three, the Reserve Division of Artillery was broken up, and the batteries were placed in the Second, Fifth, and Sixth Corps. General Henry J. Hunt still held the position of Chief of Artillery of the Army. Major General Winfield S. Hancock was given the command of the Second Corps, and Major General John Sedgwick that of the Sixth Corps. To the Ninth Corps, commanded by



Major General Ambrose E. Burnside, were assigned the regiments of U. S. Infantry ordered from New York Harbor, the 4th and 10th Regiments.

The Artillery Brigade, composed of 9 batteries, commanded by Colonel Charles S. Wainwright, and attached to the Fifth Corps, comprised the following:—

Third Mass. Battery, Capt. A. P. Martin.

Fifth Mass. Battery, Capt. C. A. Phillips.

Battery D, 1st N. Y. Light, Capt. Geo. B. Winslow.

Batteries E and L, 1st N. Y. Light, Lieut. Geo. Breck.

Battery H, 1st N. Y. Light, Capt. Charles E. Mink.

Battery B, 1st Penn. Light, Capt. James H. Cooper.

Battery B, 4th Regulars Light, Capt. James Stewart.

Battery D, 5th Regulars Light, Lieut. B. F. Rittenhouse.

These batteries were all from the old First and from the Fifth Corps. To them were added the 2d Battalion 4th N. Y. Heavy, commanded by Major Wm. Arthur.

The armament of the 8 light batteries was as follows:—

Stewart's, Mink's, Winslow's, and Martin's, each six 12 pdr. Napoleons.

Breck's, Cooper's, and Phillips' each six three-inch Rodman rifles. Rittenhouse's six 10 pdr. Parrott rifles.

In this Brigade the proportions of rifle batteries and Napoleon or 12 pdr. smooth bores were exactly equal.

The number of 12 pdr. smooth bores had been increased, the conditions not being favorable to long range artillery.

In these eight batteries there were 48 guns, 1,196 men, and 4 companies of the 4th N. Y. Heavy Artillery.

There were present for duty in the Army of the Potomac 103,785 officers and enlisted men, with 274 pieces of artillery.

General Benjamin F. Butler, with 20,000 men, was to co-operate from the south side of the James River, moving from Fortress Monroe the same day that General Meade moved from Culpeper.

The Army, which then occupied a position on the north bank of the Rapidan, was put in motion May 4, 1864, with the object of turning Lee's Right flank, the Fifth Corps taking the advance, followed by the Sixth Corps.

The enemy, well protected by earthworks, occupied the south bank of the Rapidan, their Left flank covered by the Rapidan and the mountains near Orange Court House, their Right flank guarded by a line of fortifications, extending from Mine Run to Morton's Ford.

The Fifth and Sixth Corps were ordered to cross at Germanna Ford, and proceed to the Old Wilderness Tavern on the Orange and Fredericksburg turnpike.

The Second Corps, followed by the Artillery Reserve, were to cross at Ely's Ford and take position at Chancellorsville. In advance of each column were the cavalry, and cavalry guarded the supply trains, which were to assemble at Richardsville.

General Burnside, in command of the Ninth Corps, was stationed at the crossing of the Rappahannock River on the Orange and Alexandria railroad to guard that road as far north as Bull Run, until he was notified that the crossing of the Rapidan had been accomplished, then he was to move forward promptly, and a Division of the Sixth Corps was to cover the bridge at Germanna Ford until his arrival.

The Fifth Corps, marching in silence, at midnight of May 3d, 1864, moved from the vicinity of Culpeper. Taking the most direct road to the Old Wilderness Tavern, they crossed the Rapidan at Germanna Ford and bivouacked at the junction of the Germanna Ford road with the turnpike, a distance of 20 miles, their line stretching from the turnpike to the Lacey house, and taking in the old tavern. After crossing the Ford the several batteries were assigned to march with the Divisions, for their better protection, it was said, through the Wilderness. The Third and Fifth Mass.

Batteries and Battery D, 1st N. Y., marched with General Charles Griffin's (First) Division, Fifth Corps.

Across their line of march led two roads, the Orange turnpike and the Orange and Fredericksburg Plank Road. The enemy had the same designs on our Right flank that we had on theirs, and knowing all about what we were doing, started on the afternoon of May 4th to carry out their plans.

The Army of the Potomac halted and waited in the Wilderness, where the conditions were much more favorable to the enemy than to them, from 2 o'clock p. m. May 4th until 5 o'clock a. m. of May 5th. It was thought best to halt the Fifth Corps at this place, in order to make the passage of the trains secure, and to rest the troops that they might be fresh to meet the enemy the next day.

The rebel general Lee sent Ewell's Corps by the Orange turnpike, and A. P. Hill by the Orange and Fredericksburg Plank Road. Hill was to be reinforced by Longstreet's Corps on the Plank Road.

At 5 p. m. of May 4th the last of the supply trains having crossed the Rapidan at Culpeper Ford, with their guard and the Reserve Artillery, the Fifth Corps moved by a farm road to Parker's Store, their right extending to the Old Wilderness Tavern, four miles south of the river, meeting the Divisions of the Sixth Corps not left at Germanna Ford, and having on its left the Second Corps at Shady Grove church. The Army had marched 20 miles and crossed the river on five bridges of its own building.

On reaching the Plank Road the Fifth Corps met the column of the confederate general Hill advancing from the direction of Parker's Store. The Fifth Corps formed line of battle at the right and left of the turnpike, which was for several miles a perfectly straight road and any movement could be discerned for the distance of two miles.

General Meade moved his Head Quarters to Old Wilder-

ness Tavern and General Grant moved his Head Quarters alongside General Meade's.

General Griffin in command of the 1st Division, Fifth Corps, moved up the road towards the west, on both sides of the pike. General Samuel W. Crawford with the 3d Division, and General James S. Wadsworth with the 4th Division, moved on a road which led southwest diagonally from the Lacey house to the Plank Road, so that the farther they proceeded the greater distance there was between Griffin's left and Wadsworth's right.

As Griffin moved forward, he came to a valley free from timber, but impeded by underbrush, several acres in extent. Across this valley on the crest of a ridge and in the edge of the woods, the enemy was posted, and opened fire on our advancing troops the moment they reached the cleared space. Here was where the 140th New York was cut up, crossing the valley and attempting a charge on the opposite side, and the 146th New York, both of General Romeyn B. Ayres' Brigade of the 1st Division, Fifth Corps, in assisting them.

On each side the contestants were completely concealed by the peculiar nature of the ground and the growth of wood. The Sixth Corps was unable to get in position on the right of Ayres' Brigade, and he was completely outflanked.

While Ayres was fighting on the right of the turnpike. General Joseph J. Bartlett of the 3d Brigade of Griffin's Division was moving forward on the left, and reaching the confederate line compelled the enemy to fall back, until reinforced by fresh troops, who after taking the ground from Ayres, moved down on Bartlett's flank.

Wadsworth on his diagonal road, which led through a thick forest, was outflanked on both sides, and, cut off from the rest of the Army in the rear, had to fight his way back to it. At 6 p. m. supported by General Henry Baxter's Brigade of General John C. Robinson's Division, Wads-

worth's Division occupied the woods south of the Lacey house, from which they drove out the rebels; pursuing them until dark, when they bivouacked with both flanks exposed.

When the Fifth Corps became engaged the Second Corps with Hancock in command, which had crossed the Rapidan at Ely's Ford and moved to Chancellorsville, was recalled while en route to Spottsylvania, and marched across country to the junction of the Brock and Plank roads where they were engaged with the Confederate Divisions of Heth and Wilcox.

The night of May 5th Griffin's Division constructed breastworks and occupied them.

General Burnside with the Ninth Corps, by a forced march, came up on the 6th early in the morning, and two Divisions under Generals Potter and Wilcox, took their position on the road to Parker's Store, between those held by the Fifth and Second Corps; other Divisions being assigned elsewhere, and were ordered to move to the left, and attack the enemy on the right of the Second Corps.

By this time many Divisions had been detached from their own corps and placed in others according to orders latest received, or ordered to positions distant from their own headquarters. Then followed more or less successful attempts to outflank our troops; including the attack on the left flank of the Second Corps, Hancock's famous charge on Hill, and the unsuccessful attempt on the Right of the Army at 6 p. m. of the 6th when General Samuel W. Crawford's Division of the Fifth Corps came promptly to its support.

#### AS TOLD BY MEMBERS OF THE BATTERY.

March 1st, 1864, the entire Army being under marching orders, all the cavalry and one army corps having gone out to the front for the purpose of taking Richmond, which was thought to be an easy thing, the Confederates having

made Braxton Bragg commander-in-chief under their President, "We expected," wrote Serg't. Peacock, "to move, for a certainty," but the orders were countermanded on the 2d and the report came to camp, that Kilpatrick and Custer were "slashing around Richmond."

On the 3d the following General Order was issued from the War Department:—

## THE REVIVAL OF THE GRADE OF LIEUT. GEN'L.

WAR DEPARTMENT  
ADJUTANT GENERAL'S OFFICE.

WASHINGTON, March 3, 1864

General Orders.

No. 87.

The following Act of Congress is published for the information of all concerned:

Public.—No. 12.

An Act reviving the grade of Lieutenant General in the United States Army.

Be it enacted by the Senate and House of Representatives of the United States of America in Congress assembled, That the grade of Lieutenant General be, and the same is hereby, revived in the Army of the United States; and the President is hereby authorized, whenever he shall deem it expedient, to appoint by and with the advice and consent of the Senate, a Lieutenant General, to be selected from among those officers in the military service of the United States not below the grade of Major General, most distinguished for courage, skill, and ability, who, being commissioned as Lieutenant General, may be authorized, under the direction and during the pleasure of the President, to command the Armies of the United States.

Section 2. And be it further enacted: That the Lieutenant General appointed as hereinbefore provided, shall be entitled to the pay, allowances, and staff, specified in the fifth section of the Act, approved May twenty-eight, seventeen hundred and ninety-eight; and also the allowances described in the sixth section of the Act approved August twenty-three, eighteen hundred and forty-two, granting additional rations to certain officers, Provided, That nothing in this Act



contained shall be construed in any way to affect the rank, pay, or allowances of Winfield Scott, Lieutenant General by brevet, now on the retired list of the Army.

Approved February 29, 1864.

By Order of the Secretary of War,

W. A. NICHOLS,  
*Asst. Adjt. Gen'l.*

---

March 4th a Brigade drill was held near the Head Quarters of General Sykes. Lieut. Appleton rode over to Captain Martin's Head Quarters on the 5th, where two West Virginia young ladies relatives of the commissary of the Artillery Brigade, on Captain Martin's staff, a loyal West Virginian, were visiting. The next day was Sunday, and many attended the church of the 22d Mass. Regiment at Beverly Ford. Divine service was held there in a chapel erected by the soldiers. Private Benjamin West went over in the afternoon to the hospital to see Private Dyer.

March 7th the following General Order was issued relative to the Invalid Corps.

#### THE INVALID CORPS.

WAR DEPARTMENT  
ADJUTANT GENERAL'S OFFICE,  
WASHINGTON, March 7, 1864.

General Orders,  
No. 93.

The following named . . . privates, having been duly examined and declared unfit for further field service, but fit for duty in the Invalid Corps, are hereby transferred . . . to the Invalid Corps, to take effect March 15, 1864, and from and after that date will be dropped from their Regimental Rolls. . . .

Bliss, Cornelius E., Private, 5th Mass. Battery.  
Sanford, John G., Private, 5th Mass. Battery.

---

On the 7th Lieut. Appleton pulled down his house and Lieut. Blake began his—one for his wife. Private Dyer

was advised by the Doctor to go to Washington, but he preferred to go to the Battery.

March 9th Captain Phillips went home on a 15 days' leave. Serg't Ephraim B. Nye also left for home. Lieut. Appleton rode to Meade's Head Quarters at Brandy Station and visited Phil. Mason's and Bigelow's Batteries.

March 10th there was a heavy rain storm, the second within a week. General Grant paid General Meade a visit at the latter's Head Quarters. Corporal Proctor and Private Dyer asked the Doctor for the 20th time to let them go back to the Battery. He let them go. The ambulance took them back with their things. The Doctor excused Dyer from duty for a week.

The next day it was drizzly, with thunder in the evening. An order had been issued for all ladies then in the Army to go home.

#### NOTES OF CAPTAIN HENRY D. SCOTT.

FEB. 22, 1901.

"On the 8th of March, 1864, I received an order to report to Massachusetts to command a new Battery, the 16th just recruited, and as soon as Captain Phillips returned, I bade farewell to the Fifth Battery, and saw them only after the war was over and they were camped near Washington on their way home. I took great interest in their movements, as I read them after I left, from time to time, and I shall never forget the part I took with the Fifth Battery, and the good feeling and courtesy always shown by both officers and men, and I esteem it a high privilege, the opportunity to meet and shake them sincerely by the hand."

In relation to the Notes contributed to this history which had been made from time to time, delivered to assemblies of his comrades and since revised, he says:—

"I started out with the writing of my experience with the Battery to leave with my children something they might

peruse, as I question none of them will ever have to experience what I have, at most I hope not, but I have never regretted this experience, however much it has cost me.

On account of my wound at Gettysburg I was out two months, and Mine Run one month. I have often wished I could have remained with the Battery to the end, but I hope the reader will be able to find some points in connection with other writers to make all complete."

COPY OF AN ORDER.—SCOTT'S PROMOTION.

COMMONWEALTH OF MASSACHUSETTS,  
EXECUTIVE DEPARTMENT.

BOSTON, March 8, 1864.

LIEUT. HENRY D. SCOTT,  
5th Battery Mass. Vol. Lt. Art'y.

*Sir:*

His Excellency the Governor, has requested your discharge from the 5th Battery, in order that you may immediately report at Headquarters at Boston, to receive a commission as captain of the 16th Battery Mass. Vol. Lt. Art'y., now in camp at Readville, Mass. As the 16th Battery is full, all its officers are needed for duty at once. Will you please make every exertion on your own part to arrive at Boston at the earliest moment possible?

By Order of His Excellency the Governor,

A. G. BROWNE, JR.,  
*Lt. Col. Mil. Sec'y.*

WANTED.—RECRUITS.

One Sunday in March Lieut. Appleton wrote home an acknowledgment of the receipt of some of the posters, which on a recent leave of absence he had had struck off and displayed in several conspicuous places in Boston, and of which the following is a copy:—

JOIN THE LIGHT ARTILLERY.

VOLUNTEERS ATTENTION.

A few more Recruits wanted for the Fifth Mass.  
Battery, CAPT. CHARLES A. PHILLIPS, of Salem.

YORKTOWN, HANOVER COURT HOUSE, GAINES  
MILLS, MALVERN HILL, FREDERICKSBURG, CHAN-  
CELLORSVILLE, GETTYSBURG, RAPPAHANNOCK  
AND MINE RUN.

☞ The Battery is now with the Fifth

Corps of the Army of the Potomac.

The RED, WHITE, AND BLUE Maltese Cross.

It has six three-inch rifled guns.

Fall in, and help fire them off again.

March 12, 1864, the Left section oiled harnesses. Drill on the manual of the piece. Lieut. General Grant arrived at Culpeper Court House, 69 miles southwest of Washington, and established his Head Quarters. This point was about the same distance northwest of Richmond, and 12 miles north of the Rapidan River. Six recruits from Marblehead came to the Battery.

## EXIT HALLECK.

WAR DEPARTMENT  
ADJ'T GEN'L'S OFFICE,  
WASHINGTON, March 12, 1864.

General Orders,

No. 98.

The President of the United States orders as follows:

I. Major General H. W. Halleck is, at his own request, relieved from duty as General-in-Chief of the Army, and Lieutenant General U. S. Grant is assigned to the command of the Armies of the United States. The Head Quarters of the Army will be in Washington, and also with Lieutenant General Grant in the field.

II. Major General H. W. Halleck is assigned to duty in Washington, as Chief of Staff of the Army, under the direction of the Secretary of War and the Lieutenant General commanding. His orders will be obeyed and respected accordingly.

V. In relieving Major General Halleck from duty as General-in-Chief, the President desires to express his approbation and thanks for the able and zealous manner in which the arduous and responsible duties of that position have been performed.

By Order of the Secretary of War,

E. D. TOWNSEND,  
*Asst. Adjt. Gen'l.*

---

March 13, 1864. Inspection and drill of the Battery by Lieut. Scott. Private Philo Braley died at 3 o'clock in the afternoon, which made us feel "blueish" (Appleton's expression), and the next day the Battery escorted him to the station with funeral honors. It was a cloudy and windy day. Private Lemuel Washburn received a furlough of 10

days to go home with the body.

On the 15th there was a Brigade drill. Out after a snow storm. Private Dyer went into the woods and cut a load of wood for his tent.

On the 16th Lieut. Appleton went over to a ball given by Brig. Gen. Joseph J. Bartlett and staff at his Head Quarters. A dancing hall was built for the purpose, adjoining the house, and decorated with flags. The invitations were adorned with the 1st Division Corps Badge, which was a Greek cross in red. The evening was quite cold, and the rooms were rather chilly, but the ball was well attended by beauty and chivalry. It was called a good specimen of army balls. A number of handsomely dressed ladies came from Philadelphia and Washington,—among them a daughter of Judge Loring, and the wife of the portrait painter Ames. The day before the ball, the 2d and 5th Detachment guns of the Third Mass. Battery were polished up and sent to Division Head Quarters and put in the Ball Room. The wood work was oiled with sweet oil, the guns were dismounted and carried into the hall and placed "in Battery" on each side of the door.

Dyer mentions Lt. Appleton's going to the ball which he calls "a big time at General Bartlett's Head Quarters." On the 17th Dr. Fairchild was staying with them. St. Patrick's Day was appropriately celebrated by the Mass. 9th Regt. Infantry, at Bealton, and Lieut. Appleton went down to see them. There was a mock parade, foot ball, races, etc. "These," writes Appleton, "formed the features of a bully old jink for the fighting sons of Erin."

Of Grant he says, "Isn't it splendid that we are actually to have him out here? You can't play any bureau work in Washington on old Ulysses. I saw a most refreshing sight the other afternoon. The 15th Regt. N. Y. Heavy Artillery, who for two years have done duty in the fortifications around Washington, and are 2000 strong, passed by our



camp on the cars, going out to the front. They will have an opportunity now to get their pants muddy for once. This I take to be some of Grant's doings, and I think he means to do more of the same style. Altogether I feel very hopeful for the spring work, and I think the Rebs will soon find some column jabbing at their flanks where neither they nor you now expect. Just get us out of this camp and give us something to see. I think the changes all around are beneficial, as they shake up men and things, give us new acquaintances, instil new life, and weed out some of the old deadheads. Corps, Divisions, and Brigades, are slapped around right and left."

March 18, 1864. Drill on the manual of the piece in the forenoon. There was talk of a cavalry raid, and they afterwards heard that there was a skirmish at Morton's Ford on the Rapidan. News arrived that General Grant was to take command of the Army of the Potomac. "How jolly it is," wrote Appleton, "that we have old Grant now at the head of the Army. We have our most successful general at the top of the ladder, and the Rebs have one of their most unsuccessful ones at the same place. Let us hope that this is a good omen. Scott leaves our Battery to take command of the 16th, as soon as he can get his discharge. Kilpatrick's cavalry, in detachments, keeps passing our camp every day, going out to the front from Washington and they will soon be ready for some more fun.

We had the hedge fixed on the 18th and there was a little dance at General A. P. Martin's Head Quarters."

#### VETERAN RESERVE CORPS.

WAR DEPARTMENT  
ADJ'T GENERAL'S OFFICE,

WASHINGTON, March 18, 1864,

General Orders,  
No. III.

The name of the organization authorized by General Orders No.

105, War Dept. 1863, as an "Invalid Corps," is hereby changed to that of "Veteran Reserve Corps." All orders relating to the Invalid Corps will remain in force as at present, with respect to the Veteran Reserve Corps.

By Order of the Secretary of War,

E. D. TOWNSEND,  
*Asst. Adj't Gen'l.*

---

March 19, 1864. Excitement about the Rebs. Report that Grant was coming out to the Army.

### LETTER OF SERGT. W. H. PEACOCK.

"CAMP NEAR RAPPAHANNOCK STATION,

March 19, 1864.

We are expecting an attack at this station every hour. Stuart (Confederate cavalry general) is on a raid, and he will probably try and give us a call, as there are a good lot of stores in this vicinity. We can see his camp fires in the distance. It is reported he has 8000 cavalry and two or three batteries with him. General Sykes of our Corps is making big preparations to receive them. Last night our horses were harnessed and remained so all night. Rumor says this is the night for the attack.

The 18th Mass. Infantry came up from Beverly Ford, about two miles from here, and remained near our camp all night. All of the other infantry were out under arms, as they are also tonight. We have orders to sleep with our clothes on. I suppose Stuart wants to make up for Kilpatrick's raid, but no go this time, as we are so well prepared for him."

"At dusk" (Dyer's Notes 19th) "an Order came to put our guns in position in the forts, as they expected a cavalry raid. The 18th Mass. Regt. laid out in a field below us all night with their guns stacked."

March 20, 1864. Sunday. Inspection of the Battery

today by Lieut. Scott. Drilled some and went into camp. Dyer got excused from fatigue duty for being the cleanest man at guard mounting.

March 21st. Lieut. Appleton went over to General Martin's as a member of a Board. Lieut. Scott received his discharge. Dyer passed the evening at the camp of the 20th Maine.

March 22, 1864. Lieut. Scott left in the morning for Boston and his new battery. Very cold day. Snow in the afternoon and all night. 23d. Snow on the ground, six inches deep on a level, but the morning was clear. Camp awakened by the "merry sound of the bugle." Captain Phillips had got as far as Washington on his way back to camp, and called upon Hon. John B. Alley a member of Congress from Massachusetts, about regimental organization of Massachusetts Artillery. (See p. 52.)

#### ARMY CORPS.

WAR DEPARTMENT,  
ADJ'T GEN'L'S OFFICE,  
WASHINGTON, March 23, 1864.

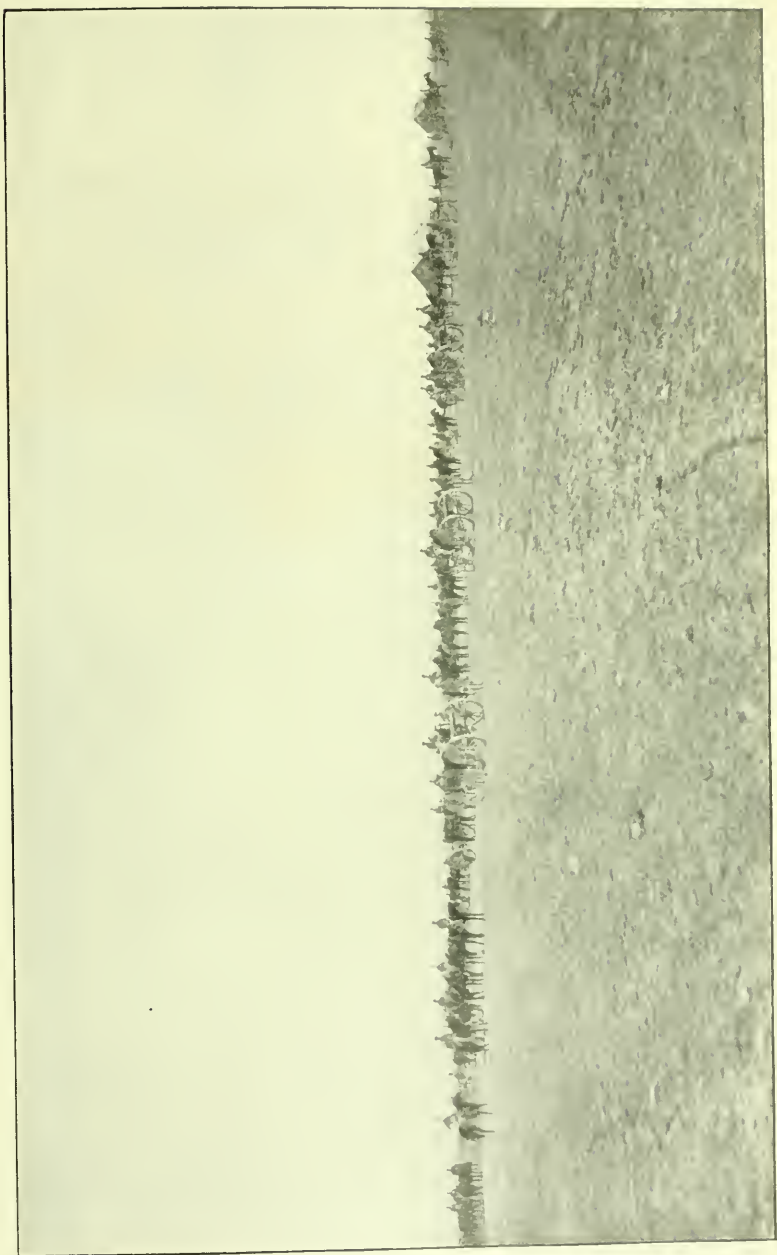
General Orders,  
No. 115.

I. By direction of the President of the United States, the number of Army Corps comprising the Army of the Potomac, will be reduced to three viz., the Second, Fifth, and Sixth Corps. The troops of the other two Corps, viz., the First and Third, will be temporarily reorganized, and distributed among the Second, Fifth, and Sixth, by the Commanding General, who will determine what existing organizations will retain their Corps Badges and other distinctive marks. The Staff Officers of the two Corps which are temporarily broken up, will be assigned to vacancies in the other Corps, so far as such vacancies may exist. Those for whom there are no vacancies, will cease to be considered as officers of the General Staff of Army Corps.

II. Major General G. K. Warren is assigned by the President to the command of the Fifth Army Corps.

By Order of the Secretary of War,

E. D. TOWNSEND,  
*Asst. Adj't General.*





March 24, 1864. Captain Phillips returned from his "leave," about 2 p. m. Lieut. Gen'l Grant came down on a special train just ahead of the one Captain Phillips was in. Maj. General Sykes was relieved of his command, and Major General Warren was put in his place. Troops were constantly arriving in the cars.

March 25, 1864. In the reorganization Colonel Charles S. Wainwright of the 1st New York Artillery was to be Chief of Artillery of the 5th Corps. Captain Phillips passed the night at Captain Martin's Head Quarters. Private Dyer went into the woods and cut a load of wood for his tent and brought it to camp with Wm. Pinder's team towards night.

Of the change in the commanders of the Artillery, Captain Phillips in a letter of March 27th, 1864, says: "Colonel Charles S. Wainwright of the 1st N. Y. Artillery, who has been Chief of Artillery in the First Corps, will probably be chief of artillery for the 5th Corps, and Captain Martin will be obliged to return to his battery. It is hard, after being Chief of Artillery, to be only captain once more."

But this was what Appleton indicated as likely to happen, in his Artillery paper, see p. 52.

March 27th, 1864. Sunday. Lieut. Appleton went to the chapel at Beverly Ford, and heard an excellent sermon. In the evening there was singing in the camp.

March 28th was a beautiful spring day. The mud was drying up very fast. Lots of troops going out on the cars to the front. Dyer mentions a visit from Andrew Almy and Fred Alden, and says Almy "discoursed some fine music on the accordeon." The Battery was photographed: two views were taken of the Battery, and one of the camp.

March 29th Lieut. Blake started on a leave of ten days. Captain Martin on a leave of five days, leaving Captain Phillips in command of the Artillery Brigade. It com-



menced raining about one o'clock p. m. and at Taps it poured down in torrents.

March 30th it was still raining. The Rappahannock River rose eleven feet, the pontoons were strung up, and water everywhere. The bridge across the Rappahannock was washed off its foundations by trees falling against it that floated down the river, so the cars could not run.

#### LETTER OF LIEUT. APPLETON.

"March 31, 1864. Since I have written our stupid old army has actually been reorganized, as you see by the papers. The First Corps comes into the gallant Fifth, and we keep our name, our honor, and our Maltese cross. The Artillery Brigade falls to the command of our friend Colonel Wainwright, though Martin has not as yet been actually relieved. Our Corps (Fifth) now extends from Bristoe to the Rapidan, with General Warren's Head Quarters at Culpeper Court House. But best of all the immortal Grant is our own. It so happens that I am the only officer at present with the Battery, and I am therefore in command. Captain Phillips commands one part of the Brigade, that is, the Fifth Corps Batteries, as Captain Martin is in Washington. Scott has gone, Blake absent on leave, Spear ordnance officer, and the new lieutenant has not as yet received his commission in his hands, although it has been gazetted—thus I am commander, perpetual officer of the day, &c., &c. The whole country around looks like a big lake. The pontoon bridge was all knocked to pieces."

(When Appleton was alone with the Battery)

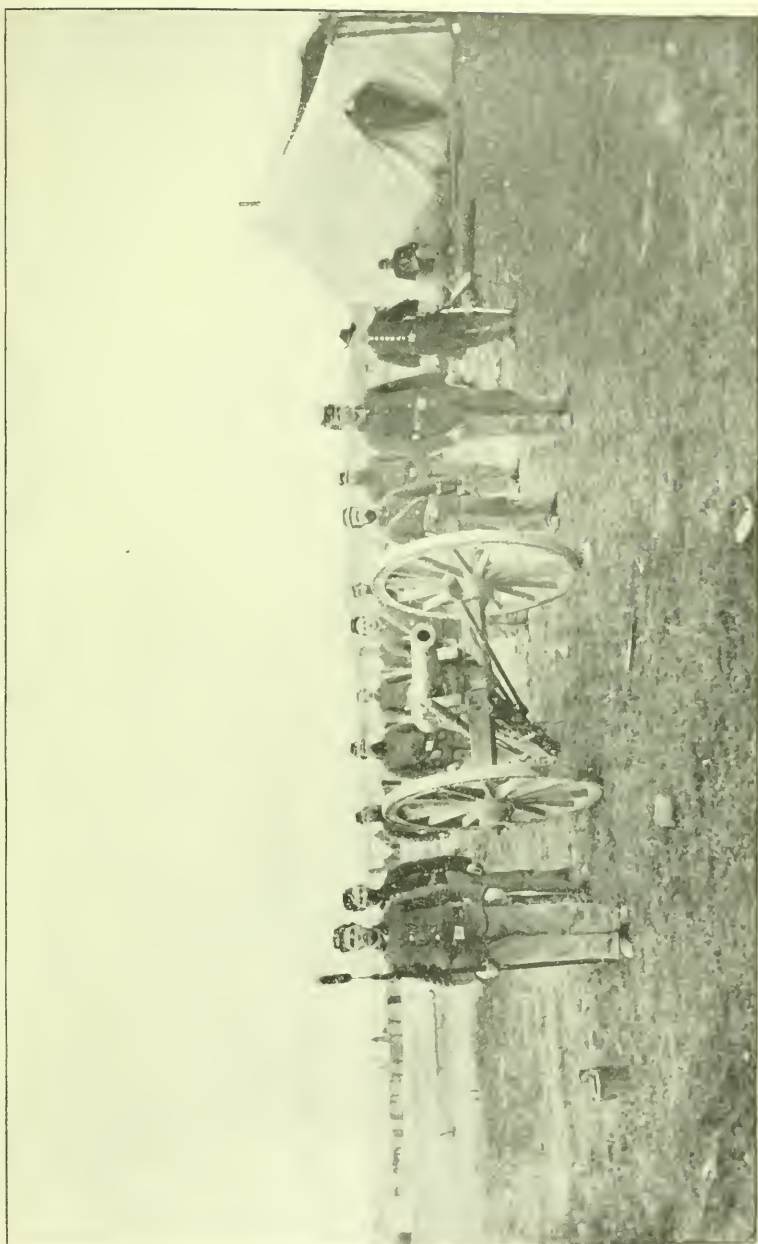
Report of a Guard Mounted at Rappahannock Station, Va. on the 30th and relieved on the 31st of March 1864.

Detail	Countersign	Guard	
		Parole	
	Lieutenants		
1	Sergeants		
1	Corporals		
	Musicians		
12	Privates		
14	Total		
14	Aggregate		
109	Horses Public		
4	Horses Officers		
18	Mules		
3	Wagons		
1	Ambulances		
6	Pieces		
6	Caissons		
1	Battery Wagon		
1	Forge		
	(Received the Foregoing Articles)		
	Mason W. Page Sergt. Com'd'g Guard		

## LIST OF GUARD.

RELIEFS AND WHEN POSTED.					WHERE POSTED.
No.	FIRST RELIEF From 6 to 8 and 12 to 2	SECOND RELIEF From 8 to 10 and 2 to 4	THIRD RELIEF From 10 to 12 and 4 to 6	Name	
	Name	Name	Name		
1	Skillin	Moudorf	Gwinn	Hd. Qrs.	
2	Shaw	Dunham	Blanchard	Fort	
3	Morse	Dyer	Carsley	Park	
4	Olin	Dudley	Brown W. W.	Stable	
Sergeant Mason W. Page.					
Commanding					
Guard					
Corporal Charles F. Stiles.					

GUARD RAP. STATION  
THIRTIETH — THIRTY-FIRST  
March 1864.





April 1, 1864, Serg't Harrison O. Simonds' commission as 2d Lieutenant, was received. Serg't. E. J. Gibbs was promoted to 1st Sergeant.

## ORDERS FOR THE COUNTERSIGN.

HEAD QUARTERS ARMY OF THE POTOMAC.

April 2d, 1864.

Orders.

## COUNTERSIGN.

April 3d, Boston.

" 4th, Albany.

" 5th, Newport.

" 6th, Baltimore.

" 7th, Chicago.

" 8th, Saint Louis.

" 9th, Lexington.

By command of Maj. Gen'l Meade,

(Signed) S. WILLIAMS, *A. A. G.*

Official.

FRED T. LOCKE,

*Asst. Adj't Gen'l.*

April 2, 1864, Captain A. P. Martin and Captain Charles A. Phillips returned to their commands, and Lieut. Simonds joined the mess.

April 4th, Lieut. Appleton went over to Captain Martin's Head Quarters where were Colonel Wainwright and his staff. It snowed and rained. Colonel Wainwright assumed command of the Artillery Brigade 5th Corps.

April 6th, Corporal Newhall was promoted to Sergeant George L. Newton and Andrew W. Almy were promoted to corporals.

April 8, 1864. Orders came for the sutlers to leave by the 16th of the month. Corporal Stiles was promoted to sergeant. Lieut. Appleton rode over to the Reserve Artillery.

April 9, 1864. Lieut. Blake returned from leave. The Rappahannock had risen 17 feet, it being the highest it had



ever been. The pontoon house and bridge were washed down stream in the morning.

April 10, 1864, a minute inspection of the Battery and quarters took place by Captain Phillips. Big freshet on the river and all around. The bridges were all down between the camp and Washington, including the bridge at Cedar Run. No trains had come through since the previous night. All leaves of absence and furloughs had ceased.

Captain Phillips wrote on April 10th in relation to the artillery:

"The reorganization has left us in a rather unsettled state. Captain Martin has ceased to be Chief of Corps Artillery, but for the present the batteries belonging to the old Fifth Corps form a demi-brigade, under his command. Some of our batteries will go into the Artillery, but we shall remain in the new Fifth Corps. It is so muddy as to render anything like drill out of the question."

Again on the 16th he wrote: "For the present, and until the Corps is assembled at Culpeper, the batteries north of the river are organized in a half-brigade, commanded by Captain Martin. For four days, while Captain Martin was in Washington, and before Colonel Wainwright was appointed, I was acting Chief of Artillery, while Lieut. Appleton had the satisfaction of signing himself 2d Lieut. commanding the Battery."

April 10, 1864, General Grant was at Culpeper. On the 11th trains from Washington arrived in the evening. The night of the 12th Colonel Wm. S. Tilton passed with the Battery.

April 13, Dyer was on extra fatigue duty for not attending drill call, but as there was a pretty merry crowd on, they had a pretty jolly time. Colonel Tilton was sent off in an ambulance. The sutlers were selling off cheap, as they were obliged to go to the rear with the wagon trains.

April 14, 1864. Battery drill in the forenoon. The

sutlers left the camp. On the 15th a trench was dug in the stable and the place the sutler occupied was cleaned up. Battery drill in the forenoon. In the afternoon Captain Phillips selected a spot for target practice just over the river near the fort, firing down river towards Kellyville. Good ranges up to 1500 yards. Two recruits arrived. Ordered to turn in surplus clothing to reduce baggage.

April 16th it rained all day, postponing the target practice. The men's surplus baggage was sent off. Unserviceable Quarter Master's property and clothing, camp and garrison equipage was inspected. Orders came to be ready to march by the 21st. The entire Army under marching orders. Did not shoot on account of the rain.

April 18th. Dyer was busy all day "making a tent against we marched." General Charles Griffin and others called. Page got extra guard duty because the man on No. 1 post failed to salute General Griffin. The 1st Michigan vets. (see p. 561) returned. Perfect day.

#### LETTER OF LIEUT. APPLETON.

"April 19, 1864. The Army is completely ready, and we sha'n't be surprised any morning to have the order—'Forward, Army of the Potomac!' The story now is that the Veteran Reserve Corps,—the old Invalid Corps,—are to have the honor of defending the Capital. In that case the Army of the Potomac can move independently, a thing, by the by, which it has *never* been able to do, and one that is quite ignored by the 'On to Richmonders.' Send everybody out immediately. General Grant keeps reviewing different slugs of the Army every day. Our Battery was out target shooting this morning, as all the artillery and infantry have been doing for the last month. We are very well filled up now with all our recruits."

At the target shooting from a hill over the river, General

Griffin, Captain Martin, and several other officers were present. The targets were placed at 800, 1000, 1200, 1500, and 1700 yards. Made several holes in the 1000 yards target. The Battery fired 36 shots. At dress parade an Order for the cannoneers to fall in at all calls was read.

April 20, 1864. Battery drill in the forenoon and drill on the manual of the piece in the afternoon. The awkward squad also drilled.

April 21st. George H. Johnson was thrown from a horse and received a broken wrist. Battery drill in the forenoon. Drill on the manual of the piece in the afternoon. Dyer says, "The weather was changeable, from wind, snow, and rain, to the hot torrents of the sun."

April 22d. Battery drill. Lieut. Appleton met General Gregg on the way to Martin's.

April 23d. Orders were received to clean up for inspection the next day. All the old things belonging to the Battery were condemned. Ordnance stores were inspected by Lieut. Breck 1st N. Y. Artillery. An Order was read at dress parade relating to applications to prepare for commissions in colored troops.

April 24th the Battery was inspected by Captain Phillips. It was Sunday. Lieut. J. Edward Spear passed the night with Lieut. Appleton. Some thought they were waiting for General Burnside to get all ready, before moving. In the evening Private Dyer took a walk up the railroad. On the 25th Lieut. Appleton rode with Dr. Fontaine to Brigade Head Quarters near Culpeper, went into the town and came home in the dark. 26th. Drill on the pieces for upwards of three hours in the forenoon. Drill on the manual of the piece in the afternoon.

April 27th had a very long drill, both forenoon and afternoon. At guard mounting a gale of dust came blowing over the hill, which made the officers beat a hasty retreat for their quarters. Appleton wrote: "We have drills con-

stantly and are quite ready to be in the saddle, with our bed in the mud. The tremendous lull here seems almost strange at the present time, but when we *are* off we think it will be short and stupendous. The news all around the edges of the Confederacy is bad at present, but to us absorbed in what must soon take place here, these disasters give little annoyance."

April 28, 1864. Lieut. Appleton went in the evening to a "sociable" at the 3d Brigade. 29th. After fatiguing duty Bob King and John E. Dyer went up to the station with the teams for grain and hay. The same day Dyer finished his tent. Various rumors of Burnside's troops coming up the railroad. All ready to move. Ephraim B. Nye, with his battery, the 14th Mass., came right into the camp, which they occupied when the Battery left. The 9th Corps arrived to relieve the Fifth in guarding the railroad. The Pennsylvania Reserves and Rittenhouse's Battery crossed the river and marched to Brandy Station.

#### LETTER OF SERG'T. W. H. PEACOCK.

"RAPPAHANNOCK STATION, VA.,

April 30, 1864.

The 9th Army Corps arrived today, and is relieving all of the old troops from Warrenton to the Rappahannock. . . . I dread the coming campaign,—sleeping without tents and marching by day and night. The next battle of this Army will be a rouser. The rebels of Lee's Army are all ready for us, and are said to be 90,000 men. They will give us a tough pull, if my opinion amounts to anything. Today I was up to Brandy Station, 5 miles from here drawing ordnance stores. You can form no idea of the bustle and confusion at this Depot when the Army is getting ready to move. It looked to me as if one thousand or more wagons were waiting to load, and there were immense piles

of ammunition, all kinds, ordnance stores, &c., &c., and piles of boxes of hard bread as high as two or three story houses. It reminded me some of a wharf in New York, with 12 or 15 ships loading and unloading."

---

"It is resolved—they march—consenting Night  
Guides with her star their dim and torchless flight.  
Already they perceive its tranquil beam  
Sleep on the surface of the barrier stream.

A moment's pause, 'tis but to breathe their band,  
Or shall they onward press, or here withstand?  
It matters little—if they charge the foes  
Who by the border-stream their march oppose,  
Some few, perchance, may break and pass the line  
However link'd to baffle such design."

—BYRON'S "*Lara*."

May 1st, 1864, the Fifth Corps having been ordered to assemble at Culpeper Court House, Orders came at 3 a. m. for the Battery to cross the Rappahannock with Griffin's 1st Division and the two other batteries, and march at 9 a. m. in the following order:

1st Brigade, Fifth Mass. Battery.

2d Brigade, Third Mass. Battery.

3d Brigade, Battery D, 1st N. Y. Artillery.

The Division looked splendidly.

They crossed the river at Rappahannock Station, and went into park a short distance beyond Ingalls Station, and north of Brandy Station. Everybody slept on the ground.

May 2, 1864. Went about three miles to water horses. Lieut. Appleton passed a very delightful morning at General Meade's Head Quarters. Lunched there with all the fellows. Marched at 5½ p. m., in a terrible storm of wind and dust, followed by a heavy rain which continued till they came near Culpeper. Camped in the vicinity of the railroad bridge over Mountain Run, cold and wet. Shackley says,

"We passed the night in misery in our wet clothes, with no fire nor fuel to make one." A load of hay came for the men to lie upon. It ceased raining about 8, and they eat supper and went to bed pretty tired.

May 3, 1864, was cold and windy, the Blue Ridge a few miles distant was white with snow. Remained in camp all day and were told they would remain there for two or three days. Unpacked, pitched tents, and received orders to clean up for review the next day. Colonel Wainwright visited the camp. The Demi-Brigade was dissolved. Appleton calls it the "Demise of the Demis." Captain Martin took command of his own battery, the Third Mass., and Lieut. Spear came back to the Fifth Mass. Battery. In the evening rations were given out for 6 days. Rumors of a move on foot. Rumored the Rebs had evacuated in our front. At 11.30 p. m. Orders came to march at 12. The Army was to advance in two columns. The Fifth and Sixth Corps forming the Right, were to cross at Germanna Ford, and the Second Corps with the cavalry under Sheridan at Ely's Ford, six miles farther down. The Third and Fifth Mass. and Battery D. 1st N. Y., fell in behind Griffin's First Division.

Reveille at midnight! "Boots and Saddles" immediately after cleaning horses.

#### BREAKING CAMP. APPLETON'S NOTES.

"The breaking camp at night and starting on the march, is a beautiful and inspiring sight. The country around for miles is lit up by a thousand fires, which sparkle like so many glowworms. Tents are struck and folded, horses are neighing and pawing impatiently in the cool night air, the artillery is harnessed and stands parked, ready for the word to move, officers are riding around seeing that everything is in readiness while all feel through their veins the electricity inspired by the prospect of change and activity,



after the long days and nights of quiet. Silently, and in good order, the troops filed forth by the different roads, the cavalry having gone on in advance, and sunrise found the main body of the Army at the banks of the Rapidan, and ready to cross the stream.

The pontoons were then laid, and over we went again into the enemy's country, and all day long, under the rays of a hot spring sun, so hot that many threw away their blankets and extra clothing,

'Tramp, tramp, tramp, the boys are marching,' until as the afternoon shadows were lengthening, we halted on the edge of the Wilderness, where the pickets were carefully posted, and the order given to bivouac for the night."

---

They crossed the Rapidan without opposition, and marched till about 2 of May 4th p. m., when they came into position 6 miles from Chancellorsville, within five miles of Mine Run, a hard march of 25 miles. The entire Army was in position in the Wilderness. The camp was close to the house where "Stonewall" Jackson was brought when he lost his arm the year before, and they found the old line of works which were hastily thrown up by the Third Corps at the Battle of Chancellorsville.

BULLETIN FROM GENERAL MEADE.  
READ TO THE SOLDIERS.

HEAD QUARTERS ARMY OF THE POTOMAC,  
May 4, 1864.

(Extract.)

SOLDIERS:

. . . . You have been reorganized, strengthened and fully equipped in every respect. You form a part of the several armies of your country, the whole under the direction of an able and distinguished General, who enjoys the confidence of the government, the people, and the army. Your movement being in co-operation with others, it is of the utmost importance that no effort should be left unspared to make it successful. . . .

GEO. G. MEADE,  
*Maj. Gen'l Commanding.*

Appleton wrote of the close of the day of May 4th that he "listened to the music and retired under a 'fly.' The Eve of Battle." Warren's Fifth Corps was in advance of the Right wing of the Army encamped on the Wilderness pike. Ewell's Corps of Lee's army was encamped directly opposite Warren's, each ignorant of the other's whereabouts, but when the Fifth Corps made ready to resume its march on the morning of Thursday, May 5th, they found the enemy, unexpectedly, confronting them, and were forced to fight him where he was, Meade concentrating the several army corps for that purpose. The Wilderness was a mining country. The timber of large growth had been cut down for miles around, for use in developing the mines, and the wood of smaller growth was a dense mass of scrub oaks, low pines, and underbrush, where it was an impossibility to form troops in line of battle or for the officers to see more than a small number of their commands at one time. The artillery could not be taken into the underbrush, and could only co-operate with the infantry by the use of a piece or a section at certain points. Cavalry was still less available. But here the Fifth Corps met the advance of Lee's Army.

### THE FIGHT OF MAY 5.

May 5, 1864, at daylight, Battery in position where they first encamped. The Rebs came up about 8 a. m. The report was brought in that they were coming down upon them. In position on a high knoll commanding the valley and the road to Parker's Store, just in front of the Lacey house, to the left of the turnpike, and not far from the Head Quarters of General Grant and General Meade.

The Right section, commanded by Lieut. J. E. Spear, was in position on the Gordonsville road, about noon and fired 13 rounds. The infantry firing was very heavy. Near

them were Battery D, 5th U. S., Battery H, 1st N. Y., and B, 1st Pennsylvania.

General Griffin, advancing up the turnpike with one section of Battery D, 1st N. Y. Light Battery, Capt. Geo. B. Winslow, opened the fight at 2 p. m. and was heavily engaged where the 140th New York Infantry made its fatal charge and Captain Winslow and Lieut. A. S. Sheldon were wounded. Captain Winslow lost two guns, and the remaining four guns were placed in position on the right of the section of the 5th Battery which was posted on the pike.

Powell's History of the Fifth Corps has it that a section of the Battery "replied to and several times silenced a Confederate battery similarly posted at a distance of about 1400 yards."

We drove the enemy off the road.

There was very heavy musketry firing all day, continuing till 8 o'clock in the evening. At that time unharnessed and turned in, having gained ground.

By Lieut. Nathan Appleton: "We were covering an open piece of land, while the fighting was taking place in the tangled woods, a half mile or so in advance. General James S. Wadsworth led his Division through this field, with ranks full and banners waving, to the woods, where we could distinctly hear the dread rattle of musketry. At length I noticed the men coming back, singly and in squads, limping and on stretchers, and evidently in disorder. Something had gone wrong, and the old general was rushing about with drawn sword rallying his men around a flag which he had placed in position. He seemed to do all the work himself, and I could not resist the temptation of mounting my horse, riding up to him, saluting, giving my name, and asking if I could be of any use. I thought that at least I might try to stop his men from passing to the rear, through the two guns of my section of the Battery.

He thanked me, and in a short time he had re-organized his broken Division, and was ready for more fighting, and this came the next day, May 6, 1864, when he received a wound in the head from which he died two days later."

### THE FIGHT OF MAY 6.

The fight opened at daylight, 5 a. m. and lull'd at 10, commenced again at 4, and was continued till 9 p. m. We gained ground on the Left, but lost on the Right. The firing of the musketry was one continuous roll. The Battery lay still all the morning. Burnside's troops came up. In the afternoon reported to General Griffin. In the main line held by the Fifth Corps were the Fifth Mass. Battery and Battery D, 1st N. Y., now commanded by Lieut. Lester I. Richardson. The New York Battery was on the right of the turnpike; the Fifth Mass. Battery across the pike; the Third Mass. Battery, Battery H, 1st N. Y., L, 1st N. Y., and B, 1st Pennsylvania to the left. At six o'clock a part of the Sixth Corps fell back, causing general excitement, and "all that night (Appleton's Letters) there was a mass of men marching through and over us, as we lay in bivouac trying to sleep. It was the Sixth Corps falling back in confusion, and communication on the Right of the Orange and Alexandria R. R. to Washington was lost, and must be established on the Left, by the rivers." Dyer writes: "The whole of the Sixth Corps gave way, and that flanked the Fifth Corps, so part of that gave way about dark. The rest of the 5th was firm."

Of the fight of May 6th Corporal Shackley wrote, "Fighting very severe, but did not fire. Towards night the other two sections (the Centre and Left) were brought into line. About sunset the Right wing (6th Corps) broke, and there was quite a panic. General Griffin met the stragglers in the rear of our guns, and most earnestly urged them to form

line, 'For,' said he, 'I know that my artillery will stand!' "

### THE FIGHT OF MAY 7.

On Saturday, May 7, 1864, the Battery opened fire with shot and shell early in the morning, checked the advance of the enemy made about daylight driving in our skirmishers, and drove them back into the woods. One spare pole broke in action. Kept in position all day. At 3 p. m. General Warren was ordered to move the corps-train to Chancellorsville at 5 p. m. and park it, to be ready to move at night, and to move the Corps at half-past eight p. m. on the Brock Road, via Todd's Tavern, to Spottsylvania Court House, passing by the Second Corps, which was to follow closely, the Fifth Corps pickets to be withdrawn at one o'clock a. m. of the 8th, those of the Second at 2 a. m. This order was based on one from General Grant, directing a flank movement.

At 8 p. m. of the 7th the Battery started off with Griffin's Division. Marched all night, moving by the left flank along the line of Burnside's Corps, out on the Brock road for Spottsylvania Court House.

The route was back to the intersection of the Germanna Plank Road; to march along this road about a mile and a quarter, then to strike the Brock road. About a mile farther along cross the Orange Plank road, and, at the end of another three miles, the railroad.

General Sheridan with the cavalry protected the column. This was the first of the marches of the Army of the Potomac by the left flank, in which the Fifth Corps led.

### FROM APPLETON'S NOTES.

"On the Brock Road I met several of the officers of the 56th Mass. Regt. in the Ninth Corps, in bivouac and waiting to move, later on.

During that slow night march I occasionally dozed on

my horse, taking cat naps, like some of the staff of Napoleon in Meissonier's famous painting of the 'Retreat from Moscow.' I may have done so before, but this time I recall it most vividly.

As I look back to that fearful three days' struggle, it seems to me like some confused and horrid dream. I can hear again the incessant crash of the musketry which would continue unbroken for hours, with the louder roar of the cannon at intervals relieving its terrifying sounds; I can see long lines of infantry pressing forward through the patches of farm land to their place in the woods, ranks full, flags floating in the breeze, and all proud and flushed with a hope of victory. I can see them straggling back, in groups of two or three, even squads and whole companies, confused and demoralized, their officers in vain trying to rally around the battle-riddled standard.

Again my ear catches the sound of the rebel 'yell' and Yankee 'hurrah,' strangely mingled, as charges and counter charges would be made day and night; here long lines of ambulances block the road, while back through openings in the tangled forests the bloody stretchers come bearing their sad and groaning load. The great tents of the field hospitals stand up before my vision in their white sepulchral lines, well out of reach of the firing, the red flag marking them as a place of refuge for friend or foe alike; here the poor sufferers lay, the surgeons bustling about, knife and bandages in hand, while the strains of patriotic music the band was playing, would gladden the hearts of the wounded, and were often the last sound heard, as they gained the victory over death. Now a group of Confederate prisoners, in their rusty butternut dress, and long uncouth hair, would pass in the lines escorted by their guard; the officers casting around looks of dogged defiance at their captors; here a battery of light artillery is rushed up the road to its position on some hill, the horses plunging and straining at the weight behind



them; the flags of the signal service are waved in treetops, here and there, in a manner mysterious to all the uninitiated; in a continuous line the tired soldiers remain manfully at the breastworks hastily thrown up, and try, at odd times, to snatch a few hours' sleep and forgetfulness; but amidst all the carnage and confusion around, one quiet, unpretending figure stands out conspicuously, clear-headed, and undismayed.

It is General Grant, the soldier of the people, the person upon whom the responsibility fell, and who was able to bear it, for, as he sat in his tent, calmly smoking his cigar, watching the varying fortunes of the struggle, receiving despatches as they were constantly brought in, more and more convinced did he become that success could only be achieved by blows, not by strategy, and that it was the duty of the army to 'fight it out on that line,' at no matter what apparent sacrifice.

So the three days of battle passed.

This march of May 7th was long and tedious for the weary soldiers, and, as is generally the case at night, especially in the muddy roads of Virginia, not many miles were accomplished as the rosy streaks of the rising sun appeared in the eastern horizon. The day was fairly breaking when our Division came up to Todd's Tavern, an old wayside inn, and the troops were halted, with orders to rest for an hour or so, and make their coffee.

I took the saddle off my horse, and, using it for a pillow, tried to seize a few moments' sleep. Ah me! he who has passed through such scenes as these will not lightly talk of war as a thing to be madly rushed into, and a game for kings and emperors to play."

## CHAPTER XXI.

### THE BATTLE OF SPOTTSYLVANIA COURT HOUSE, AND LAUREL HILL.

MAY 8-18, 1864.

"God's truth!" sez I,—'an ef I held the club,  
An' knowed jes' where to strike,—but there's the  
rub!"—

"Strike soon," sez he, "or you'll be deadly ail-  
in',—

Folks thet's afeared to fail are sure o' failin';" . . .

—JAMES RUSSELL LOWELL, *The Biglow Papers*.

The Fifth Corps, followed by the Sixth Corps, was put in motion on the Brock Road, at 9 o'clock on the night of the 7th of May, 1864, preceded by a Division of cavalry under General Wesley Merritt; their object being to secure a cross road leading to Fredericksburg, by which the wounded could be sent to Washington.

They met the enemy the next day about two miles beyond Todd's Tavern, near the crossing of the river Po, about 12 miles from the position in the Wilderness, between the two most northern forks of the Mattaponi river, the Po and the Ny, but nearer the banks of the Po. Two other streams, southern forks of the same river, are designated by the syllables Mat and Ta.

The enemy was not able to dislodge our cavalry but they held Merritt in check, and about 6.30 a. m. General John C. Robinson's Division with the Third Mass. Battery and Battery L, 1st N. Y., followed by Griffin's Division with Battery H, 1st N. Y. Light, the Fifth Mass. Battery and

Battery D, 1st N. Y. Light, moved past the cavalry, and pushed on about three-quarters of a mile beyond the Alsop house.

They formed two lines of battle across the road, and drove the rebels two or three miles. Robinson passed and secured the road leading to Fredericksburg, and continued to advance until at the junction of the old Court House road with the Brock road, he received another check, and fell back to the shelter of the woods.

While the Third Mass. Battery was being withdrawn to a rise in the ground which commanded the valley, Captain A. P. Martin was wounded, and Lieut. Aaron F. Walcott again assumed command of the battery.

General Hancock with the Second Corps arrived at Todd's Tavern the same morning (8th May) at 9 o'clock, and, relieving the cavalry, covered the Brock and Catharpin roads, and afterwards the Catharpin and Spottsylvania roads. At 11 o'clock, Colonel Nelson A. Miles, with infantry, cavalry, and artillery, made a reconnoissance on the Catharpin Road towards Corbin's Bridge, and on the way back to rejoin the Second Corps, met and drove back Mahone's Confederate Brigade.

In the report of Major James A. Cunningham of the 32d Mass. Infantry, who some years after the war became adjutant general of the Commonwealth of Massachusetts, may be found the following:

"May 8, 1864, came up with the enemy near Todd's Tavern. The regiment was detached from the Brigade to support Battery E, (Fifth) Massachusetts. At midnight rejoined the Brigade, and took up position on the left, behind breastworks already constructed."

On May 9th Battery B, 1st Penn. Light, Captain James H. Cooper, held the position on the right and left of the Alsop house. Next on the right was Battery D, 5th U. S., Lieut. B. F. Rittenhouse. That afternoon about 400 yards in their rear was posted the Fifth Mass. Battery, on spacious

grounds at the right of the Court House road and commanding the valley towards the Pritchard house.

On the same day General Sheridan, with the Cavalry Corps went off on a raid with orders to cut the Fredericksburg and the Virginia Central railroads, to threaten Richmond, to communicate with and draw supplies from the James River.

While the Sixth Corps was adjusting its lines on the 9th General John Sedgwick was killed, and General H. G. Wright assumed command of the Corps.

On the 10th the object of the fighting of the Fifth Corps was to obtain possession of Laurel Hill. The plan of placing the Army at Spottsylvania Court House 11 miles from Fredericksburg, between Lee and Richmond, had been abandoned when Meade's Army was intercepted at Alsop's Farm by the Confederate general, Anderson.

Hancock was ordered to send two Divisions of the Second Corps to aid the Fifth Corps in an attempt to turn the Confederate Left by attacking their fortifications placed on Laurel Hill. Battery B, 4th U. S., commanded by Lieut. James Stewart, was posted at the right and rear of the Fifth Mass. Battery, close to the Alsop House. During the day the batteries remained in position, but all that part of the line was quiet.

The Fifth and Sixth Corps broke through the rebel lines of intrenchment, and General Burnside with the Ninth Corps made a reconnoissance in the direction of the Spottsylvania Court House, and intrenched his Corps within a quarter of a mile of that place. In this movement General J. D. Stevenson was killed.

On May 11, 1864, the position of the Army of the Potomac was as follows: The Fifth Corps was on the extreme right from near the Po river, extending past the front of the Alsop house in an irregularly curved line. The Sixth Corps was on the left of the Fifth, the Second Corps in

front of the salient, or the advanced point in the fortifications.

The Ninth Corps was on the extreme left, resting near Spottsylvania Court House.

The batteries were in their old positions. Batteries E and L, 1st New York Light, commanded by Lieut. George Breck, the Fifth Mass. Battery, and Battery B, 4th U. S., Lieut. James Stewart, were in position to the extreme left of the corps posted around the Alsop house to the left of the road which crosses the Po at Corbin's Bridge. In the afternoon Battery B, 4th U. S. was moved to the left and front of Battery B, 1st Penn., and the Third Mass. Battery was ordered to report to General Ayres, now in command of the 2d Division of the Fifth Corps, and to be placed in the first line.

At 3 o'clock on the afternoon of May 11th; General Meade, by General Grant's direction, ordered the three Divisions of the Second Corps to move by the rear of the Fifth and Sixth Corps and joining the Ninth to make a vigorous assault at 4 a. m. of the 12th. The Fifth and Sixth Corps were to be held in their present places close to the enemy's lines.

A part of the Fifth Corps was sent forward May 12th in advance of all the Union forces, the Fifth Mass. Battery and Batteries E and L, 1st N. Y., taking position to the left of the road which crosses the Po at Corbin's Bridge. During the forenoon they shelled the woods across the river, and replied to the guns which opened on our skirmish lines, and in the afternoon silenced a rebel battery at a distance of 1200 yards.

Lee withdrew at midnight.

Leaving the pickets all in position, the Fifth Corps moved after dark on May 13th by cross roads and through the woods, fording the Ny river, across country in the direction of the Fredericksburg and Spottsylvania Court House, and

along that road; the design being to turn Lee's Right flank. They reached the appointed place at daylight of the 14th, on which day the Fifth and Sixth Corps were placed in position in front of the Confederate intrenchments across the Fredericksburg road in front of the Court House.

On May 17th, it having been determined to move the Second and Sixth Corps to the extreme right to make another assault, the Fifth Corps was intrenched; General Warren ordering 26 guns into position and protecting his left flank by the 15th N. Y. Battery, Captain Hart, and the Third and Ninth Mass. Batteries at the Anderson house,—Battery D, 5th U. S., Lieut. Rittenhouse, with Battery D, 5th New York, six 20 pdr. Parrotts, was advanced to within 1400 yards of the Court House,—and 1st N. Y. Light Battery D, making 14 guns under Major Robert H. Fitzhugh.

The 1st Pennsylvania Light Battery B, Captain Cooper, Batteries E and L, 1st N. Y. Light, Lieut. George Breck, and the Fifth Mass. Battery, Captain Phillips, twelve 3 inch guns, the order reducing each battery to 4 guns having been carried out, were posted in a very advantageous position on a hill, at the front and about 400 yards to the left of Fitzhugh's guns, at an angle of about 60 degrees with his line.

Opposed to these guns were the 20 pieces of the enemy in front and to the right of the Court House.

At daylight of May 18th, just when the Second Corps advanced on the Right the batteries opened on both sides. The firing which was about equally accurate, continued for about three-quarters of an hour continuously, and at intervals throughout the day with the result that the confederate general Hill's guns were silenced, but the general attack was given up when it was found that the enemy was prepared for it, and the Second and Sixth Corps went back to their positions of the 17th of May.



AS RELATED BY MEMBERS OF THE BATTERY.  
FROM NOTES OF LIEUT. APPLETON.

“Grant knew that an absolute victory or defeat in such a country as the Wilderness, was impossible, and so he concluded that losing his communication on the right and by the railroad, he would establish it on the left, and by the great rivers. The Army soon came to know that it had for its leader a strong and reliable man, and I am convinced that the three days at the Wilderness, and the five following ones at Spottsylvania, proved to all that the time for retreating was over. Men, horses, ammunition, food and forage, all followed as rapidly as possible in the wake of the ever advancing Army, and the wounded were taken to Washington by steamers, which were ready to meet them on the various rivers, from the Rappahannock to the James. Early on the morning of the 8th of May, 1864, we reached Todd's Tavern, where the cavalry had been skirmishing under Sheridan, and there I saw a young officer of one of the cavalry regiments, wounded and reposing in the porch of the inn. We continued our advance, and later, under a tree, whom should I see also wounded, but Captain A. P. Martin, who had received a bullet shot in the neck, from which the blood was slowly oozing, and Colonel Fred T. Locke the popular assistant adjutant general of the Fifth Corps, who had been hit in the face. It was a gruesome sight, and one calculated to make the observer feel the dangers of war very keenly. These officers recovered from their wounds, however, and both returned to the service. (Colonel Locke died in 1893; this wound, it was said, being the indirect cause of his death, and General Martin died in Boston, March 13, 1902, of a complication of diseases after a year's illness, and was buried at Mount Auburn with military honors. He was borne to the grave by members of Battery A, Light Artillery M. V. M., attended by Lieut. Aaron F. Walcott and 25 members of the Third Mass. Battery, with

members of the Loyal Legion, Grand Army of the Republic, and civic organizations.)

Our Battery soon continued the advance, passing the body of a dead Union infantryman in an open bit of ground, and soon we were put in position to resist any attack that might be made. We were supported on either side by the 32d Mass. Regt., Colonel George L. Prescott, who was killed at the first attack on Petersburg, June 18, 1864. (See p. 882.) I made the acquaintance of Colonel Prescott and had some conversation with him. It was rather an ugly place to be in, hemmed in by woods, and not much open land ahead, in case a strong body of the enemy should appear, but Captain Phillips said he could hold his own front, and only wanted the infantry to do the work on either flank."

Todd's Tavern was situated at the junction of the Catharpin and Brock roads, and was a ten mile march. Here intrenchments were thrown up.

"About 2 miles beyond the Tavern (Dyer's Notes, May 8, 1864) we found the cavalry fighting the Rebs. Went into position as soon as we reached the field. Remained till 10 p. m., then advanced about a mile; having driven the enemy from their position in breastworks. Unharnessed and turned in."

They were on the second line, in position on the right of the road to guard against an attack on our flank. Martin's battery was heavily engaged and Captain Martin was wounded. Sedgwick charged at dusk and carried the enemy's works. The advance to the front at 10 p. m. was to join the rest of the Fifth Corps. The supply train reached the camp that day, which was lucky as the forage was short. For six miles back from the front the provost guard were ordered to stop all passing to the rear, and it was said that of the two it was safer to go forward and engage the enemy, than to go back and be sabred to the front by the provost guard.

May 9, 1864, Monday, lay still all the morning. General Sedgwick was killed at 10 a. m. Lieut. Appleton happened to be at the road when his body was carried to the rear on a stretcher. He was known in the Army as "Uncle John," and was beloved and respected by all. After dinner on the 9th went into position on a ridge in about the Centre of the line. A few stray enfilading shots came over from the left. One shell killed Private Joseph Kierstead transferred to the Battery from the 118th Pennsylvania, and mortally wounded Private John Boynton of South Danvers; also wounded Private John Mensing, from the 118th P. V., all drivers on the first piece. Boynton was a new recruit.

Bullets whistle. Entry in Quarter Master Sergeant Wm. H. Peacock's account-book is "one shovel broken by a shell." Colonel Percy Wyndham visited the Battery. In the evening threw up breastworks, and remained in position all night.

#### NOTES OF CORPORAL BENJAMIN GRAHAM.

##### WM. REYNOLDS SEES A GHOST.

"On the evening of the 9th May, 1864, in battery, with our left flank facing the enemy, there came a shell from one of the rebels' batteries, and just at that time Kierstead, (John) Mensing, and one other, I have lost his name, (It was Boynton.) were digging a pit to shelter themselves in. They had it dug out about two feet, when they heard that shell coming, and all three dropped into the pit. The shell burst in the pit killing Kierstead and the unknown (Boynton), but only wounding Mensing in the wrist. Kierstead and the other it blew all to pieces, so I had to pick them up and put them in a blanket. That night we had a grave dug and buried them. I wanted to mark the spot, and asked Reynolds if he would not mark a board for them, he being a good penman. He said he would, so he got to work, and the wind was blowing, and he could not keep the candle lit,

and I suggested to him to sit in the bottom of the grave. In he went, and he stuck a piece of wood in the end of the grave and set the candle on it. Then he started in again, and when I thought it was about time he had finished I went round to see him, and as I was passing the side of the grave my shadow fell on the opposite side of the grave, when to my surprise Reynolds came out of that grave as if he had been shot out of a Gun. When I asked what was the matter, he said Kierstead's ghost had come in the grave."

FROM LIEUT. APPLETON'S LETTER OF MAY 9,  
1864.

"HEAD QUARTERS IN THE SADDLE,  
NEAR SPOTTSYLVANIA C. H.

The fighting has been perfectly terrific and our losses tremendous. Artillery has very little chance, as the country is solid woods, with now and then an opening. The batteries go into position in them, so there is a good deal of luck whether or not you get engaged. The infantry has suffered tremendously. Almost all Massachusetts field officers are killed or wounded."

On May 10th keep position all day. "The artillery opened at daybreak and continued at intervals. (Dyer's Notes.) At 11 a. m. the whole line opened peal on peal. It seemed as if the heavens had opened. Also very severe charges by the infantry. Captured a large number of prisoners, some guns, and stands of colors. At 10 p. m. silence reigned in a measure." There was a tremendous, exciting fight all the afternoon in the woods in our front, Grant and Meade around. A bulletin was read to the soldiers, announcing that General Butler was at Petersburg, and our forces had defeated the enemy in the West.

A good many Reb. prisoners taken. The rebels said to be at Brandy Station.

May 11th there was firing by both artillery and infantry at intervals, but no very severe fighting. About 1000 prisoners passed, going to the rear. In the afternoon a heavy thunder shower came up. Still in position on the extreme left of the Fifth Corps, with Batteries E and L, 1st New York Light, Lieut. George Breck in command, to the left of the road which crosses the Po river at Corbin's Bridge. May 12, 1864, moved to the extreme right of the line. General Hancock moved to the left and made a big capture in the morning,—Johnson's Division 7000 men, 4 generals, and 30 odd pieces of artillery,—by a surprise before daylight. It rained almost all day. Appleton wrote home,—“Just think of eight days almost solid fighting! Without doubt this is the hugest battle that ever took place in the world. I do not think that our wounded alone can be less than 25,000. They are going down to Fredericksburg on trains. Our Battery was engaged quite heavily on the 12th and we passed the afternoon in an artillery duel with a Reb. battery. One of our limbers was hit and exploded, but, strange to say, without hitting a horse. Our Battery has lost, thus far, two men killed and four wounded. We marched at night in the rain and came into camp along the road in a mud hole, near the Fifth Corps Hospitals. Grant will win the battle if it takes till next Christmas. (It was about this time that Grant made the remark that has grown into a proverb viz. that he would “fight it out on this line if it takes all summer.”) Just keep cool up in the North, and this thing will soon be settled. I can't think it will last much longer, for it does not seem as if the cause could justify such a tremendous slaughter.”

#### FROM CAPTAIN PHILLIPS.

Letter of May 13, 1864, in relation to May 12th:—“During the forenoon we shelled the woods by General Warren's orders, and exchanged a few shots with a battery to our

left. We were on a road which crossed the Po river, about 200 yds. ahead of us, at Corbin's Bridge, I believe. About noon, the rebels placed a battery on our right, just across the Po, but hidden from us by the woods. We made a guess as to the distance, and let them have it. I rode to the right about half a mile, and got within about 300 yds. of the rebel battery, and saw our shells bursting beautifully. They changed position, but I sent an orderly back to change our guns, correspondingly, and the rebs soon cleared out. About 2 this same battery, I suppose, took position in our front, still hidden by the woods, and having got all ready, banged away all at once as if they expected to clean us out the first thing. In this, however, they were very much mistaken. For about half an hour we kept at it, quite lively; they blew up one of our limbers and we returned the compliment. At the end of half an hour they retired in disgust. They only hit one man and wounded him very slightly. Still they faced us longer than any rebel battery I have met, as we do not generally allow them more than 15 minutes. They opened again about an hour afterwards, only for two or three rounds, before they cleared out. . . . We left the field at sunset and came here near the 5th Corps hospitals.'

In Captain Phillips' report to the adjutant general of the state he mentions the killing of a few horses, and adds that "two of our men were wounded at this time by shells from one of our own batteries."

Notes of Corporal Jonas Shackley May 12, 1864: "Moved by the right flank about a mile. Exposed to fire from both flanks and front. Corporal (Benjamin) Graham (of New Bedford) and (Private) Thomas Mensing, (118th P. V.) were wounded by a shell from Battery L, 1st N. Y. A. K. P. Hayden (of New Bedford) wounded by rebel shell. One of our limbers was blown up, and 2 horses killed by rebel shells."



They blew up the 4th limber. The Battery fired 486 rounds.

From John E. Dyer's Notes:—"May 12, 1864. Hitched up at daylight, changed our position and went on the right. Opened on the enemy. They soon returned it with a cross fire upon us. Soon it became the hottest of any place yet. The Rebs had four batteries playing upon us, all of which we silenced. We silenced their crack battery the Richmond Cadets. Had one limber blown up. Ben. Graham, Mensing, and Al. Hayden wounded. Rained all day."

#### NOTES OF SERG'T. WM. H. BAXTER.

##### BENNIE GRAHAM'S DOUBLE WOUND.

In a letter accompanying his Notes dated Oct. 4, 1900, Serg't. Baxter says that this incident he has related, "is a dead sure thing without drawing on the imagination and can be verified, as the other fellow is still alive." As to his title he says he is "Plain William H. In the old Battery 'Bill' for short, and 'Serg't.' sometimes."

---

"At Laurel Hill (May 12, 1864) we were closely engaged with a Reb. Battery in an artillery duel, and from the manner that the Rebs stood up and took their medicine for a while, it was evident that there was A 1 fighting blood on both sides of the fence. The duel ended, however, as usual when the Old 5th had a hand in it.

Benny Graham was serving on the right Gun from the writer, and during a lull in the firing, the writer saw that he was struck, and at once crossed over to him. When I got there he was sitting on the ground nursing his left arm.

Where are you hit Bennie?

'In the muscle of the upper arm' said he.

I had taken a small strap from my pocket while running to him, and at once proposed to put it on above the wound

to stop the flow of blood, but upon applying it found no hole for the buckle. I took out my jack knife, the smallest blade being about as long as a fore finger, and stooped over to make a hole in the strap. At the exact moment of pressing the point of the blade into the strap, a Reb shell burst over our heads, scattering its contents and fragments down among us, and, alas, when the shell burst the tendency to schrooch came upon me, and in my anxiety to adjust the strap to the arm, I plunged the blade clean through strap, blouse, shirt and arm, out through the other side.

In telling it the incident could well be ended here, but I will simply add that for some time after I made that fatal lunge at the strap, there seemed to be echoes of quotations from the Bible, and a decidedly sulphurous smell, hovering around the spot occupied by Bennie Graham and the writer. He has long ago forgiven me, and we have had many a good laugh over it since."

---

In some notes made at Old Point Comfort, Va., April 20, 1901, Captain Nathan Appleton says:—

"Laurel Hill was a part of the Spottsylvania fight, and for some time I had a clasp with the name on my corps badge, but it was never recognized officially by our government, and so does not appear on the flags."

---

At 7.30 of May 13, 1864, the men tried to keep comfortable in the rain under a tarpaulin, and after hours of uncertainty marched by the left flank. Having remained in park until 2 p. m., started for the old position near General Warren's Head Quarters and the Fifth Corps Hospitals. Turned in at 9 p. m. and were immediately aroused and hitched up and started toward the left of our lines; marched all night over an awful road knee deep in mud, through for-

ests, stumbling over tree stumps in the pitch dark, rain pouring and putting out fires built along the road to light the way; fording the Nye where it was three feet deep, plodding on for eight miles to a position on General Burnside's left.

Arrived there about 4 o'clock in the morning of the 14th and here fed the last grain to the horses. This was the hour for the attack. Went into park on the field. Chance for only short naps. At 3 o'clock in the afternoon moved about a quarter of a mile to the rear across the river and went into park. Got supper and turned in about 7 p. m. At 8 were routed out to unhitch and unharness and stretch the picket rope. Two guns were captured from the Rebs that day.

Sunday, May 15, at 4 p. m. recrossed the Po, and were ordered out to the front of our breastworks, an exposed and very uncomfortable place. "Apparently as a decoy" writes Shackley, "to the rebels, but they did not take the bait, so about dark we returned."

Dyer says of May 15,—“Expected an attack on Burnside's force to our right and we were to rush on them in return.”

It appears that General Burnside in command of the Ninth Corps, had reported the enemy massing in his front as if for an attack, and thus the Fifth Corps was led to make preparations to receive them.

May 16, 1864. Roused at 5 o'clock, cleaned and watered horses but no feed. During the day the teams came up, with grain for the horses, and Benjamin West came to the Battery. Some artillery and infantry firing but no hard fighting. On that day twenty-five thousand reinforcements to the Army arrived. Orders to turn in a section, two guns. All batteries to be four guns. Gun teams reorganized.

## TURNED IN A SECTION.

From Captain Appleton's Notes:—"It was during the last days of the fight at Spottsylvania, that we received the order to turn in one section, or two guns, leaving four guns in our Battery. I have always supposed that General Grant, seeing that the Army of the Potomac was encumbered by having too much artillery, decided upon this plan of reducing it, instead of disbanding or sending to the rear some of the batteries, which would have hurt the feelings of the captains and other officers, as well as of the men. There is no doubt but that there were too many guns for the country in which he was operating, and this reduction was a good thing for the batteries themselves, as few of them had their full complement of men, and were obliged to have details from the infantry. This plan showed, as many others had done, his great tact and perfect knowledge of the actual requirements of the situation."

May 17, 1864, the two guns belonging to the Left section were turned in. Kept the caissons, but Serg't. Elisha J. Gibbs took the guns to Belle Plain. The Reserve Artillery had been broken up and the batteries were attached to the several corps.

At night we advanced our line of intrenchments to within one thousand yards of the enemy, and before the morning of the 18th we had constructed a magnificent line of earthworks to hold the Fifth Corps at this point.

Letter of Lieut. Appleton May 17, 1864: "Our Army occupies a line just south of the river Po. and between it and Spottsylvania Court House. The Rebs are still opposing us with a large force. We are north of the river, and in a sort of temporary camp. In all our other campaigns after three days' fighting our Army has retired, but this time Grant means to fight it out. A Virginia battle is so totally different from any ideas which any one may have.

that it is difficult to describe. How can a soldier with unwashed face, filthy clothes, a muddy sabre, a played out horse, look like the picture of Napoleon at Lodi?

We get our supplies now from Washington via Acquia Creek. Reinforcements also keep coming out, so that the Army will hold about up to its original size. We need all the men. We have not seen our baggage since we left Culpeper, and are beginning to think that some clean clothes would be acceptable. However we can lie abed and have ours washed."

"May 18, 1864. (Appleton's Diary.) We started at 2½ and went into position, I somewhat in the rear in charge of the caissons, as we have turned in a section. Corporal (Charles M.) Tripp hit in the arm. Four more batteries added to the Brigade. Went back to camp by the old house. Milton called." (This was Lieut. Richard S. Milton who commanded the Ninth Mass. Battery in the absence of Captain Bigelow wounded at Gettysburg.)

Hitched up at one o'clock of the 18th and recrossed the Po. and reported at Head Quarters Artillery Brigade. Took position on the left of the 5th Corps with the 1st Pennsylvania Light Battery B, and the 1st N. Y., Batteries E and L, in sight of Spottsylvania Court House, and fired 33 case shot and 175 percussion, which the Rebs returned with interest. Recrossed the river at dark, and parked for the night.

According to Q. M. Serg't. Peacock's account book, "1 handspike was broken in action."

There was heavy artillery fighting all day. "The Rebs had a cross fire upon us (Dyer's Notes) but we dislodged them and dismounted five of their guns. As soon as we got into camp we got supper and went to bed. Corporal Tripp slightly wounded by a spent ball."

## CHAPTER XXII.

### THE BATTLE OF THE NORTH ANNA RIVER AND VIRGINIA CENTRAL RAILROAD,

MAY 23-26, 1864.

"I saw that same shell coming, and I called out to Maurice Blake, 'by your leave, Maurice, let that fellow pass, he's in a hurry'; and, faith, I said to myself, 'there's more where you came from: You're not an only child, and I never liked the family.'"

"Night after Talavera" in *Charles O'Malley*,—LEVER.

In pursuance of his resolution to move by the left flank, General Grant gave orders on the 20th of May, 1864, to renew this movement against the army of the Confederates which was being rapidly reinforced from the South and concentrated in front of the Army of the Potomac. The Fifth Corps Artillery, followed by the infantry, moved south on the 21st of May, and crossed the Mattaponi river; and on the 22d all forces which could be spared by General B. F. Butler at Bermuda Hundred, were ordered north to be sent to Grant, under the command of Major General William F. Smith.

Perceiving the intention of General Grant to continue his movement to the left, Ewell's Confederate Corps on the left of the enemy's line, and later Hill's and Anderson's Confederate Corps moved by the Telegraph road towards Hanover Junction, and on the night of the 22d the entire Confederate Army were resting on the south bank of the North Anna river in the vicinity of Hanover Junction. At 11 a. m. of the 23d, the Fifth Corps, with the artillery, were



at the railroad bridge near the North Anna river, but moved to Mount Carmel Church to make room for the Second Corps, who had been ordered to that place, and reached the river again at Jericho Mills where there was a ford. On the left of the road leading to this ford the artillery was posted.

Three Divisions of the Fifth Corps then crossed the ford, Griffin's leading, and the 22d Mass. infantry, Colonel Wm. S. Tilton, ahead. They drove the rebels to Noel's station, and the remainder of the Corps with the six 12 pdr. batteries crossed. While approaching the enemy's line of battle which was discovered behind a ridge, Griffin's First Division was furiously attacked on the right. This attack was repulsed by the aid of the artillery, and reinforcements of infantry coming up, the lines were intrenched on the south bank of the North Anna river.

The Second Corps also drove the rebels across the river from their rifle pits near the Telegraph road, but the rebels held the wooden bridge across the Richmond and Fredericksburg railroad during the night.

The Ninth Corps were in a position to support the Second and Fifth Corps in the morning, but moved to Ox Ford before night. The Sixth Corps on the 23d were on the south bank of the river, having crossed at Jericho Ford. Now our forces were part on the north and part on the south of the North Anna river, and the enemy's lines had receded; their abandoned works being occupied by our forces, but Lee, while retiring his Left flank, had strengthened his Right, in the attempt once more to get between the Army of the Potomac and its base of supplies. His Left rested on Little River near New Market and the Virginia Central Railroad, his Right extending along the North Anna river for three-quarters of a mile to Ox Ford, covering an extensive swamp, and occupying an exceptionally strong position, which General Grant resolved to render

untenable. He determined to turn the enemy's Right flank by crossing near Hanover Town and after securing his own source of supplies, to destroy the railroads at various points and cut off those of the enemy.

He issued the following order to General Meade:—

## GRANT TO MEADE.

QUARLES MILLS, VA. May 25, 1864.

MAJOR-GENERAL MEADE,  
Commanding A. P.:

Direct Generals Warren and Wright to withdraw all their teams and artillery, not in position, to the north side of the river tomorrow. Send that belonging to General Wright's Corps as far on the road to Hanover Town as it can go, without attracting attention to the fact. Send with it Wright's best Division or Division under his ablest commander. Have their places filled up in the line so if possible the enemy will not notice their withdrawal. Send the cavalry tomorrow afternoon, or as much of it as you may deem necessary to watch and seize, if they can, Littlepage's bridge and Taylor's ford, and to remain on one or other side of the river, at these points until the infantry and artillery all pass. As soon as it is dark tomorrow night, start the Division which you withdraw first from Wright's Corps to make a forced march to Hanover Town, taking with them no teams to impede the march. At the same time this Division starts, commence withdrawing all of the Fifth and Sixth Corps from the south side of the river, and march them for the same place. The two Divisions of the Ninth Corps not now with Hancock may be moved down the north bank of the river, where they will be handy to support Hancock if necessary, or will be that much on their road to follow the Fifth and Sixth Corps. Hancock should hold his command in readiness to follow as soon as the way is clear for him. Tomorrow it will leave nothing for him to do, but as soon as he can he should get all his teams and spare artillery on the road or roads which he will have to take. As soon as the troops reach Hanover Town, they should get possession of all the crossings they can in that neighborhood. I think it would be well to make a heavy cavalry demonstration on the enemy's left tomorrow afternoon also.

U. S. GRANT,  
*Lieutenant-General.*

In the itinerary of Brig. Gen. Romeyn B. Ayres, First

Brigade, First Division, Fifth Army Corps, under date of May 25, 1864, may be found the following:—

“Moved 2 miles to the right, and went into position in front of the enemy at Little River, near the Virginia Central Railroad. (Our forces were engaged in destroying the railroad, and scouts were sent out towards Hanover Junction.) May 26: At 8 p. m. moved out and recrossed the North Anna river, and marched all night.”

Again we swing around to Hanover Court House, and on the 31st of May the position of the Army of the Potomac was as follows:—The left of the Fifth Corps was on the Shady Grove road, extending to the Mechanicsville pike, and about 3 miles south of the Totopotomoy Creek. On its right were, first, the Ninth Corps, next, the Second and Sixth lengthening out for six miles southeast of Hanover Court House. The cavalry were in the act of destroying the Virginia Central Railroad and fighting at Cold Harbor. General William F. Smith from the Army of the James was moving up the York River from White House Landing where one Division was left on guard. The Confederates were represented at Cold Harbor by Hoke, and Kershaw, and by Early and Anderson between Bethesda Church and Cold Harbor, where the roads from Richmond, from White House Landing now our base of supplies, and from other directions converged.

#### AS RELATED BY MEMBERS OF THE BATTERY.

In Lieut. Nathan Appleton's Diary of May 19, 1864, he has jotted down the following:—“Off again by daylight. Remain in park all day. Sharp skirmish in the afternoon. They try to flank us. Sleep out minus a cover.

May 20, 1864. I bring my command back to the others. A luxurious dinner of shad.”

In a letter home written on the 20th, he says of the 19th:—“I received yesterday a big mail, the first one since we have left Culpeper, with a good assortment of letters,

papers, and magazines, all of which were very acceptable. The last few days out here have been comparatively quiet, though seldom one passes in which we do not have a big skirmish somewhere along the line. Yesterday afternoon the Rebs tried to turn our right flank,—but they did not succeed,—and for some time it was quite exciting. The country is more open here than in the ‘Wilderness,’ so that artillery comes considerably into play, but the shells, although they frighten you terribly don’t do much damage. Grant has reinforcements constantly coming out, so that our Army here is, I think, now about as large as when it left winter quarters, notwithstanding its tremendous loss. There is a beautiful house about a mile from where we now are, a truly splendid specimen of a Virginia mansion; such an one as is not often seen in this part of the country,—immense stables and barns, sheds, and darkies’ shanties, all once the property of a Mr. Anderson, evidently a very rich land owner. I have had the good fortune to meet lately a jolly young fellow whom I already consider about my best friend in the Army, Fordham Morris by name, an aide of Colonel Wainwright in command of the Artillery Brigade. The scenery around here is the prettiest I have seen in Virginia, except, perhaps, some of the views around the Blue Ridge.”

At daylight of the 19th all the batteries were set in motion. Started out of park at 4.30 a. m., crossed the Nye and were put in position in a field on the southern side near the enemy, and remained hitched up all day. At 4 p. m. they made a demonstration on our Right flank in the attempt to turn it, and get possession of our wagon trains, but they were repulsed and driven back with considerable loss. Remained in position all night, and all the next day, but no firing except picket firing occurred on the 20th. In the morning our forces captured their pickets, numbering 1500

men. The men in charge of Serg't. Gibbs, who went to turn in the guns, got back that day from Belle Plain.

LETTER FROM QUARTER MASTER SERG'T.  
PEACOCK, WRITTEN ON THE BACK OF  
A "RATION RETURN."

"FREDERICKSBURG, VA. May 21, 1864.

Here I am all right after three weeks' marching, but no fighting. Most of the time I am with the army train. The Battery has fired 1800 rounds of ammunition or 8 tuns; its loss in men is two killed and seven wounded. I tell you this is a big battle, and the end of it is far off. I never saw so many wounded men from any battle before. It is said from good authority that our loss in wounded amounts to 40,000 men. I have seen over ten thousand rebel prisoners, and 17 captured guns. The Rebs have some six thousand of our men prisoners, and a few guns.

I came from the front yesterday; but little fighting was going on. I could plainly see the rebels at work building rifle pits. Our army will have hot work to get them out of their present position. Every house in this city has wounded in it,—wounded men everywhere. General Grant orders room in Washington for fifty thousand wounded! It is awful, *awful!*

I am going to the front in about two hours. The 'Jacob Bell' lays at the wharf of this city; also the 'Yankee,' and one other gunboat.

I send leaves from Chancellorsville battlefield; one rose from a garden on Main street of this city, and leaves from the tomb of 'Mary' the mother of George Washington. Her monument has been disfigured shamefully by soldiers breaking off pieces. I send a bit that was picked up where some one had broken off a large piece.

P. S. The tomb of Mrs. Washington is on one of the

heights of Fredericksburg. A rifle pit was taken by our men at the battle of Fredericksburg, the monument being only fifty feet from it, and between the two lines of men fighting. It is marked all over by bullets and shells. I have found the grave of Eddie Platts, our little gunner who was killed at the battle of Fredericksburg. His mother was very anxious to find his body. She lives in Boston."

Note by Serg't. Peacock, Chicago, Ill. September 7, 1900:—"This letter was written while on my way to Belle Plain for supplies. The 1800 rounds fired were from the time we crossed the Rapidan under Grant, May 3d, I think. So we did some shooting in 18 days, if we could not get into the Wilderness."

May 21, 1864. Moved with the Fifth Corps by the left flank. Orders to be ready at 10 o'clock, marched at 11.30. Lieutenant Nathan Appleton was ordered to report to Colonel Wainwright as an A. D. C.

Marched all day, crossing the Richmond and Fredericksburg railroad at Guiney's station, and the bridge over the Mattaponi River, and went into camp for the night at the forks of the road about a mile beyond the bridge. The cavalry were in advance, and drove the Rebs from the bridge the Battery crossed. Its rear guard was engaged with the rebels. Some of the men went after forage for the horses, before turning in.

On the 22d, aroused at 3 o'clock, and leaving camp at 10 a. m. marched about 7 miles. Skirmishing with the rebel cavalry reported on ahead. The rebels seemed to be moving south, being driven before us, their rear but three miles distant. Took possession of the Telegraph road and crossed the Po River. On the march passed several bodies of dead rebels. Parked near St. Margaret's Church. Head Quarters of the Brigade in a fine white house at Carmel Church.

Dyer's Notes: "May 23, 1864. The oft repeated, wel-



come sound of 'turn out,' at 5 a. m. Started, passed Balls Church, and arrived at the North Anna river at noon. Went in park and remained all day, to cover the crossing of the ford. The brass batteries crossed the river at 3 p. m. At 4 the fight (in the open field) began, and continued very heavy till after dark, but we succeeded in driving the Rebs. At 11 o'clock we turned in."

The advanced guard of Hill's Corps were opposed to us. The artillery swept the line firing over the heads of the infantry. Lieut. Appleton calls this his most exciting fight. He slept on the field.

In the morning march of the 23d the Corps got on the wrong road. Its crossing of the North Anna was at Jericho Mills. Some of the 12 pdr. batteries crossed with the infantry, but the Battery remained on the north side of the river where the Rifled Batteries were parked. The distance from Jericho Ford to Noel's Station on the Virginia Central Railroad was not far from 2 miles.

The centre of the part of the line occupied by the Fifth Corps was about half a mile equidistant from the ford and the railroad. In the morning of the 24th, crossed the river on a canvas pontoon bridge at Jericho Mills, a bad ford to cross, with steep, rocky banks, and parked at close intervals about a mile from the river.

Remained till dark, then moved to a position near Griffin's 1st Division. Dyer had some conversation with rebel prisoners, who he says, "talked pretty spunky, at first, but finally owned up to being tired of the war."

Very hard thunder and sharp lightning towards night. Heavy fighting heard on the Left. We put our guns in position and turned in."

From Lieut. Appleton's Diary: "May 24, 1864. Ride along the lines. Lots of stragglers brought in. All the Army together." His letter of this date is written at "Head Quarters Artillery Brigade 5th Corps 9 a. m. south

of the North Anna River, and about 6 miles from Hanover Junction:

We have been pushing on towards Richmond with skirmishes almost every day. The weather is hot, and the constant marching and firing is very tiresome. I am now with Colonel Wainwright an A. D. C. The Chief of Artillery has to keep with Corps Hd. Qrs. so that I have a chance to see and hear all that is going on in the Corps. Yesterday afternoon we had quite a pretty little fight, in fact the first one I have been in where bullets whistled lively, and we could see what was being done. One of our staff, Captain Henry W. Davis, was wounded the Dr. thinks mortally, and two Battery officers were hit; one of whom was Lieut. Cargill of the Third Mass. Battery. We have been now for four weeks constantly on the go, with very few luxuries in dress or food, and begin to think that comfortable quarters in Richmond, with plenty of sherry cobblers, would come in well. General Meade is now here, within a few feet from me talking to Gen. Warren."

#### THE FIFTH BATTERY MEN AS BARN MOVERS.

[Contributed by Maj. Gen. Joshua L. Chamberlain, then colonel 20th Maine Reg't. Infantry, 3d Brigade, 1st Division, Fifth Corps; promoted to command of Brigade, August 15, 1863, and of 1st Brigade June 6, 1864.]

The three Massachusetts batteries long attached to the Fifth Corps were great favorites with us all. Many a time we exchanged valuable services,—the infantry and artillery,—the balance of honor being in favor of the latter. We felt pride and affection for these men, and we knew and loved their guns almost as well as they did.

Phillips, the modest, faithful and brave commander of the Fifth, I was much drawn to by these qualities of his, which made up a character of ideal manliness. This bat-

tery made a great record all the way down through the Wilderness and Spottsylvania, and when our Corps was crossing the North Anna, on the 24th of May, we were glad to have these old friends sent to the First Division to be immediately under Griffin, to whom this arm of the service was a specialty. This itself was a compliment to the battery.

We forded the river,—our brigade at the head of the column,—and were immediately struck hard by Hill's Corps, close on our front.

As an instance of the ways of Phillips and his battery, I recall an incident of the second day's fighting, when we were trying to force Hill back, "to develop his position," as it was afterwards explained.

I had a hard time to hold my advance steady, on account of a peculiarly disagreeable fire of sharpshooters who had secure positions behind knolls, and clumps of trees and buildings, from which they made it almost certain death for any man of ours to show his head. The conditions were such that I could not dislodge them by effective fire, nor by a charge; and we were not slow in throwing up some little breastworks of logs and rails in the edge of some woods, as that was a good way to keep our heads level. There were some favoring trees, whose bulky forms were well proportioned to the size of a man's body, and were well patronized by officers and others not required on the breastworks, but there were open spaces between them, to allow the enemy to draw a good sight on us whenever we moved.

I didn't like the situation. I thought of Phillips, and went over to ask him to come forward with me and take a look at the landscape. I pointed out to him the picturesque features of it, and he seemed to be much interested. In a few minutes up he rushes with two of his guns, whirls them into "action front" in the clear spaces, the muzzles almost

up to the breastworks, and opens his three-inch iron hot and heavy, wherever he sees the smoke puffing.

There was a large barn out in our front,—I think it had a high stone basement,—and it was filled with fellows grossly abusing the rightful privileges of a barn, and making it an instrument of decided offense.

From every opening and crevice and corner arched the white rings of smoke, and the bullets were spitting at us like wild cats. Phillips asked me if he was doing right.

“Phillips, I want that barn moved. It doesn’t stand to suit me.” He turns on his heel:—

“Load with percussion!” he exclaims to his nearest gunner, and springs right upon the gun-carriage to get a fair sight ahead,—and to afford one, also. In another instant he is off, and at the elevating screw to make sure of his aim.

Crash! goes his shot. He is on top of the gun again before its recoil had slackened much, one hand on the wheel, straining his gaze to see the effect of the shot; neither he nor his men paying the least attention to the serenade the bullets were playing. Shot upon shot bangs and bursts against the walls of the barn, making great shattering and scattering. Soon it is wrapped in its own fire. Out come the hidiers, and we have fair returns on them from our excited line. The rest of them are doing their sharpest on us, but it is short work. Artillery on the skirmish line and Charley Phillips on top had done it!

The enemy break. The barn is “moved,”—skyward, in flames.

We seize the moment. Half a dozen rounds of shell pursue the flying foe. We leap over our works; the guns follow, somehow.

Forward all: Phillips riding at my side, ready for anything.

We press the enemy across the Virginia Central Railroad, and close upon Little River. But at dusk the next day,

having "developed the enemy's position," we turned back, recrossed the North Anna at Quarles Mills, and marched all night in the drenching rain, and by forced marches days and nights following, towards the fated Bethesda Church and Cold Harbor. But one cheering thing was, that on the first of June the dear old Fifth Battery with dear, brave Phillips, were permanently assigned to our Division, where they passed for "Griffin's Pets," which meant terrible experiences together and closer friendships, neither of which can fade from our minds and hearts.

JOSHUA L. CHAMBERLAIN.

BRUNSWICK, MAINE,

February 21, 1900.

---

From a Letter of Captain Phillips dated Camp near Hanover Town, May 30, 1864:—

"On the 25th we marched with Griffin's Division along the Virginia Central Railroad, towards the junction a few miles, till we found the enemy, where we went into position. Lieut. Appleton was shot through the arm by one of the enemy's skirmishers, just before the Battery came up. He had been on Colonel Wainwright's staff for a few days. We were posted in the edge of the woods, with an open field in front of us, and within range of the enemy's skirmish line. We shelled the woods a little, but could not wake up their artillery. The skirmishers kept popping away at us all the time, but did no damage as we kept ourselves under cover."

From the Diary of John E. Dyer:—"May 25th, 1864. Found this morning the Rebs had left our front, and fell back to their breastworks. Followed them up. Went in position 75 yards from Reb. sharpshooters. A hot place for a battery. The 3d Brigade, 1st Division, 5th Corps have been employed all day in tearing up the Gordonsville

railroad. Lieut. Appleton was wounded today in the arm by a Rebel sharpshooter, just before we came up."

Shackley writes on May 25th:—"We moved at sunrise, and near the South Anna River met the enemy intrenched, and had a fight without decisive results. Lieut. Appleton was wounded."

The Battery fired 12 case shot, and 30 percussion.

John H. Welch transferred to the 5th Mass. Battery from the Third Mass. was shot in the right breast in the battle of the North Anna River, the ball passing through his body and lodging in Lieut. Cargill's leg. He was taken to a hospital in Newark, N. J., and after his recovery returned to the Battery. He had re-enlisted in the Third Mass. Battery, and served to the end of the war in the Fifth Mass.

William A. Martis was wounded in the hip.

Last entry in Lieut. Nathan Appleton's Diary while connected with the Fifth Mass. Battery:—

"May 25, 1864. Wounded in the right arm and went home."

#### LIEUT. APPLETON'S NOTES MAY, 1901.

"I was wounded the second day after the lively artillery engagement we had with the Rebs by Jericho's Ford, just over the North Anna river. The line was being pushed along, always by the left flank, and some of our Brigade batteries had been sent on away from the others, under the command of Major Robert H. Fitzhugh, General Wainwright's chief of staff, who was generally off with some of the batteries when the Brigade scattered.

General Wainwright asked me to ride down the lines to see and report where these batteries were, telling me not to go far, in case I could not find them, and not to be gone long. I thought I should only be absent a few minutes,—a half hour at most,—and so started off, not even taking my sabre, a rare occurrence with me, but which in this case



proved not inconvenient, and unaccompanied by an orderly. So I rode on and on, without coming across the batteries,—always expecting to,—along by the lines of the Sixth Corps, where I saw General Horatio G. Wright in command, and met Colonel Oliver Wendell Holmes Jr., and had a chat with him. On and on, several miles, until at last I came up with Major Fitzhugh and the others.

Skirmishing with the enemy was going on, and it seemed as if there would soon be work. I asked Fitzhugh if he would like to have me remain with him, as he was quite alone in command, and as he said he would, I decided to take upon myself the responsibility of staying. So we bustled about to find some good places to put the batteries in position. I remember going up to General Romeyn B. Ayres, commanding the 2d Division of our Corps, and asking his advice, for he was an old artillery officer,—which he gave me. I dismounted from my horse, and went into the woods with General Griffin, in command of the 1st Division, and we dodged behind the big trees to keep clear of the Confederate bullets, which seemed to me almost absurd, as they were firing so lightly and irregularly. One of his staff, however, Captain Case of Cincinnati, was badly wounded in the right arm about this time. [This was Captain Thomas C. Case, 71st Ohio Volunteers.]

At length we found a fair place to put in one of the batteries, a little in from the edge of the woods, and close behind our skirmish line. The Virginia Central Railroad was not far distant in front, and the nearest station on it was called 'Noel's.' I was directed to stay out there to look after the work of felling the trees, and throwing up some hasty breastworks for our men.

The order was given for our infantry skirmishers not to fire in front, so as not to attract fire from the enemy in return while we were at work. But still, every now and then a shot would come whizzing along, with its peculiar sound,

ending with a thud, or a crash against some tree. Sharpshooters were supposed to be firing from the tree tops or branches, and we were told to be careful not to expose ourselves suddenly. I recollect just then one of our artillery boys was hit in the shoulder by a musket ball, and this I can say was the only person I actually saw struck. He threw up his arms, exclaiming, 'My God, I am hit.' He went to the rear, but his wound proved to be no more than a bad flesh wound, as I met him afterwards on the boat going to Washington.

At length my time arrived.

I was reclining on the ground against a small tree, watching our men at work. My right arm and leg were exposed, and suddenly I felt through them both a tremendous shock, as if a big galvanic battery had been let loose upon me. I knew at once I was shot,—it seemed to be all over me,—and I saw the blood spirting in a stream from my right arm. I was rather surprised to discover that I could walk. The ball had gone clean through my arm and had stopped at the calf of my leg, striking and glancing off from my boot. It gave my leg a hard concussion, which later became inflamed into quite a wound, but at first it did not trouble me. If I had only thought of it, and preserved my presence of mind, I might have picked up the bullet and kept it as a souvenir!

I suppose the ball came from a distance of nearly a mile, and might be called a spent shot, but it went through my arm without any difficulty. One of the artillery boys came to me at once, and tied a handkerchief tightly round my arm above the wound, which stopped the bleeding very much, and then, leaning upon him, I walked through the woods a quarter of a mile to the rear, where the 1st Division staff was assembled at a turn in the road.

There was a curious jumble of thoughts in my mind as we hobbled along.—Here was I, actually wounded, having gone through that experience every soldier thinks of so

much and wonders how he will take it when it comes. Was my wound a serious one, would I lose my arm by amputation, would I die from the effects of it by mortification or otherwise, as many did? And so and so, strange reflections dashed through my brain during that short walk of ten minutes. As I met the 1st Division staff they laid me softly on the grass, and the surgeon came up, a nice young fellow, 1st Lieut. Dr. John Ryan, assistant surgeon of the 9th Mass. Infantry, the famous Irish regiment, 'the bloody 9th,' which I knew so well. He bared my arm, and putting his thumb and finger through the hole until they met in the middle, to see just what was the matter, he said heartily, 'You are all right, the bone is not touched, the arm is safe, and you have got before you a pleasant "leave of absence," and a chance to get out of this for several weeks at least. It's an elegant flesh wound.' I cannot express how relieved I felt at this, and then the other officers began poking fun at me, and congratulating me upon my great luck, and I could see that indeed I was not an object of commiseration in those dangerous times. A stretcher was brought for me, and on it I was carried some ways back to where there was a temporary field hospital, filled with all kinds of wounded men. Before leaving the ground where I was lying with the 1st Division staff, two or three of the boys of our Battery came up to find out what was the matter with me, and I was much gratified at the interest they took in me. I did not see General Wainwright, but I heard that he was annoyed at my having gone off so far, contrary to his directions, and then staying there, by which I got my wound. However, it was done in good intent and could not be helped. At the hospital I was soon made tolerably comfortable for the night. My servant Joe appeared then to take care of me, and accompany me home, and Case and myself bunked in, side by side, on the ground under a large hospital tent.

It was a hard sight to see all the other wounded, and hear their groans, but we passed the night and the next day at this field hospital. About dusk, a long train of ambulances and wagons for the wounded was made up, to take us to Washington, though I do not think we at all knew how we were to get there, but supposed it would be mostly by boat. Case and I had an ambulance between us, in which we could lie down and were quite comfortable. I felt rather ashamed, at being so well off with my slight flesh wound, when there were so many serious cases who were so badly provided for in the rough, springless wagons, but still I was happy enough to take the place allotted me.

By the early grey of the morning we passed through the little town of Bowling Green, some of the inhabitants gazing at us through the windows, and then on and on, the next day, until about two o'clock in the afternoon, when we reached the Rappahannock River at Port Royal, where our train went into park near the water. In the stream was the old Sound steamer 'Connecticut' of the Stonington line, ready to take a boat load of the wounded from the Wilderness, Spottsylvania, and other fights, to Washington, and from there to the hospitals or their homes. The wounded all got on the boat during the afternoon, but it took a long while to carry many of them on board, and we started off during the evening. I had a decent berth, and walked around and talked with the others during the passage. There were a good many doctors and nurses who tried to do their best, but it was no easy thing to look after so many, and here I must say that my boy Joe Hunter performed most efficient service, making himself generally useful to all on board. I remember meeting the artillery man who was shot just before me, and also a soldier who showed me a bible he had through which a bullet had gone, while in his pocket or knapsack. As this is one of those unusual shots you often read of in tracts during war times, I am

glad to verify it, and say unhesitatingly that I recollect perfectly seeing this one.

On the after deck of the steamboat a sheet was spread across, and behind this surgical operations and amputations were going on all the time of our passage. We were two nights and one day going down the Rappahannock and up the Potomac to Washington, where we arrived the morning of the second day after our departure, which must have been May 29th.

Case and I went right up to a small hotel, the Owen House, alongside of Willard's, and set to work without delay obtaining 'leaves of absence,' without which we could not get out of Washington, and to arrange which just then required a good deal of time and red tape formality. At the end of about three days I received the following order:—

HEAD QUARTERS  
DEPARTMENT OF WASHINGTON,  
WASHINGTON, D. C. May 30, 1864.

Special Order No. 133.

Leave of absence for Thirty (30) days is granted to Lieutenant Nathan Appleton A. D. C. of the Artillery Brig. 5th Corps, on surgeon's certificate of disability arising from wound, to proceed to his home. At the expiration of this time he will report in person at his command (or hospital), thence notifying these Headquarters by letter.

By command of Major General Augur.

CHAS. RAYMOND,  
*Assistant Adjutant General.*

By this time my arm was frightfully swollen, sloughing freely, and I was beginning to feel feverish from it all. I was glad to be off. I engaged my berth in the sleeping-car, and a little before dusk I drove down with Joe to the old Baltimore and Ohio railroad station. The jolting of the hack was painful. I was feeling far from well, though happy enough at the prospect of returning home, when whom should I meet in the street but Professor Eben N.

Horsford of Harvard University, whose aid to the Union cause was strong, and who soon after the war was appointed by Governor Andrew on the commission for the defence of Boston Harbor, and prepared a report of the plans to be pursued in the event of the approach of Confederate cruisers. He devised a marching ration for the army which reduced transportation to a very low figure. He stopped the carriage, gave me a warm and pleasant greeting, and I started off on my journey encouraged by his cheery words and sympathetic presence.

We were soon *en route*, but the official would not allow Joe to stay in the sleeping car, simply because he was a negro, and negroes were not then allowed to travel in these cars, quite ignoring the fact that he was the servant of a sick and wounded officer of the Union army. I had not been long in the car when a gentleman, a stranger came to me and asked if I would not like to go to bed. He called up the porter, had my bed made up at once, and told me his berth was over mine. After helping me undress he said if during the night I wanted water or anything I must call upon him. I availed myself several times of his kindness, and thanked him from the bottom of my heart. The next morning he explained to me that he, himself, had once been wounded, in South America, and knew what it was, and that he had been incapacitated by bad health from taking part in the war. I, stupidly, did not think at the time of asking his name, but I shall never forget him, and I shall only be too glad if he can know through these lines of my gratitude for what he did for me during that long night railroad journey.

On arrival in New York I drove to the Astor House where my friends were sent for and a surgeon to dress my wound. I went to Boston that night by the Stonington line driving up to 39 Beacon street about seven o'clock the next morning. Again at home with all its comforts and



attentions which had been prepared for me, I was attended by Dr. Henry J. Bigelow, and later by Dr. John Mason Warren.

A month after I was wounded I was given the following

CERTIFICATE OF EXAMINATION.

Lieut. Nathan Appleton, A. D. C. of the 5th Mass. Battery, having applied for a certificate on which to ground an application for leave of absence, I do hereby certify that I have carefully examined this officer, and find that he is invalided in Boston, suffering from a gunshot wound in right arm received in action May 25, 1864. The wound is still suppurating. And that in consequence thereof he is in my opinion unfit for duty. I further declare my belief that he will not be able to resume his duties in a less period than twenty days from June 29th, 1864, and is unable to travel without increasing the risk of permanent disability.

Dated at Boston the 25th day of June, 1864.

ANSON P. HOOKER, M. D.

Approved

A. N. McLAREN,

*Surgeon U. S. A.*

*Med. Director.*

At the summer residence of my family at Lynn I had a doctor look after me who did not at all comprehend the case. My arm was bent at almost a right angle, from carrying it in the position it was held in the sling, and he proposed to cut the cords to let it down straight. Fortunately this experiment was not tried, and Dr. Warren, as Dr. Bigelow was on his vacation, later took hold of it and straightened it in a great degree, simply by pulling it down by main force every few days, and getting it out a little straighter at each trial, even today (1901) it is not perfectly so, and never will be, and two scars are plainly marked on it with a loss of flesh and muscle between them, otherwise it is all right. On the 25th of July, 1896, I had a Roentgen X Ray photograph taken of my arm by Professor Clinton E. Dolbear, at 20 Tremont street, Boston; about 7 minutes exposure. It shows that the flesh has never filled up in the line

of the wound. The bone was not touched by the bullet.

The wound on the leg made quite a sore for a time, but dressing and plaster soon cured it, as it was merely a shock against the skin and the flesh beyond.

In August, 1864, I received another

#### CERTIFICATE OF EXAMINATION OF GUNSHOT WOUND.

Lieut. Nathan Appleton A. D. C. of the 5th Mass. Battery, having applied for a certificate on which to ground an application for leave of absence, I do hereby certify that I have carefully examined the officer, and find that he is invalided in Boston, Mass., suffering from the effects of Anchylosis of the right elbow joint, the result of a gunshot wound received in action May 25th, 1864, and in consequence thereof, he is, in my opinion, unfit for duty. I further declare my belief that he will not be able to resume his duties in a less period than twenty days from August 28, 1864, and is unable to travel without incurring the risk of permanent disability. Prospect of recovery—not remote.

Dated at Boston this 27th day of August, 1864.

WM. J. DALE, *A. S., U. S. A.*

Approved

A. N. McLAREN,

*Surgeon U. S. A.,*

*Med. Director.*

But in the mean time I had sent in my resignation, and the circumstances of my promotion and subsequent discharge from the service were peculiar.

By Blake's death at the Battle of Petersburg (see p. 877) I was commissioned First Lieutenant, and this of course made a vacancy for another Second Lieutenant in the Battery. Hamblet was promoted and commissioned, but, by some stupid red tape arrangement, it was impossible for either he or I to be mustered in to our new positions except actually in the field, and from the date of muster only could pay be drawn. This was of no importance to me, but it was to him in the matter of pay, and, as I did not wish to return to the army until my arm was quite well, I found I was keeping the other lieutenant out. So, I resigned and was honorably discharged for disability, though all the time

I had the fixed intention of rejoining after a short trip abroad.

### ORDER OF DISCHARGE.

WAR DEPARTMENT ADJUTANT GENERAL'S OFFICE,  
WASHINGTON, Aug. 25, 1864.

Special Order

No. 280                      Extract.

19. 2d Lieut. Nathan Appleton 5th Mass. Battery, having tendered his resignation, is hereby honorably discharged the service of the United States, on account of physical disability from wounds received in action, with condition that he shall receive no final payments until he has satisfied the Pay Department that he is not indebted to the Government.

By Order of the Secretary of War.

(Signed) E. D. TOWNSEND,  
*Assistant Adjutant General.*

Official:

(Signed) FORD. MORRIS,  
*Lieut. and A. A. G.*

Official:

(Signed) CHARLES A. PHILLIPS, *Capt.*  
*5th Mass. Battery.*

In a letter dated Hd. Qrs. Art'y Brigade, 5th Corps. Sept. 8, 1864, General C. S. Wainwright wrote me:—

'I was very sorry to get your resignation, though I think that it was perhaps the best thing you could do, as your wound continued to trouble you so much. I had anticipated a good deal of pleasure in having you with me. As it is I have not got any one in your place. Matthewson has been made a captain and commands his company. Morris is still A. A. G. and Canfield my only aide.'

---

While writing this sketch several men of the Battery come to my remembrance with peculiar distinctness on account of their positions in the Battery. There was Winters the bugler, much older than most of the members of the Battery when he enlisted with some of the first recruits, and the other bugler, Tucker, and also Hayden the Battery

guidon. The letter carrier too was important in the experience of the Battery. The young fellow who used to shave me was Niles. The forms of the farriers and teamsters too come back to me, and there were two cooks, Burt and Phippen, the latter waited at our mess, and also drove on the march the two-wheeled battery cart we officers had for our own personal effects, and which was of the greatest convenience and comfort.

On the 18th of March, 1865, I was commissioned Assistant Inspector General on the staff of the Commander-in-Chief of the Commonwealth of Massachusetts, Governor John A. Andrew, and duly took the oath as Captain on March 27th. I immediately started for the front to report to General Wainwright still in command of the Artillery Brigade, Fifth Army Corps, to whom I was detailed as Volunteer aide de camp.

I was present at the Battle of Five Forks and at the Surrender at Appomattox, and marched with the Army of the Potomac in the Grand Review of May 22d, 1865, riding my favorite horse 'Folko,' who had been left with General Wainwright while I was away from the Army, the little one remaining with the Battery.

#### COPY OF A BREVET.

THE

PRESIDENT OF THE UNITED STATES OF AMERICA.

[Seal of the  
U. S. A. War Office.]

(Picture of an eagle with outspread wings beneath the motto  
'E Pluribus Unum.')

To All who shall see These Presents Greeting.

Know ye, That I do hereby confer on Nathan Appleton, of the United States Volunteers, in the service of the United States by and with the advice and consent of the Senate, the rank of Captain By Brevet, in said service, to rank as such from the thirteenth day of March, and in the year of our Lord one thousand eight hundred and sixty-five, for gallant and meritorious conduct at the battle on Virginia Central Railroad.

And I do strictly charge and require all officers and soldiers under his command, to obey and respect him accordingly, and he is to observe and follow such orders and directions from time to time, as he shall receive from me, or the future President of the United States of America, and other officers set over him, according to law, and the rules and discipline of War, this Commission to continue in force during the pleasure of the President of the United States for the time being.

Given under my hand at the City of Washington this twenty-fifth day of August in the year of our Lord one thousand eight hundred and sixty-five, and in the ninety-first year of the Independence of the United States.

By the President.

ANDREW JOHNSON.

EDWIN M. STANTON

*Secretary of War.*

At the bottom of the document is an elaborate drawing, representing the arms, munitions, and emblems of the service, and on the upper left hand corner the words:—

“Recorded Volume 5, Page 47, Adj’t. General’s Office, August 25, 1865. E. D. TOWNSEND, *Ass’t Adj’t. General.*”

October 30, 1866, a letter was sent me from the War Department, Adjutant General’s Office, Washington, as follows:—

Sir: I have the honor to enclose to you herewith, your commission of Brevet Captain, the receipt of which please acknowledge.

I am sir, very respectfully

Your obedient servant

J. C. KELTON,

*Assistant Adjutant Gen’l.*

Brevet Captain NATHAN APPLETON

U. S. Volunteers.

This letter did not reach me in regular course, for I had set out on my third voyage across the Atlantic.”

## CHAPTER TWENTY-THREE

### THE BATTLE OF BETHESDA CHURCH.

June 3, 1864.

"Thou shouldst die as he dies  
For whom none sheddeth tears;  
Filling thine eys  
And fulfilling thine ears  
With the brilliance of battle, the bloom and the beauty,  
the splendor of spears."

—SWINBURNE.

It has been seen that General Grant's order to General Meade dated Quarle's Mills, Va., May 25, 1864, directed him to observe the following explicit instructions viz.,

"As soon as it is dark tomorrow night, start the Division which you withdraw first from Wright's (Sixth) Corps, to make a forced march to Hanover Town (within 20 miles of Richmond) taking with them no trains to impede the march. At the same time this Division starts, commence withdrawing all of the Fifth and Sixth Corps from the south side of the river and march them for the same place. . . . As soon as the troops reach Hanover Town they should get possession of all the crossings they can in that neighborhood."

On the 26th of May, 1864, the base of supplies of the Army of the Potomac was ordered to be established at White House on the Pamunkey River. The relative position of the two armies was as follows:—

The Right of the Confederate Army rested on a swamp east of the Richmond and Fredericksburg railroad and south of the North Anna River, their Centre on the river at Ox Ford and their Left at Little River. The Second Corps of the Union Army, with one Division of the Ninth Corps,



had crossed at Chesterfield Ford, and covered the Right wing of Lee's Army. One Division of the Ninth Corps was on the north bank of the North Anna at Ox Ford, convenient for reinforcing either wing of our army. From a point at a short distance above Ox Ford on the south bank of the river to Little River parallel to the enemy's lines, were the Fifth and Sixth Corps and one Division of the Ninth Corps. The line during the 26th was extended to the Left to join the Ninth Corps. The three batteries with Major Robert H. Fitzhugh,—4th U. S. Battery B, the Fifth Mass. Battery, and the 15th N. Y. Independent Battery, were engaged at times on the skirmish line of the front of the First Division Fifth Corps under Griffin, but could elicit no response from the enemy's artillery, although the 15th N. Y. and the Fifth Mass. Batteries suffered considerably from the enemy's sharpshooters. The artillery, however, accomplished the object for which it was posted, by silencing in a measure the enemy's skirmishers in front of the First Division.

The Sixth Corps, commanded by General H. G. Wright, had all reached Cold Harbor at 2 p. m. of June 1st, and General W. F. Smith, with his command from the Army of the James, arrived there an hour after. General Warren was then in command of the Fifth Corps, and the enemy with all its Corps consolidated, were intrenched in line of battle in front of him. At night Hancock with the Second Corps arrived, and was placed on the left of the Sixth Corps, across the Mechanicsville road. In order to unite with the right of Smith's command, the left of the Fifth Corps was obliged to hold a line three miles in extent, from Bethesda Church to Smith's position. The 1st Division Fifth Corps under Griffin, was massed at Bethesda Church. The cavalry were ordered to protect the Right of the Army from Bethesda Church to the Pamunkey River.

On the afternoon of June 2d, the confederate general

Early attacked the Right flank of our army and the other divisions of their army moved forward, attacking ours at various unprotected points, ending with a desperate charge along the whole line, but were forced back to the road by our infantry. A part of the Ninth Corps was driven in and the enemy got in the rear of the Fifth Corps skirmish line, but at dark their advance was checked, and the enemy remained where they were at nightfall and intrenched. General Grant says of the action of our troops that "the attacks were repulsed but not followed up as they should have been,"—the old complaint, but General Grant went farther. He says:—"I was so annoyed at this that I directed Meade to give orders to his corps commanders that they should seize all such opportunities, when they occurred, and not wait for orders, all of our movements being made for the very purpose of getting the enemy out of his cover."

On the 3d the enemy's lines extended from the Totopotomoy to New Cold Harbor: the Union lines from Bethesda Church by Old Cold Harbor to the Chickahominy. That day the troops under Generals Hancock, Wright and Smith assaulted the enemy's works at Cold Harbor and captured some rifle pits, while the Ninth Corps under Burnside and part of the Fifth Corps attacked the Confederate position near Bethesda Church in order to clear the Mechanicsville turnpike, and carried an advanced line under a galling fire of artillery and musketry, the enemy's batteries being securely posted under cover. This closed the offensive operations of our forces at that point.

The rebels left our front in the night June 4th.

On June 7th our lines were extended from the Chickahominy River to which the Second Corps line reached, to Despatch Station on the York River railroad, and the cavalry were sent to Charlottesville and Gordonsville to destroy the Virginia Central railroad and its connections: Grant's plan being, after having the Army supplied with rations

to once more move the Army to the south side of the James River. This movement commenced after dark on the 12th of June. Griffin's 1st Division with 4th U. S. Battery B, 1st N. Y. Battery D, and the Fifth Mass. Battery, led the column.

The Fifth Corps followed by the Second Corps withdrew from Cold Harbor, crossed the Chickahominy at Long Bridge, passed through Charles City county and reached the James River on the evening of the 13th; the cavalry protecting the movement over the White Oak Swamp. The Sixth and Ninth Corps crossed the Chickahominy at Jones Bridge and General W. F. Smith took his troops of the Eighteenth Corps back to the White House and thence to City Point. The enemy were in possession of the ground from Malvern Hill to White Oak Swamp. In the wake of our Army moved 3000 head of beef cattle and 50 miles of wagon trains.

Looking back along the track over which they had fought their way from the banks of the Rapidan, they could count forty-three days of almost continuous fighting, with the loss of fifty-four thousand nine hundred and twenty-six men. The list of casualties in the Artillery Brigade of the Fifth Corps in the operations about Cold Harbor and Bethesda Church numbered 35. Of this loss 25 was suffered by the Fifth Mass. Battery, 1st N. Y. Battery D, and 4th U. S. Battery B. As to the effect on the enemy General Grant says in his report:—

“The battles of the Wilderness, Spottsylvania, North Anna, and Cold Harbor, bloody and terrible as they were on our side, were even more damaging to the enemy, and so crippled him as to make him wary ever after of taking the offensive.”

On June 14th General Grant had determined to transfer the Army south of the James River, and the Eighteenth Corps under General Smith having arrived back at Bermuda Hundred, 50 miles south of Cold Harbor, General Grant personally visited that point and gave orders for General

Smith with all available troops, to move directly upon Petersburg where at that time the intrenchments were held by only a few troops, and General Smith moved as ordered and reached Petersburg before daylight of the 15th of June, 1864.

#### AS RELATED BY MEMBERS OF THE BATTERY.

At daylight of the 26th of May, returned to our position. During the day fired 4 percussion shell. Marched all that night with Griffin's Division, recrossing the North Anna River at Quarle's Mills: then marched south along the river. The object of this movement was by flanking him again to turn the position from which Lee could not be forced. The whole Fifth Corps crossed the North Anna River having accomplished destroying the railroad.

May 27, 1864. Passed Carmel Church on the way down the Pamunkey River, halting for an hour at noon. Plenty of forage through the country, pigs in droves and flocks of turkeys and poultry. Marched all the night of the 26th, and all day of the 27th. The infantry were pretty well used up, having very sore feet. At 4 o'clock halted for a short time. Passed a plantation owned by a widow Carleton, containing 34 buildings and 50 slaves.

May 28, 1864. Reveille at 3 a. m., started at 5, marched about 12 miles. Passed Hebron Church, Corinth Church, Enfield, and having crossed the Pamunkey River, went into line and remained for the night. Beautiful spring weather. The Battery marched ahead of the Artillery Brigade attached to the Fifth Corps, and crossed the Pamunkey at Hanover Town about noon.

Found the cavalry engaged with the enemy, and were placed in position in a road on the left flank of the Fifth Corps, which formed line of battle at 3 p. m., and built breastworks with the batteries in position behind them, the

enemy having been found entrenched in our front. The left of the Fifth Corps rested on Totopotomoy Creek, and the right crossed the main road to what was called "Hawes's Store." The positions of the batteries from right to left, were Battery B, 1st Penn., 4th U. S. Battery B, Ninth Mass. Battery, Battery C, 1st N. Y., Batteries E and L, 1st N. Y., Fifth Mass. Battery.

May 29th, came out of position and advanced about 2 miles by way of "Hawes's Store," on a very dusty road, to the left of our line which reached across and a short distance beyond Totopotomoy Creek: the same ground from which the enemy was driven.

"At dark (Dyer's Notes) unhitched and unharnessed, got supper and turned in for the night. It is six months since the horse fell upon me, and I think I shall always remember him, also James Kay, who did all he could for me."

Our fortifications were being strengthened. The men caught a calf and killed it. They found it, they said, very nice veal.

May 30th, 1864, advanced about a mile and a half over ground which the enemy had just left. They attacked our forces in the afternoon, and were driven back. The men made a stew of veal and went to bed at 11 p. m.

May 31st the Battery was roused at daylight. Opportunity was given during the day for a change of clothes. Very hot day. The horses remained in harness all day, from 6 a. m. Heavy firing came up from our forces a long distance to the left. This was the attack made upon the Fifth Corps, General G. K. Warren commanding, by the rebel general Early who was attempting to turn Warren's left. To relieve this pressure General Meade ordered an attack along the whole line.

June 1st. Boots and saddles were sounded at 8 o'clock. Moved to the front. Stopped in the woods till 3 p. m., then

went into position on the left of the 5th Corps, on the Mechanicsville road. Dyer wrote, "The heaviest fighting there has been, both of artillery and infantry, occurred from 4 p. m. till 9 p. m. At 10 turned in, with orders to get up at 2."

Halted for the night at Barnett's Tavern.

June 2d, General Meade ordered the Ninth Corps to relieve the Fifth Corps, but the Ninth Corps under the command of Major-General A. E. Burnside, was attacked while moving to the rear of Warren's right to protect that flank, and the Fifth Corps was involved in the battle that followed.

June 2d, 1864, a new arrangement, believed to be permanent, was made with the artillery. The Fifth Mass. Battery, Battery B, 4th U. S., Lieut. James Stewart, and Battery D, 1st N. Y., Lieut. L. I. Richardson, were assigned to the First Division, Fifth Corps, commanded by General Charles Griffin then massed at Bethesda Church, and during the night orders were received by Captain Charles A. Phillips of the Fifth Mass. Battery, placing him in command as chief of the Division Artillery. Senior First Lieutenant Peleg W. Blake was left in command of the Fifth Mass. Battery.

Captain Phillips reported at Division Head Quarters at daylight of the 2d, and in the afternoon he placed Lieut. Stewart's Battery in position on the Mechanicsville road, and at dark changed his position, and brought up Lieut. Richardson's. At daylight of the 3d he placed Lieut. Blake's with the others.

"June 2d. (Shackley's Notes) Captain Phillips commands the artillery of the 1st Division, 5th Corps. Fred D. Alden was wounded through the lower part of the body. Died. William Reynolds had thigh broken near the hip."



## DEATH OF F. D. ALDEN.

## NOTES OF CORPORAL SHACKLEY.

"While the Battery was in close order awaiting Orders, William Reynolds was inside the left wheel of the Gun, his back against the wheel. F. D. Alden, with his elbows on the Gun, was facing Reynolds. Alden's back towards the enemy. Corporal Shackley was sitting on the caisson eating hard tack, when a rebel shell struck the ground some 50 yards away, ricocheted, and struck Alden at the base of his spinal column, going completely through, and smashing the pelvis bone, making the most terrible wound. Alden lived nearly two hours after being wounded. Reynolds had one of his legs broken near the hip, but recovered from his hurt. Both the sponge staves were broken, and the muzzle-sight was knocked off the piece. Corporal Shackley saw the shell strike the ground and watched its course until it stopped. It did not explode."

---

Dyer says on June 2d:—"Hitched up at 2½ o'clock, got breakfast and left park at daybreak. Went off to the right, stopped till 10, went back to our old position, unhitched and unharnessed. At 2 p. m. hitched up, formed line of battle. Fighting commenced at 3, and continued with a continual roll till 9 p. m. Fred D. Alden mortally wounded, and Wm. Reynolds badly wounded. Allen Almy came to see me."

From Shackley's of June 3d:—"W. H. H. Lapham was killed and buried in a box near a small tree, and his name marked on a piece of board nailed to the tree. The Battery took position and fired about 400 rounds. The Battery charged half way across the field and drove a rebel battery from their position."

Bethesda Church is about five miles from Mechanicsville, Va., by the Old Church Road, and about three miles from

Gaines Mills, the scene of the battle of June 27, 1862. There was a belt of woods in front of the church, which at the narrowest was about three-eighths of a mile, but broadened out to the width of half a mile at the widest part. The advanced position of the rebel intrenchments faced this widest portion of the woods a few hundred yards away, and were built on a line parallel to and a little in advance of another road southeast of Bethesda Church, which was at right angles with Old Church Road.

#### REPORT OF LIEUT. L. I. RICHARDSON.

“June 2.—Marched out at 11 a. m. to near the position of the 30th; went in park near Bethesda Church. While here I received orders to put my battery in position, faced to the rear. Moved out of position about 5 p. m., and went into park, where I remained until dark. I then received orders to move my battery out to the front,—our rear,—where I was assigned my position by Captain Phillips. I then went in camp for the night.

June 3d: The enemy opened upon us this morning to which we replied,—my position was the left of the three batteries B, Fourth United States on my right, and E, Fifth Massachusetts on the right of that,—and silencing them, they soon moved to another position, and again we silenced them, but this time it cost me dearly. It was here I lost the brave and efficient officer Lieutenant (Charles) de Mott, he being struck with a piece of case-shot, which passed through him, killing him instantly; I also lost 1 man killed and 4 wounded, at this place.

At this time the enemy had an enfilading fire upon us, as well as the fire in our front; we could do nothing with them only in our front.

Our line of battle soon advanced, and I was ordered,—with the other batteries,—to advance on the open plain in my front. As I moved up, the enemy opened on us with canister, but with little effect. I soon got my position, and we silenced the enemy's battery, so much so that one hour after getting this position, not a shot was fired from them. In this position I lost 1 man killed and 2 wounded.”

#### ACTION OF STEWART'S FOURTH U. S.

Augustus Buell of this battery says of its action at Bethesda Church, in his book entitled “The Cannoneer,” “Story of a Private Soldier”:—

“In our front, where the Mechanicsville Pike entered the grove or

woods, west of the Bethesda Church, there was a clearing which extended some distance into the woods, forming a sort of pocket or recess. This clearing may have been 10 or 15 acres in extent, and was of a triangular shape, so that it was commanded by the woods on both flanks. It was in this clearing, about at the base of the triangle, that the enemy came in battery. Between us and the enemy there was a stretch of low ground, somewhat grown up with small brush, and the old pike was graded up to some extent through this low ground. . . . When the Rebel battery came into position, we were 'standing at ease' in column just back of Bethesda Church. The battery was halted in column of pieces, left in front. The Old Man (Stewart) was lounging on his saddle, near the right gun, with his elbow on the pommel and his chin resting on his hand. . . . Suddenly Gen. Griffin beckoned to Stewart, who left us and rode over toward the General. . . . A few words passed between the General and Stewart, which I did not hear, of course, being at that moment in the act of mounting the limber-chest, but afterward learned that Gen. Griffin said: 'James'—he usually called Stewart by his first name in that way—'can you go in battery under that fire?'

'Yes, sir; where shall I unlimber?'

'Suit yourself about that, but keep an eye to your supports. I would like to see that battery silenced.'

'I will shut it up, sir.'

Of the appearance of the battery in the charge, he says:—

"Every Driver lying forward on his horse, whipping and yelling; every Gunner and Cannoneer hanging on for life to the guard-rods of the limber-chests, and bounding six inches high from the springless seats as the huge wheels flew over the ruts; a long trail of dust streaming behind, and the very earth made to smoke and tremble under the fierce tramp of the flying steeds! Speed was everything here, because it was necessary to get there quick and get to work, before the enemy could get many rounds into us. . . . We had 13 or 14 men hit altogether in this affair, of whom 10 or 11 went down in the single minute that it took us to unlimber and get in the first load. . . . The day being hot and sultry, with no air stirring, the smoke hung right in front of us, so that after the second or third round we could not see the enemy at all, but we could hear his canister rattling among our guns and wheels like big hail-stones, or whizzing past our heads, or whirring through the grass and bushes. But we had the exact direction by the well-defined tracks of the wheels in the first recoil, so there was no difficulty in pointing, and all we had to do was 'keep her muzzle down.' In three minutes we could feel the enemy's fire slacken. In seven or eight minutes more he ceased entirely, and then, as the smoke lifted, we saw his deserted guns standing silent in the field!"

FROM THE HISTORY OF THE THIRD MASS.  
BATTERY.

In his account of the part taken in the Battle of Bethesda Church by the Third Mass. Battery, the historian says:—

“The three batteries of Griffin’s Division were placed in an open field just across the road from Bethesda Church the enemy being strongly intrenched in front. Early in the morning the Ninth Corps advanced on our right, and soon after an advance was made by the Second Brigade of Griffin’s Division. This brigade was annoyed in its advance by the fire of a rebel battery, and our artillery was ordered to follow it up to silence the enemy’s guns.

The three batteries,—the 3d, 5th, and 9th Mass.—then advanced ‘by battery,’ the Fifth Massachusetts leading, across the open field intervening, until within canister range, where we were obliged to halt by the enemy’s sharpshooters. A heavy fire was poured into the rebel battery, which effectually silenced it, and the next morning, when the enemy abandoned their works twenty-two dead horses were found where their battery had stood.”

---

## MAJ. GEN. BURNSIDE TO MAJ. GEN. WARREN.

“12.30 p. m. June 3, 1864: General Griffin is ready to do what he can with Sweitzer’s brigade and his batteries. Colonel Sweitzer reports the enemy moving to our left.”

---

Post Script to letter of Brig. Gen. Robert B. Potter, commanding the 2d Division Ninth Army Corps, 2.25 p. m. June 3, 1864:—

“Griffin I fear will make nothing. The enemy’s works are across an open field and extend beyond his right. He does not think he can carry them.”

---

Gen. Jacob B. Sweitzer, colonel commanding Brigade, to General C. Griffin June 4, 1864, 5 a. m.:—

“General: I have the honor to report that my pickets have advanced, and are now in the rebel earthworks in my front. The enemy have left.”

---

## CAPTAIN PHILLIPS’ REPORT.

Captain Phillips in his Report to Lieut. Fordham Morris, acting assistant adjutant general of the Artillery Brigade

of the Fifth Army Corps, dated Aug. 6, 1864, and embracing the period between May 4, 1864, and that date, contains the following reference to the Battle of Bethesda Church:—

“After crossing the Pamunkey we were not engaged until the 3d of June. On the 1st of June, Stewart’s (B, 4th U. S.) Winslow’s (D, 1st N. Y.) and my own Battery were assigned to Griffin’s Division and remained with it during the rest of the campaign. On the 3d of June, my Battery was placed in line with Sweitzer’s Brigade and on the right of Lieut. Stewart on the right of the Mechanicsville pike opposite Bethesda Church.

Early in the morning the three batteries of the Division engaged a rebel battery in our front, and silenced it. In the forenoon Sweitzer’s Brigade advanced across the open field in our front, whereupon the rebel battery reopened, annoying them very much, as its fire nearly enfiladed the brigade. The three batteries at once advanced, firing by battery, until within 600 yards of the rebel battery, which was soon silenced. The next morning we discovered about 20 dead horses in the position occupied by the rebel battery, showing the accuracy of our fire: casualties one killed.

Casualties during the epoch 2 killed, one wounded.”

At the close of this Report Captain Phillips again refers to this action as follows:—

“I desire to bear testimony to the ability and uniform good conduct of the officers and men of my command. While attached to General Griffin’s Division I was in command of the Division Artillery, leaving the Battery under the immediate command of my senior officer. Lieut. Blake was in command at Bethesda Church and until his death on the 18th of June at Petersburg, and handled the battery with marked ability and bravery.”

NOTES OF LIEUT. J. E. SPEAR, JULY 24, 1901.

“The killing of one man and the wounding of Reynolds

by a ricochet shot, the terrible enfilading fire we were under, and the charge made by the Battery from the rifle pits across an open field to a position not over five hundred yards from the enemy's position or earthworks, is my remembrance of this fight."

NOTES OF PRIVATE WM. H. DUNHAM, MARCH  
29, 1901.

"On June 3d, 1864, occurred one of the most daring things of the war, the charge of the 5th Mass. Battery. This was the first instance ever known of any battery making a charge unprotected by infantry. The position of the rebel battery was such that it was able to annoy our infantry, without receiving any check. General Griffin saw that if a battery could advance to a knoll within 400 yards of them, the advantage would then be ours. He came to Captain Phillips and said, 'Dare you take your battery to yonder knoll?'

Captain Phillips answered,—

'I dare take my men anywhere.'

General Griffin then said: 'I want a battery on that knoll, but I do not order you there.'

However, orders were immediately given by Captain Phillips.

I, as No. 1, took my sponge staff and bucket, William Carsley as No. 2, a round of ammunition, and so on. The order was then given,—

'Limber to the front, double quick. March!'

We started in on the yell under a heavy fire. The 14th New York were in our rear, they told us they did not expect to see a man or horse standing.

As soon as we came in battery, there was rapid work until the rebels were silenced. Our only casualty was the loss of Comrade W. H. H. Lapham, who was killed during the charge in the open field.



The next day, on the spot which the rebels had occupied, were found 10 new graves marked 4th Georgia Battery; also, 22 dead horses, showing the effect of our guns."

From John E. Dyer's Notes of June 3d, 1864:—

"Hitched up at daylight and went in position. Soon the ball opened, and continued without intermission till 11 a. m., when General Griffin ordered the Battery to charge with the infantry. We went in with a yell, driving the Rebs, and came in position a  $\frac{1}{4}$  of a mile in advance of our breast-works. One of our comrades, W. H. H. Lapham, was killed. Kept firing at intervals. The sharpshooters kept pegging all day."

The mention in Appleton's Diary is:—"At Bethesda Church, Lapham (of Quincy) our best dressed man, one of the service of the piece, was killed."

Fired 172 case shot, 224 Percussion.

Quarter Master Sergeant Peacock's memoranda for June 2d shows, "2 sponge staffs broken by a shell."

June 4, 1864, the supplies came up. The Battery remained all day in position, and withdrew at night. The Rebs. attacked our Right Centre to gain the road, but were repulsed. The Ninth Corps moved to the left at dark, and Griffin's Division of the Fifth Corps formed the extreme Right of the line crossing the Mechanicsville road in front of Bethesda Church, and extending about three-quarters of a mile from the road. At 9 o'clock p. m. turned in. The morning of Sunday the 5th hitched up at daylight, fed, watered, and then unharnessed. All that day remained in position near Bethesda Church.

Corporal Shackley notes on June 5th, 1864:—"A part of our company fund was used to buy some cheese."

#### THE COMPANY FUND.

In a letter written to Captain Henry D. Scott by Serg't. William H. Peacock in Chicago, Sept. 7, 1900, he says:—

"In my old book you will notice some sums collected for Company Fund. I think I was the only Quarter Master in the Battery that ever got pay for the rations we saved on, or did not draw. From my recollection now we were unable to make a fund after leaving Winter Quarters, but we had this winter saved money to use during the summer.

## COMPANY SAVINGS, 1864.

January .....	\$76.05
February .....	167.30
March .....	125.87
April .....	99.68
	<hr/>
	\$468.90

I think this was the only 'savings' by us made during the war. It was used mostly while in camp at Rappahannock Station, yet a portion was kept for the Grant campaign."

Shackley's Notes of June 5, 1864, resumed:—"About sunset had orders to move. Just then the Rebs made a violent attack on our Left which soon extended along the whole line. We got on the road about 10 p. m. and halted a little after sunrise, having moved about four miles during the night."

At 5 p. m. hitched up, and at dark received orders to fall in behind the 1st Division. The Fifth Corps started to go to the left. Marched all night. At daylight of the 6th passed Allen's Mills and camped a mile beyond, about two miles from Cold Harbor.

In camp made coffee and then lay down to rest. At 11 a. m. unharnessed. Remained in park all day. The Second Corps did some shelling.

Among Dyer's memoranda for this day, is a mention of Lute Shaw's coming up: "Got some butter and pickles of Stephen Townsend. Went to bed at 9 p. m. The bands all playing in big style. June 7th packed up and hitched

up at 2 a. m. At daylight started with the 1st Division, and after marching 5 miles went into camp. The infantry went into position, there being no place for artillery. Our skirmishers were put along the Chickahominy by Sumner's Bridge. The Rebs shelled us at intervals all day. At dark they threw a few 64 pounders."

Shackley, June 7th:—"Moved at sunrise and halted near Despatch Station. The enemy shelled us slowly all day till near midnight, but no great damage was done."

#### LETTER OF CAPTAIN PHILLIPS.

"ON THE CHICKAHOMINY NEAR  
SUMNER'S LOWER BRIDGE,

June 8, 1864.

. . . Yesterday Griffin's and Cutler's Divisions marched at 3½ a. m. for this place. General Bartlett's Brigade put pickets on the Chickahominy at Sumner's Lower Bridge, after a little skirmishing, and one of Cutler's Brigades gained possession of one end of the R. R. bridge. While doing it the Rebs fired at them from a 5 inch rifled gun, mounted on an iron clad R. R. car. I saw one of the shells at General Griffin's Hd. Qrs., which weighed empty 57½ pounds. We then went quietly into camp, and are now holding the banks of the Chickahominy. We occupy the ground occupied by the 2d Corps before the battle of Fair Oaks, and General Griffin's Hd. Qrs.—close by us,—are in a house occupied by General Sumner 2 years ago. The rebels have some guns across the river, and occupy their leisure moments in shelling us. However, as they cannot see us, their shells are rather a harmless kind of fireworks. We are very pleasantly placed now that we are attached to Griffin's Division. Griffin is a good general, and has one of the best Divisions in the Army; acknowledged to be by all odds the best Division in this Corps. General Griffin under-

stands artillery, and I suppose selected the batteries to be assigned to him. Our Battery is very well liked in the Division, and all the officers I have seen seem well pleased at having us with them. I am now Division Chief of Artillery and command 3 batteries. I have had a captain assigned to duty on my staff. I would be very willing to yield my position if Captain Martin would come back with a double-breasted coat and take it, as I hope he will.

June 9, 1864. P. S. I am sorry to have to add a list of killed and wounded after I finished yesterday June 8. Killed Charles P. Carling. Wm. J. Sheergold. Wounded, Henry D. Crapo leg, will lose his leg, perhaps, and life,—David McVey right side severely. Edward F. Smith neck and chest severely, but not dangerously. The three last are from New Bedford. P. Emerson slightly.

P. S. Henry D. Crapo died on reaching the hospital."

From Phillips' Diary: "June 8, 1864. Carling and Sheergold were buried just across the road. June 9. Buried Crapo with the other two men."

Notes of Corporal Shackley: "June 8, 1864. While quietly eating our supper the Rebs run a car on the railroad out towards White House Landing, with a piece of artillery on the car, and without coming in sight of us fired three shells, one of which fell short of us, the third passed beyond us, but the second fell right in our midst. (Dyer says it was a ten pound Parrott shell) and exploded, killing Charles P. Carling, Wm. J. Sheergold, fatally wounding Henry D. Crapo, and seriously wounding E. F. Smith, David McVey, Mortier Gale, Paesiello Emerson. The three dead were enclosed in boxes and buried under a large oak tree. Their names were placed over their graves, and all enclosed with a simple fence. Rev. Mr. Sage of the 4th Michigan Infantry performed the funeral service."

In Q. M. Serg't. Peacock's Account Book is the following entry:—"June 8, 1864. Make certificate for 41 havresacks

unserviceable, and 33 canteens abandoned. 3 shelter tents destroyed by bursting of shell. John G. Hiller."

June 10th received 10 new horses. Remained in camp all day. Grained horses twice during the day. The 4th Division Fifth Corps moved down on the left. Some shelling towards night. A hot day.

June 11, 1864. Aroused at 5 o'clock. Fed, watered, grained. Laid out the camp in order and pitched the tents in line. String beans for dinner. The Fifth Corps moved by the left flank. Several deserters passed by from the rebel army. No picket firing between the 1st Division and rebel pickets. Dyer slept on a bed of magnolias. At dark of June 12th the Division moved to Petersburg in the following order:—2d Brigade, 1st Brigade, Battery D, 1st N. Y. Art'y; Battery B, 4th U. S. Art'y; Battery E, Mass. Art'y, 3d Brigade.

Marched until 2 a. m. of the 13th and halted till sunrise. Crossed the Chickahominy on two bridges, one of four boats and one of two boats, and moved forward about three miles. Went into park in the rear of White Oak Swamp Bridge where there was cavalry fighting to retain possession of the road. Later, about dark, came in sight of the James River with its gunboats and transports. June 14th, 1864. Marched at 5 a. m. for Charles City C. H., and arrived there about 7 o'clock. Halted till noon, and then marched up the road two miles. Marched past Grant's and Meade's Head Quarters. Reached Wilcox's Landing at 3 p. m., and went into position. The left of the 1st Division rested on the James River, the right on the road.

Phillips in his Diary of June 14th says:—"Placed Blake on the road, Stewart a little to the left." Were placed in position to guard the crossing of the James for the rest of the Army.

# PETERSBURG.



1. First position of the 5<sup>th</sup> Mass. Battery June 17<sup>th</sup>. 2. Headquarters of General Warren. 3. Low ground. 4. High Ground. 5. Place where the 5<sup>th</sup> Mass. Battery camped from June 24<sup>th</sup> to July 30<sup>th</sup>. 6. The place where the enemy's fortifications were destroyed by the mine of July 30<sup>th</sup>.





## CHAPTER XXIV.

### THE BATTLE OF PETERSBURG.

JUNE 18, 1864.

"Over the camp-fires  
Drank I with heroes,  
Up to the star-roof  
Rang out their song."

—*Ballads*, CHARLES KINGSLEY.

"It is the signal that demands dispatch."

—YOUNG, *On the Value of Time to a Man*.

At Petersburg the enemy's lines consisted of redans occupying commanding positions, with rifle pits connecting them, and ditches in front of them. To the east side from the Appomattox the intrenched lines extended a mile, to the City Point railroad; another line south three miles to a point a mile west of the Weldon railroad, and from the Norfolk railroad west to the Jerusalem Plank Road, a mile and a half. The country surrounding the city was uneven, and extremely difficult ground for assaulting columns.

At 9 o'clock in the evening of June 15th General W. F. Smith with the Eighteenth Corps, had captured five of the enemy's redans, and the morning of the 16th Hancock with the Second Corps captured one. In the afternoon he took possession of one more, to their right, and two to their left; all having guns in them.

On the 17th of June, 1864, the remainder of the Army of the Potomac had crossed the James River, and advanced upon Petersburg; the Fifth Corps on the left of the Ninth Corps.

Some of the intrenchments defending the enemy's interior

lines, which had been captured by our forces, had been retaken by a charge from the Confederates, when an order was issued by General Meade, for an assault at 4 a. m. of the 18th by the Second, Fifth, and Ninth Corps. Brigadier General Lysander Cutler, with the 4th Division of the Fifth Corps, was sent to the extreme left, with orders to intrench. The 3d Division under General Crawford, formed in line of battle on the left of the Ninth Corps, while the remainder of the Corps was held in reserve. General Butler, at Bermuda Hundred, was reinforced from the Sixth Corps and troops from the same corps were sent to the Eighteenth.

On the morning of the 18th it was found that the Confederates had fallen back to a line of intrenchments, still nearer Petersburg, scarcely a mile from the city. General D. B. Birney with the Second Corps was only 300 yards from this new line. The Ninth Corps, while covering the distance of a mile which they had to go, met a force of the enemy at a ravine near a cut on the Norfolk Railroad, over which the enemy had control by holding the northern end. The Fifth Corps also advanced over a greater distance broken by deep ravines, and the same cut in the railroad. The assault was postponed to 12 o'clock noon, in consideration of these obstructions to a swift advancement, and the order was carried out by General Birney with one Division of the Second Corps which was nearest to the enemy, and which was repulsed, with great loss.

Then the order was given for all the corps to assault, and the Second Corps was again driven back, but the Ninth Corps drove the enemy out of the railroad cut, and began intrenchments within a hundred yards of the enemy's main line.

The Fifth Corps, exposed to a raking fire from the enemy, passed over every obstacle in the way, and approached to within 20 feet of the enemy's works which had only held a

few troops until their commander Beauregard had been reinforced by Lee's Army.

The men of ours who were in advance, were the 1st and 2d Brigades of the 1st Division, and Colonel Joshua L. Chamberlain, then in command of the 1st Brigade, fell, desperately wounded, and was promoted by General Grant on the field.

General Grant in his reference to this in his Memoirs. says :—

"He had several times been recommended for a brigadier-generalcy for gallant and meritorious conduct. On this occasion, however, I promoted him on the spot, and forwarded a copy of my order to the War Department asking that my act might be confirmed and Chamberlain's name sent to the Senate for confirmation without delay."

General Cutler with the 4th Division of the Fifth Corps secured a redoubt which the enemy had abandoned, and brought his left up into line with the other corps.

The result of the three days' operations was the capture of two lines of intrenchments, four guns, four colors, and about 500 prisoners.

LIEUT. GEN'L GRANT TO MAJ. GEN'L MEADE.

CITY POINT, VA.

June 18, 1864.

10 p. m.

MAJOR GENERAL MEADE:

I am perfectly satisfied that all has been done that could be done, and that the assaults today were called for by all the appearances and information that could be obtained. Now we will rest the men, and use the spade for their protection until a new vein can be struck. . . .

U. S. GRANT,  
*Lieutenant General.*

It was thus determined to settle down for a siege of Petersburg in the same manner as the investiture of Yorktown was carried on, with long lines of breastworks, mortar batteries, redoubts and field works of every kind, the bomb-proof, the covered way, the countermine and a mine the

story of the explosion of which has been, like a famous shot, "heard round the world."

The engineers called it the "Investment of Petersburg" as it was not strictly speaking a siege any more than the investment of Yorktown was a siege, but General Grant, while carefully explaining the distinction, invests the movement with the title by courtesy, and constantly refers to it as the "Siege of Petersburg."

When the siege commenced the Ninth Corps was placed upon the right, the Fifth next, the Second next, and then the Sixth Corps.

In order to completely encircle Petersburg it was necessary that the Weldon and the Lynchburg railroads should be controlled by the Union forces. The Sixth Corps was ordered to perform that duty, and the Second and Fifth Corps being in line, the left of the Second Corps was expected to swing around and connect with the Sixth Corps, but delay was caused by a change of orders, and the rebels taking advantage of the space between, prevented the completion of the circuit and frustrated the attempt of the Sixth Corps to take possession of the Weldon railroad. So the Sixth Corps intrenched themselves facing the railroad and watched it; the corps pickets being stationed on the railroad itself.

In the direct front of Petersburg were pressed the Fifth and Ninth Corps clear up to the Confederate works. Then and there was the Fifth Corps again reorganized. It was still to be commanded by General G. K. Warren and the 1st Division was still to be commanded by General Charles Griffin, but there were important changes in the Divisions, and several additions were made to the Artillery Brigade with Colonel Charles S. Wainwright still in command. It consisted of 13 batteries, all light; 2 regular, and the remainder from New York, Massachusetts, and Pennsylvania. The Third Mass. Battery was commanded by Lieut. Aaron

F. Walcott, the Fifth Mass. Battery by Lieut. J. E. Spear, the Ninth Mass. Battery by Captain John Bigelow.

---

The Fourth of July, 1864, was celebrated by the playing of the bands and the firing of salutes. At night the first ground was broken by the pioneers of the 1st Brigade for the work afterwards known as Fort Sedgwick and called by the men "Fort Hell" on account of the continual bursting of the enemy's shells within the enclosure. It was built under the supervision of an engineer officer; the execution of the work being under a field officer detailed daily for this purpose. The working parties consisted of three hundred or four hundred men who practically completed it in about three weeks. It consisted of a large redan, a portion of fortification included in a single salient angle, with another smaller redan at its right, connected by curtains with front and flanking ditches; the larger had eighteen embrasures, the smaller four. It was connected with the rear by a zig-zag covered way, and had bombproofs and traverses,—masses of earth thrown up at short distances to screen the troops from shot and shells fired in ricochet,—to complete the work.

Orders were given on the 9th of July to the Fifth and Ninth Corps, to conduct regular siege operations under direction of the chief of engineers and the chief of artillery for the Army. The Rebel and Union lines were here but about 100 yards apart, the pickets but fifty yards, but our men walked behind the breastworks in perfect safety.

On the night of July 13th the number of batteries of light artillery was increased on the line near the Jerusalem Plank Road, to which the Fifth Mass. Battery marched on the 21st of June. The lines of the Second and Sixth Corps had been destroyed, and our lines made shorter. The siege of Petersburg was actively begun. Working parties of the Fifth Corps were building two strong redoubts, defensible



on all sides, on the line running south on the Jerusalem Plank Road. One of these was the aforementioned Fort Sedgwick, the other Fort Davis. They were about a half-mile apart. The batteries furnished many working parties. As time passed many covered ways were constructed for the use of our trains, six feet deep, 12 feet wide with a barricade of logs four feet high and four feet thick. From our forts we could see the effect in the city of the bombs thrown by our mortars and hear the ringing of the fire alarm bells.

### THE MINE.

The design of undermining a confederate fort known as "Elliott's Salient" in front of the Ninth Corps, originated with a lieutenant colonel of a regiment composed of miners, the 48th Pennsylvania, of the name of Henry Pleasants. He was encouraged to undertake it, and an assault was ordered to follow the explosion of the mine which was set for the 30th of July. It was ready to be charged on the 23rd and several eight and ten inch siege guns had been placed so as to secure a cross-fire and keep down their flank fire. On the night of the 29th, the day the Fifth Mass. Battery was placed in Battery Number Eight, the troops were at work all night getting ready for the bombardment. General Warren's orders were to concentrate his troops on his right and prepare to support the assault of Burnside and the Ninth Corps. Pioneers and intrenching tools were to be ready to follow up the advantage gained. The artillery was to be held in readiness to move, with pontoons at hand for crossing the Appomattox River, with good supplies of fascines,—bundles of long twigs,—to make firm footing on marshy ground. The 1st Division under command of General J. J. Bartlett, in the absence of General Griffin at home sick, was to hold the intrenchments in front, and keep up a continuous fire of musketry. The gallery to the mine was over 500 feet long, with a cross gallery of over 80 feet.

There were 8 chambers, requiring a tun of powder each to charge them.

The mine was to explode at break of day, but the fuze was wet by water from the bed of a small creek, under which the gallery was built, and it did not go off till it was broad daylight.

The explosion was eminently successful, throwing everything within reach of the blast high into the air, and opening a space in the ground about 150 feet long, 60 feet wide, and 25 feet deep. Following the explosion 110 cannon and 50 mortars went off at the right and left of the position which the infantry were to cross. The surprise was mostly on the Confederate side but the effect of the shot was shared by the attacking party, for the assault did not take place as ordered, nor was the crest of the hill commanding the city of Petersburg seized, but some rifle pits were taken by our troops before the enemy got his guns planted in a position to rake the ground over which our men had to pass. They were afterwards retaken notwithstanding the heavy fire of our batteries, for after our first attacking party our infantry refused to advance. For various reasons relating to the orders given and to the difficulty of carrying them out, time enough was lost to enable the Confederates to train their guns on the pit, which made an advance impossible. The moment for successful action was that immediately following the blast and with the loss of that moment the entire plan failed.

#### AS RELATED BY MEMBERS OF THE BATTERY

LETTER OF CAPTAIN PHILLIPS.

"CAMP ON THE JAMES RIVER,

2 MILES ABOVE CHARLES CITY C. H.

June 15, 1864.

. . . Our Battery is on the road from C. C. C. H. to

Har. Ldg. Part of the Army is over the river, and I suppose the whole will cross. General Meade's Hd. Qrs. are between us and the Court House. As we passed them yesterday I counted 33 tents in the front row, which does not look as if our generals were reducing their baggage to the famous tooth-brush we hear so much of in the Vicksburg campaign. . . . I hear indirectly that Lieut. Appleton's wounds are turning out worse than was expected.

Rifle pits are dug all along our front, and I do not think there is much chance of the rebels coming down here to attack us. Grant has an interesting way of putting the baggage wagons about 20 miles in the rear and keeping them there. I have seen my valise once since the 6th of May."

---

Dyer's Notes: "June 15, 1864, we were still in position. The team went to Harrison's Landing after forage. Several gunboats passed up and down the river. General Ewell's Corps made great preparations to receive us at Malvern Hill, but was mistaken in our destination. A splendid day. June 16th. Aroused at 1½ o'clock. Broke camp at 2½. Marched down the bank of the river 6 miles, crossed it, and went in park 6 miles beyond. At 9 a. m. left camp, marched till 9 p. m., and went in park for one hour. Got supper, then marched to near Petersburg, and went into camp at 10 p. m. Found the 9th and 2d and 18th Corps engaged with the enemy."

Shackley's Notes: "June 16, 1864. Moved at daylight, crossed the James River at Powhattan Point, over a pontoon bridge (made of 101 pontoons) and marched towards Petersburg, coming near that place a little past midnight." They crossed with the Fifth Corps, and landed on the Point opposite Fort Powhattan, not far below Windmill Point. Roads very dusty. Serg't. Peacock's account book has the entry June 16th: "1 caisson stock broken by turn

over the carriage. Ordnance lost in Battle; spurs, straps, and belts."

"On the 17th (Dyer) turned out at 5½ o'clock. The men fed and watered the horses, and then went to sleep again. In the afternoon and evening heavy firing was heard in our front and on our left, which we afterwards learned was the Ninth Corps taking the rebel pits. As we turned in, orders came to be ready to move at a moment's notice, it was presumed to assault the works. A hot day. At night the rebels abandoned their lines, and fell back about a mile. The Second Corps had captured 17 pieces of artillery."

#### THE ASSAULT.

June 18, 1864, at daylight Griffin's First Division marched from Windmill Point to the front, and carried the Norfolk and Petersburg Railroad. The three light batteries attached to the Division advanced in an open field and silenced the rebel guns. Earthworks had been thrown up for the guns at 500 yards from the enemy. Shot and shell were fired. The Battery was under heavy artillery fire all the afternoon.

Private Benjamin S. Kanuse of New Bedford, was killed by a shell, and about 5 o'clock p. m. Lieut. Peleg W. Blake was killed by a rifle shot. Private Alexander N. Atwood of Fairhaven, Joseph L. Knox of Boston, and John G. Hiller of Marblehead, were wounded.

The Report of the Adjutant General of Massachusetts for 1864, has the following in relation to the action of the Battery in this assault:

"Heavily engaged in front of Petersburg. The batteries of Griffin's Division as at Bethesda Church, advanced 'by battery,' and engaged the Rebel batteries in their works. We lost quite heavily, our greatest loss being in the death of First Lieutenant Peleg W. Blake, a brave and efficient officer, who was instantly killed by a rifle-shot late in the afternoon."

Dyer's Notes:—"June 18, 1864. Hitched up at 5 o'clock. Advanced with the 1st Division about  $1\frac{1}{2}$  miles, when the Rebs opened upon us. Went in position under a terrible fire. Soon advanced, and within an hour we advanced 3 times. Having gained the Norfolk and Petersburg railroad we established our lines. We lost Lieut. Peleg Blake and Benjamin Kanuse killed. Joseph Knox badly wounded. Alex. Atwood, Henry Fitzsimmons and Atkins slightly wounded."

FROM "THE CANNONEER," BY AUGUSTUS  
BUELL,

Historian of Battery B, 4th U. S. Lieut. James Stewart commanding, attached to the 1st Division, Fifth Corps:—

"During the night (of June 17th) General Griffin got his batteries up into the Norfolk Railroad cut, which at that point curved to the north, and ours was disposed so that we could rake the cut for a considerable distance. Richardson's took position to our right, and near the Avery house, while Phillips came up on the left. This position was about 600 yards from the enemy's main works at that point. These were new works in a second line, and the outer intrenchments that he had abandoned on the day before, ran along near our position. As far as we could see to the right were long lines of infantry toward the works. The ground was much broken, and as the lines conformed to the ground, it had the appearance of great waves of men.

In our front the infantry had farther to go than those to the right of us, but we were too busy to see much of it.

As both our guns and the Rebel works were on the highest ground, we could easily fire over the heads of our infantry until they got pretty close up. The Rebel infantry in the works reserved their fire, and only a few guns that they had back of their trenches replied to us slowly; but we fired very fast, and our practice was the best in our history. Our work here was literally that of an artillery skirmish line, as we first opened the assault, and then covered the retreat of the infantry when repulsed. Nearly every shot grazed their works, and we knocked off a good many of their head logs. But the ammunition was some that we had got out of the barges at Windmill Point and . . . not more than half of our case exploded, though the common shell did better. However, our three batteries soon silenced the guns the enemy had in his works. The practice of Phillips' Battery,—three inch rifles,—was superb on this occasion. Twice in succession he hit their guns plum

centre, by firing into the embrasures, and the way his percussion shell made the sand bags fly was a caution. Of course our smoothbores could not compete with Phillips's rifles, but we kept our little end up somehow. As they had made these works hastily, and there was little or no brush in the neighborhood, they were not much abatised; but the infantry said the ditches were unusually wide and deep. The last shot we fired could not have cleared Bartlett's men's heads by more than 20 feet, if that, which is pretty risky practice with smoothbore guns. We remained silent here for nearly an hour, when the infantry having been repulsed and taken cover in the ravine and the low ground in our front, we commenced a slow cannonade which we kept up till near dark. The infantry meanwhile straightened out the old rebel works, refaced them, and by midnight were securely established in the lines which we held at that point during the whole siege that followed.

We were withdrawn after dark behind the railroad, and the siege of Petersburg was begun.

Captain Stewart writes me concerning the operations of the 18th of June as follows:—

'When the Corps reached Petersburg the morning of the 18th of June, General Griffin came to me and told me that he wanted me to move my battery forward, and that he would cover my advance by the other two batteries. After moving a certain distance, and Phillips and Richardson having joined me, I was directed to move forward again, the General pointing out the place where he wished me to form the line of batteries, but when I reached the place I found there was no protection for either men or horses, but that there was a good position about 200 yards in advance of it. I moved forward to that point, the other batteries coming up on my left. You will recollect the place. It was in the front and a little to the right of the Avery house, where General Warren had his headquarters. The enemy had substantial works in our front with embrasures for their guns. While advancing to our position, the enemy opened upon us with a very heavy fire of artillery and infantry, but our artillery fire was so very effective, that they closed up their embrasures with bags of sand and withdrew their guns. I do not remember how many men I lost that day, but it was not many. Captain Phillips's Battery lost pretty heavily, his First Lieut. being killed. Phillips was one of the best artillery officers I ever met; a thorough gentleman, and an officer who always looked out for the best interests of his men. After that attack of June 18th it was quite a common saying that the batteries assigned to Griffin's Division were always used as skirmishers, and such was the fact.'

#### THE FORTIFICATIONS.

At first the guns of the light batteries were mounted in the redoubts, but as soon as the siege trains came up our guns were gradually replaced by the 20-pounder Parrotts and four-and-a-half inch Rodmans.



Meantime the caissons were parked, and a caisson camp established some distance back from the main lines, which at this point were only a few hundred feet apart. It was in the edge of a grove, on high, dry ground, where there was a good shade. Our left flank rested on the bank of a little ravine, formed by one of the headwater brooks of the Blackwater, and in our rear at some distance, was the 'fresh beef corral,' or herding ground of the Fifth Corps.

The artillery furnished gun crews for their own guns or the siege pieces in position, or helped to strengthen the redoubts. This work was always done at night . . . to see their rifles flash in the darkness a few hundred feet away, was the most trying thing I had ever experienced. . . . This work of log cutting and digging was done between June 18th and July 15th. The Fifth and Ninth Corps held the line, from the Appomattox on the right, beginning with Fort McGilvery, to the Jerusalem Plank Road on the left, a distance of over four miles, our Fifth Corps resting its left flank on the heavy redoubt known afterwards as Fort Davis, in front of the Cheever house, and its right joining the left of the Ninth at the Suffolk Road.

Fort Rice was half way between the Avery house and Fort Sedgwick. . . . It was then the nearest point to the Rebel main line on the Fifth Corps front, though the Ninth Corps line at Fort Morton was still closer. . . . These earthworks finally formed one continuous fortification from Fort McGilvery on our extreme right at the Appomattox River round to Fort Fisher on our extreme left, between 11 and 12 miles long, or perhaps 15 miles, measuring along the top of the parapet, besides heavy reverse works to our rear, extending from the Blackwater Creek round to the Weldon Railroad at Globe Tavern, a distance of seven or eight miles; thence south a mile and a half to Fort Dushane, covering that portion of the Weldon Railroad which we used as an adjunct to our 'military railway,' and thence westward from Fort Dushane to Armstrong's mill, near the Vaughan Road Bridge, across Hatcher's Run, a distance of about 8 miles more,—in other words, 32 to 35 miles of earthworks that it would be absurd to call mere 'field entrenchments,' but which were on the whole regular fortifications, quite equal to those I have since seen in Europe at places on the Franco-German and German-Russian frontiers, which their engineers considered permanent strongholds. . . .

#### THE ARTILLERY BRIGADE.

Up to this time the batteries of the Corps had been distributed among the Divisions; ours, Phillips's and Richardson's, having been with Griffin since about the last of May. But as soon as the siege operations began, the Artillery Brigade was massed together again, and put into camp. . . . The Norfolk Railroad cut was the key of the position in our front when the assault was made. It is the cut by which that road

gets through the ridge on which the Avery house stands; this little ridge forming the watershed between the brook that forms the head of the Blackwater flowing eastward, and a small creek that heads just south of the old Blackwater Road, and flows northward, emptying into the Appomattox just in front of Fort McGilvery, its entire course being between the two lines and its sloping banks forming the elevations from which the two sets of earthworks frowned at each other during the rest of the war.

This cut is about one-third of a mile long, its deepest part being directly in front of the Avery house, and not more than 200 yards distant from it, at which point it may be 30 to 35 feet deep perpendicularly.

It was in this cut that Griffin massed his Division for the last assault about 4 o'clock p. m. June 18th, and from the southeast end of it our battery, with Richardson's and Phillips' debouched on to the knoll above to fire over the heads of our charging infantry. Our line of works curved round the head of the little brook flowing into the Appomattox, and then crossed the cut at a point about due west from the Avery house."

Corporal Shackley's Notes:—"June 18, 1864, went into line about 8 a. m. . . . Fired 375 rounds."

#### FROM THE REPORT OF CAPTAIN PHILLIPS.

To Lieut. Fordham Morris A. A. A. G. Art'y Brigade  
5th A. C. August 6, 1864.

#### "FIFTH EPOCH.

The Battery was first engaged on the 18th of June in front of Petersburg. Griffin's Division having been ordered to advance, Sweitzer's Brigade was placed on the right of the road crossing the Norfolk and Petersburg R. R. and advanced across the railroad. The batteries of the Division were placed on the left of the road, my own being the right battery, and advanced 'by battery' evenly with Sweitzer's Brigade. After advancing about 400 yards we reached the crest of the ravine, and remained there the rest of the day. During our advance we were constantly engaged with the rebel batteries, but suffered very little as their fire was uniformly high, and our constant change of

position prevented them from getting the range. After reaching our final position we were much annoyed by musketry fire, and about 4 p. m. 1st Lieut. Peleg W. Blake was killed by a rifle shot. Casualties: 1 officer killed, 4 men killed, four wounded."

In another portion of this report he says of Blake and Spear:—"In his (Blake's) death we have lost one of the best officers in the service. After his death the Battery was commanded by Lieut. J. E. Spear, who filled the position ably, and to my entire satisfaction. The enlisted men, without exception, behaved admirably, showing bravery and coolness in action, and a patient endurance of the hardships of the campaign."

In a letter dated Camp before Petersburg, June 25, 1864, Captain Phillips says:—"The death of Lieut. Blake on the 18th was the saddest event we have had happen in the battery, and the greatest loss we have ever had. The body has been embalmed and sent home." . . .

#### NOTES OF CAPTAIN NATHAN APPLETON.

MAY 11, 1901.

"I write this at the Fort Monroe Club, and the light comes through an embrasure, where doubtless years ago there was a, for the time, big gun, but now a small glass window.

I have referred in my recollections of the first day of Spottsylvania, to the 32d Mass. Regt. Infantry and having made the acquaintance of its commander Colonel George L. Prescott. He was killed at the first attack on Petersburg, June 18, 1864, the very day that Lieut. Peleg W. Blake, my old comrade, was killed. I have seen Colonel Prescott's grave at Concord, Mass., and have often thought of him in connection with his namesake who commanded the Yankee troops at Bunker Hill, both of them of the same true American type. I have met a veteran of the 32d Mass.

who has given me the details of the death of Colonel Prescott. He was just mounting up the side of the railroad cut when he was shot, as also the color-bearer of the regiment whose place was at once taken by this soldier whose name is Henry K. Ellis, a resident of Middleboro', Mass.

It was not until Grant secured the Danville and also the Southside railroads south of Petersburg, that it was all up with the Army of Northern Virginia (Confederate forces) Lee, Jeff Davis, and all the confederacy at Richmond and thereabouts, and this was not done until the beginning of the campaign of 1865, which finished it up quickly. The investment of Petersburg had not accomplished it."

---

In the forenoon of the 19th all three batteries were moved to the rear and went into camp. Sunday, June 19th, 1864, Corporal Shackley made the following entry in his Diary:—"Took the gun out of line. Short of ammunition."

Dyer wrote: "Heavy picket firing all night. Soon after dark last night the Rebs attacked us, but were repulsed. This morning we took our Battery out of position, withdrawing one piece at a time, running it off by hand. Went in park  $\frac{3}{4}$  of a mile to the rear. In the evening 2 mortars opened upon the Rebs from the 9th Corps. June 20th. Aroused from peaceful slumber at 5 $\frac{1}{2}$  a. m. Remained in park all day. Batteries in our front were shelling throughout the day. At two hours before dark the Rebs opened and kept up a fire till dark. Lieut. O. B. Smith (Then Lieut. O. B. Smith Battery E, 3d U. S. Heavy Artillery in Gillmore's 10th Corps) visited our Battery. On guard tonight."

Corporal Shackley: "June 20, 1864. Received a supply of ammunition. June 21st moved about 4 miles to the left and went into camp."

The Second and Fifth Corps were being relieved by the Ninth, and all night of the 20th the latter corps was moving

past them. Left camp at 12 m. on a very dusty, warm day, with Griffin's 1st Division, which was placed on the left of Ayres, the right resting on the Jerusalem Plank Road. Camped in the edge of the woods.

June 22d the men dug a well for water and a guard was posted near it. In the evening the Second Corps were attacked while straightening their lines. The Battery hitched up and went into position, but soon limbered up, and was back to camp by dark. The next day the rebels made several demonstrations along the line, and at dark there was some cannonading. On the 24th received orders from Corps Head Quarters that a heavy attack was apprehended on our right. Tents were struck, and the men packed up ready for a move, and remained ready, lying in the hot sun. At dark they repitched their tents. The Rebs in making the attempt to force back our right were repulsed.

#### LETTER OF CAPTAIN PHILLIPS.

"CAMP BEFORE PETERSBURG,

June 25, 1864.

We are now encamped in a field on the eastern side of the Jerusalem Plank Road i. e. the Plank Road which goeth from Petersburg unto Jerusalem, passing through Sussex C. H. on the way. We are about equidistant from Petersburg and Blackwater Creek at the place where the Creek crosses the Plank Road aforesaid. Our camp is quite pleasant being far enough removed from the road to escape the clouds of dust which now form a prominent feature in the landscape. We are out of range of the enemy's guns, thanks to the topography of the country, the trees being so thick in front of our Division that there is no chance to put in a battery. So for the last three days we have been enjoying a rest from the troubles and turmoils of war. There seems to be a little lull at present, as if we were wait-

ing for something to turn up. The weather is very hot and the dust is becoming intolerable. It is nearly three weeks since we had any rain, and the whole country is drying up. Our horses have to go a mile and a half to water and it is often hard to get water enough for the men. However, dust is better than mud, and the dryness of the season has been of the greatest assistance to us. We did not visit the place of our former sojourn at Harrison's Landing, but struck the James River at a much pleasanter spot."

Dyer's Notes: "Sunday, June 26, 1864. A warm, hot, sultry day. Considerable cannonading occurred off to the right. Towards night it commenced raining and we had quite a shower. Two years ago today we bid good bye to our camp at Gaines Mills. It is also the anniversary of the fight of Mechanicsville. June 27, 1864. Anniversary of Gaines Mills fight. On guard today. Not much firing occurred. The Battery has been digging a large spring for watering horses, and with good success."

On the night of the 28th they had three feet of water in the well. This was the second well dug and it was curbed with planks like the first.

#### LETTER OF Q. M. SERG'T. PEACOCK.

"CAMP NEAR PETERSBURG, VA.

June 28, 1864.

This campaign beats everything I have seen, so far, in war,—continual fighting and marching for two months, and still the fighting continues. I cannot go away from the Battery at any time without meeting loads of dead and wounded men. So far our Battery has lost 9 men killed and 16 wounded; 1 lieutenant killed, and 1 wounded. We suffer much from the heat, and no rain for so long a time makes the dust awful. Every other day I am at City Point, 10 miles from here."



"June 29, 1864, (Dyer's Notes) everything remained quiet throughout the day, the pickets having agreed to not fire at one another. General Wilson's cavalry got surrounded as they were returning from destroying the railroad, and cut their way out.

June 30, 1864. We sent Benjamin Kanuse's body home today with money raised by the company. July 1st. Reveille at the usual camp hour 5 o'clock a. m. Received something from the Sanitary Commission for the 4th of July. Clark came up with some sutlers' goods."

July 2d, they built an arbor out of brush over the company street, and Gorham brought up the rest of the sutler's goods. The next day the men helped the sutler fix his tent. They heard shelling on the right, and some more things came from the Sanitary Commission.

July 4, 1864, the entry in Serg't. Peacock's Account Book is,—“Fourth of July, 1864. In camp near Petersburg, Va. enjoying an excellent dinner furnished by the U. S. Sanitary Commission. A beautiful day.”

They did not, however, all fare alike. Captain Phillips wrote July 5th: “Our soldiers had a fine dinner yesterday, provided by the Sanitary Commission. There were tomatoes, mutton, beef, in cans, and a barrel of porter.” Dyer's entry is as follows:—“On guard today. Some firing at intervals of five minutes. Had roast chicken, toast, mutton, fried eggs, and crackers, for dinner, also porter to wash it down, presented to us by the Sanitary Commission.” But Shackley writes:—“The canned stuff is divided, 1 can to each man in the 1st, 2d and 3d Detachments, but the men are not satisfied, and make it very unpleasant. The 4th and 5th Detachments made soup of their share and paid 15 cents per pound for potatoes.”

#### MANNING THE HEAVY GUNS.

To quote again from *The Cannoneer* the words of the historian of Battery B, Fourth U. S. (Stewart's):—

"The Avery house redan was finished and mounted with two siege guns ready for action about 2 o'clock in the morning of July 4, 1864; General Warren being present in person when the gun detachments were told off for the heavy guns, and superintended the replacing of the gabions after the siege guns were placed in their proper position and the hanging of the mantlet of coiled rope to protect the cannoneers from sharpshooters. Our fire was very slow and deliberate that first day, the men were to be drilled who had never handled siege guns. The Rebels did not reply with much vigor. . . . The dry weather facilitated the building of the works, the construction of which was said by the veterans to be a picnic compared to the digging in the trenches before Yorktown two years before."

---

On July 5th a fort or square redoubt was laid out directly in front of the camp, on the ground occupied by Battery D, 1st N. Y., (Richardson's) and they were obliged to leave. One corner was in close proximity to the cook house which was built on the 5th and covered with brush. At night half a ration of whiskey was dealt out to the men.

Note in Peacock's Account Book:—"Ammunition on hand in Battery, percussion, case and canister—4 guns and 2 extra caissons, July 5th, 1864, of the 1st, 2d, 3d and 4th Detachments."

The infantry worked on the redoubt on the 6th and threw up a large pile of dirt. On the 7th they worked all day and all night. Captain Phillips rode down to the 18th Corps with Captain Bigelow, Captain Dow of the 6th Maine Battery, and Lieut. Stewart.

July 8th the men dug two wells. At half past 4 heavy shelling. Our battle line was advanced to the picket line, and the Rebs opened upon us, but we held the ground gained and at night intrenched.

#### THE ARMY RATION.

The regulation Army Ration issued by the War Department, and copied from Peacock's Account Book was as follows:—

"12 oz. Pork or Bacon or  
1¼ lbs. Salt or Fresh Beef.

18 oz. Soft Bread or Flour or  
12 oz. Hard Bread or  
20 oz. Corn Meal.  
and to every 100 Rations  
15 lbs. Beans, or Pease or  
10 lbs. Rice or Hominy  
10 lbs. Green Coffee or  
8 lbs. Roasted     "     "  
1½ lbs. Tea  
15     "     Sugar  
4 qts. Vinegar  
1¼ lbs. Candles  
4 lbs. Soap  
3¾ lbs. Salt  
¼ lb. Pepper.

On a campaign or march the Ration of Hard Bread is one pound. Desiccated compressed potatoes or compressed mixed vegetables at the rate of one and a half ounce of the former and one ounce of the latter to the ration, may be substituted for beans, pease, rice or hominy. July 8, 1864, Per Order of the Secretary of War.

E. M. STANTON."

---

July 9th the carriages and harnesses were all cleaned up for inspection which took place next day. Captain Phillips inspected the batteries of the Division. The Battery was inspected at 7.30 a. m. As soon as it was over Dyer went up to the 23d Mass. Regt. and saw a number of New Bedford boys: among them Charles Thompson who looked pretty sick. July 11th the infantry were still at work building forts. 12th Dyer was on guard at the well, and had his hands full keeping the infantry away from it. At 12 o'clock orders came to move, and they went one mile to the right and went into camp in the rear of General Griffin's Head Quarters. Here they dug two more wells.

"July 13, 1864. (Dyer's Notes.) Pitched our tents in line and put up harness racks. The Rebs shell pretty near us, but as yet none have entered our camp. On fatigue. Helped dig a well. The sutler ordered to City Point. July 14th. Some shelling all along our lines. Towards night

one of our teams went for baskets to build breastworks of. July 15th. Reveille at 5½ o'clock. The first I heard was the musical sound of a shell whirring through the air. Continued throughout the day; also a great deal of mortar firing. The teams went to City Point for sanitary goods to-day."

## LETTER OF Q. M. SERGT. PEACOCK.

"CAMP NEAR PETERSBURG, VA..

July 15, 1864.

I am writing only 1200 yards from a large rebel fort of 16 Guns. A strip of woods conceals us from them. If they only knew we were here, it would not be long before they opened on us. They fire at the right and left of us, but no shells have burst nearer than 300 or 400 yards. The Battery is not in position at present, but a work is now building for it only 500 yards from the rebel works and it will go into it in a night or so. They can work on it only nights, as the rebels keep up a continual fire. As I write the bullets of the rebel pickets can be plainly heard going whiz! whiz! through the air. Not a day passes without more or less fighting. The 9th and 18th Corps are engaged, mostly. They are on the right of us. We get plenty to eat this season; particularly vegetables, thanks to the Sanitary Commission. I received some socks excellent ones from them this afternoon, with the enclosed mark on them. If you know any of the Society give them my thanks. The Government socks are so poor they only wear me two weeks. (The mark is a small piece of white cotton cloth about two inches square bearing the half obliterated stamp of a society in Dorchester, Mass.) They supply us with all kinds of pickles, onions, potatoes, dried apples, soft crackers, lemons, clothing, cabbage, 'pickled,' some tobacco, and many little things. I assure you we all feel

very grateful to them for all of their good things, particularly at this time of the year.

I think the Commission does more to keep up the courage and spirits of the Army than any other one thing. Let no one say the Sanitary Commission is not doing a great work for us.

I send some leaves I got while at Charles City Court House.

I suppose there is great excitement about the Raid into Maryland. Well, I think our side will come out all right finally. They cannot draw Grant's Army from this place: he is continually fortifying here. He is bound to stick to all he has gained.

I suppose you have something of a panic about the currency; gold taking such a rise. This Army will bring that out all safe before the year ends. I feel almost discouraged sometimes about the rebels holding out so well, but they must kneel sooner or later; there is not a doubt of it. The thing has gone so far now that not an inch must be given up to them until they are conquered.—Candle going out."

---

In July, 1864, the "Memorial" was published which has been framed and preserved by many members of the Battery. It was compiled from the company records at Rappahannock Station in the winter of '63 and '64, and has a complete list of the members. It was published by J. C. Fuller & Co. of Baltimore, Md., and lithographed by Major and Knapp 449 Broadway, New York.

Of the produce of the Sanitary Commission, Dyer wrote July 16th. "Had a big dinner consisting in part of roast mutton, potatoes, onions, beets, pickles, and condensed milk for tea and coffee. Had lemonade to drink as a beverage. 17th. At night Battery B, 4th U. S., Lieut. Stewart, went in position beside the 83d Penn. Regt. Taps at 9 o'clock p. m."

News had come to the camp that an attack was intended, so all the troops were put in the front line, but scarcely a gun was fired the whole length of the line. On the 18th Quarter Master Sergeant Peacock had the entry: "Sent Winters' instruments to Washington. (Winters was one of the buglers.) July 19th. Sent company Saving Paper for March to Washington for payment."

July 20, 1864, Dyer made the note, "The 18th Mass. Regt. started for Washington today."

In relation to Lieut. Aaron F. Walcott then in command of Martin's Third Mass. Battery, Captain Phillips wrote in a letter dated "Camp before Petersburg July 20, 1864:— I went to see Lieut. Walcott the other day, and found him living underground, the roof of his apartment being level with the surface, and being covered with several feet of earth. We had a shower of rain yesterday for the first time since the 2d of June. It was needed, as the dust had become very disagreeable, and the springs were getting dry. We are very lucky in our location in one respect i. e. in regard to our supply of water. Although the long drought had exhausted all the springs and brooks, there is no difficulty in digging a well and finding water anywhere round here. We have a well about 20 ft deep, provided with a pump, which furnishes excellent water abundantly enough for the men and horses. And there are wells all along our lines. The Rebel deserters who come in are much astonished to see us so well supplied, as they have thought we had to go to the river for water. . . . We have changed our position a little. We are at present camped in an open field out of reach of the enemy's shells.

Nothing very stirring is going on, though a few shots may be heard at any hour of the day or night. The lines are now quite near each other, but each party is so strongly entrenched that there is no danger of an assault on either side. From the right of our Division we can see both lines.



from the Jerusalem Plank Road on the left, to the 18th Corps on the right. The lines are about 600 yards apart and skirmishers in small pits thrown out in front. Along the front of the 5th Corps the skirmishers are quite friendly, and do not fire at all. I was at the works the other day, and saw plenty of Rebel pickets so near that I could have recognized them if I had known them. Our front line of battle is placed behind a strong parapet and ditch with an abatis in front. The Rebels are similarly protected, and so we look at each other. Each side is constantly engaged in putting in guns, and every morning shows new embrasures. Both sides have a lot of mortars in position which keep up a slow fire all the time, necessitating the construction of bomb proofs all along the line. . . . The Rebels desert now very constantly. About 5 a night, on an average, come into our lines in front of our Division, and the same proportion in the Army would give over 50 a night."

---

July 21st the air was cool and bracing after the shower, and the men cleaned up the park and stable, and went after a load of rails for the cook-house. There was pretty lively shelling and mortar firing.

22d. Dyer wrote "Everything remained quiet until a little before dark, when several volleys of musketry were exchanged between the darkies and Rebs. This brought on lively shelling, which continued all the evening. 23d. Hitched up horses and had a drill today. After we came in cleaned harnesses and carriages for inspection tomorrow. Sunday 24th. Inspection this morning at 9 o'clock by Lieut. Spear. The 2d caisson had considerable trouble in getting out of park with their horses, and broke some of their harnesses. At 6 p. m. it commenced raining. 25th. Considerable shelling occurred towards night, the shell striking mostly about 300 yards from our camp. 26th. Corporal Wilson woke us up rather early, it being but 4

o'clock. Some growling about it but it soon ceased. Drill on manual of the piece this forenoon, but as I was on fatigue I did not drill. 27th. Drill on the manual of the piece at 9 a. m. The Sanitary Commissioner brought us up some potatoes, beets, turnips, milk, pickles, and underclothing. 28th. Battery drill at 9 a. m. In the evening having nothing to do I took a stroll along the picket line. The infantry advanced their line today; the lines of battle now being but 500 yards apart."

### THE MINE.

In his report to Lieut. Morris of August 6, 1864, Captain Phillips states that on the 29th of July the Battery "was placed in a 4 gun battery in the line of the 3d Brigade 1st Division, and took part in the bombardment of the 30th, making some accurate shooting."

July 29, 1864. Corporal Shackley has thus recorded:—"Worked on magazine till past midnight, and deposited 8 chests of ammunition in anticipation of the explosion of General Burnside's mine."

Captain Phillips in his Diary of the 29th observes:—"All the batteries placed under Colonel Wainwright. Went into position about sunset on General Bartlett's front in Battery No. 8—No. 9 Winslow's D, 1st N. Y., No. 10. Fort Tilton—18 guns; viz., 6, 4½ in. Rifled, 4, 12 pdr., and 8, 3 inch or Parrotts."

Battery No. 8 was on the front line.

"July 30, 1864. (Corporal Shackley.) Packed up ready to move, then all but the guards went to the front. At about 5 a. m. the mine was exploded, and we commenced firing all along our lines. The Rebel fort was destroyed, and the position was taken and occupied by our troops, but about 2 p. m. the Rebels attacked and recaptured the position, and a large number of our Army. The Battery fired 246 rounds, but sustained no loss by the enemy's fire.

Serg't. Stiles (Charles F. Stiles of Charlestown) was injured by concussion of the gun. July 31, 1864, withdrew from the line of battle and returned to camp."

### LETTER OF CAPTAIN PHILLIPS.

"CAMP BEFORE PETERSBURG,

Aug. 1, 1864.

On Friday I was ordered into position with Griffin's Division, and from the signs I judged that the ball might open. The batteries took position at dark, and by midnight there were 16 mortars and 60 or 70 guns, 12 of them  $4\frac{1}{2}$  siege, along the front of the 5th Corps. I kept the men at work till midnight, building a magazine, and then turned in. The orders received before we went to bed, were to be at our posts before daylight.

About daylight the mine in Burnside's front was to explode, and this was to be the signal for us to open, so at daylight we were all ready and were waiting.

All was still and quiet, our men were all waiting, behind the parapets, while on the Rebel side a few men were seen along the works.

About 4 o'clock, while I was looking, the mine went up: an immense column of dust and smoke, rising slowly and majestically into the air!

The artillery opened at once, and the simultaneousness of the discharges, and the contrast with the stillness which had prevailed, had a grand effect.

The Rebel artillery hardly fired a shot, and after an hour of steady fire, we slacked up a little. The mine was a complete success, but the charge would be a ridiculous farce were it not for the unpleasant results.

I do most sincerely hope that somebody will be court martialed for the failure, which can only be attributed to the utter carelessness and incompetence of somebody in charge of the affair. We probably shall not have such a

good chance again. We might have taken the place as well as not."

## SECRETARY STANTON TO MAJOR PHILLIPS

WAR DEPARTMENT,

WASHINGTON, December 2, 1864.

*Sir:*—You are hereby informed that the President of the United States has appointed you for gallant services at the battle of Bethesda Church and during the present campaign before Richmond Va., a Major of volunteers by brevet in the service of the United States, to rank as such from the First day of August one thousand eight hundred and sixty-four.

Should the Senate at their next session advise and consent thereto, you will be commissioned accordingly. Immediately on receipt hereof please to communicate to this Department, through the Adjutant General of the Army, your acceptance or non-acceptance, and, with your letter of acceptance return the oath herewith enclosed, properly filled up, subscribed and attested, and report your age, birthplace, and the state of which you were a permanent resident.

You will report for duty to ———

E. M. STANTON,  
*Secretary of War*  
(152)

BVT. MAJOR CHARLES A. PHILLIPS,  
*U. S. Volunteers*  
*Thro. Comdg Genl Army Potomac.*

## GENERAL CHALFIN TO MAJOR PHILLIPS.

WAR DEPARTMENT,

ADJUTANT GENERAL'S OFFICE.

WASHINGTON, June 12, 1865.

*Sir:*

I have the honor to enclose to you herewith your commission of Major by Brevet, the receipt of which please acknowledge.

I am sir

Very respectfully

Your obedient servant

S. F. CHALFIN,  
*Assistant Adjutant General.*  
(153)

BVT. MAJOR CHARLES A. PHILLIPS,  
*U. S. Volunteers, Capt. 5th Mass. Batt'y.*  
*5th Corps Wash., D. C.*

## MAJOR C. A. PHILLIPS BY BREVET.

## THE COMMISSION.

Across the upper corner at the left, written in red ink these words:—"Recorded Volume 4, page 26, Adjutant General's Office April 20, 1865.

E. D. TOWNSEND,  
*Ass't Adj't. Gen'l.*

The American Eagle at the top resting on heavy clouds streaked with lightning. Over it

"THE PRESIDENT OF THE UNITED STATES OF AMERICA" and set in the midst of stars the motto "E Pluribus Unum." At the left the blue seal of the United States. Under the Eagle:—

"To all who shall see these presents greeting:

Know ye, That I do hereby confer on Charles A. Phillips of the U. S. Volunteers in the service of the United States by and with the advice and consent of the Senate, the rank of Major By Brevet in said service, to rank as such from the First day of August, in the year of our Lord one thousand eight hundred and sixty-four, for gallant services at the battle of Bethesda Church, and during the present campaign before Richmond, Virginia. And I do strictly charge and require all officers and soldiers under his command, to obey and respect him accordingly, and he is to observe and follow such orders and directions from time to time as he shall receive from me, or the future President of the United States of America and other officers set over him according to law, and the rules and discipline of war. This commission to continue in force, during the pleasure of the President of the United States for the time being.

Given under my hand at the City of Washington this Twentieth day of April, in the year of our Lord one thousand eight hundred and sixty-five, and in the eighty-ninth year of the Independence of the United States.

By the President,

ANDREW JOHNSON.

E. M. STANTON,  
*Secretary of War.*

At the bottom an elaborate drawing in which the colors, the implements of the service, arms and munitions of war are represented.

It was rumored on August 1st that the enemy was undermining Fort Tilton, and on August 3d that a mine under the 18th Corps was suspected, and the Army was under arms before daylight.

Q. M. Serg't. Peacock on August 3d. "Received of Captain Phillips \$20.00 from Company Fund to be used in the purchase of vegetables." [See p. 865 Company Fund.]

Aug. 6, 1864, by order of Colonel Wainwright the guns of the Fifth Mass. Battery were placed in position on the second line in an entrenchment in rear of Fort Tilton on the left of Colonel Nathan T. Dushane's Maryland Brigade.

On this day Lieut. Samuel H. Hamblet reported for duty.

Aug. 7, 1864, Lieut. Hamblet joined the Battery and in the evening the guns were moved to the right of the Maryland Brigade.

With reference to the possible undermining of Fort Tilton Major Phillips says in a letter dated Aug. 9, 1864:—

"The hot weather is causing a great deal of sickness among the men. Last Sunday we put our guns in position in a second line which has been formed in rear of Fort Tilton to guard against the contingency of the rebels blowing it up, and I live partly in camp and partly with the guns in front. The weather is very hot and I long for a breath of fresh air. The Sanitary Commission reaches us here."

He sent home for a pair of shoulder straps with the following directions, and received them all right by mail as he ordered them:—

"Send me a pair of shoulder straps,—Captain of Artillery.—Let the straps be gold *embroidered*, not *stamped sheet brass*. Let the embroidery be only one row, so that the straps will not be too large and showy, as I only want them for fatigue uniform. Let the cloth of the straps be broadcloth and *not red velvet*."

August 10th, 1864, Private John S. Doane was appointed



acting corporal. A few shots from the Rebs about 10.30 p. m.

Aug. 12, 1864, the Battery was inspected by Lieut. G. W. Dresser Acting Ass't Inspector General Art'y Brigade. Eight men from the Third Mass. Battery joined the Fifth. They were J. R. Robinson, Geo. Brown, J. Waterson, T. Flanagan, J. Hayes, W. G. Boutwell, G. S. Hunt, I. J. Hunt.

The names are from Peacock's Account Book which has also under date of Aug. 12, the following:—

"Provision return for 11 men from August 12 to 20 inclusive, 9 days, 99 rations. Same time Return from Aug. 21 to 31 inclusive 11 days, for 110 men. Rations for 100 horses."

Note by Serg't Peacock, Sept. 7, 1900:—"We had during the Grant campaign two extra caissons, that were kept at the rear most of the time, and I think rations were drawn separate for the men with them, as my book shows rations drawn for 110 men & 11 men."

August 13th three more men joined the Battery. August 14, 1864. Faunce (Alvin Faunce of Boston) sent to hospital. Orders were received to withdraw the guns as soon as relieved by a battery of the Ninth Corps, and about daylight of the 15th, the Fifth Corps having been relieved by the Ninth about daylight, their place was taken at 4 a. m. by the 11th Mass. Battery, Captain Edward J. Jones.

All day, and the next day, and the next, they remained in readiness to move, and marched on the 18th to the Weidon Railroad.

On the red field in conflict meet the ranks,  
 With mingled shout and groan ;  
 And hearts at home are swayed by hope and fear.  
 Intent on war alone.  
 The eyes of all the world are turned to us,  
 To learn the lesson taught,  
 And Europe's kings now totter on their thrones,  
 Until the battle's fought :—

2D. LIEUT. MORTON D. MITCHELL,  
 MASS. 38TH REGT. INF.

## CHAPTER XXV.

### THE BATTLE OF THE WELDON RAILROAD.

AUGUST 18-30, 1864.

"For tho' I fought, and overcame,  
And Quarter gave, 'twas in your Name,  
For great Commanders always own  
What's prosperous by the Soldier done."

*Hudibras*, SAMUEL BUTLER.

On the 14th of August, 1864, the Fifth Corps intrenchments were occupied by the Ninth Corps, and General Warren was ordered to make use of the Fifth Corps in the work of acquiring and holding the Weldon Railroad.

It rained, and the roads and fields were in bad condition, the atmosphere was sultry, but Griffin's Division led the advance out of these impregnable lines of entrenchments which they had fortified with so much labor, in order to cover our communications as well as to facilitate our approach to the beleaguered city of Petersburg.

On the morning of August 18th they marched, and met the rebel cavalry at Dr. Gurley's house. The 1st Division having been formed in line by brigades and skirmishers deployed, the line advanced, and the rebel pickets were captured or fell back, and the Division pushed on to Globe Tavern, three miles from the Jerusalem Plank Road, which they reached at 9 a. m. The Division was disposed to cover the position toward the south and west, northward dense woods filled the distance from the railroad to the Plank Road.

North and south, parallel to the railroad runs the road to Halifax, and a mile west of that the Vaughan road, which

joins the Halifax road about a mile and a half from Globe Tavern towards Petersburg.

From the Gurley house to the railroad there was considerable open country.

Griffin's front faced west and began to intrench. The 2d Division, General Ayres, had reached the same southern point on the railroad and then moved up alongside it towards Petersburg. At the point where the Vaughan and Halifax roads joined, they found the rebels in line of battle, ready to contest the passage of the roads.

Crawford's 3d Division of the Fifth Corps came to the support of Ayres with the design of outflanking the enemy. Ayres formed his line of battle and advanced into the edge of the woods about 100 yards, and soon found himself outflanked by a Division of the enemy coming from the direction of the Vaughan road. The Union brigades fell back 100 yards, and formed on a line with the 15th New York Heavy Artillery, which had accompanied Ayres, and a part of Cutler's 4th Division was sent to reinforce the Second. The Confederates were driven back. Rifle pits were then constructed on the right and left of the railroad.

Previous to August 18th our lines of intrenchments were built on the east and southeast of Petersburg, but after the possession of the Weldon Railroad was secured, new lines were built, not of regular siege works like the others, but of earthworks to cover our movements against the enemy's right flank. These works not being strongholds did not consume so much time in building as the old lines, and the distance was so much greater that the labor on them was much less dangerous.

But it is not all of war to fight or to build breastworks. The integrant portions of the great Army were ever shifting from trench, to field, to hospital, and back again to picket, tent, and trench, and while these stirring scenes of busy preparation which embraced the soldier as an essential

element, reckoned mostly in the abstract, were being enacted, there had been a steadily increasing proportion of men who had never been drilled in the manual of arms, never had fired a gun, and who were rather better fitted for this sort of thing than for the battle field.

The men of responsibility, absorbed in their schemes and plans, suddenly awakened to the flight of time, and became aware that into the common conversation of the well-disciplined and thoroughly accomplished army of veterans of three years' service, never so well equipped as now, never with so much at hand to make the soldier comfortable and contented, in this year of 1864 there had crept a new subject of much too general interest, that of speedy "expiration of term of service." The terms of the "three months' men," and the "nine months' men," and terms for special service had expired like all other episodes of the War, as of no more special purport, it was good and we wanted more of it, but to the officers and men whose military career of three years, 1861-1864, was now drawing to a close the phrase had an extraordinary meaning. They had come to the expiration of a period in the threatened life of the nation which formed a novitiate through which no other generation of men had ever been or ever could be called upon to pass. They had been, as we know who have followed them day by day, the right hand of the Government, the main stay, the nucleus of this mighty military growth, the men at the front who inspired confidence by their example and stimulated progress in all directions: but their time had expired, and written against every name on the mustering out rolls, these words "at expiration of term of service" would forever bear a certifying value of their own, subject to no one's estimate or opinion. The men who answered to these names had survived a long and familiar intimacy with the art and the practice of War, and the experience had become a part of their natures and moulded their characters

on a new model of a man. They would in time crystallize into a new class in society who would inaugurate in America the wearing of a distinctive military badge, to stand as a memorial of individual sacrifice, and as security for the future safety of the nation.

But there were other members of these retiring organizations who had re-enlisted or who were new recruits, and provision was made for these among the regiments and batteries whose terms had not expired. In this way a large number of men came to the Fifth Mass. from the Third Mass. Battery.

#### CIRCULAR.

WAR DEPARTMENT,  
ADJUTANT GENERAL'S OFFICE.  
WASHINGTON, August 18, 1864.

Circular

No. 64

When it becomes necessary, under the orders from this Department, to make transfers of enlisted men from one regiment or company to another, as in the case of consolidation of two or more companies or regiments, or when the transfer of men may be authorized from this office, except to the Veteran Reserve Corps, the following papers should be made out, that the officers and soldiers may not suffer by such transfer.

Quadruplicate muster and descriptive rolls of the men, with a copy of the order transferring them attached to each roll, one copy to be forwarded to the Adjutant General of the Army; one copy to the Paymaster General of the Army; one copy to the Adjutant General of the state to which the men belong,—the roll to be divided for this purpose if men from more than one state appear on it,—and one copy to be sent with the men to the respective regiments to which they are transferred. These rolls will contain all the information indicated by the blanks for muster and descriptive rolls, including date, place and by whom mustered into service. Each copy will be examined, verified and countersigned by the Commissary or Assistant Commissary of Musters for the command, and will be when completed, evidence of muster-in and proper transfer.

E. D. TOWNSEND,  
*Ass't Adj. General.*

In the meantime the right of Crawford's 3d Division was moving up through the thick woods, and at 4 p. m. 31 August 19, 1864, the rear of Crawford's skirmish line was attacked by the enemy and were compelled to fall back together with the right of Ayres' Division, but subsequently Ayres moved forward, recovered his old line, and repulsed a second attack of the enemy. In these movements he was assisted by the 187th Pennsylvania Infantry of Griffin's Division. A part of the Ninth Corps on the right of the Fifth had faced to the right to prevent another attack on his flank, and in doing so had driven the enemy back to their intrenchments.

General Warren then in order to preserve his lines, took means to post them in places favorable for the artillery, and on the 20th awaited an attack, which came the following day. His pickets were driven in by Lee's cavalry after a fierce struggle, early in the forenoon of August 21st and a cross fire was opened through the woods by the rebel artillery of about 30 pieces over the position occupied by the Fifth Corps. Later in the forenoon an assault was made on Warren's north and west which was repulsed, and he was left in possession of the railroad. In this the Corps artillery did the most execution in places beyond the range of the musketry, breaking the enemy's line. Then Warren advanced his skirmish line, the enemy were routed and many prisoners and flags were taken. General Nathan T. Dushane was killed commanding the 2d Brigade, 2d Division 5th A. C.

General Warren in his report states in a general way with regard to the artillery that "the service of all our batteries was most efficient," and that is all the credit there is given to the arm of the service which rendered the victory possible.



## AS TOLD BY MEMBERS OF THE BATTERY.

Corporal Jonas Shackley has recorded the following on Thursday, August 18th, 1864, the day they left the rear of Fort Tilton:—"Marched at 6 a. m. by the left flank. Reached the Weldon Railroad about 9 a. m. and broke it up and cut the telegraph. The Rebs attacked us, but were repulsed."

The importance of this day's work is emphasized by General Grant in his Memoirs where he says:—

"The Weldon Railroad never went out of our possession from the 18th of August to the close of the war."

The 19th was a rainy day. In the afternoon the enemy made a desperate attack but were driven back with heavy loss. Brig. Gen'l Joseph Hayes was captured. There was no engagement on the 20th.

## LETTER OF MAJOR PHILLIPS.

"IN POSITION ON THE WELDON R. R.

Sunday Morning,

Aug. 21, 1864.

We started for this place on Thursday morning, the weather being pleasant. In the forenoon we reached the Weldon R. R. and took possession of it. Griffin's Division led the Corps and was deployed about a mile from the R. R. and then advanced towards it. As we found only about 50 Rebel cavalry guarding it, no opposition was met with. The Rebels must be short of men to let us get this R. R. so important to them, with so little opposition. As the other Divisions came up they were deployed on the right of the 1st. In the afternoon the 2d Division were quite heavily engaged. . . . The night and all Friday were spent in shovelling dirt, so that we have now a very formidable line of works. Friday afternoon the enemy attacked our right and drove it in, but we finally repulsed them. At one time it looked a little doubtful. The 39th Mass. was badly cut

up. The Rebels got in their rear and they jumped over to the outside of their breastworks and fought that way. General Hayes formerly colonel of the 18th Mass. taken prisoner."

Phillips' Diary. "Aug. 21, 1864: A little foggy in the forenoon, clearing off in the afternoon. During the forenoon the rebels attacked. A Brigade containing 7th, 21st, 23d, 25th So. C., 27th No. C., 12th, 22d Miss.—Hayward's Br. Hoke's Div.—came out in our front. We shelled them and broke them. Most of the men and flags were taken. Our loss very slight. Right wheel of the 2d piece smashed by a round shot, the felly striking Serg't. Stiles in the head, injuring him slightly."

In a letter dated August 30, 1864, Major Phillips again refers to this engagement:—"The rebel troops in front of our Battery were Hayward's So. Ca. and Saunders' Miss. Brigades. We did not fire at them till they came in sight to the left of Cutler. They were then distant from us about 600 yards."

Shackley's Notes: "Aug. 21st, the enemy made another desperate effort to drive us back, but were forced to retire, leaving their dead in our hands."

#### FROM THE HISTORY OF THE THIRD MASSACHUSETTS BATTERY.

"Sunday morning, Aug. 21, 1864, the battle opened about eight o'clock. The ground in this locality was very marshy. It was Virginia land without any bottom, and it was very difficult to move batteries. Our whole battery was sunk to the hubs in the road near the line of battle. It could neither move forward nor back. Orders were given to commanders if obliged to fall back to spike their guns, as it would be impossible to move as from every discharge they sank deeper in the soil. The Rebels met with the same difficulties, the recent heavy rains making it the same for them. Very few of their guns were got up near enough to do much damage.

General Griffin sent out a line of skirmishers to meet the Rebels' heavy force of infantry, supposed to be forty thousand. After a few shots were exchanged his skirmishers fell back pell-mell, that being

the plan, drawing the enemy into the centre of the circle of General Warren's curved line,—a strong earthwork thrown up in the form of half a quadrangle extending half a mile south, and across the railroad on his left.—When near enough for execution, the flank batteries opened first, our infantry hugging the ground closely, the artillery shots passing over their heads, the Rebels all the while pressing up nearer as our advanced line fell back on their supports. The ruse worked well. At a given signal the whole line of artillery opened, using up the enemy fearfully. After one hour's brisk cannonade, at a given signal, the artillery ceased firing, when Gen. Griffin charged on them with his Division, capturing over two thousand prisoners. It was Warren's best planned battle, and a great success, as the Rebels never after attempted to retake the road."

This battle was the last for the Third Mass. Battery, its term of service having expired. Its guns and equipments were turned into the ordnance department, the horses and wagons to the quartermasters department. Its commander, Captain Augustus P. Martin was soon after brevetted colonel, as an honorary title for his valuable services, and for the reason, as General Henry J. Hunt, Chief of Artillery of the Army of the Potomac observed, that besides commanding his battery, he had "performed the highest duties of field-officer."

---

By these operations, of the third and fourth weeks of August, our main line was extended from the Jerusalem Plank Road at the Cheever house to Globe Tavern. From this point we held all the ground along the Weldon Railroad to White House where a fort was built and named for Colonel Dushane.

August 25th the Battery moved about two miles to the left in support of the Second Corps, which had a severe fight at Ream's Station on the Weldon Railroad. The enemy forced our lines, tore up the railroad track and captured the guns of the Tenth Mass. Battery and Battery G. 1st Rhode Island.

The Fifth Mass. Battery was placed in position on the

pike leading to Ream's Station in advance of the line of battle.

"August 29th, 1864. (Shackley's Notes.) Cleared up our park and dug another well, making eleven wells dug by the Battery in front of Petersburg.

Corporal Tripp promoted to sergeant, James Kay and Joseph Clark promoted to corporals."

The Battery's position on the 30th was outside the intrenchments, two guns on each side of the road. At the front and on the right in the edge of the woods skirmishers were thrown out.

Major Phillips in his report to the Adjutant General of the state of Massachusetts dated Dec. 16, 1864, thus refers to the status of the Third Mass. Battery and its relations to the Fifth:—

"On the 30th of August, the enlisted men of the Third Mass. Battery, who were not entitled to be mustered out, were permanently transferred to the Fifth Mass. Battery by Special Order 210, Head Quarters Fifth Army Corps, dated August 27th. This order was afterwards rescinded, and it was directed that the two organizations should be kept up, by Special Order 236, Head Quarters Fifth Army Corps. The two batteries have since been temporarily united under my command."

The report of the Third to the same state official reads:—

"The Veterans and Recruits transferred to the Fifth Mass. Battery, and the battery ordered to the rear with instructions to turn over the battery, &c., preparatory to leaving the Army, and on the evening of the 4th September the officers and men whose term of service was about to expire, marched to City Point."

New wharves had been built at City Point and a new railway in the rear of the lines from City Point to the Weldon Railroad at Globe Tavern, and from that point to the crossing of the Vaughan road near Wyatt's house, the Weldon Railroad was used as a military railway.

## FROM THE HISTORY OF THE THIRD MASS. BATTERY.

List of the Members of the Third Mass. Battery temporarily consolidated with the Fifth Mass. Battery.

Aug. 30, 1864, and Previous.

Allen Elisha  
Aymer Frank  
Ball Volney  
Boutwell Wm. G.  
Bowman Benedict  
Brizee Wm. A. Jr.  
Brock John H.  
Broom George  
Bryson Peter  
Bugbee Wm. L.  
Burleson Charles  
Burns Joseph  
Cahill George H.  
Carling Chas. P.  
Cary Richard  
Conant Sherman W.  
Crockett George F.  
Downey Thomas  
Drake Wm. M.  
Dudley Edwd. M.  
Duff Robert P.  
Edwards William  
Flanagan Thomas  
Follett Charles A.  
Ford Jacob W.  
Gragg John T.  
Graves Henry B.  
Hanley Henry  
Hart Patrick  
Hayden Wm. A.  
Hayes Joseph  
Hunt Geo. S.  
Hunt Ira J.  
Johnson Alfred J.  
Johnston Leonard F.  
Knowles William  
Leach Jacob H.  
Mahan Fred'k W.  
Mahan Geo. F.  
Martis Wm. A.

Matthews David A.  
Matthews Roland F.  
McCarthy Eugene  
McCartney John  
Murphy James  
Murphy Thomas  
Murphy Walter  
Nichols Wm. H.  
Potter Geo. Jr.  
Ransom Wallace R.  
Ransom William  
Reed Andrew  
Remington Lysander F.  
Riley Morris  
Robinson John R.  
Rowe Amos  
Skillin Howard A.  
Spencer Albert L.  
Stetson Charles E.  
Stetson Henry  
Sullivan James  
Thomas Jefferson  
Tufts Henry  
Turner Thomas  
Waterson James  
Waterson William  
Way George H.  
Welch John H.  
Wheelock Geo. W.  
Whelan John  
Wilson Richard  
Wood Alfred.

---

August 31, 1864, notice was received of Lieut. Nathan Appleton's discharge, Special Order War Department dated Aug. 25, 1864, and Lieut. Hamblet was mustered in to date August 25, 1864.

September 1, 1864, our rear was attacked by rebel cavalry. "Pickets were driven in, (Shackley's Notes) the Rebs were repulsed, and we unhitched."



## CHAPTER XXVI.

### THE BATTLE OF HATCHER'S RUN.

OCTOBER 27, 1864.

"Here was the camp, the watch-flame, and the host,  
Still does he mark it with triumphant boast,  
And points to yonder cliffs, which oft were won and lost."  
—*Childe Harold*.

As far as new ground was gained by our forces, entrenchments and redoubts of great strength were carried on to secure it. The length of this line was about three and a half miles on the front from Fort Davis to Fort Wadsworth, and a mile and a half along the railroad from Fort Wadsworth to Fort Dushane. The reverse works extended from Fort Dushane back to the Jerusalem Plank Road, a distance of about four miles. The forts included in the front line were Forts Hays, Howard, Wadsworth and Dushane and several redoubts. The reverse line was made up of small forts, the only one of large extent being Fort Stevenson. The woods in the vicinity were utilized, and furnished all the timber needed for gun platforms and drawbridges by means of portable saw mills. Skilled labor of all descriptions for building the fortifications, railroads, etc., was found in the ranks of the army.

As fast as the protecting works were completed the military line connecting with the Weldon Railroad at Globe Tavern was extended. Parts of the line built for the use of batteries of artillery were numbered, beginning at the right of the line near the James River and numbering towards the left.

September 23, 1864, a circular was published and read to the Army, announcing the success of General Sheridan in the Shenandoah Valley. While at the height of the enthusiasm created by this glorious news, the determination of General Grant to strike a blow at Richmond from the north bank of the James met general approval, and on September 28th the 18th Corps under General E. O. C. Ord, and the 10th Corps under General D. B. Birney went off "in good spirits," as the phrase was then, across the James; the 18th by the Varina road nearer the river and the 10th by the Newmarket and Darby roads. The result was the capture of Fort Harrison and its entrenchments and their guns.

On the 29th at 4 a. m. the Army of the Potomac was under arms for a move, and preparations were made to withdraw from the entrenchments round Petersburg, leaving garrisons in the forts and batteries.

The cavalry was sent off to the crossing of Hatcher's Run, by the Vaughan road, where there was a rebel redoubt and entrenchments which were a part of the Petersburg line, running parallel with the Weldon Railroad. Cavalry was also sent to Peebles and Pegram farms on the Squirrel Level road, two miles west of our intrenchments on the railroad, in order to extend our left and surround Petersburg.

There was a redoubt called Fort McRae, at the junction of the Squirrel Level and Poplar Spring Church roads, coming from the southwest, which it was Grant's design to capture with a part of the Fifth Corps including Griffin's Division, accompanied by Batteries B, D and H, 1st N. Y. Light Artillery, and at 7 o'clock of September 30, they left the intrenchments at Globe Tavern and fought their way west, holding the entrenchments captured, through the Peebles and Pegram farms, and northwest to the Boydton Plank Road, and on the 2d of October the Fifth and Second

Corps had established a new line of entrenchments, connecting with the Weldon Railroad works, made up of redoubts and batteries. On the 27th of October General Meade was directed by General Grant to take possession of the Southside Railroad, and to hold and fortify it.

The rebels had intrenchments not very complete at a point two miles above the crossing of Hatcher's Run by the Vaughan road, and about a mile above Armstrong's Mills. They did not cross the run or extend any farther up than the crossing.

The Confederate Petersburg lines reached from the Appomattox River to a battery west of the Jerusalem Plank Road. Our movement was to the left, the Second Corps moving by the Vaughan road, crossing Hatcher's Run and proceeding by the Boydton Plank and White Oak Roads to the Southside Railroad; striking it at a point about three miles east of Sutherland Station. The Ninth Corps was to attack the intrenchments at Hatcher's Run, and the Fifth to move to Armstrong's Mills and support the Ninth at Hatcher's Run.

The Confederate lines stretched from Hatcher's Run to the Boydton Road a distance of about a mile, covering the road.

The Fifth Corps started at 4 a. m. of Oct. 27, 1864. It was composed of the 1st and 2d and two Brigades of the 3d Division, under General S. W. Crawford. The ammunition and reserve supplies remained in camp guarded by the 2d Brigade of Crawford's Division under General Henry Baxter, and 8 batteries of 34 guns. Three batteries of light 12 pdrs. 14 guns, and two batteries of 3 inch rifled, 10 guns, accompanied the expedition.

Griffin's 1st Division was 4707 strong; of these more than one-third were ignorant of the manual, and more than half the number had never fired a musket. In Ayres' 2d Division 4704 strong, there were 104 men who had not been

drilled in the manual, and 812 who had never fired a musket. In Crawford's 3d Division there were 298 raw recruits.

They moved southwesterly and westerly, meeting the rebel skirmishers at 9 a. m. and driving them into a line of breastworks.

Orders hurried Warren in command to cross Hatcher's Run and communicate with Hancock forthwith, and both Grant and Meade appeared in person at Warren's Head Quarters. Griffin's skirmish line then extended to Hatcher's Run on the left. Hancock's Corps had moved towards the Boydton Plank Road past Armstrong's Mills. Warren ordered Crawford with one Brigade of Ayres to cross the Run, place his right flank on the Run, and then move up and attack the enemy's right in flank.

Generals Grant and Meade informed Hancock in person of this movement of Crawford, and Hancock's Second Corps was ordered to extend its line to the right to connect with Crawford, and hold his position till the next morning, which he did after a skirmish with the enemy who tried to get possession of the Plank Road.

The woods were dense and the stream was crooked and these caused delay.

Warren arrived at 11.45 a. m. and rested his right on the Run in line of battle, and Griffin opened on the Confederates at 1 p. m. of the 27th, and about 4 p. m. Crawford, having come up, and formed his line on the right flank of the Confederate position fronting Griffin, began skirmishing with the enemy, but his line of march had carried him into quite a different position from what was expected, and he was in a dense forest where his men were getting lost, even the enemy it is said were bewildered, and his command was difficult to reach.

There was a consultation between Generals Meade and Warren at Armstrong's Mills, as to what should be done

with Crawford, and he was ordered to withdraw at day-break of the 28th to the north side of Hatcher's Run.

Hancock with ammunition exhausted, and seeing no advantage in holding his position, commenced to fall back at 10 p. m. of the 27th. At 10 a. m. of the 28th the road was clear of wagons, wounded and prisoners, and at 11 a. m. the Fifth and Ninth Corps had withdrawn and returned to their former positions.

The object of this movement is variously stated. Some historians believe they have authority for saying that the demonstration was made on the left by our Army to hold the enemy's attention so that he would not trouble Butler who was coming up towards Richmond from the James River, while others say that the plan was a concerted movement to attack Lee in order to prevent his sending reinforcements to oppose Butler who was to operate on that side, and prevent reinforcements being sent to Lee. That Grant was very desirous of getting possession of the railroads is made plain in his Memoirs, when he says of the railroad south by way of Danville, he was afraid the enemy was "running off his men and stores and ordnance" by it.

The result of the movement was that we advanced our line to Poplar Spring Church.

On October 31st the regular infantry serving in the Fifth Corps were again ordered to the city of New York to report to Major General John A. Dix, and the remainder of the Corps took their places once more in the fortifications before Petersburg near Fort Sedgwick.

#### AS RELATED BY MEMBERS OF THE BATTERY.

September 2, 1864, the square work of four bastions on the right was garrisoned by the Ninth Mass. Battery. The next day General Grant, General Lew Wallace and U. S. Secretary Fessenden paid a visit to camp.

## DISPOSAL OF NON-COMMISSIONED OFFICERS.

MAJOR C. A. PHILLIPS TO LIEUT. FORD. MORRIS.

September 8, 1864.

LIEUT. FORD. MORRIS A. A. A. G. Art'y Brigade 5th A. C.  
*Lieutenant.*

I have the honor to forward the following statement for the action of the proper authorities.

On the 30th of August, by order from Corps Hd. Qrs. the enlisted men, recruits and veterans of Battery C, Mass. Art'y were transferred to Battery E, Mass. Art'y, the first named battery being ordered to be mustered out.

Among the men so transferred were the following non-commissioned officers. As there are now the full number of non-commissioned officers in Battery E, I respectfully request that these serg'ts. and corp'ls may be discharged, as they cannot be mustered for pay:—

Serg't. Lysander F. Remington Present.

• " Wallace R. Ransom "

" Thomas Turner "

Corp. Charles A. Follett "

" Brooks B. Martis "

" Daniel Norcross absent wounded.

" William H. Nichols.

I am very Resp'y

Your Obed. Serv't

CHARLES A. PHILLIPS,

*Captain Battery E,**Mass. Art'y.*

FROM BRIG. GEN. HENRY J. HUNT.

ART'Y HD. QRS. A. OF P.

Sept. 20, 1864.

Respectfully returned to Hd. Qrs. A. of P.

By a return made to these Hd. Qrs. August 1st, it appears that



there would be in batteries C & E Mass. Art'y on Sept. 5, and Dec. 3, the dates of muster out.

Battery C, 63 enlisted men.

" E. 71 " "

Instead of *transferring* the men from one battery to the other I think the batteries should be *united* temporarily to serve one battery of guns, thus preserving their organization until recruits could be obtained to fill them. This would save their organization and keep the non-commissioned officers in service.

HENRY J. HUNT,

*Brig. Gen'l,*

*Ch. of Art'y.*

The opinion of General Meade, September 21, 1864, was as follows:—

"The order of the 30th ult. would seem to conflict with the instructions from the War Dept. of the 16th ult. relating to consolidations a copy of which was furnished.

The same rule will apply to a battery as to a reg't. and the 63 men of Battery C can be kept as a separate organization with the requisite number of officers and non-commissioned officers and the supernumerary mustered out."

His letter was returned to Captain Phillips by Colonel Wainwright, after having been referred to Captain W. T. Gentry commissary of musters of the Corps, the last date being Sept. 22, 1864.

---

Rumors that the enemy were moving around to the left caused some uneasiness, and on Sept. 15th hitched up at 4 a. m., unhitched at 8. Hitched up again at 2, and unhitched at dark. 16th. Hitched up in the morning and remained hitched up all day. On the 17th orders to sweep the whole camp. As soon as this was done, hitched up and packed up, and took the Battery out of line. Relieved by Stewart's Battery B, Fourth Regulars and marched to Yellow Tavern. Went into camp near Warren's Station in the vicinity of Corps Head Quarters, being held to support any part of the line. On this day Lt. Simonds was mustered in as 1st

Lieutenant and Mason W. Page was mustered in as 2d Lieutenant.

"Sunday Sept. 18, 1864. (Dyer's Notes.) Orders to clean up for inspection at 9 o'clock. We were inspected by Lieut. Spear. Weather warm and sultry. Divine services in the p. m."

#### LETTER OF Q. M. SERG'T. PEACOCK.

"CAMP NEAR SIX MILE STATION, VA.

Sept. 18, 1864.

We are in camp at the Yellow Tavern or Six Mile House, that I suppose you have read of, where the big battle took place when we first came up here. The Weldon R. R. track runs directly in front of the house only some twenty feet distant. Our line of battle is about fifty yards in front. General Warren of the 5th Corps has his Hd. Qrs. here. The house is of brick painted yellow. The past week we have been on a constant jump night and day, hitching up and remaining in suspense for a few hours, then the alarm will quiet down, and we unharness again for a short time.

The pickets get to firing in front of us, and they are so near at some points it is impossible to tell at what minute we shall see the rebels charging our works.

It takes our Battery not over ten minutes to hitch up, pack everything and be on the move. Early in the war it took us a half-hour.

Captain Phillips is doing a lot of correspondence with the War Department to get us mustered out Oct. 1st,—expiration of three years term of service,—as there was a mistake or neglect in our muster in on that date."

Sept. 19th. Corp. Jonas Shackley was discharged by Special Order No. 304 War Department, to receive a commission as 2d Lieutenant in the 24th Unattached Co. of

Mass. Heavy Artillery. 1st Serg't. E. J. Gibbs was also discharged for a commission as 2d Lieutenant in the 26th Unattached Co. Mass. Heavy Artillery.

On this day the men levelled off the park and dug two wells which employed them most of the day. In the evening Dyer went over to the 20th Maine Regt. and had a very pleasant time.

Sept. 20th the Battery was inspected at 2 o'clock by Lieut. G. W. Dresser A. A. I. G. Everything was minutely examined. John E. Dyer was personally complimented by him for being neat and clean. September 21st the Battery moved to the rear and occupied Fort Davison.

#### FROM A LETTER OF MAJOR PHILLIPS.

"NEAR PETERSBURG, VA., Sept. 22, 1864.

We have been very quiet since the first few days after we took the Weldon R. R. Last Saturday we moved out of our position outside of the line of battle on the road leading to Ream's Station, and went back into reserve near the 'Yellow House' where General Warren's Hd. Qrs. are. We immediately went to work fixing up our camp and though the ground was very dirty we made a pretty good camp. Our officers' tents were pitched under an arbor built by Col. Hoffman for his Hd. Qrs., and were very pleasant.

We fixed a pole and pins for a game quite common here which is played in this way:—Two poles are set up with a cross piece about 20 feet from the ground, and a 12 pdr. round shot or shell is hung from this cross piece by a rope so that it swings within three inches from the ground. Then we set up ten pins under it as they do in a bowling alley and swing the ball at them. The object is to hit the pins when the ball is swinging towards you. If you hit the pins when the ball is swinging from you, you lose 5. Each player swings the ball three times to make one roll and to

count just as they do in a bowling alley. It is quite a good game. General Warren rode by while we were playing it and seemed interested in it.

. . . A brigade of colored troops is camped outside the redoubt, but we keep a guard at the entrance and have the whole inside to ourselves. One of the curiosities out here is the extension of the City Point R. R. built without survey and grades, up and down hill and across the fields anywhere. It crosses the Weldon R. R. and runs fairly into the entrenched line of battle, the rails being within a foot of the face of the rifle pits."

Again on the 24th:—

"FORT DAVISON NEAR PETERSBURG,

Sept. 24, 1864.

This redoubt forms one of a series built to protect our left flank and rear, and which form a very strong line. Our left flank describes a complete semi-circle and finally runs parallel to the main line. . . . The southerly work on the Weldon R. R. is Fort Dushane. The northerly work on the west of the Jerusalem Plank Road, a large square, redoubt formerly called Fort Warren, is now named Fort Davis after Colonel Davis 39th Mass. Vols., who was killed close by. . . . Between the two bastioned works on the Weldon R. R. there are two redans mounting 4 guns each, and a 4 gun battery between Fort Dushane and Fort Davison. All the works are connected by lines of rifle pits, varying in strength, and with single or double abattis in front all the length. In front of Fort Davis there is first a row of *chevreaux de frise* formed of pointed stakes set in the ground at an angle of about 30° and fastened with iron wire to a riband about two feet from the ground. Outside of this is a row of abattis the whole forming rather a formidable obstacle.

One great innovation in this war is the introduction of

iron wire into obstacles. Abattis is always fastened with iron wire so as infallibly to trip up any one who tries to go through it. It is also extensively used in front of abattis fastened to stakes, forming a very effective obstacle to a charge.

I think we need have no fear of the Rebels attempting to repossess the Weldon R. R. and bringing on the great battle which the newspapers have been prophesying. They failed to drive us off the R. R. in the first few days after we got here, and they are too wise to attempt it now. Of course they may attempt it when their only alternative is utter annihilation, but it will amount to nothing. Their men and ours have charged rifle pits too much to run their heads against regular fortifications. The news from the Shenandoah coming on top of Mobile and Atlanta, brings the alternative of annihilation home to them; but I am inclined to think Early is too much used up to help Lee smash our left as Jackson helped him to smash our right in 1862. But, in 1862, we did not know how to dig. Not a shovelful of dirt was thrown on the left of the Chickahominy that was of any use in repelling Jackson's attack."

#### MARTIN'S BATTERY GOES HOME.

Sept. 24, 1864, the men of the Third Mass. Battery whose time had expired bivouacked in the rear of the 22d Mass. Regt. Infantry. Captain A. P. Martin and officers at Regimental Head Quarters. At 8 a. m. of September 25th, 1864, they were escorted to the boat by the 22d Regiment; "sending them off" says their historian "with ringing cheers."

Sept. 26, 1864. Orders were received to make requisition for two more guns; rifled batteries having 130 men present being made six gun batteries. Harnesses came on the 27th but no guns. On the 28th orders were received during the evening to send horses, caissons and wagons to the ammunition train in case the main body of the Corps moved.

keeping strong detachments in the fort, which was then garrisoned by the 94th N. Y., and the Fifth Mass. Battery. In the afternoon of the 29th cannonading was heard in the direction of Ream's Station.

Oct. 1st the Fifth Corps began to move to the left. Sent caissons, wagons, and all the horses to the Ammunition Train.

### QUARTERMASTER'S STATISTICS.

Quartermaster Serg't. Peacock's Account Book contains some interesting statistics relative to the horses connected with the Battery. Their color was Bay, Black, Sorrel, Gray, Roan and Buckskin. They were separated from the Battery by the following causes:—Killed, abandoned,—worn out,—died from exhaustion, died in a fit, strayed away, broke leg and was killed, died from sunstroke, from disease, killed in action, wounded and killed. May 28th, 1864, at Hanover Town, one horse died of swelled head.

Besides clothing, shelter tents, blankets, sacks,—used on the works of the Division Artillery, gunners' implements etc. such property as the following was received for use of the Battery and accounted for:—Ridge Pole, Tarpaulin Sides Harness Leather, Papers of Saddlers' Needles, Bridle, Spirits of Turpentine, Linseed Oil, Horse Nails, Wagon Tail Board, Lanyards, Castile Soap, Requisition for Stationery; Letter Paper, Foolscap, Envelopes, pins, wafers, Sealing Wax, Red Office Tape, Bottle of Ink, Stamps, Lead Pencils, Mucilage, Blotting Paper, Eraser.

### LETTER OF MAJOR PHILLIPS OCT. 2, 1864.

"During the present demonstration towards the South-side R. R. we still garrison Fort Davison, while most of the Corps are fighting. We have rested in undisturbed quiet for the last few days, hearing of the fighting only an



occasional shot. The 94th N. Y., with us, form the garrison of Fort Davison, and consider ourselves able to hold it an indefinite period.

Yesterday was very rainy and chilly, and we found tents rather uncomfortable, so after mature deliberation we concluded to effect a strategic change of base.

A series of preliminary reconnoissances in force, finally resulted in a flank movement on an upper chamber in the Gurley house, which stands about 50 feet from the entrance to the fort. This house was formerly occupied by a Mr. Gurley, said to be a rebel senator, who, alarmed by the approach of winter and the Yankees, concluded to remove, and abandon his household gods to the ruthless invader. The rest of the house is occupied by the officers of the 94th N. Y. Though somewhat dilapidated, the house is in pretty good order, and the apartment we occupy is quite luxurious, in size about 16 feet square: 4 windows on the North and South sides, fireplace East, door and closet West side. A sea green wainscoting runs around the room, and the walls have no paper. The house was probably built by Northern mechanics, and the walls are frescoed with pictures and inscriptions of the charcoal style which were evidently executed by northern hands. We have only three broken panes of glass in our windows, and the window by my bed has two blinds in good preservation. Some vandal pulled off one side of the door casing, and some lover of symmetry performed the same thing to the closet door frame, to make it match. Our closet door has seceded, and the other door handle is gone, but fortunately we have no great fear of entry thieves. We have an excellent floor of hard pine, and we availed ourselves of it by celebrating our installation last night with a clog dance interspersed with songs.

I see the N. Y. Herald credits us with the explosion of a caisson on drill. We don't do such things."

## MUSTERED OUT.

October 3, 1864, Lieut. J. E. Spear and 29 men were mustered out, their term of service of three years having expired, and left for City Point. Among them were John E. Dyer, William H. Baxter, William H. Peacock, Francis P. Washburn and Louis E. Pattison, whose notes have added so much to the interest of these columns.

---

October 4, 1864, a flag staff was erected on Fort Davison and the colors were run up amid cheers for the flag, for Lieut. Gen'l Grant and Brig. Gen'l Henry Baxter. On the 8th orders were received at 5 a. m. to hitch up and be ready for movement or action at 6. Remained hitched up all day, but heard nothing more of it. Four recruits came in. On the 9th there was Battery inspection in the morning.

October 10, 1864, marched early in the day to the front line of battery works between Fort Hays and Fort Howard. The Right section was placed in Battery No. 24, and the Left section occupied Battery No. 25. The distance between them was 700 yards. Of the work during the week Major Phillips says in his Diary:—

“During the week rebuilt barbettes and ramps in Battery 25, and built a stockade with the caissons covered by a wall tent and fly for myself and Lieut. Page. Sent to City Point in the afternoon for two guns.”

By Major Phillips' Inventory of Guns on Oct. 15, 1864, it may be seen that since Sept. 30, 1862, he had had eleven guns, all of three inch calibre.

Of the first six from the Washington Arsenal, one, received on Sept. 30, 1862, and the remainder Oct. 1, 1862, two were turned in at Acquia Creek, May 25, 1863. On June 6th, 1863, he received two guns from the Fourth R. I. Battery, and one of these was exchanged with Captain R. H. Fitzhugh July 3, 1863.

Major Phillips' Diary resumed:—

"Oct. 16, 1864. Pleasant. Battery inspection. Rec'd two guns from City Point Nos. 177 and 308. Drew 12 horses. A regiment moved in on the right of Battery 25."

October 17th the new section was placed in Battery 25 with the Left section, and the two sections were commanded by Lieutenants Hamblet and Page. The Right section in Battery 24, was under command of Lieut. Simonds. October 20th two recruits came in and the next day six more. On this day inspection by Lieut. Dresser.

On the 22d the men finished a new cook house, and on the 25th the Battery was relieved by a section of Battery G, 4th U. S. and a section of Hart's 15th New York. The Regulars went into Battery 24, and Hart's into Battery 25.

Marching orders were received, and on the 26th the Battery Wagon, Forge, and Baggage Wagon were sent back to the Ammunition Train, *en route* to City Point by night.

Thursday, Oct. 27, 1864, marched to Hatcher's Run. Started at 3 a. m. At daylight the Fifth Corps with Griffin's 1st Division leading, accompanied by Stewart's Battery B, 4th U. S. and the Fifth Mass. Battery marched through the works at our left.

Following were the 2d Division with Mink's Battery H, 1st N. Y. and Battery B, 1st N. Y. under Capt. Robert E. Rogers, and then the 3d Division with the Ninth Mass. Battery.

They advanced three miles. The most of the fighting was by the Second Corps who were on our left. It rained all the afternoon and all night, and at 8 a. m. of October 28th the Battery marched back as far as the Yellow Tavern.

Oct. 30, 1864, Lieut. Hamblet received his commission as 1st Lieutenant and Serg't. Tripp as 2d Lieutenant. On the 31st Lieut. Hamblet was mustered as 1st Lieutenant, and Nov. 1st after Lieut. Tripp was mustered in there was

a supper in the evening, oysters and roast turkey. On this date Major Phillips wrote the following letter:—

"CAMP BEFORE PETERSBURG,

Nov. 1, 1864.

At the beginning of last week we were lying quietly in position in Batteries "24" and "25," and, the cold weather being very suggestive, we had built unto ourselves a pretty good log house which we enjoyed much. On Wednesday preparations for some movement were visible all along the line. We were relieved by other batteries, new regiments posted, and other arrangements made.

Thursday morning we broke camp about 1 a. m. having been ordered to march with Griffin's Division at 4 a. m. After marching over three miles to the left, we found the Division just moving out, and fell in with them. Marched out through the breastworks and kept on in a general s. w. direction. About noon we halted the head of our column, having driven the enemy's skirmishers almost into their works. The batteries parked in a field and remained there. It began to rain and became rather wet, but it was not cold, and having pitched a tarpaulin and built a fire we got along very comfortably. One shell struck 15 yards from a tree we were under, but except this we were not under fire. After waiting in camp all the afternoon we went into camp for the night. The next forenoon we turned round and marched quietly back again and camped near the Yellow House. . . . Whether our expedition was a success or a failure depends on our intention in going out. If we went out to take the Southside R. R. we failed. If we went on a reconnoissance we succeeded.

The Army is not very cheerful over it. We have lost our good chimneys, log houses, &c. and accomplished nothing, and that is enough to make soldiers growl."

Another reference from Major Phillips' pen has been found in a letter dated Battery No. 25, Nov. 19, 1864:—

"This was a singular movement and may be understood at the North but certainly is not here.

If it was intended as a reconnoissance, most unusual preparations were made for it. All the wagon trains of the Army were sent to City Point, and the line in front of Petersburg held in very small force. We marched out a few miles but did not attack the enemy's works. Two brigades of the 5th Corps engaged the enemy's skirmish line, but did not make any attack. Not a battery in the Corps was engaged, and after remaining one night in the rain we returned to camp."

#### GEN. SCHOULER IN CAMP.

The Adjutant General of the Commonwealth of Massachusetts went to Washington in October, 1864, in order to ascertain the actual condition of the volunteers from this state and to examine the defenses of the national capital. That city had been again endangered by the demonstration of the confederate general Early in July, to overcome which the Sixth Corps had been withdrawn from before Petersburg. The letter from which the following extracts are taken is dated Nov. 14, 1864:—

#### GEN. SCHOULER'S LETTER FROM THE FIELD TO GOVERNOR ANDREW.

"Oct. 22, 1864, we started in a carriage from Washington at noon to visit our troops stationed in the forts on the Virginia side of the Potomac. . . . We passed over Chain Bridge and entered Virginia. A line of fortifications for the defence of Washington extends on the Virginia side from Chain Bridge to the Long Bridge at Washington which are connected with breastworks and rifle pits the entire distance. A short way from Chain Bridge is Fort Ethan Allen, where we stopped. This fort is very large, and is garrisoned by five companies of Massachusetts unattached heavy artillery. Here we stayed nearly an hour and then passed on to Forts Whipple, Cass, Tillinghast, Smith and Albany, each of which is garrisoned by an unattached heavy artillery company. We arrived at Washington about dark.

The country was high and rolling, intersected at short intervals with ravines. Two years ago it was thickly wooded, now good carriage roads intersect it. The woods have been felled and used for making abattis, corduroy roads, and to light up camp fires.

Oct. 24, 1864, visited the forts on the Maryland side of the Potomac, garrisoned by Mass. heavy artillery companies. The route was over Capitol Hill, then near the Navy Yard and across the 'East Branch' a stream which runs up to Bladensburg. Two miles from the Bridge I came to Fort Baker, which was under command of Lieut. Dame. Next passed on to Fort Greble, Forts Snyder and Carroll. Fort Davis next; then Dupont, Mahan and Meigs. Six miles from there was Fort Lincoln crossing East Branch. It is within a mile of Bladensburg and near General Hooker's old camp. The next are Forts Thayer and Saratoga. We drove over the Bladensburg turnpike to Washington, and arrived there at dark. There is an extension of these works on the Maryland side reaching as far as the Chain Bridge.

I found the defences of Washington almost entirely garrisoned by our men, and their good conduct and soldierly bearing are universally acknowledged.

Oct. 25, 1864. At 3 o'clock I left Washington on the mail steamer 'Express' for City Point, General Grant's Head Quarters. The sail down the Potomac was very pleasant. At early morning stopped to deliver the mail and a few passengers at Point Lookout, a large depot for rebel prisoners, commanded at present by Brig. Gen. Barnes formerly colonel of the Mass. 18th Regt. Arrived at Fortress Monroe at 8 o'clock on the morning of Oct. 26, 1864.

In Hampton Roads lay the largest fleet of war vessels and transport ships ever concentrated in any harbor in America. It was a beautiful sight and gave one an enlarged idea of the magnitude of the war, of the enterprise of our people, and of the resources of the nation.

The boat remained at Fortress Monroe two hours, and then proceeded on past Newport News to the mouth of the James, and following that river for about 70 miles, arrived at 5 p.m. at City Point, base of supplies for the Army of the Potomac. The trip was made including stops in twenty-six hours. A steamer leaves Washington every afternoon for City Point, stopping at Alexandria, Point Lookout, and Fortress Monroe.

The banks of the James are densely wooded, no villages to be seen from the steamer. As the steamer glides up the stream it passes Foster's Landing, White House Landing, Harrison's Landing, Light House Point, Fort Powhattan, &c. &c. The river is well guarded with gunboats. At City Point the river is crowded with vessels of all descriptions. The wharves extend for at least half a mile.



Numerous supplies for the Army are here stored. On ascending the bank which is 75 feet high, the first place to visit is the Provost Marshal's office, where the passes are examined. General (M. R.) Patrick is stationed here as Provost Marshal General of the Army of the Potomac.

The first information I received on landing (Oct. 26th) was that an advance had been ordered and the Army had moved that morning.

At nine o'clock in the morning (Oct. 27th) I walked over to General Grant's headquarters. The General and staff live in tents. I missed seeing him as he had left at seven o'clock for the front. Obtained a pass to Bermuda Hundred 3 miles distant. In an open space near by are 100 soldiers' graves.

The front was distant about five miles from Bermuda Hundred. I have learned that the advance of the armies was a concerted movement to obtain possession of the Danville R. R. Lee's army was to be attacked by the Army of the Potomac and the railroad taken if possible, while the Army of the James was to operate on that side and prevent reinforcements being sent to Lee and to take advantage of circumstances.

The celebrated Dutch Gap where Gen. Butler is making a canal, is about a mile and a half from Head Quarters. The Rebels were shelling the Gap,—fell short,—many hundred men working day and night; lines picketed by colored soldiers.

At 10 o'clock at night (Oct. 27th) a tremendous cannonading heard in the direction of Petersburg, which lasted for two hours.

Oct. 28, 1864. Started with Gen. Devens and others for the front. Rode about six miles, through woods, over old cornfields, by lines of breastworks, through camp, and along the Favina and Darbytown turnpike often mentioned in despatches, until we reached Dr. Johnson's farm, where we found General Butler and General Terry who commands the Tenth Army Corps. Before we arrived it had been decided to withdraw our forces and to return within our lines. This was not done though until near noon. Our skirmish line was about half a mile in advance.

On going back to headquarters the entire staff rode with the General. We went back by a more circuitous route, visited Fort Harrison and the immense line of works of which it forms an important part. We passed long lines of wagons and ambulances. Arrived at headquarters at two o'clock, having ridden about 20 miles. *I had been within four miles of Richmond.*

Arrived back at City Point Oct. 29, 1864, at about two o'clock. At 3 o'clock left City Point in the cars for the front. The railroad runs the entire length of our lines, and the camps of the different corps are on each side of it. Twelve miles from City Point is Gen.

Meade's station. His Head Quarters are nearly a mile from there. I found the ambulance in waiting for me. We drove to General Meade's Quarters. The shades of evening began to fall when I left in an ambulance for the Ninth Corps. We crossed the famous Weldon R. R. near General Warren's Head Quarters.

Oct. 31, 1864. I also visited Captain Jones and the Eleventh Battery. This company has charge of three small forts in the line of works near General Ferrero's Head Quarters. To General Meade's Head Quarters our route lay for miles through the camps of the Second and Fifth Army Corps—Hancock's and Warren's.

More men are wanted, our lines are so greatly extended; necessarily so. Passed on to the 'Yellow House,' which is the Head Quarters of General Warren, commanding the Fifth Corps. This is on the old Weldon R. R. and was a tavern and depot station six miles from Petersburg.

Arrived back at City Point at 7 o'clock, Nov. 2d. Arrived at Washington Nov. 3, 1864."

## CHAPTER XXVII.

### THE ASSAULT ON PETERSBURG.

APRIL 2, 1865.

"The wall is rent, the ruins yawn,  
And, with tomorrow's earliest dawn,  
O'er the disjointed mass shall vault  
The foremost of the fierce assault."

—*The Siege of Corinth.*

When the Sixth Corps returned from its tour of duty for the preservation of the national capital and assisting Sheridan in the Shenandoah Valley, it was to take the place in the lines before Richmond of the Fifth Corps which had been ordered out for the purpose of destroying railroads. The Fifth Corps massed near the Gurley house, and on December 7, 1864, three Divisions of the Fifth Corps, and one Division of the Second Corps, with four batteries of artillery and a Division of cavalry, started for Hicksford on the Meherrin River, 40 miles south of Petersburg.

Hicksford was the point of supply for the rebels at Petersburg. Their trains came up the Meherrin River to the Boydton Plank road, and thence through Dinwiddie Court House to Petersburg. The cavalry took the road east of the Jerusalem Plank Road and joined it again a short distance below Warwick swamp. The infantry, with Crawford leading, moved on the Jerusalem Plank Road.

When they reached the crossing of the Warwick swamp by the Plank Road, the bridge was gone, and a delay was caused by the building of a bridge strong enough to allow the passage of the trains. All through the day it rained.

Griffin's 1st Division remained on the north bank of the Nottaway River until two hours after midnight, still raining heavily, when they crossed and went into camp on the southern bank.

By night of the 8th the cavalry had partially destroyed the railroad down to Jarratt's Station, and by moonlight the Fifth Corps infantry completed its destruction to that point, and early on the morning of the 9th formed line of battle on the railroad. Each Division, as it advanced, destroyed all before it, and then marched to the left.

By 4 p. m. the cavalry had possession of Belfield, on the north fork of the Meherrin River, opposite Hicksford where the enemy was firmly entrenched, their defences consisting of three forts connected by rifle pits, the guns of which protected the bridge across the river. The works were too formidable to be taken by General Warren's command, equipped as it was, and having as a result of the raid, destroyed the railroad and the bridges on the Weldon R. R. for 17 miles, he turned back, and reached Sussex Court House at dark of the 9th.

The next day was very cold and the infantry suffered greatly, marching over the frozen mud. They reached and crossed the Nottaway River at Freeman's Ford, and then retraced their steps to the intrenchments before Petersburg, having travelled about 100 miles in six days.

General Grant being desirous of breaking up the route of supply through Hicksford, sent a Division of cavalry February 5th, 1865, by way of Ream's Station to Dinwiddie Court House, and the Fifth and Second Corps to cross Hatcher's Run at and below the crossing of the Vaughan Road, to hold Hatcher's Run and Armstrong's Mills, and to keep up communication with the intrenchments.

The rebels had been constantly at work extending their intrenchments, which were now 37 miles in length, from the White Oak Swamp to Hatcher's Run; eight miles of

these intrenchments being north of the James River, sixteen miles on the Petersburg line, and five miles along the Bermuda Hundred front. Their heavy artillery filled a space four miles in extent, between Chapin's Bluff and Bermuda Hundred.

The entire country south of the James, as far as Prince George Court House, was turned into a pasture for vast herds of cattle, which were guarded by cavalry, and butchered from day to day to afford fresh meat for the hard-worked troops in the forts and trenches.

Huge piles of baled hay and oats in sacks, lined the railway or were accumulated in the camps, which had become villages of log houses, each company and battery having its bakery and cook house. There was no complaint of poor fare or lack of clothing by the troops.

General Warren moved at 7 o'clock on February 5th, and marched down the Halifax road to Rowanty Post Office, and then to a mile above Malone's Bridge, and halted half way between Rowanty Creek as Hatcher's Run is called after joining Gravelly Run, and Dinwiddie Court House.

Following Griffin's 1st Division were 12 field pieces. A long train of forage and ammunition wagons followed Crawford. The advance guard was three squadrons of cavalry.

They were delayed by a skirmish with the enemy, and crossing the swamp and stream, but before night the Vaughan Road was reached, and the two Divisions of the Second Corps, after some difficulty, and a brush with the enemy, had established themselves at Armstrong's Mills and opened communication with Warren. About 5 p. m. they were attacked by the rebel artillery who were repulsed. At 9 p. m. Warren was ordered up to join the Second Corps Divisions. The cavalry brought up the rear of the moving column and skirmished with the enemy. The nights were intensely cold, and no fires were allowed.

Early in the morning of Feb. 6th the command crossed the run at the Vaughan Road crossing. A part of the Ninth Corps was ordered up to join the Second Corps. On the 7th the Union intrenchments had been extended to Hatcher's Run at the Vaughan Road crossing, the Second Corps holding the intrenchments on the extreme left, while the Fifth was massed in the rear of the Second near the left, and the Sixth was at Fort Fisher.

At Fort Stedman where the distance between the opposing lines was not more than 150 yards, and the pickets only 50 yards apart, on the night of March 24th, 1865, the rebels undertook to make their escape and reach the Danville railroad. They overpowered Fort Stedman and captured Batteries 10, 11, and 12, but they were all recaptured by our infantry assisted by the artillery under General John C. Tidball posted in an advantageous position. The intrenched picket line of the enemy was taken by the Second Corps, and our lines advanced, holding the enemy's picket line against repeated attempts to recapture them.

Sheridan came down from the Shenandoah Valley destroying railroads in his progress, and on March 27th formed a junction with the Armies of the Potomac and the James. His duty now was to destroy the enemy's communications with the South by means of the Southside and Danville railroads.

General Ord, commanding the Army of the James, had orders to join the Army of the Potomac, and on the evening of the 28th, he was in the rear of the Second Corps, which was ordered to cross Hatcher's Run by the Vaughan Road on the morning of the 29th, take position with its right on Hatcher's Run and its left in connection with the Fifth Corps, and advance on the enemy. General Warren with the Fifth Corps was to cross Hatcher's Run at Monk's Neck Bridge early in the morning of the 29th, and to ad-



vance toward the enemy by the Boydton Road, his right connecting with the Second Corps.

At 8 a. m. of the 29th the Fifth Corps had arrived at its destination, and at noon started to make connection with the Second Corps, which was accomplished after an encounter with the enemy on the White Oak Road, which was the shortest road to Five Forks, and securing it would force the abandonment by the enemy of the Petersburg intrenchments. It was here that the battle by which the Union forces gained possession of Five Forks was fought April 1st, 1865, while the Fifth Mass. Battery was busy elsewhere. In the afternoon and evening of March 29th Generals Warren and Griffin visited the troops of the 1st Division, who were building breastworks, subject during part of the day to a severe fire of artillery, as late as 12 o'clock at night March 31st, in front of the intrenchments of the rebels along the White Oak Road. The Artillery Reserve March 29th to April 9th, 1865, was commanded by Brig. Gen. William Hays: all light batteries,—4 Maine, 3 Massachusetts, 1 New Jersey, 5 New York, 1 Ohio, 2 Pennsylvania, 1 Rhode Island, 1 Vermont, and 1 Regular. Total 19.

When the enemy opened with artillery and musketry at 10 p. m. March 29th, they threw up several rockets. Our artillery was stationed on that part of the line occupied by the Ninth Corps, extending from Battery No. 5 on the Appomattox River to Fort Howard, a distance of about five miles.

Opposed to our batteries on the 30th March, 1865, the enemy had in position 91 guns of various calibers, from 6 pdrs. to 8-inch Columbiads, and 35 mortars, also of various calibers. Total guns and mortars 126. On our side we had 40 mortars. Total guns and mortars 131.

General Grant in his Memoirs says:

"During the night of April 2d our line was intrenched from the

Appomattox River above to the Appomattox River below. I ordered a bombardment to be commenced the next morning at 5 a. m., to be followed by an assault at six o'clock, but the enemy evacuated Petersburg early in the morning."

#### AS RELATED BY MEMBERS OF THE BATTERY.

November 4, 1864, the men began building stables for the horses, and on the 7th finished putting on the brush. The next day they laid the corduroy floors, and on the 9th Lieut. Dresser inspected the property. Nov. 10th the horses moved into their new quarters. For building these stables Major Phillips says, "It took 400 logs 8 feet long and a foot in diameter, split, and about 250 yards of brush fence 8 feet high." Nov. 11th was occupied by the men in oiling harness, and on the 12th they began a house for the 1st Sergeant. Battery inspection on the 13th.

Nov. 14, 1864, the guns were ordered into Batteries 24 and 25, where they were before the Battery left for Hatcher's Run, to relieve Captain Hart and the 15th New York Battery ordered to Washington to recruit. The next day they tore down Captain Hart's quarters which were found in bad condition, having been robbed of their chimneys and doors, and, there being plenty of timber at hand, new ones were started, including the house for the Orderly Sergeant.

Nov. 17th and 18th Major Phillips attended a meeting of a board to examine recruits at the Hospital. December 7th he received notice of his Brevet Majority.

Two guns of the 9th Mass. Battery relieved two guns of the Fifth Mass. in one of the forts, and at 5.30 they all marched to join General Crawford's Division on the Jerusalem Plank Road outside our rear line. The force consisted of three Divisions of the 5th Corps, one Division of the Second Corps and four batteries belonging to the 5th Corps viz., Mink's (Capt. Charles E. Mink) H, 1st N. Y., Stewart's B, 4th U. S., Milton's 9th Mass. and the 5th

Mass., one battery with each Division. The Battery marched with the 3d Division down the road, turned to the right, crossing the Nottoway River on pontoons, to Sussex Court House where they camped that night, sleeping on the ground without covering. Capsized one wagon containing a tent and supplies, off the bridge.

The object of the expedition was the destruction of the Weldon railroad and the Battery helped the Fifth Corps tear up the track from the Nottoway to the Meherrin River.

Dec. 8th they marched through Sussex Court House and struck the Weldon railroad near the Nottoway River. Camped near the railroad while the infantry tore it up, burnt the bridge and destroyed the track for 20 miles, as far as the Fifth Corps reached, ending at the Meherrin River. That night there was a bad storm of rain and sleet.

Dec. 10th. Much against the inclination of the men, who expected to go to Weldon, they started on the return march by the Halifax road, which is parallel to the railroad, and soon after turned into the road to Sussex Court House, leading Crawford's Division. Camped two or three miles from that town.

Dec. 11th, resumed the march at daylight. Lieut. Simonds was ordered to take the Right section to the rear, and with Gen. Edward S. Bragg's Brigade of Crawford's 3d Division, formed into a rear guard, and retired in line of battle. At night the cavalry which under Gregg covered this movement, were fired into but no serious damage was done. On this march the men suffered severely. Crossed the Nottoway and went into camp.

Dec. 12th, marched at daylight, and before night the guns were in their old places in Batteries 24 and 25, where they remained one week.

## LETTER OF MAJOR PHILLIPS.

"CAMP BEFORE PETERSBURG,

Dec. 18, 1864.

The expedition was well managed, and highly successful. The Rebels were evidently taken by surprise, and could not tell where we were going. They expected that we would push through to Weldon, and although our abilities and dispositions were equal to this task, I think General Warren went as far as his orders allowed. Perhaps had General Grant been able to communicate with us after we started, our orders might have been changed, for certainly no one could have anticipated that the Rebels would allow us to tear up 20 miles of railroad without interference. The railroad was thoroughly destroyed, the troops following the usual way. This is as follows:—A Division, for instance, is drawn up along the road and arms stacked, then every man takes hold of the rail in front of him, and all lifting together, track, sleepers, and all are turned bottom side up. This serves to loosen the rails, and all hands then pry off the sleepers, pile them up, and place the rails on top, and then set them on fire. It is a very pretty sight at night to see a line of fires several miles long. After heating the rails they are bent by men bearing down on the ends. The most effectual method of destruction is to take a red hot rail and wind it round a tree, as I saw done in several instances. Besides destroying the railroad the expedition resulted in the destruction of nearly all the houses along the route, whether done by orders or by stragglers I do not know. What was more important was the large amount of forage destroyed, probably 100,000 bushels, more or less. I was quite astonished at the richness of the country, all the barns were full of corn, and corn stacks all over the fields. I do not think much of it is left."

Major Phillips speaks of the abundance of "apple jack,

what we call cider brandy. Every family," he says, "seemed to be abundantly supplied with it, and cider presses and distilleries were scattered all around. I cannot imagine what such a sparse population did with so much liquor, but our men seemed very glad to relieve them of their surplus.

We were in the advance going out, and in the rear coming back. No hostile demonstration worth mentioning was made on the troops."

On December 19th four guns of the Battery were placed in Fort Alexander Hays, and two guns in Battery 22. General Wainwright directed Major Phillips to place 6 rifled guns and ten 12 pdrs. on the 9th Corps line, and in the afternoon Lieut. Simonds with the Right section was placed in Battery 22, between Fort Davis and Fort Sedgwick. The caissons were sent back to the Brigade camp, beyond our rear line of works between the Jerusalem Plank Road and the Weldon R. R., where the Fifth Corps had their winter camp. Captain John Bigelow with the 9th Mass. Battery was ordered to Fort Rice and Captain David F. Ritchie with Battery D, 1st N. Y., to Fort Davis.

Dec. 20th commenced the houses for the caisson camp, but stopped on account of the rain. 22d moved the houses, and put up two frames 11x14½ ft., and built winter quarters of framed houses stockaded.

From a letter of Phillips, Fort Alex. Hays, Dec. 26, 1864:—"We shall remain here a week. At the end of that time we shall go to the 5th Corps camp, between the Jerusalem Road and the Halifax Road, where my caissons are at present."

---

#### IN MASSACHUSETTS.

In 1865, John A. Andrew was Governor, Joel Hayden Lieutenant Governor, Oliver Warner, Secretary, Henry K. Oliver Treasurer. President of the Senate, Jonathan E. Field; Speaker of the House of Representatives, Alexander

H. Bullock.

U. S. Senators, Charles Sumner, Henry Wilson. U. S. Representatives, T. D. Eliot, Oakes Ames, A. H. Rice, Samuel Hooper, John B. Alley, Daniel W. Gooch, Geo. S. Boutwell, J. D. Baldwin, Wm. B. Washburn, Henry L. Dawes.

FROM GOVERNOR ANDREW'S INAUGURAL ADDRESS, 1865.

"Since the war began, four hundred and thirty-four officers whose commissions bore our seal, or who were promoted by the President to higher than regimental commands, have tasted death in the defence of their country's flag. . . . Nor will the history be deemed complete, nor our duty done, until the fate and fame of every man, to the humblest private of them all, shall have been inscribed upon the records of this Capitol there to remain, I trust, until the earth and sea shall give up their dead. And thus shall the Capitol itself become for every soldier-son of ours, a monument.

'Then plant it round with shade  
Of laurel, evergreen, and branching palm,  
With all his trophies hung, and acts enroll'd  
In copious legend, or sweet lyric song.'"

### IN VIRGINIA.

January 2, 1865, the Battery retired from the forts and the guns were taken back to camp with the 5th Corps. Jan'y 8th, Major R. H. Fitzhugh, Major Phillips, Captain Mink and Captain George Breck dined with Captain John Bigelow of the 9th Mass. Battery. It was his farewell dinner.

### LETTER OF MAJOR PHILLIPS.

"CAMP BEFORE PETERSBURG,

Jan'y 10, 1865.

I had quite a pleasant time in Fort Hays, as part of the garrison was the 56th Mass., whose Lt. Colonel Jarves is a classmate of mine. Captain Shurtleff of the same reg't. was in the class of 1861, so we had a pleasant time together. Jarves and Shurtleff dined with me on Christmas, and I returned the visit on New Year's Day.



We are now at work building winter quarters. My bed sack went into the road to lighten a wagon stuck in the mud a long time ago, but I have plenty of blankets. Our men got their Thanksgiving dinner from the North though a day or two late."

---

On the 11th the men's winter quarters were finished, and the next day stables were commenced again.

January 18, 1865, Major Phillips started on a 20 days' leave.

Jan'y 28th the guns were again placed in Fort Hays and Battery 22.

February 8th Major Phillips returned to camp, having walked from Hancock's Station, on the railroad from City Point. He found the guns of the Fifth Mass. Battery in the forts, and most of the Fifth Corps gone to the left. He brought the guns back from the front at Hatcher's Run, where they had been during the assault of Feb. 6th and 7th, 1865, and the three batteries on the left, the Ninth Mass., and Batteries L and E, 1st N. Y. Light, were relieved by three other batteries, and returned to camp. On the 12th there was battery inspection at 10.30 a. m. Battery drill in the afternoon of the 13th and the following morning. On the 14th the frame of Lieut. Simonds' house was raised. Inspection on the 19th and drill on the 20th in the forenoon. At 12 o'clock noon of the 21st a salute of 100 guns was fired by the Battery with Batteries D and G, 5th U. S., in honor of General Sherman's victory. On the 22d, Washington's birthday, there was Battery drill in the forenoon, and inspection at 2.30 p. m. by Captain Carl Berlin, brigade inspector. It was rumored that an attack was to be made on our Centre, and the Battery remained hitched up till night.

Feb. 25, 1865, marched in the rain to Hatcher's Run and relieved Captain David F. Ritchie and the 1st N. Y. Light

Battery D, who were in camp near General Griffin's Hd. Qrs. on the new line of breastworks. Here houses for the men were found, but no officers' quarters, and they began at once to build chimneys. By the 4th of March a frame house had been built for the officers and a hedge around Hd. Qrs. It rained most of the time. On the 5th the Battery was inspected, and March 6th the 1st Division Fifth Corps was inspected by General Griffin. Two days after, on the 7th, the Division was reviewed by General Meade.

March 11, 1865, the Battery was relieved at 12 o'clock by Batteries G and D, 5th U. S., Lieut. Wm. E. Van Reed, and returned to the old camp over terribly muddy roads. March 12th the Battery was inspected and on the 13th there was drill on the piece and the company was vaccinated.

#### LETTER OF MAJOR PHILLIPS.

"CAMP BEFORE PETERSBURG,

March 13, 1865.

On the 25th of last month the Battery went up to the left at Hatcher's Run, relieving another battery there. We left our camp and merely carried enough to get along with. We had a very pleasant camp in the edge of a little pine grove and the weather was quite warm. For the first few days we lived in tents, until we could build houses. Lieut. Simonds and I occupied one house 9 ft. square, with berths one over the other. This arrangement did very well until one morning Lieut. Simonds, who occupied the top berth managed to come through, and 'what a fall was there, my countrymen!' Fortunately no damage was done.

Several reviews came off while we were up there. Day before yesterday we were relieved, and returned to our old camp. . . . The (newspaper) accounts (of deserters coming in) are not exaggerated, and most of them now bring their arms with them. Almost any day one can meet squads of rebels prowling round in our lines. Day before

yesterday I saw 4 Rebels, 2 of them armed, in charge of a solitary cavalry man."

---

March 14th. Drill on the manual of the piece in the morning, followed in the afternoon by a drill by Lieut. Col. Robert H. Fitzhugh with three other batteries.

March 15th, received orders to reduce Battery to four guns, and on the next day two guns were sent to City Point to turn in. Sutlers were sent to the rear. March 17th Lieut. Simonds went home on 20 days' leave. 18th, the guns of the Fifth Mass. Battery were again placed in Fort Hays, relieving Battery B, 1st N. Y. Lieut. Mason W. Page was sent up in charge of the pieces, and Major Phillips reported in person to General Tidball.

March 19th, 1865, orders were issued reducing the batteries of the Second, Fifth, and Sixth Corps to nine batteries of four guns each.

March 25, 1865. At daylight Fort Stedman on the Ninth Corps line, was surprised by an attack by the enemy, and the Fifth Corps batteries, among them the 14th Mass. Battery, were ordered up. Lieut. Ephraim B. Nye of the 14th, formerly Quartermaster Sergeant of the 5th Battery, refusing to surrender was shot and instantly killed.

In the end the rebels were driven out with a loss of about 1700 prisoners.

#### FROM LETTERS OF MAJOR PHILLIPS.

"CAMP BEFORE PETERSBURG,

March 26, 1865.

Yesterday we had quite a scare and excitement, owing to the Rebels surprising Stedman. This is about two miles to the right of Fort Hays, so that we did not get into the scrape at all. I was waked from my quiet slumbers at day-break, by one of General Wainwright's aids, who told me

the enemy had broken through the 9th Corps line. I had the caissons hitched up, mounted my steed and rode to Fort Hays and found everything quiet there, and the men listening very unconcernedly to the firing on their right. The Rebels did not make much out of the attempt, though it is strange that our men allowed themselves to be surprised, as the line was notified at midnight to expect an attack at daylight. On Wednesday we had a perfect tornado; several trees in rear of our camp were blown down, and near the front line there is a path of prostrate trees, some 200 yards wide. . . . The caissons remain in our regular camp, and I stay there too, keeping one officer at the fort.

March 27th. General Sheridan has arrived here with his soldiers."

---

March 28th, 1865, the Army was preparing to make the movement to the left which resulted in Lee's surrender. Five batteries of the Fifth Corps marched to Corps Head Quarters at Hatcher's Run, and two batteries, the 9th Mass. Battery and Battery B, 1st Penn., reported to the Ninth Corps. Three batteries, C, E and L, 1st N. Y., with the Fifth Mass. Battery were placed under the command of Major Charles A. Phillips, and operated with the Ninth Corps in the final attack upon Petersburg.

Wednesday, March 29, 1865, the Army moved at 3 a. m. to the left. Major Phillips placed his batteries in position in rear of the main line.

April 1st 1865, about midnight an attack was made along the front of the Ninth Corps, and by daylight of the 2d, we had captured about half a mile of the rebel works, extending from the Jerusalem Plank Road towards our right.

Two Detachments of the Fifth Mass. Battery numbering 17 men, under Lieut. Mason W. Page, were engaged, and this was the last shot fired by the men of the Battery. The enemy received the fire from their own guns.

The Rebel government left Richmond about 2 o'clock in the afternoon of the 2d of April, 1865. Our forces took possession about 8.15 on the morning of the 3d. The city was in flames until extinguished by our troops.

REPORT OF BREV'T BRIG. GEN. JOHN C. TIDBALL, COM-  
MANDING ARTILLERY BRIGADE NINTH  
ARMY CORPS.

"At 4 a. m. (of the 2d April, 1865) the hour appointed for the assault upon the enemy's works in front of Fort Sedgwick, the artillery upon the whole line promptly opened and was immediately replied to in the most vigorous manner by the enemy, and it is probable that never since the invention of gunpowder has such a cannonade taken place. . . . All the guns in these forts opened rapidly for fifteen minutes with evident effect, ceasing in the exact time for the infantry to make the charge that carried the enemy's lines. . . . A Detachment of 100 men from the 1st Conn. Artillery commanded by Lieut. William H. Rogers, accompanied the column of attack upon the enemy's works in front of Fort Sedgwick, and served the captured guns throughout the day. These men were fully equipped with everything necessary to serve such artillery as would be captured. They at once seized the enemy's guns and opened fire upon him as he fell back to his second line.

During the entire day Lieutenant Rogers and his party, while opposed to all the fierce attacks of the enemy, retained possession of the captured guns, and from positions entirely uncovered from the close fire of the enemy, kept up a constant fire, which besides doing great injury to the enemy, inspired our own troops to hold that which they had gained. These men were ably seconded by Captain David F. Ritchie, Battery C, 1st N. Y. Artillery, who early in the day occupied a small work in rear of Fort Sedgwick, but after the enemy's lines were carried, it was deemed advisable to send him with his cannoneers into the captured No. 27, in which were three iron and two brass 12 pounder guns.

Captain Ritchie led his men in a most gallant manner through the embrasures of Fort Sedgwick, and across the open ground to Battery No. 27, and immediately turned with excellent judgment and effect the guns he found on the enemy. Through the whole day, notwithstanding the repeated attempts made by the enemy to retake the works, Captain Ritchie held his own: though at times unavoidably short of ammunition, he encouraged his support by cheering representations and personal exposure. . . . Fourteen thousand two hundred and fifty-one rounds, is the amount of artillery ammunition expended during the engagement. . . . It was with much pleasure that, in compliance

with an invitation from the major-general commanding the Corps, I was enabled to recommend the under-mentioned officers for promotion by brevet.

Second Lieut. Mason W. Page, Fifth Mass. Battery. All of whom did excellent service with their commands in repulsing the assault on Fort Stedman, and in the assault on Petersburg on the 2d day of April, 1865."

#### REPORT OF CAPT. DAVID F. RITCHIE.

"... At no time during the fight were there less than three guns in working order, and most of the time there were five. . . . During the day I was reinforced by ten men with a sergeant and corporal from Battery B, 1st Pennsylvania, under charge of First Lieutenant Rice; about a dozen men with a sergeant and one or two corporals from the Twenty-Seventh New York Battery, and First Lieutenant Teller, and two Detachments with their non-commissioned officers under charge of Second Lieutenant Page from the Fifth Massachusetts Battery. Captain McClelland of B, First Pennsylvania was present part of the day, and rendered good service. Captain McClelland and Lieutenant Page were slightly wounded.

To all the officers, non-commissioned officers and privates of Battery B, First Pennsylvania, Twenty-Seventh New York Independent Battery, and the Fifth Mass. Battery, who assisted to work the guns in the rebel fort, too much praise can scarcely be awarded. I have mentioned them in the order in which they came to the fort, and I would further mention particular instances of gallantry and coolness but will leave this for the officers of the respective batteries. . . .

About 4 p. m. B't Maj. C. A. Phillips, Fifth Massachusetts Battery, came up to the fort, and by virtue of his rank assumed command, remaining until the morning of the 3d instant."

---

#### THE REPORT OF MAJOR PHILLIPS

of the part taken by his command in the recent battles which compelled the Evacuation of Petersburg. A copy of this report was forwarded to Lieut. Thomas Heasley 34th N. Y. Battery, Acting Assistant Adjutant General on General Tidball's staff, Art'y Brig. 9th Corps, April 7, 1865.

HD. QRS. BATTERY (E) MASS. ART'Y.

April 5, 1865.

LIEUT. HEASLEY A. A. G. Art'y Brig. 9th A. C.

*Lieutenant.*



I have the honor to make the following report of the part taken by this Battery since the 30th of March.

The guns of the Battery were in Fort Alex. Hays and remained there until the 3d of April.

In the forenoon of the 2d of April, in compliance with orders from General Tidball I sent 2d Lieut. M. W. Page with two detachments of cannoneers to Fort Sedgwick, and from there they were ordered into the rebel battery No. 27 across the Jerusalem Plank Road. This battery had been garrisoned by Battery B, Sumter Artillery, Georgia Volunteers, with 6 Light 12 pdrs. Besides the men from my battery there were detachments from Battery C, 1st N. Y. Art'y; B, 1st Penn. Art'y, and 27th N. Y. Battery.

The gorge of the battery being open, the men were exposed to a very severe fire from sharpshooters and from one 8 in. Columbiad and two 8 in. siege Howitzers in Fort Virginia about 600 yds. in our front, as well as from several pieces of Light Artillery. These pieces were mostly silenced by noon.

Lieut. Page was wounded and obliged to leave the field about noon.

We kept up a constant and apparently successful fire until night. The behavior of the officers and men in the Battery was excellent. I make especial mention of Privates Joseph Burns and Thomas Jones. These two men were sent up with dinner for men at the guns. Upon reaching the front they volunteered for a charge upon Fort Mahone and entered it among the first. They afterwards returned to Battery 27, and helped work the guns. Private Burns was here severely wounded in the arm.

I am very respectfully

Your ob't serv't

CHARLES A. PHILLIPS *Capt. & B'v't Major,*  
*Com'd'g Battery E, Mass. Art'y.*

LIST OF CASUALTIES IN BATTERY E, MASS.  
ARTY.

APRIL 2, 1865.

## WOUNDED.

2d Lieut. Mason W. Page. Severe Gunshot wound in chest.

Private Michael Flynn. Arm. Amputated.

“ Joseph Burns. Severe contusion of arm.

“ William Roberts. Gunshot wound in back.

Total 1 officer and 3 men.

---

Diary of Major Phillips: “April 1, 1865. Very pleasant. Rode round the line. At 11 p. m. received orders to report in person to General Tidball. Was told that all the batteries were to open fire immediately, and a general attack was to be made on the rebel line.

Sunday April 2, 1865. The ball opened about midnight. The brigade at Fort Hays advanced, captured the picket line, and by daylight had sent in about 150 prisoners. By sunrise we held a large part of the rebel line in front of Fort Hell (Sedgwick) and were firing the Rebel's guns at them. About 10 a. m. sent Lieut. Page with two detachments to Fort Sedgwick. He soon went into Battery 27 to man captured guns. . . .

## FROM A LETTER OF MAJOR PHILLIPS.

“CITY POINT, VA.

April 6, 1865.

. . . The 56th Mass. took the Rebel Battery No. 27 on the Plank Road mounting six 12 pdr. guns, and Captain Ritchie commanding one of my batteries went in with his cannoneers to work the rebel guns.” After giving the names of the other Detachments ordered in he says:—“The guns were handled in good shape under a very hot fire from

the enemy. Battery '27' is an open battery *i. e.* open in the rear, towards Petersburg, consequently, after the guns were turned round our men had no protection and might as well have been in the open field." Their guns, as described in his report, he says "ought to have knocked us all to pieces in 15 minutes, but they fired grape, canister, and shell at us with their usual inaccuracy. Our only salvation for the first two or three hours was to fire as fast as possible, and we kept them pretty quiet. About 10 a. m. a charge was made on Fort Mahone, the work on the left of 'Battery 27,' and it was carried, two of my men entering the work at the head of the column with muskets. Soon after, Lieut. Page was struck in the breast and went to the rear. I had up to that time remained in Fort Hays, but when Lieut. Page came back I concluded to go up. Just as I reached Fort Sedgwick the Rebels had recaptured Fort Mahone and the troops with the exception of the 56th Mass. had left 'Battery 27' in a panic. I did not like the looks of things, but I jumped through an embrasure and ran for the front. The plain between Fort Sedgwick and 'Battery 27' was swept by musketry and artillery from Fort Mahone, and people travelling across it went rather in a hurry. I had to cross our old picket line and the old rebel picket line. On both of these I found numbers of demoralized troops, but they could not be persuaded to go to the front. At the rebel picket line I halted a moment to get breath, and at that moment the 114th N. Y. (Zouaves) started at a run from the left of Fort Sedgwick to 'Battery 27' and entered it by the left, just as I entered by the right. In the ditch of 'Battery 27' I found demoralized infantry and artillery who reported our men all driven out. I climbed up to an embrasure and saw one of my men, and one of Captain Ritchie's loading a gun, so I jumped through and found everything all right though it had been a narrow escape. The rebels had got so near that we had spiked one gun.

We kept up our firing and gradually got troops back, until we felt pretty secure. Our greatest fear was that we should get out of ammunition as it had to be brought up by men carrying one round in each hand across the open plain. Although in some respects disagreeable we rather enjoyed it. There was a great sense of freedom in firing the rebel guns as we did not care whether we burst them or not. We dismounted one gun by the recoil, and split the reinforce on the breech of another. We captured the clothing, papers, &c. of our predecessors, and found that the battery had been held by Battery B, Sumter Artillery, Captain Patterson. I obtained Captain Patterson's Ordnance Returns and found most of his Ordnance on hand. During the afternoon we did not fire much, but sheltered ourselves in the bomb proofs and traverses, and laughed at the infantry who came up in the muddiest plights and tumbled through the embrasures. . . . About midnight we found the Rebel line was deserted and our troops occupied Fort Mahone. We could then see large fires in Petersburg, and knew it was evacuated."

---

In the Adjutant General's Report, 1865, of the state of Massachusetts, appears the following in relation to the 56th (First Veteran) Regiment Infantry:—

"The regiment held for a long time the line of rebel works on the Jerusalem Plank Road, assisted only by the Fifth Mass. Battery. All our other troops had been forced to abandon the line, and had not the Fifty-Sixth held the key-point with great tenacity, the rebels would have regained the whole line."

CHAPTER XXVIII.

THE LAST CAMP IN VIRGINIA  
AND THE  
LAST MARCH.

"And those who knew each other not,  
Their hands together steal;  
Each thinks of some long-hallowed spot,  
And all like brothers feel.  
Such holy thoughts to all are given  
The lowliest has his part;  
The love of home, like love of heaven,  
Is woven in our heart."

BRETON SONG IN LEVER'S *Charles O'Malley*.

The withdrawal of the Confederate troops from Petersburg presaged a movement by their leaders to possess themselves of a last resort, which in General Grant's judgment would be either Danville or Lynchburg, and he at once took measures to interrupt its progress by cutting off the railroads leading to those cities. On the morning of April 3, 1865, he commenced the pursuit of the rebel army by sending forward the cavalry to Deep Creek, followed by the Fifth Corps, and on the 5th by the Second and Sixth Corps, all forming line of battle at Jetersville the Fifth Corps holding the Centre.

Lee's Army was rapidly concentrating at Amelia Court House, and the 24th and 25th Corps took the southern route by way of Black's and White's Station, Burkesville and High Bridge. Having advanced the Second, Fifth, and Sixth Corps four miles, with the intention of giving battle to Lee, Meade became aware that Lee's Army had passed the Left of his Army during the night of the 5th of April,

1865, and that a strong column of infantry, which had been encountered on Flat Creek, composed his rear guard.

General Meade at once ordered "right about face," and the Second Corps proceeded to Deatonsville, crossing Flat Creek, the Fifth Corps went to the right, through Paineville, and the Sixth Corps joined the cavalry, under Sheridan's command, at Jetersville. The Second Corps met the enemy under Gordon at Flat Creek, and pursued him for 14 miles to the forks of a road, where he was reinforced by the Confederates who had crossed Sailor's Creek and made a stand at Rice's Station on high ground where they went about the construction of temporary breastworks; not unmolested, for our cavalry had succeeded in striking the column at a weak point, capturing 16 pieces of artillery, 400 wagons, and a large number of prisoners.

Our forces in the mean time had continued the pursuit of Gordon, who attempted to make a last stand at Sailor's Creek, but was beaten by the Second Corps, who took 4 guns, 13 flags, and 1700 prisoners. Here, also, Lee lost a large part of his wagon trains which were massed at the crossing of the creek. Gordon reached High Bridge, which was a railroad bridge, safely that night, as the Second Corps halted after crossing the creek.

At Rice's Station, the rebel general Anderson, behind his temporary breastworks, found himself cut off by our forces from the road in his front, and before he was able to decide upon any movement, part of the Sixth Corps charged upon Ewell, who had come to Anderson's assistance at the same time that our cavalry attacked Anderson. The result was a total rout of the enemy, and the destruction of Ewell's entire command.

The Fifth Corps bivouacked on Sailor's Creek on the night of the 6th of April, having encountered the enemy at Paineville and captured a large number of guns and army wagons. So many supplies had been captured that the



enemy began to be seriously crippled. On this night the Confederates under Longstreet crossed to the north bank of the Appomattox at Farmville, and in the morning started out on the leading road through Appomattox Court House to Lynchburg, leaving a force of cavalry in the vicinity of Farmville. Also, on the 7th, Gordon crossed High Bridge to the north bank of the Rappahannock, followed by the confederate general Mahone's Division.

General Sheridan had protected the Danville railroad; the 24th Corps was moving towards Farmville; General Griffin with the Fifth Corps was on the way to Prince Edward Court House. The Second Corps crossed High Bridge on the 7th notwithstanding the attempted destruction of the bridge by the enemy, and following the enemy up the river to Farmville, overtook him, and cut off a large number of his wagons.

While this was being accomplished, the Confederates had concentrated near the Lynchburg road, and the Fifth Corps had crossed the Lynchburg railroad at Rice's Station, and was at Prince Edward Court House.

At 8.30 p. m. of April 7th, General Grant being satisfied that further resistance on the part of the Confederates was useless, and that the sacrifice of more lives savored of inhumanity, sent a note to General Lee, asking him to surrender that portion of the Confederate Army known as the Army of Northern Virginia, and received a reply asking the terms Grant would offer on condition of the surrender. The reply went a long way around by way of High Bridge, and General Lee moved off with his command during the night. He was followed at 5.30 a. m. of the 8th by the Second and Sixth Corps on the road to Lynchburg, and General Grant wrote the letter offering to meet Lee to arrange terms of surrender at any point agreeable to him, which was sent from our front into the rear guard of the enemy's forces while we were still in purusit, and the cavalry came up from

the vicinity of Prince Edward Court House to Appomattox Station, arriving early in the evening, having made important captures of artillery supply wagons, and three railway trains. Moving up to Appomattox Court House they formed across the road along which the Confederates were moving. The road from the Court House to Lynchburg was held by our troops.

At dusk of the 8th General Lee's reply was received by our advance at New Store, and sent back ten miles to General Grant at Curdsville.

Griffin with the Fifth Corps bivouacked at 2 a. m. of the 9th within 2 miles of Appomattox Court House, after a march of 29 miles, and at 4 a. m. moved out and reached General Sheridan's Head Quarters near the Court House at 6 a. m. April 9th. The cavalry were reported still fighting, and two Divisions of the Fifth Corps moved rapidly out in the direction of the firing, and forming two lines of battle drove the enemy from the hills where he had established his artillery, taking a number of prisoners, wagons and guns. Fighting was going on in the town when General Sheridan ordered a suspension of hostilities as General Lee was about to surrender.

#### AS TOLD BY MEMBERS OF THE BATTERY.

April 3d, 1865, the guns of the Fifth Mass. Battery were removed from Fort Hays.

Phillips' Diary: "April 3, 1865. The Rebels burnt up all stores &c. last night and evacuated, and our troops entered Petersburg at 5 a. m. I walked to within a short distance of the city, passed two 32 pdr. Howitzers and one 8 in. Columbiad spiked. . . . The 9th Corps moved up to Petersburg."

In his letter written at City Point April 6, 1865, Phillips says of the advance:—

"The advance was ordered to be made at 5 a. m. and then

everybody rushed for the city. About 2 a. m. I had one gun carried forward down the Plank Road in advance of everything, and tried to shell Petersburg, but I am afraid I did not succeed in reaching it. I sent the men back to Fort Hays, and in the afternoon rode into Petersburg. It is quite a pretty place, and the number of negroes was astonishing."

April 4th in the evening the Battery marched to City Point, and on the 5th became a part of the Second Brigade of the Artillery Reserve of 21 batteries. Major Phillips was placed in command of the Second Brigade, consisting of the Fifth Mass. Battery and Batteries C, E, G & L, 1st New York. The Brigade was camped about two miles from City Point.

From Major Phillips' Letter of April 6th:—"All the infantry of the Army followed the Rebels, the artillery left behind has been organized into an Artillery Reserve like the one I was in at Gettysburg. This consists of 4 Brigades, and I am in command of the 2d Brigade, consisting of five batteries. We are camped just outside the fortifications of City Point, and have a very pleasant camp. We marched down here day before yesterday. Lieut. Page is in the hospital at City Point. Private Flynn has lost his arm."

Sunday, April 9, 1865, news was received, in the evening, of the surrender of General Lee and his Army.

April 12th, 1865, four years to a day since the attack on Sumter, the flag of the Union was restored with appropriate ceremonies to its citadel, by the same hands which had been compelled to lower it when the fort was surrendered. It was a pleasant day. Ten thousand prisoners including ten generals, went by the camp to City Point.

Phillips' Diary: "April 13, 1865. Rainy. Sent off 24 horses from the Battery, and 104 from the Brigade to the batteries at the front."

## LETTER OF MAJOR PHILLIPS.

"HD. QRS. 2D BRIG. ART'Y RESERVE

CITY POINT, April 21, 1865.

The news of President Lincoln's death came on us very suddenly. I heard of it at midnight on Friday and at the same time we were informed that the *paroled prisoners* were making their way in large numbers to City Point with hostile intent. As our force here is not very large, we were obliged to do picket duty for the occasion, and I sent out 30 horsemen armed and equipped to patrol the country. The same thing was done the next night, and then, the alarm having subsided, it ceased. Our only achievement was the capture of 1500 rounds of cartridges for Spencer rifles in a house near by."

## THE PRESIDENT ASSASSINATED.

President Abraham Lincoln died Saturday, April 15, 1865, at 22 minutes past seven in the morning. He had been shot the evening previous at Ford's Theatre in Washington.

April 23d the 9th Mass. Battery joined the Brigade of which Major Phillips was in command, and Second Lieut. William Park Jr. was detailed as adjutant general on Major Phillips' staff.

April 30, 1865, the Fifth Mass. Battery, Lieut. Harrison O. Simonds, was assigned to the Artillery Brigade Fifth Army Corps under B'y't Brig. Gen. Charles S. Wainwright. The other batteries composing the Brigade were six N. Y. light batteries, two Regulars, and the 15th N. Y. Heavy, Company M. The Fifth Mass. Battery was then serving with the Artillery Reserve.

May 3d the Artillery Reserve marched at 7.30, the 3d Brigade leading, 2d Brigade next. Crossed the Appomattox by a bridge of 21 pontoons at Broadway Landing,

crossed the James at Aiken's Landing, and camped about two miles beyond, just outside the rebel lines, near the river. Major Phillips rode into the rebel lines; found the works very fine especially the bomb proofs.

Phillips' Diary: "May 4, 1865. Marched at 6 a. m. 2d Brigade leading, into Richmond, up Main Street to 18th, up 18th, and the Mechanicsville pike, and camped about 2 miles beyond Mechanicsville. In the afternoon Captain Ritchie, Simonds and I rode down to Gaines Mills.

May 5th marched at 6 a. m., 2d Brigade in the rear. Rain, and muddy. Left the Mechanicsville pike and took the road to Pole Green Church and Hanover Court House, the one we marched on the 27th of May, 1862. Camped between the Court House and the river.

May 6, 1865. Delayed until 2 p. m. by the pontoon bridge. Crossed the Pamunkey, and camped just beyond. Hd. Qrs. in front of Mr. Tunstall's houses. Crossed the Pamunkey River at Littlepage's Bridge.

May 7th. Marched at 4 a. m., forded the Mattaponi at Milford, and camped at Bowling Green. 8th. Marched at 5 a. m. to Fredericksburg, and would have crossed, but received orders from General Meade to camp at Hamilton Crossing. 9th. Crossed the Rappahannock and marched through Stafford C. H. to Acquia. 10th. Marched through Dumfries and camped about 4 miles beyond. 11th. Marched through Fairfax Station and C. H. to Annandale and camped. Stopped to see Scott at the Court House. Very cold and rainy during the night. 12th, cool but pleasant. In camp all day. The 5th Corps passed us.

May 13, 1865. Marched to a point about three miles from Alexandria between Fort Reynolds and Fort Barry and went into camp."

This was the last camp of the Battery in Virginia.

May 15th Major Phillips sent to Alexandria for ammunition chests. On the 22d he inspected the Brigade. He

as well as other officers and men of the Battery attended the Grand Review in Washington of the Army of the Potomac and Sherman's great Army, but the Battery was not in line.

May 28th Major Phillips rode with Captain Milton and others to see "Forts Ward, Worth, Williams, and Battery Rodgers, the latter in Alexandria, mounting five 200 pdr. Parrotts and one XV in. gun."

May 30th Lieut. Page came into camp in the evening with orders to turn in the batteries, and the next day the Maine batteries in the Reserve were turned in.

June 1, 1865, was appointed a day of fasting and prayer.

#### FROM A LETTER OF MAJOR PHILLIPS.

"NEAR WASHINGTON

June 1, 1865.

I expect to turn in the Battery tomorrow, and we shall start for Massachusetts as soon as we can get transportation. Today being Fast Day there is no business done, or I should be in at the Arsenal."

June 1st the Fifth Army Corps of the Army of the Potomac ceased to exist.

Diary of Major Phillips; "June 2, 1865. Turned in Battery at the Arsenal; horses at Giesboro (?) Pt. and wagons on G Street.

June 3, 1865. Applied for transportation to Readville. At 11 p. m. received orders to start the next morning. Illuminated camp. Rode round in the afternoon visiting the 5th Corps.

#### THE LAST MARCH.

June 4, 1865. At 4 a. m. started for Washington; got on the cars about 11, reached Baltimore about sunset; changed cars.

June 5, 1865. Reached Philadelphia at sunrise, break-



fasted, and took the Camden and Amboy R. R. for New York. Arrived at New York at 4½, put the men on board the 'Commodore,' Stonington line."

The *Boston Journal* of the 5th in its announcement of the arrival of the Battery said:—

"The old organizations arriving in this city come under orders to report at once to the U. S. mustering officer, and this precludes any reception in their honor."

Phillips' Diary continued: "June 6th, 1865. Arrived at Readville about 8, and went into barracks. Reported to Major Clark in Boston (see p. 13 "The Battery Flags") and went to work on Muster Out Rolls."

On the 12th of June, the Battery was mustered out of the United States service, and on the 24th the men were paid off at Readville and dispersed to their homes.

The report of Major C. A. Phillips to Adjutant General Wm. Schouler closes with the following words:—

"This, sir, ends the record of the Fifth Battery. They have tried to do their duty, and the record speaks for itself. By orders from Head Quarters of the Army of the Potomac, they carry on their flag the names Yorktown, Hanover Court House, Mechanicsville, Gaines Mills, Malvern Hill, Second Bull Run, Fredericksburg, Chancellorsville, Gettysburg, Rappahannock Station, Mine Run, Wilderness, Spottsylvania, North Anna, Bethesda Church, Petersburg, Weldon R. R., and Hatcher's Run. This list of battles, and our list of killed and wounded, will show what dangers we have been through. As to our conduct throughout our term of service, others must judge."

In the true copy of Major Phillips' Discharge here given, the year of his enrollment should be 1861, and his age when discharged was 24.

#### DISCHARGE PAPERS OF MAJOR PHILLIPS.

TO ALL WHOM IT MAY CONCERN.

[Picture of an American eagle surrounded by stars,

standing on a shield, with the national colors in the background.]

Know ye, That Charles A. Phillips, a Captain & B't Maj. of Company (E) Massachusetts Artillery Volunteers, who was enrolled on the 18th day of October one thousand eight hundred and sixty-two to serve Three years or during the war, is hereby DISCHARGED from the service of the United States this 12th day of June, 1865, at Readville, Massachusetts, by reason of Muster Out of Company. (No objection to his being re-enlisted is known to exist.)\*

Said Charles A. Phillips was born in Salem, in the state of Massachusetts, is 20 years of age, 5 feet 10¼ inches high, Light complexion, Blue eyes, Light hair, and by occupation when enrolled a law student.

Given at Readville, Mass. this 12th day of June, 1865.

ROBT. DAVIS,

1st Lt. & B't Maj. Capt. 2d U. S. Inf.

*Mustering Officer.*

\* This sentence will be erased *should there be anything in the conduct or physical condition* of the soldier rendering him *unfit* for the Army.

[A. G. O. No. 99]

Across the page in red ink is written:—

Paid in full. A. HOLMAN,  
Pay. U. S. A.

June 26, 1865.

On the back is a printed form of the "Oath of Identity"

---

#### ACCOUNTS ALL SETTLED.

Certificate of  
Non-Indebtedness on  
account of Ordnance  
Stores.

ORDNANCE OFFICE,  
WAR DEPARTMENT,  
WASHINGTON, D. C.,  
April 23, 1866.

CAPT. CHAS. A. PHILLIPS,  
*Battery E, Mass. Artillery B't Maj. U. S. Vols.*  
*Salem, Mass.*

*Sir:*

I have to acknowledge the receipt of your affidavit covering your accountability for Ordnance and Ordnance Stores.

The records of this Office show that no returns for such property

are due from you, and you are therefore relieved from all accountability on that account.

Respectfully

Your obedient servant.

By Order of the Chief of Ordnance,

JNO. R. M'GUINNESS,

*Lieut. of Ordnance,*

*Brev't Capt. U. S. A.*

*Ass't to Chief of Ordnance.*

QUARTERMASTER'S STORES. TO MAJ. C. A. PHILLIPS.

TREASURY DEPARTMENT,

THIRD AUDITOR'S OFFICE,

May 13, 1870.

*Sir:*

It becomes my duty to notify you that your Returns of Quartermaster's Stores for the period of 4th Qr. 1862, to June, 1865, having passed the administrative scrutiny of the proper military bureau, have been examined in this Office and found correct.

This closes your accountability for property of the Quartermaster's Department, so far as the same is known to this Office.

Very respectfully,

ALLAN RUTHERFORD,

*Auditor.*

CHAS. A. PHILLIPS,

*Capt. Battery E,*

*Mass. Lt. Art'y.*

With the special approval of the chairman of the committee on its publication, the following extract from an address of Governor Andrew in honor of the dead, and the last verse of Colonel T. W. Higginson's "Waiting for the Bugle," in sympathy with the living soldiers of the War for the Preservation of the Union, will fitly close this history of nearly four years of life in camp, on the march, and in the field, of the Fifth Massachusetts Battery, Light Artillery:—

"By the homely traditions of the fireside, by the headstones in the church yard consecrated to those whose forms repose far off in rude graves by the Rappahannock, or sleep beneath the sea, embalmed in the

memories of succeeding generations of parents and children, the heroic dead will live on in immortal youth. The great proclamation of liberty will lift the Ruler who uttered it, our Nation and our age above all vulgar destiny."

---

"Though the bivouac of age may put ice  
in our veins,  
And no fibre of steel in our sinew remains;  
Though the comrades of yesterday's march are  
not here,  
And the sunlight seems pale and the branches  
are sere:  
Though the sound of our cheering dies down  
to a moan,  
We shall find our lost youth when the  
bugle is blown."

[FINIS.]

PROMOTIONS AND RESIGNATIONS OF COM-  
MISSIONED OFFICERS  
OF  
THE FIFTH MASS. BATTERY, LIGHT ARTILLERY.

1861.

Sept. 28, 1861, George D. Allen of Malden, was commissioned First Lieutenant.

Oct. 8, 1861, John B. Hyde of New Bedford, was com. 2d Lieut.

Robert A. Dillingham of New Bedford, 3d Lieut.

Charles A. Phillips of Salem, 4th Lieut.

Oct. 23, 1861, Max Eppendorff of New Bedford was com. Captain.

1862.

Jan'y 24, 1862, Captain Max Eppendorff resigned and was discharged.

Jan'y 25, 1862, First Lieutenant George D. Allen was promoted Captain.

Second Lieutenant John B. Hyde was promoted 1st Lieut.

Third Lieutenant Robert A. Dillingham was promoted Junior First Lieut.

Fourth Lieutenant Charles A. Phillips was promoted Second Lieut.

Henry D. Scott of New Bedford was com. Junior 2d Lieut.

July 12, 1862, First Lieutenant John B. Hyde and Junior First Lieutenant Robert A. Dillingham, resigned and were discharged.

July 13, 1862, Second Lieutenant Charles A. Phillips was promoted 1st Lieut.

Junior Second Lieutenant Henry D. Scott was promoted Junior 1st Lieut.

Peleg W. Blake of New Bedford was com. 2d Lieut.

Aug. 1, 1862, Frederic A. Lull of Cambridge was com. Junior 2d Lieut.

Oct. 17, 1862, Captain George D. Allen resigned and was discharged.

Oct. 18, 1862, First Lieutenant Charles A. Phillips was promoted Captain.

Junior Second Lieutenant Frederic A. Lull was promoted 1st Lieut.

Joseph E. Spear of Quincy was com. 2d Lieut.

1863.

July 30, 1863, Second Lieutenant Peleg W. Blake was promoted 1st Lieut.

Nathan Appleton of Boston was com. 2d Lieut.

July 31, 1863, First Lieutenant Frederic A. Lull was promoted Captain of 2d Reg't. Mass. Heavy Artillery.

1864.

March 11, 1864, Second Lieutenant Joseph E. Spear was promoted 1st Lieut.

First Lieutenant Henry D. Scott was promoted Captain 16th Mass. Battery, Light Artillery.

Harrison O. Simonds of Boston was com. 2d Lieut.

June 18, 1864, First Lieutenant Peleg W. Blake was killed in action.

June 19, 1864, Second Lieutenant Nathan Appleton was promoted 1st Lieut.



Samuel H. Hamblett of Salem was com. 2d Lieut.

Aug. 25, 1864, First Lieutenant Nathan Appleton resigned and was discharged.

Aug. 26, 1864, Second Lieutenant Harrison O. Simonds was promoted 1st Lieut.

Mason W. Page of New Bedford was com. 2d Lieut.

Oct. 3, 1864, First Lieutenant Joseph E. Spear resigned and was discharged.

Oct. 4, 1864, Second Lieutenant Samuel H. Hamblett was promoted 1st Lieut.

Charles M. Tripp of New Bedford was com. 2d Lieut.

1865.

April 13, 1865, Second Lieutenant Charles M. Tripp resigned and was discharged.

June 12, 1865, Captain Charles A. Phillips, First Lieut. Samuel H. Hamblett, Jun. First Lieut. Harrison O. Simonds, Second Lieut. Mason W. Page, resigned and were discharged. Battery mustered out.

---

#### DISCHARGED FOR PROMOTION.

Nov. 3, 1862, Quarter Master Sergeant Timothy W. Terry to be Second Lieutenant in 13th Mass. Battery.

June 4, 1863, Edward E. Rice, Special Order No. 219, War Department, June 3, 1863, to accept a commission.

July 3, 1863, First Lieutenant Frederic A. Lull to be Captain in 2d Mass. Heavy Artillery.

July 15, 1863, Sergeant John W. Morrison discharged to accept a commission.

Dec. 15, 1863, Sergeant Otis B. Smith to be First Lieutenant 2d Mass. Heavy Artillery.

March 8, 1864, Corporal Ephraim B. Nye to be Second Lieutenant 14th Mass. Battery.

March 11, 1864, First Lieutenant Henry D. Scott to be

Captain of the 16th Mass. Battery.

Sept. 19, 1864, Corporal Jonas Shackley and Corporal Elisha J. Gibbs, to be Second Lieutenants in the 4th Mass. Heavy Artillery.

Oct. 27, 1864, Wallace R. Ransom to be Second Lieutenant 29th Unattached Co., Mass. Heavy Artillery.

---

Twelve years after the war Captain Nathan Appleton and First Lieutenant John F. Murray held commissions in the famous and historic Battery A, Massachusetts Volunteer Militia, which in command of Captain Edward J. Jones went to the front Oct. 1, 1862, and served nine months as the 11th Mass. Battery.

---

#### DIED FROM DISEASE WHILE IN SERVICE.

June 14, 1862, Corporal Henry C. Parsons, Gaines Mills, Va., Typhoid fever.

Oct. 11, 1862, Corporal William G. Warren, Baltimore, Md., Typhoid fever.

Nov. 28, 1862, Private William S. Wilcox, Falmouth, Va., Consumption.

March 13, 1864, Private Philo L. Braley, Rappahannock Station, Va., Typhoid fever.

March 22, 1864, Private Lewis P. Clark, Galloupe's Island, Boston Harbor.

June 7, 1864, Private Abner Foster, Washington, D. C., Typhoid fever.

Aug. 27, 1864, Private Alvin Faunce, Washington, D. C., Typhoid fever.

Aug. 28, 1864, Private Thomas P. Atkins, Portsmouth Grove, R. I., Dysentery.

Oct. 7, 1864, Private Edwin M. Dudley, Washington, D. C., Heart disease.

Nov. 10, 1864, Private William G. Boutwell, Washington, D. C.,

May 10, 1865, Thomas Flanagan, Washington, D. C.  
Recruit transferred from Third Mass. Battery.

### KILLED IN SERVICE.

June 27, 1862, *Gaines Mills*:

Corporal Albert F. Milliken.

Private Edwin F. Gustine.

Dec. 13, 1862, *Fredericksburg*:

Corporal Edward M. Platts.

July 1-3, *Gettysburg*:

Private John M. Verity.

Detailed from

" Edward Fotheringham. 10th N. Y. Battery.

" Henry W. Soule.

" William L. Purbeck.

" John M. Canty.

" John F. Hathaway.

" Martin J. Coleman.

May 9, 1864, *Laurcl Hill*:

Private John W. Boynton.

" Joseph Kierstead, 118th Penn. Vols.

June 2, 1864, *Bethesda Church*:

Private Frederick D. Alden.

June 3, 1864, *Bethesda Church*:

Private William H. H. Lapham.

June 8, 1864, *Chickahominy*:

Private William J. Sheergold.

" Henry D. Crapo.

" Charles P. Carling.

June 18, 1864, *Petersburg*:

First Lieutenant Peleg W. Blake.

Private Benjamin S. Kanuse.





## WOUNDED IN SERVICE.

June 27, 1862, *Gaines Mills*:

Corporal John Agen.

Private William H. Ray.

“ Charles D. Barnard.

July 1, 1862, *Malvern Hill*:

Private Jacob Peacock.

“ Robert King.

Aug. 30, 1862, *Second Manassas*:

Private Francis Oldis.

Dec. 13, 1862, *Fredericksburg*:

Private Robert Brand.

July 1-3, 1863, *Gettysburg*:

Private Henry G. Graffleman, 10th N. Y. Battery

Lieutenant Henry D. Scott.

Corporal Thomas E. Chase.

“ John Agen.

Private John G. Sanford.

“ Henry Fitzsimmons.

“ George B. Trumbull.

“ William E. Estee.

“ William H. Dunham.

“ Daniel K. Shackley.

“ John H. Olin.

“ William A. Waugh.

“ William McKern, 10th N. Y. Battery.

Nov. 27, 1863, *Mine Run*:

Lieutenant Henry D. Scott.

May 9, 1864, *Laurel Hill*:

Private John Mensing, 118th Penn. Vols.

May 12, 1864, *Spottsylvania C. H.*:

Corporal Benjamin Graham.

Private Albion K. P. Hayden.

“ Thomas H. Mensing, 118th Penn. Vols.



May 25, 1864, *North Anna River and Virginia Central R. R.*

Second Lieutenant Nathan Appleton.

June 2, 1864, *Bethesda Church:*

Private William Reynolds.

June 8, 1864, *Chickahominy:*

Private Edward F. Smith.

“ David McVey.

June 18, 1864, *Petersburg:*

Private Joseph L. Knox.

“ Alexander N. Atwood.

July 30, 1864, *Petersburg:*

Sergeant Charles F. Stiles.

Aug. 21, 1864, *Weldon Railroad:*

Sergeant Charles F. Stiles.

Private Paesiello Emerson.

April 2, 1865, *Petersburg:*

Second Lieutenant Mason W. Page.

Private Michael Flynn.

#### PRISONERS OF WAR.

June 27, 1862, *Gaines Mills:*

Private Richard Heyes.

“ Edward F. Smith.

“ Lorenzo D. Brownell.

“ Charles D. Barnard.

Nov. 27, 1863, *Mine Run:*

Private William Greeley.

## THE PROCEEDINGS OF THE FIFTH MASSACHUSETTS BATTERY ASSOCIATION.

By BREVET CAPTAIN NATHAN APPLETON.

"Later the storms of rain, accompanied with thunder and lightning, reminding one of the battles of the years of manhood's prime, played round it."

—N. A.'s *Recollections of Mont Blanc*.

The Fifth Massachusetts Battery, like most of the regiments and batteries of the state, formed an organization not long after the war was over. The date of ours was 1870.

I was away many of the early years of its existence, and did not attend one of the meetings until October 7th, 1877. This one was held at "Parker's," Boston, and for it in the dining room I loaned the lithograph of the battle of Gaines Mills, and the engraving of Gettysburg, the battle scene painted by James Walker though planned by Colonel John B. Batchelder. In these battles the Battery suffered most.

Since the last reunion, held three years previous, Captain Phillips, who was President of the association, had died. Captain George D. Allen was chosen President for the ensuing year, and I was chosen Vice President together with Captain H. D. Scott, and Patrick Welsh. John F. Murray was elected Secretary, and George H. Leach Treasurer.

### THE DEATH OF MAJOR PHILLIPS.

Charles Appleton Phillips, born in Salem, Mass., January 31, 1841, was the son of Hon. Stephen Clarendon Phillips,

mayor of Salem, and member of congress from Massachusetts, and grandson on the maternal side, of Margaret Appleton, of the Ipswich Appleton stock, who married Willard Peele of Salem.

At the close of the war he resumed the study of law, and his death took place March 20, 1876, at Gold Hill, a small mining town near Virginia City, Nevada, of congestion of the lungs, while looking after the interests of his clients. His body was received in Salem Friday afternoon April 14th, for interment in the family lot in Harmony Grove.

At a stated meeting of the Massachusetts Commandery of the Military Order Loyal Legion, United States, held on Wednesday, April 5, 1876, at the Headquarters in Boston, a tribute to his memory was adopted, which was afterwards printed.

#### LOYAL LEGION TRIBUTE.

##### HEADQUARTERS

COMMANDERY OF THE STATE OF MASSACHUSETTS,  
BOSTON, April 10, 1876.

##### Tribute

to the memory of

COMP. BREVET MAJOR CHARLES A. PHILLIPS U. S. VOLS.  
*Late Captain Fifth Light Battery, Massachusetts Volunteer  
Artillery.*

Adopted at a Stated Meeting of this Commandery, held on Wednesday, April Fifth, 1876.

As a student at Harvard, he took high rank in the Classical and Mathematical Departments, but left his professional studies for a subordinate position in the Light Artillery service.

Of a retiring disposition, he desired no reward other than the consciousness of duty faithfully performed, but his merits soon brought him promotion.

As a Battery commander, he was careful and considerate for his men, and asked them to incur no danger in which he did not take a conspicuous share. From the midst of the enemy at Gettysburg, he helped to draw one of his disabled pieces by hand; advancing his battery by section, he drove the enemy before him at Bethesda Church; fearless of danger, on an important occasion, he stood alone on the breastworks of Fort Sedgwick; before Petersburg, exposed to the hottest fire, encouraging his men and calling for "spherical case," he led the pioneers who cleared away the obstructions around Fort Mahone, in the final engagement, and closed his services with the war, commanding a brigade of the Reserve Artillery of the Army of the Potomac.

As a soldier, his record was one of heroism; as a citizen of industry and usefulness, and now, while we fondly cherish his memory, we deeply sympathize with his family and relatives in their bereavement.

Resolved, That these expressions of our respect for his memory be entered upon the Records, and a copy be transmitted to the family of our deceased companion.

JOHN BIGELOW, *B't Major U. S. Vols.*

RICHARD S. MILTON, *Captain U. S. Vols.*

J. HENRY SLEEPER, *B't Major U. S. Vols.*

*Committee.*

[Extract from the Minutes.]

CHARLES DEVENS, JR.

*B't Major Gen. U. S. Vols., Commander.*

JAS. B. BELL, *Recorder.*

Official:

## MEMORIAL SERVICES.

Part of the services on May 28, 1876, the Sunday before Memorial Day, attended by the Grand Army Post No. 34 of Salem, and held at the Barton Square Unitarian Church, was an address by the pastor the Rev. George Batchelor, now (1902) editor of the "Christian Register."

He chose for his text, Exodus xii. 14,—“This day shall be with you for a memorial,” and in his discourse the several periods of Major Phillips' honorable career were clearly set forth, from his graduation from Harvard at the age of nineteen with the highest mathematical honors to his death.

With these words ends his brief but fervent eulogy:—

“His record may be summed up by saying that from Yorktown to Hatcher’s Run, he was never absent when his battery was engaged, and he exposed himself fearlessly when the danger was most imminent, and wherever a soldier’s duty and honor called.”

On Memorial Day, 1877, in Salem, the address at Mechanics Hall was by the Rev. Henry W. Foote of Boston, who, recalling to his hearers “the fair picture of the lives” of the soldiers of Salem who had “joined the great army of the dead,” referred to Major Phillips and his brother Lieut. Edward W. Phillips of the 50th Mass. (Infantry) who “as boys were full of glad promise,—as men did nobly for their country. . . . Edward, struck down in his bright youth by the effects of the war,—Charles, whose battery flamed on the heights of Malvern Hill, and through unnumbered battles besides. . . . No braver or more trusted officer served in the Army of the Potomac. Last year for the first time you laid flowers on his grave. . . . With us they live forever, as they live with God, in undying youth, immortal, with high incentive and proud rebuke to us, privileged to be household words of strength unto children’s children.”

---

I attended the Ninth reunion of the Battery Association at Young’s Hotel, in Boston, on Wednesday evening, October 1, 1879, and was elected president of the Association. The vice-presidents were Captain Henry D. Scott of Newport, R. I., Captain F. A. Lull of Cambridge and Lieut. Mason W. Page of Taunton. Secretary John F. Murray of Cambridge. Treasurer George H. Leach of Boston. Relief Committee William Reynolds of Marblehead, Joseph Knox of Boston, Michael Hewitt of Newton.

It was voted to have the next reunion in Boston on the first Wednesday of October, 1880. General A. P. Martin was elected an honorary member, having been in command

of the Artillery Brigade Fifth Army Corps when the Fifth Battery was in it.

Benjamin Savery of Marblehead for many years said grace at the reunions, following which Joe Knox called the roll from memory. See p. 134.

The Eleventh Annual Reunion was held at Young's Hotel, Boston, Wednesday, Oct. 5, 1881. In the circular sent with the call for the meeting was an extract from the address of the Rev. George Batchelor at Salem, May 28, 1876, eulogizing the career of Major Phillips and the Battery.

Captain Lull, who was active in this matter, wrote October 7th in returning papers obtained from the family,—“I also enclose one of the circulars of the 11th Reunion. You will see that the one containing Mr. Batchelor's address was the one we wished to get. We had a very successful reunion of the old 5th on Wednesday eve last at Young's Hotel. About 35 members were present. Our late Captain was spoken of by several members of the Battery, also by two or three guests that were present, in very feeling terms.

In fact Captain Phillips' name is revered by all the members of the old 5th, and is alluded to with heartfelt feelings by all the surviving members.

Very respectfully

FREDERIC A. LULL.”

---

In 1883, at the banquet at the Crawford House, Boston, I invited the members of the Battery to visit the Boston Foreign Exhibition of which I was a Director, the following day, which many did. The Exhibition at which the products of 52 countries were represented was held in the Mechanics Building.

In 1890, the meeting and banquet were held at Young's Hotel, Boston, August 12th, at the time of the National



Encampment of the Grand Army of the Republic.

In 1891, again at "Young's" October 7th, when I presented the members with a reproduction of a photograph of Captain C. A. Phillips, I had struck off for the occasion.

The Twenty-Second Annual Reunion was held at New Bedford August 9th, 1892. Clambake dinner at Fort Phoenix, Fairhaven, at one p. m., and supper and business meeting at New Bedford. After the clambake we were photographed in a group.

#### DEATH OF LIEUT. PAGE.

After the war closed Lieut. Mason W. Page pursued various avocations in Cleveland, Ohio, New Bedford, and Lynn, Mass., where he died September 29, 1893. He is buried in Oak Grove Cemetery, New Bedford.

---

I did not attend the reunion in 1894, which was held at Salem Willows, Salem, on Wednesday, Aug. 22d. Nearly 50 members were present. Captain George D. Allen of Malden was elected President; John S. Doane of Boston first Vice President, Wm. W. Carsley, Fairhaven, second Vice President. George L. Newton, Weymouth, Secretary, Thomas E. Chase, Boston, Treasurer. Executive Committee J. A. Wood, Edward T. Wilson, and George L. Newton. Relief Committee James H. Saxon, W. W. Carsley, John S. Doane and George L. Newton.

The Relief Committee was instructed to decorate the graves of deceased members, and it was voted to allow brothers and sons of deceased members to become honorary members.

The reunion of 1895, was held at New Bedford August 28th, 44 members being present. Speeches were made by Capt. John B. Hyde, Capt. Henry D. Scott, Jonas Shackley, Benjamin Story, Hon. Rufus A. Soule brother of

Henry W. Soule, Wm. F. Nye brother of Lieut. Ephraim B. Nye, Frank A. Milliken and myself. Mr. Nye was sutler of the Battery and entertained us. Judge Milliken was elected associate member. His brother Albert F. Milliken was the first one killed.

The oldest member present was Stephen Townsend of Fall River aged 71, the youngest was Wm. H. Dunham of Fairhaven aged 52. The only death of the year was Michael Hewitt of Newton. Officers elected were Capt. John B. Hyde, President, John F. Murray and J. Augustus Wood Vice Presidents. Thomas E. Chase Treasurer and Geo. L. Newton, Secretary. The Executive Committee were J. S. Doane, W. A. Waugh, William Reynolds, and Geo. L. Newton.

The Twenty-Sixth Annual Reunion took place on Wednesday Oct. 7, 1896, at Young's Hotel. I was at that time at Kohala on the large island of Hawaii, where I went with Attorney General Smith. John F. Murray was elected President. John E. Dyer and W. A. Waugh Vice Presidents. Thomas E. Chase Treasurer and Geo. L. Newton Secretary. The Executive Committee were E. T. Wilson, Geo. H. Chadwick and J. Augustus Wood.

In a postscript of a letter to me written by Mr. Geo. L. Newton of Weymouth, Jan'y 4, 1897, he said with reference to the losses by death and the next reunion:—"We missed you at our annual reunion. I learned by the press afterward that you were out of the country. We have lost by death the last year five members, as follows:—Sergt. Wm. B. Pattison, Wm. W. Carsley (Carsley died in New Bedford, July 4, 1896, from a frightful wound received while ramming in the charge of one of the brass field pieces, —previously mentioned as owned by that city—for firing the noonday salute. He was taken to the hospital and died in a few hours), Joseph Whitcher, Leonard Luther, and

Thomas Downey. Our next reunion is to be held at New Bedford."

This occurred Sept. 29, 1897. Headquarters at Union Veteran Legion Rooms, Union Street, New Bedford, dinner at the Mansion House. E. T. Wilson was elected President. Geo. L. Newton Secretary, Thomas E. Chase Treasurer. Executive Committee T. E. Chase, F. P. Washburn.

Wednesday evening August 17, 1898, the Association met and dined at the American House, Boston. It was the Twenty-Eighth Annual Reunion. Outside was a furious storm of wind and rain, and between thunder claps the movement to have a history of the Fifth Mass. Battery written was inaugurated, and a committee composed of Captain Henry D. Scott, Captain John F. Murray and myself, was appointed to write and publish it. I was made chairman of the committee.

Captain Henry D. Scott was elected President of the Association for the ensuing year. Thomas E. Chase, Treasurer, Geo. L. Newton Secretary. Executive Committee J. A. Wood, F. P. Washburn.

The Reunion of 1899 was on August 2d at New Bedford. Business meeting at 11.30 at the Union Veteran Legion Rooms, and a clambake afterwards under the trees paid for by Mr. Nye, to whom we gave a vote of thanks and cheers. There were about 35 members present.

The Reunion of 1900 was on August 22d at Field's Point, Providence, R. I. A good clambake and an interesting meeting. Officers elected were: President J. Augustus Wood New Bedford; Vice President James D. Allen, New Bedford, Secretary George L. Newton; Treasurer Thomas E. Chase. Executive Committee Wm. Reynolds, Lemuel A. Washburn, E. T. Wilson.

There had been one death since the last meeting, that of George H. Chadwick.

## DEATH OF CAPTAIN GEO. D. ALLEN.

Captain George D. Allen died at the Emergency Hospital, Boston, shortly before noon November 5th, 1900, from the effects of injuries sustained in an elevator accident at 7 Exchange Place, on the way to make a business call about 9 o'clock that morning. He had resided in Malden ever since the war. The funeral took place in that city on the 8th and was attended by delegations of the various organizations military and civil of which Captain Allen was a member, and 110 of the employees of the William Allen and Sons Boiler Works.

Officers of the Knights Templars were present in uniform. The Masonic ceremonies were under the direction of Eminent Commander Arthur H. Burton, and the bearers were high officials of the Grand Lodge of Massachusetts and Rhode Island, and the Worcester County Commandery. The floral tributes were extremely abundant and elaborate; among them a maltese cross. The interment was in the family tomb in Salem Street Cemetery, Malden.

---

At the Thirty-First Annual Reunion the assembly took place in New Bedford at the Union Veteran Legion Rooms at 11.30, August 6th, 1901. I was unable to be present.

Four deaths were reported during the year:—Captain George D. Allen, Christopher C. Allen, Rodney S. Campbell and William Roberts.

The committee on the history was augmented by the appointment of Thomas E. Chase and George L. Newton.

William F. Nye was elected an honorary member of the Association.

Officers elected were: President Captain Henry D. Scott; Vice Presidents William H. Baxter of New York and Jonas Shackley of Quincy, Mass.; Secretary George L. Newton; Treasurer, Thomas E. Chase. Executive Board William

Reynolds of Marblehead, Mass., Edward T. Wilson of New Bedford, and Capt. John F. Murray of Cambridge.

At 3 o'clock a shore dinner was enjoyed at the summer cottage of Edward T. Wilson at Padanaram, and a paper relating to his experience in the Army as sutler, was read by William F. Nye. There were about 50 members present.

The Reunion of 1902, took place Saturday, August 23d, at Marblehead, Mass. About 35 members assembled on Brown's Island for a clambake dinner.

At the business meeting the following were elected officers of the Association for the ensuing year:—

President, William Reynolds.

Vice Presidents, Wm. H. Peacock, Lemuel Washburn.

Secretary, Geo. L. Newton.

Treasurer, Thomas E. Chase.

Committee on next Reunion, Wm. H. Dunham, Paesiello Emerson, Thomas B. Stantial, Edward T. Wilson.

The following were elected honorary members: R. C. Bridges, John Ingalls, S. H. Brown, W. Reynolds, Thomas Ingalls, Wm. A. Nye.

It was voted to hold the next Reunion at New Bedford.

## ROSTER AND INDEX.

[Names marked "3d Mass." were transferred to the Fifth Mass. Battery from the Third Mass. Battery at various times.]

### A

Agen, John, Corporal, 79, 320, 326, 437, 645, 967.  
 Albro, James H., 76, 81.  
 Alden, Frederick D., 80, 437, 768, 771, 772, 793, 857, 858, 966.  
 Allen, Christopher C., Corporal, 4, 75, 76, 80, 143, 148, 149, 234, 977.  
 Allen, Elisha, 3d Massachusetts, Corporal.  
 Allen, George D., Captain, 5, 70, 72, 73, 74, 82-86, 94, 116, 122, 133, '5, '9, 143, 156, '7, '9, 161, '2, '8, 170, '2, '4, 180, 196, '7, 203, 216, 234, 245, '6, '9, 250, '1, '5, 263, 278, 282, '3, 293, '7, 365, '6, '7, 372, 392, 412, 470, 471, 560, 962, '3, '9, 974, 977.  
 Allen, James D., Quartermaster Clerk, 76, 80, 772, 976.  
 Almy, Andrew W., Corporal, 79, 437, 768, 772, 793, 797.  
 Alton, John H., 76, 81, 437.  
 Alton, Joseph, B., 76, 81, 698.  
 Appleton, Nathan, Lieutenant, Brevet-Captain, 21, 52, 54, 55, 679, 693, 696, 698, 699, 700, 702, 703, 705-708, 710-712, 714-716, 721, 723, 724, 726-729, 732, 733, 736-738, 743, 745, 747-749, 751-753, 755, 757-760, 762, 764, 766-772, 774, 775, 784-786, 788-790, 792-795, 797-803, 806-808, 816, 818-820, 823, 825, 826, 830, 833, 834, 838, 839, 844, 846, 847-850, 864, 876, 882, 885, 909, 963-965, 968, 969.  
 Atkins, Nathaniel H., Corporal.  
 Atkins, Thomas P., 878, 965.  
 Atwood, Alexander N. or A., 877, 878, 968.  
 Austin, Isaac C.  
 Aymer, Frank, 3d Massachusetts.

### B

Baker, Harry M.  
 Baldwin, James W., 81.  
 Balfe, Thomas.  
 Ball, Volney, 3d Massachusetts.  
 Barnard, Charles D., 76, 80, 320, 325, 347, 348, 393, 397, 967, 968.  
 Barry, William, 87, 553, 643.  
 Baur, Ignaz.

Baxter, Francis A.

Baxter, William H., Sergeant, 82, 87, 201, 216, 217, 347, 378, 479, 480, 511, 642, 822, 923, 977.  
 Blake, Peleg W., Lieutenant, 76, 81, 82, 103, 234, 244, 325, 326, 339, 342, 344, 376, 390, 401, 404, 408, 436, 439, 442, 493, 501, 518, 522, 531, 540, 550, 553, 556, 559, 563, 567, 568, 611, 616, 639, 693, 696, 697, 703, 708, 737, 760, 766-769-771, 784, 793, 794, 797, 847, 857, 862, 877, 879, 882, 885, 963, 966.  
 Blanchard, Amos, 87, 202, 347, 759, 796.  
 Bliss, Cornelius E., 442, 444, 784.  
 Boutwell, William G., 3d Massachusetts, 898, 966.  
 Bowman, Benedict, 3d Massachusetts.  
 Boynton, John W., 818, 966.  
 Braley, Joseph G., 75, 80.  
 Braley, Philo L., 76, 80, 788, 965.  
 Brand, Robert, 442, 444, 497, 500, 502, 505, 507, 967.  
 Brizzee, William A., Jr., 3d Massachusetts.  
 Brock, John H., 3d Massachusetts.  
 Brown, George, 3d Massachusetts, 898.  
 Brown, Edward A., 87.  
 Brown, Warren W., 87, 796.  
 Brownell, Lorenzo D., 81, 320, 340, 341, 968.  
 Bryson, Peter, 3d Massachusetts.  
 Buckley, John.  
 Bugbee, William L., 3d Massachusetts.  
 Burke, Thomas, 78.  
 Burkis, James M., 87.  
 Burleson, Charles, 3d Massachusetts.  
 Burns, Joseph, 3d Massachusetts, 946, 947.  
 Burt, Benjamin T., 79, 559, 727, 849.  
 Butler, Edwin J., 79, 766, 773.  
 Butts, Squire W., 76, 81.

### C

Cahill, George H., 3d Massachusetts.  
 Campbell, Rodney S., Corporal, 676, 977.  
 Canty, John M., 80, 656-660, 966.  
 Carling, Charles P., 3d Massachusetts, 867, 966.  
 Carney, Thomas, 79.  
 Carroll, Joseph.



Carsley, William W., 79, 124, 796, 863, 974, 975.  
 Carson, Francis, 79.  
 Cary, Richard, 2d Massachusetts.  
 Case, Nathan.  
 Caswell, William W., 76, 81, 234, 359, 773.  
 Cekiell, Ezekiel.  
 Chadwick, George H., 75, 80, 975, 976.  
 Chamberlain, W. H., 772.  
 Champlin, Edward, 80, 437.  
 Chase, Thomas E., Corporal, 83, 87, 90, 91, 100, 104, 107, 122, 125, 129, 135, 136, 138, 145, 179, 200, 209-211, 217, 222, 226, 234, 238, 242, 243, 251, 255, 259, 275, 285, 302, 307, 309, 310, 344, 359, 378, 384, 391, 406, 412-416, 418, 425, 428, 430, 432-434, 439, 449, 451, 453, 456, 467, 471-473, 475, 476, 481, 483, 485, 490, 491, 493-496, 513, 516-520, 526, 528, 531, 534, 538, 549-552, 554, 555, 557, 559, 561, 563-565, 567, 572-577, 579, 580, 583, 584, 587, 590, 591, 593-599, 601, 611, 644, 656, 676, 680, 684, 686, 967, 974-978.  
 Clark, Charles A., Corporal, 79.  
 Clark, Joseph W., Sergeant, 79, 171, 234, 706, 907.  
 Clarke, Lewis P., 965.  
 Clark, Samuel, 80.  
 Colbath, Charles H.  
 Cole, John H., 81.  
 Coleman, Martin J., 593, 645, 656-661, 966.  
 Colton, Daniel J.  
 Conant, Sherman W., 2d Massachusetts.  
 Cook, John G., Jr., 88.  
 Cooper, H. D., 437.  
 Cox, Albert T., Corporal.  
 Cox, Henry A., 87.  
 Cox, James, 80.  
 Crapo, Henry D., 79, 437, 759, 867, 966.  
 Crockett, George F., 3d Massachusetts.  
 Crosby, George.  
 Currier, Hazen.  
 Cushman, Thomas A., 76, 81.

## D

Dickerman, Joseph C., 87.  
 Dillingham, Robert A., Lieutenant, 75, 76, 78, 82, 91, 94, 112, 116, 136, 139, 153, 172, 174, 188, 189, 210, 211, 213, 217, 220, 245, 263, 264, 273, 290, 296, 297, 310, 312, 336, 347, 372, 376, 388, 393, 962, 963.  
 Doane, John S., 642, 897, 974, 975.  
 Doherty, Bernard, 87, 593, 645.  
 Doherty Edward.  
 Donegan, Thomas.  
 Donovan, Stephen, 81.  
 Dorety, Joseph H.  
 Doyle, Patrick, 80.  
 Downey, Thomas, 3d Massachusetts, 976.

Drake, William M., 3d Massachusetts.  
 Drew, John T., 76, 81, 709.  
 Dudley, Edward M., 3d Massachusetts, 796, 965.  
 Duff, Robert P., 3d Massachusetts.  
 Duffy, Frank.  
 Dugan, Michael, 79.  
 Dunham, William H., 79, 234, 437, 759, 796, 863, 967, 975, 978.  
 Dyer, John E., 79, 526, 531, 543, 536, 538, 539, 548, 550-553, 555, 557-560, 564, 572-578, 580, 581, 583, 587, 591-593, 596-600, 611, 660, 694, 696, 715, 720, 727, 730, 732, 735, 744, 750, 751, 765, 766, 768-774, 784, 785, 789, 791-793, 796, 798, 800, 801, 807, 817, 819, 822, 826, 833, 834, 838, 856-858, 864, 865, 867, 876-878, 883, 885, 886, 888, 890-892, 917, 918, 923, 975.

## E

Eagan, John, 630, 637, 749.  
 Edwards, William, 3d Massachusetts.  
 Emerson, Paesielo, 867, 968, 978.  
 Eppendorff, Max, Captain, 77, 78, 82, 83, 90, 93, 94, 108, 115, 117, 120-122, 962.  
 Estee, William E., 87, 110, 645, 656, 657, 967.  
 Evans, William O.

## F

Fairhuret or Fairhurst, 10th New York Battery, 664.  
 Faunce, Alvin, 898, 965.  
 Feltham, Samuel.  
 Ferguson, John.  
 Ferris, Anson E., Corporal, 78, 82.  
 Ferris, James.  
 Fisher, Rinaldo R.  
 Fitzsimmons, Henry, 81, 200, 645, 714, 878, 967.  
 Flanagan, Thomas, 3d Massachusetts, 898, 967.  
 Flynn, Michael, 76, 78, 437, 947, 954, 968.  
 Follett, Charles A., Corporal 3d Massachusetts.  
 Ford, Henry A.  
 Ford, Jacob W., 3d Massachusetts.  
 Foster, Abner, 965.  
 Fotheringham, Edward, 10th New York Battery, 657, 661, 664, 966.  
 Freeborn, George H., 87, 438.  
 Fuller, William.

## G

Gale, Mortier, 4, 87, 550, 593, 759, 867.  
 Gallagher, Edward.  
 Gardner, Josiah W., 76, 80.  
 Gastoo, John.  
 Gay, Charles D.  
 Gibbs, Elisha J., Corporal, 79, 567, 573, 759, 760, 797, 825, 832, 918, 926, 965.  
 Gifford, George W.

Gifford, Henry M., Bugler, 4.  
 Gilbert, Jacob A., 78, 438.  
 Graffleman, Henry G., 10th New York Bat-  
 tery, 664, 967.  
 Gragg, John T., 3d Massachusetts.  
 Graham, Benjamin, Corporal, 65, 79, 234, 438,  
 567, 631, 637-643, 660, 661, 818, 821, 822, 967.  
 Graves, Henry B., 3d Massachusetts.  
 Greeley, William, 76, 80, 657, 746, 968.  
 Griffin, Thomas.  
 Grogan, Martin.  
 Groves, Gardner, 234, 575.  
 Grows, David Henry, 5, 65, 87, 97, 99, 101,  
 105, 107, 108, 110, 111, 114, 121-125, 129, 132,  
 134, 136, 137, 142, 144-146, 148, 150, 152, 154,  
 157, 160, 166, 168, 169, 173, 176, 185, 187, 191,  
 194, 198, 203, 206, 210, 211, 218, 221, 227, 233,  
 237, 242, 245, 251, 253, 256-258, 262, 264, 265,  
 268, 270, 274-276, 291-293, 300, 302, 304, 307,  
 308, 313, 347, 363, 379, 382, 383, 391, 393, 396,  
 397, 399, 401, 404, 406, 407, 411, 415, 416, 425,  
 432, 433.  
 Gunning, Thomas.  
 Gunning, William, 80, 438, 774.  
 Gustine, Edward F., 88, 320, 325, 334, 347, 352,  
 353, 966.  
 Gwinn, Thomas H., Sergeant, 796.

H

Hackett, William C.  
 Hale, Alonzo J.  
 Hall, Joseph, 79, 122.  
 Hamblet or Hamblett, Samuel H., Lieuten-  
 ant, 817, 897, 909, 924, 964.  
 Hanley, Henry, 3d Massachusetts.  
 Hardy, Samuel A., 75, 80.  
 Harlow, George A.  
 Hart, John C., 78.  
 Hart, Patrick, 3d Massachusetts.  
 Haskins, Alpheus, Corporal, 75, 80, 234, 283,  
 715, 760.  
 Hathaway, John F., 76, 81, 438, 645, 658, 660,  
 651, 966.  
 Hathaway, Joseph R., 76, 81.  
 Hathaway, William, Jr., 80.  
 Hayden, Albion K. P., 4, 79, 638, 640, 641,  
 643, 759, 821, 822, 848, 967.  
 Hayden, William A., 3d Massachusetts.  
 Hayes, Joseph, 3d Massachusetts, 898.  
 Heyes, Richard, 76, 81, 320, 343, 406, 968.  
 Healey, George F., 81.  
 Hewitt, Michael, 76, 80, 202, 594, 972, 975.  
 Higgins, Thomas, 76, 79.  
 Hiller, John G., 868, 877.  
 Hodgkins or Hodgins, John H., 81.  
 Hosley, Andrew, 4.  
 Hovey, Augustus.  
 Huckins, Alonzo K., 3d Massachusetts.

Hughes, Thomas.  
 Hunt, George S., 3d Massachusetts, 898.  
 Hunt, Ira J., 3d Massachusetts, 898.  
 Hyde, John B., Lieutenant, 60-72, 74-78, 82,  
 91, 94, 95, 116, 139, 153, 172, 174, 186, 195,  
 198, 211, 217, 221, 245, 246, 264, 276, 277, 280,  
 300, 301, 310, 315, 319, 320, 322, 324, 331, 344,  
 386, 397, 347, 366, 369, 370, 372, 373, 375, 376,  
 384, 388, 389, 392, 393, 962, 963, 974, 975.

J

Jay, Charles F., 80, 340.  
 Johnson, Alfred J., 3d Massachusetts.  
 Johnson, George H., First Sergeant, 82, 87,  
 119, 148, 712, 771, 800.  
 Johnston, Leonard F., Corporal, 3d Massa-  
 chusetts.  
 Jones, Nathaniel.  
 Jones, Thomas, 946.  
 Jordan, Samuel R., 78, 438.

K

Kanuse, Benjamin S., 76, 81, 877, 878, 886, 966.  
 Kay, James, Sergeant, 79, 438, 640, 641, 643,  
 856, 907.  
 Kiel, E. E., 438.  
 Kierstead, Joseph, 118th Pennsylvania In-  
 fantry, 818, 819, 966.  
 King, Henry.  
 King, Robert, 76, 81, 370, 373, 774, 801, 967.  
 Knowles, William, 3d Massachusetts.  
 Knox, Joseph L., 87, 111, 134, 170, 178, 263,  
 266, 309, 393, 760, 877, 878, 968, 972, 973.

L

Langley, John, 76, 80.  
 Lapham, Frederick A., Jr., 88.  
 Lapham, William H. H., 88, 339, 378, 392, 513,  
 593, 858, 863, 864, 966.  
 Lascon, James H.  
 Leach, George H., 87, 234, 302, 960, 972.  
 Leach, Jacob H., 3d Massachusetts.  
 Loomis, Alonzo O.  
 Lull, Frederick A., Lieutenant, 82, 87, 139,  
 148, 390, 401, 407, 439, 142, 147, 477, 490, 491,  
 502, 525, 555-557, 559, 567, 573, 574, 596, 597,  
 627, 665, 693, 698, 963, 964, 972, 973.  
 Luther, Leonard, 975.

M

Mack, John F., 88, 290, 759.  
 Macomber, Charles H., 80, 139, 349, 350.  
 Macomber, George W., 555.  
 Mahan, Frederick W., 3d Massachusetts.  
 Mahan, George F., 3d Massachusetts.  
 Maloney, David N., 3d Massachusetts.  
 Manchester, George F., 79, 325, 494, 500.  
 Martis, William A., 3d Massachusetts, 850.

Martis, Brooks B., Corporal, 3d Massachusetts.  
 Masterson, John, 3d Massachusetts.  
 Matoney, David N., 3d Massachusetts.  
 Matthews, David A., Corporal, 3d Massachusetts.  
 Matthews, Robert F., Corporal, 3d Massachusetts.  
 McCarthy, Eugene, 3d Massachusetts.  
 McCartney, John, 3d Massachusetts.  
 McClellan, John.  
 McCue, Michael.  
 McCully, George, 75, 80.  
 McKern or McKeren, William, 10th New York Battery, 664, 734, 967.  
 McVey, David, 81, 111, 200, 438, 867, 968.  
 Mensing, John, 118th Pennsylvania Infantry, 818, 967.  
 Mensing, Thomas H., 118th Pennsylvania Infantry, 821, 822, 967.  
 Miller, Robert, 79.  
 Milliken, Albert F., Corporal, 80, 320, 325, 334, 340, 347-350, 966, 975.  
 Mitchell, Edward, 75, 80.  
 Moncrief, Robert M.  
 Mondorf, John, 637, 796.  
 Moore, Alexander, 79.  
 Morgridge, Charles H., Sergeant, 78, 82, 419, 343, 481, 599, 645, 766.  
 Morrison, John W., Sergeant, 87, 234, 442, 552, 564, 964.  
 Morrison, Joseph J., 88.  
 Munroe, J., 438.  
 Murphy, James, 3d Massachusetts.  
 Murphy, John, enlisted 1862.  
 Murphy, John, enlisted 1864.  
 Murphy, Thomas.  
 Murphy, Thomas J., 3d Massachusetts.  
 Murphy, Walter, 3d Massachusetts.  
 Murray, John F., 88, 438, 676, 677, 965, 969, 972, 975, 976, 978.

## N

Neild, James, 79.  
 Newhall, William B., Sergeant, 87, 200, 797.  
 Newhall, William H.  
 Newton, George L., Corporal, 87, 436, 438, 655, 797, 974-978.  
 Nichols, William H., Corporal, 3d Massachusetts.  
 Nye, Ephraim B., Corporal, 80, 82, 234, 302, 343, 359, 442, 520, 529, 530, 656, 698, 701, 703, 706, 768, 785, 801, 942, 964, 975.

## O

O'Brien, John.  
 O'Brien, William.  
 O'Connell, Daniel, 734.

O'Hara, Patrick, 555.  
 Oldis, Francis, 78, 423, 438, 967.  
 Olin, John H., 656, 769, 796, 967.

## P

Page, Mason W., Lieutenant, 75, 80, 82, 148, 149, 234, 262, 325, 343, 347, 553, 555, 557, 596, 642, 758, 795, 796, 917, 923, 924, 942, 943, 945-948, 954, 957, 964, 968, 972, 974.  
 Parsons, Henry C., Corporal, 88, 300, 965.  
 Pattison, Louis E., Clerk, 83, 88, 344, 346, 347, 423, 424, 438, 611, 642, 654, 696, 735, 923.  
 Pattison, William B., Sergeant, 82, 87, 148, 346, 351, 424, 438, 442, 552, 561, 563, 596, 637-639, 642, 975.  
 Paxton, James H., 80.  
 Peacock, Jacob, 79, 370, 373, 967.  
 Peacock, William H., Quartermaster Sergeant, 22, 51, 73, 75, 81, 82, 87, 89, 148, 196, 200, 201, 236, 325, 433, 472, 503, 509, 549, 555, 560, 584, 593, 594, 596, 611, 637, 645, 655, 684, 696, 698, 709, 723, 756, 765, 773, 783, 791, 801, 818, 826, 832, 833, 864, 867, 876, 885-887, 889, 891, 897, 898, 917, 921, 923, 978.  
 Pedrick, Benjamin T.  
 Peirce, David B., 76, 81.  
 Petty, Luther, 78.  
 Phillips, Charles A., Captain, Brevet Major, 6, 8, 9, 12, 13, 17, 33, 36, 39, 40, 45, 47, 48, 60, 76, 82, 83, 91, 93, 94, 95, 99, 107, 111, 112, 116, 118, 125, 130, 131, 135, 137, 139, 140, 146, 148, 150, 151, 153, 159, 161, 167, 170, 174, 181, 185, 188, 190, 192, 198, 199, 205, 208, 209-213, 217, 218, 220-222, 224, 227, 231-234, 239, 240, 242, 243, 245, 249, 254, 257, 260, 261, 263-266, 269, 270, 272, 278, 282-284, 293, 294, 296, 297, 299, 300-303, 305, 307, 310, 311, 323, 331-334, 337, 346, 347, 364, 370, 376, 377, 379, 389-391, 393, 395, 397, 398, 399, 402-404, 407, 408, 411, 413-417, 419, 425, 428, 431, 433-443, 445, 447, 450, 451, 452, 454, 455, 456, 467-477, 481, 485, 487, 488, 491, 496, 498, 505, 508, 517, 518, 520, 523, 526, 529, 531, 533, 536, 539, 548, 549, 551-561, 563, 564, 565, 568, 572-575, 577, 578, 580-583, 586, 587, 590, 592, 593, 595-601, 611, 613, 615, 616, 619, 623, 628-635, 638-641, 643, 644, 646, 647, 652, 654, 655, 660-663, 665-669, 671, 672, 674, 676, 679, 688-691, 693, 696, 697, 699, 701-704, 706, 708, 712, 714, 715, 718, 729, 734, 738, 739, 743, 746, 748, 754, 755, 758, 759-762, 767, 768, 769, 771-774, 778, 785, 792, 793, 794, 797-800, 815, 817, 820, 821, 835-838, 848, 857, 859, 861, 862, 863, 866, 868, 875, 878-882, 884, 886, 887, 888, 891, 893-897, 904, 905, 907, 915-918, 921, 924, 935, 937-943, 945-947, 953-960, 962, 963, 964, 969-974.

Phillips, Leo.  
 Phippen, Edward A., Jr., 88, 849.  
 Pilling, John, 78, 714.  
 Pinder, William, 79, 732.  
 Place, Thomas, 76, 81.  
 Plagne, William W.  
 Platts, Edward M., Corporal, 88, 496-500,  
 502, 505, 507, 509, 510, 833, 966.  
 Poole, George W., Corporal, 4, 88, 200, 759.  
 Potter, George, Jr., 3d Massachusetts.  
 Prescott, Francis A., Clerk, 88.  
 Preston, John.  
 Proctor, George O., Corporal, 87, 347, 581,  
 733, 768-770, 773, 774, 785.  
 Purbeck, William L., 555, 640, 641, 645, 656,  
 966.

Q

Quillin, Philip T., 79.

R

Ransom, Wallace R., 3d Massachusetts, Ser-  
 geant, 965.  
 Ransom, William, 3d Massachusetts.  
 Ray, William H., 80, 320, 325, 349, 967.  
 Reed, Andrew, 3d Massachusetts.  
 Remington, Lysander F., 3d Massachusetts,  
 Sergeant.  
 Reynolds, William, 818, 819, 857, 858, 862,  
 968, 972, 975, 976, 978.  
 Rice, Edward E., 88, 438, 555, 598, 964.  
 Riley, Morris, 3d Massachusetts.  
 Roberts, William, 947, 977.  
 Robinson, James, 76, 81.  
 Robinson, John R., 3d Massachusetts, 898.  
 Rowe, Amos, 3d Massachusetts.

S

Sampson, Benjamin.  
 Sanderson, Samuel, 81.  
 Sanford, John G., 79, 430, 631, 645, 676, 784,  
 967.  
 Savery, Benjamin, 973.  
 Saxner, William, 80.  
 Saxon, James H., 974.  
 Schonhutte, William.  
 Scott, Henry D., Lieutenant, 75, 78, 82, 100,  
 135, 139, 140, 148, 156, 167, 170, 172, 174, 186,  
 199, 234, 245, 269, 284, 287, 298-301, 303, 310,  
 327, 329, 336, 339, 340, 347, 372, 375, 382, 383,  
 390, 393, 397, 404, 408, 413, 417, 428-431, 436,  
 439, 441, 442, 450, 451, 455, 467, 468, 476, 478,  
 479, 496, 500, 501, 503, 516, 522, 528, 529, 550-  
 561, 563-565, 567, 568, 570-575, 577-579, 581,  
 583, 587, 590-593, 595-600, 611, 617, 624, 625,  
 627, 629, 637, 638, 645, 653, 658, 659, 662, 668,  
 669, 676, 677, 689, 693, 696, 714, 716, 719, 721,

727, 732, 735, 737, 743, 746, 747, 750, 751, 753-  
 756, 760, 767, 770, 785, 786, 788, 790, 792, 794,  
 864, 956, 962-965, 967, 969, 972, 974, 976, 977.  
 Shackley, Daniel K., 442, 444, 535, 656, 967.  
 Shackley, Jonas, Corporal, 442, 444, 471, 482,  
 490, 491, 516, 536, 563, 611, 616, 637-640, 642,  
 643, 659, 660, 690, 696, 710, 718, 727, 731, 737,  
 752, 766, 802, 807, 821, 824, 829, 857, 858, 864-  
 867, 876, 881, 883, 886, 893, 904, 905, 907, 909,  
 918, 926, 965, 974, 977.  
 Shannon, Jeremiah.  
 Shaw, George, 78, 300, 301, 712.  
 Shaw, Horatio F., 88, 339, 378.  
 Shaw, Luther F., 805.  
 Sheergold, William J., 867, 966.  
 Sheerin, James.  
 Shepard, James T., 79.  
 Sheridan, Charles.  
 Shewonsees, Louis.  
 Simonds, Harrison O., Lieutenant, 82, 87, 124,  
 133, 135, 136, 143, 152, 166, 212, 218, 251, 263,  
 266, 304, 325, 326, 341, 348, 363, 401, 596, 599,  
 643, 758, 760, 797, 916, 924, 936, 938, 940-942,  
 955, 956, 963, 964.  
 Simonds, Warren, 88.  
 Skillin, Howard A., 3d Massachusetts, 796.  
 Skinner, Charles E., 88.  
 Sloane, Henry.  
 Smith, Benjamin, F., 79, 759.  
 Smith, Edward F., 75, 80, 320, 343, 406, 774,  
 867, 968.  
 Smith, George W., 76, 78.  
 Smith, Otis B., Sergeant, 82, 87, 136, 148, 196,  
 325, 326, 354, 384, 520, 552, 574, 575, 583, 621,  
 657, 693, 759, 883, 964.  
 Soule, Henry W., 78, 631, 645, 656, 657, 661,  
 963, 965.  
 Spear, Joseph Edward, Lieutenant, 87, 148,  
 149, 201, 213, 237, 250, 258, 277, 326, 337, 340,  
 343, 376-378, 392, 442, 470, 480, 507, 519-521,  
 528, 554, 557-559, 570, 571, 573, 575, 596, 597,  
 617, 657, 693, 708, 715, 726, 755, 790, 761, 768,  
 794, 800, 803, 804, 862, 873, 882, 892, 917, 923,  
 963, 964.  
 Spencer, Albert L., 3d Massachusetts.  
 Stantial, Thomas B., 83, 88, 394, 978.  
 Stetson, Charles E., 3d Massachusetts.  
 Stetson, Henry, 3d Massachusetts.  
 Stiermberg, Bernard.  
 Stiles, Charles F., Sergeant, 87, 594, 632, 796,  
 797, 894, 905, 968.  
 Story, Benjamin F., 88, 200, 263, 551, 555,  
 757, 974.  
 Sullivan, James, 2d Massachusetts.  
 Sullivan, Michael, 76, 81.  
 Sweeney, William, 80.  
 Sweetser, Stephen.

## T

Tattersall, Richard  
 Terry, Timothy W., Quartermaster Sergeant,  
     75, 76, 78, 82, 118, 119, 245, 279, 443, 447,  
     558, 559, 964.  
 Thomas, George H.  
 Thomas, Jefferson, 3d Massachusetts.  
 Townsend, Stephen, 76, 559, 865, 975.  
 Tripp, Charles M., Lieutenant, 8, 117, 200,  
     826, 907, 924, 964.  
 Tripp, Christopher B., 76, 81, 397.  
 Tripp, James A., 79, 117.  
 Trumbull, George B., Corporal, 555, 559, 645,  
     658, 771, 967.  
 Tucker, John C., Bugler, 4, 87, 438, 530, 616,  
     848.  
 Tufts, Henry, 3d Massachusetts.  
 Turner, Thomas, 3d Massachusetts, Sergeant.  
 Turner, William, 75.  
 Tynan, Lot, 76, 81.

## V

Verity, John W., 10th New York Battery,  
     657, 664, 966.  
 Vogle, Philip.

## W

Waddington, John, 79, 438, 559.  
 Warren, James L., 76, 81.  
 Warren, William G., Corporal, 82, 88, 340,  
     341, 442, 965.

Washburn, Francis P., 3, 76, 81, 341, 383, 386,  
     643, 923, 976.  
 Washburn, Lemuel A., 80, 202, 788, 976, 978.  
 Washburn, Seth, 32d Massachusetts Infantry.  
 Waterson, James, 3d Massachusetts, 898.  
 Waterson, William, 3d Massachusetts.  
 Waugh, William A., 88, 204, 657, 967, 975.  
 Way, George H., 3d Massachusetts.  
 Weeden, Charles C., 79.  
 Welch, John H., 3d Massachusetts, 839.  
 Welsh or Walsh, Patrick, Sergeant, 79, 200,  
     438, 563, 676, 759, 771, 969.  
 Wentworth, Owen.  
 West, Benjamin, 80, 438, 696, 784, 824.  
 West, Edward W., 79.  
 Wheaton, Charles E.  
 Wheelock, George W., 3d Massachusetts.  
 Whelan, John W., 3d Massachusetts.  
 Whitcher, Joseph R., 88, 378, 559, 975.  
 White, Russell.  
 Wilcox, William S., 76, 81, 438, 491, 965.  
 Wilkinson, Joseph.  
 Williams, Samuel M.  
 Wilson, Edward T., 2d Sergeant, 79, 215, 333,  
     340, 892, 974-976, 978.  
 Winters, Albert.  
 Winters, James, Bugler, 4, 79, 505, 516, 530,  
     596, 599, 638, 693, 759, 848, 891.  
 Wood, Alfred, 3d Massachusetts.  
 Wood, Frederick W., 81.  
 Wood, James Augustus, 75, 80, 394, 974-976.

## OTHER PERSONS MENTIONED.

### A

Abbott, Henry L., 565.  
 Abercrombie, J. J., 373.  
 Adams, George W., 592, 593.  
 Adams, John Quincy, 23.  
 Alexander, B. S., 225, 291.  
 Alexandra, Queen, 765.  
 Alley, John B., 24, 792, 939.  
 Almy, Allen, 858.  
 Ames, Adelbert, 372.  
 Ames, Nelson, 600, 615, 624, 654, 679.  
 Ames, Oakes, 55, 939.  
 Amory, Charles, 5, 94, 123.  
 Anderson, J. R., Confederate, 275.  
 Anderson, R. H., Confederate, 813, 827, 830.  
 Andrew, John A., 2, 6, 7, 11, 13, 14, 15, 17, 24,  
 25, 27, 31, 32, 33, 34, 37, 52, 55, 56, 59, 62, 66,  
 70, 77, 78, 83, 89, 90, 93, 116, 117, 123, 381,  
 396, 412, 440, 446, 463, 728, 739, 740, 786, 845,  
 849, 926, 938, 939, 960.  
 Appleton, William, 24.  
 Appleton, William S., 54.  
 Arnold, William A., 679.  
 Arthur, William, 778.  
 Averell, William W., 18.  
 Ayres, Romeyn B., 781, 814, 829, 840, 884,  
 900, 903, 912, 913.

### B

Bailey, Goldsmith F., 24.  
 Baldwin, John D., 55, 939.  
 Bancroft, Eugene, 679.  
 Banks, Nathaniel P., 146, 147, 161, 187, 195,  
 255, 288, 312.  
 Barker, Augustus, 725.  
 Barksdale, William, Confederate, 592.  
 Barnard, George M., Jr., 561, 700, 703, 733.  
 Barnard, Inman, 702.  
 Barnes, Almont, 55, 578, 587, 588, 700, 743,  
 744, 769, 774.  
 Barnes, James, 525, 927.  
 Barry, William F., 60, 64, 99, 110, 117, 121,  
 133, 162, 362, 452, 453, 493.  
 Barstow, George F., 55, 715, 755, 760, 769, 774.  
 Bartlett, Joseph J., 781, 789, 866, 874, 879,  
 893.  
 Batchelder, John B., 677, 770, 771, 969.  
 Batchelor, George, 971, 973.  
 Bates, Edward, 35.

Baxter, Henry, 781, 912, 923.  
 Beauregard, Gustav T., 377, 418.  
 Bell, James R., 971.  
 Benham, W. H., 569.  
 Bennett, James Gordon, 703.  
 Benson, Henry, 366, 374, 409.  
 Berdan, Hiram, 261, 365.  
 Berlin, Carl, 940.  
 Bigelow, Henry J., 846.  
 Bigelow, Hon. John, 33.  
 Bigelow, John, Captain, 606, 623-625, 629,  
 631, 646, 647, 656, 662, 666-669, 671, 713,  
 785, 826, 873, 887, 938, 939, 971.  
 Birney, D. B., 592, 649, 704, 870, 911.  
 Blair, Montgomery, 35.  
 Bliss, Alexander, 468.  
 Bonaparte, Napoleon, 403, 548, 809, 826.  
 Bourne, George A., 69.  
 Boutwell, George S., 55, 939.  
 Bowditch, Henry P., 748.  
 Bradley, Charles S., 30, 32.  
 Bragg, Braxton, Confederate, 783.  
 Bragg, Edward S., 936.  
 Branch, L. O'B., Confederate, 271, 273.  
 Breck, George, 778, 815, 820, 939.  
 Bridges, R. C., 978.  
 Bright, John, 24.  
 Brightman, William Ruthven.  
 Broderick, Thomas, 148.  
 Brown, Frederick, 679.  
 Brown, S. H., 978.  
 Brnen, C. T., 599, 675.  
 Bryant, William C., poet, 33.  
 Buchanan, James, 29, 30, 56, 64, 109, 127.  
 Buckley, David H., 677.  
 Buckley, William W., 316, 317, 441.  
 Buell, Augustus, 859, 878.  
 Buford, John, 603, 717.  
 Buffington, James, 24.  
 Bullock, Alexander H., 6.  
 Bullock, W. W., 71, 72.  
 Burlingame, Anson, 47.  
 Burnside, Ambrose E., 116, 117, 120, 167, 187,  
 416, 417, 429, 443, 460-465, 475, 482, 483,  
 486, 491, 491, 499, 512, 517, 521, 525-527,  
 534, 538, 541, 544, 548, 551, 708, 716, 778,  
 779, 782, 800, 801, 807, 808, 813, 824, 853,  
 857, 861, 874, 893, 894.  
 Burton, Arthur H., 977.



Butler, Benjamin F., 46, 176, 526, 573, 778, 819, 827, 870, 914, 928.  
 Butterfield, Daniel, 20, 129, 261, 276, 312, 313, 315-317, 319, 321-323, 326, 330, 331, 343, 395, 422, 423, 461, 465, 466, 470, 475, 478, 486, 487, 492, 519, 552, 568.

## C

Calder or Calden, A. W., 279.  
 Caldwell, J. C., 649.  
 Cameron, Simon, 35, 66, 78.  
 Cargill, Thomas M., 404, 408, 433, 564, 727, 734, 737, 835, 839.  
 Carlisle, J. Howard, 294.  
 Case, Thomas C., 840, 844.  
 Casey, Silas, 161, 291.  
 Chamberlain, Joshua L., 440, 755, 835, 871.  
 Chase, D. C., 435.  
 Chase, Salmon P., 35.  
 Claflin, William, 24.  
 Clarke, Francis N., 14, 16, 958.  
 Clarke, Judson, 675.  
 Clarke, Morris, 686.  
 Clifford, John H., 30-34, 70.  
 Cobb, Clarence F., 95.  
 Colburn, A. V., 161.  
 Congdon, James B., 75.  
 Cook, Asa M., 56.  
 Cooke, Philip St. George, 304, 312, 317.  
 Coolidge, William D., 84.  
 Cooper, James H., 679, 778, 815.  
 Cornwallis, Charles, 229, 243.  
 Couch, Darius N., 15, 16, 17, 161, 364, 365, 366.  
 Cowan, Andrew, 679.  
 Cowen, William E., 91.  
 Crawford, Samuel W., 781, 782, 870, 900, 903, 912, 913, 930, 932, 935, 936.  
 Crowninshield, Benjamin W., 758.  
 Cudworth, Warren H., 223.  
 Cunningham, James A., 812.  
 Curtin, Andrew Y., 672, 720.  
 Curtis, Pelham, 699.  
 Custer, George A., 650, 783.  
 Cushing, Alonzo, 679.  
 Cutler, Lysander, 866, 870, 871, 900, 905.

## D

Dale, William J., 280, 847.  
 Dalton, Henry, 453.  
 Davis, Henry W., 835.  
 Davis, Jefferson, 28, 526, 883.  
 Davis, Phineas S., 919.  
 Davis, Robert, 13, 959.  
 Dawes, Henry L., 24, 939.  
 Delafield, Richard, 229.  
 Delano, Charles, 24.  
 De Motte, Charles, 859.

Devens, Charles, Jr., 928, 971.  
 Devereaux, Arthur F., 37, 43, 400, 598.  
 Dickinson, Joseph, 490.  
 Diedrichs, Otto, 469-471.  
 Dilger, Hubert, 679.  
 Dix, John A., 914.  
 Dixon, James, 622.  
 Dolbear, Clinton E., 846.  
 D'Orleans, Robert, Duc de Chartres, 315.  
 Doubleday, Abner, 649, 679.  
 Dove, John, 39, 40.  
 Dow, Edwin B., 615, 625, 647, 654, 662, 669, 670, 679, 887.  
 Dresser, G. W., 898, 924, 935.  
 Dunbar, George H., 69.  
 Dunn, Valentine M., 273, 404, 408, 550.  
 Dushane, Nathan T., 897, 903, 906.

## E

Eakin, "Chan.", 679.  
 Early, Jubal, Confederate, 731, 830, 856, 920, 926.  
 Eaton, Charles O., 18.  
 Edgell, F. M., 679.  
 Edmands, J. Cushing, 762.  
 Edwards, John, 503.  
 Eliot, Thomas D., 24, 121, 939.  
 Ellis, Henry K., 883.  
 Ellsworth, Elmer E., 174.  
 Emperor of Japan, 109.  
 Emperor Napoleon III, 573.  
 Erickson, Christopher, 625, 629, 632.  
 Everett, Edward, 673, 744.  
 Ewell, Richard S., Confederate, 309, 417, 648, 731, 805, 827, 876, 951.

## F

Fay, Frank B., 231.  
 Field, Jonathan E., 6, 55, 938.  
 Fisher, H. H., 83.  
 Fitzhugh, Robert H., 60, 657, 679, 815, 839, 840, 852, 923, 939, 942.  
 Floyd, John B., 64.  
 Follett, William H., 571, 572, 746, 748, 749, 760, 761.  
 Foote, Henry W., 972.  
 Fox, William F., 664, 674.  
 Frank, John D., 375.  
 Franklin, William B., 121, 161, 256, 257, 259, 261, 265, 267, 270, 362, 425, 461, 498, 548.  
 Frederick, Lord Baltimore, 622.  
 French, William H., 64.  
 French, Thomas, 741.  
 Fuger, Frederick, 679.

## G

Gaines, William Fleming; 284, 285, 294, 295, 300-302, 307, 308, 335, 342.

Galvin, John, 387.  
 Geary, John W., 581.  
 Gentry, W. T., 766, 916.  
 Gettys, James, 604.  
 Gibbon, John, 63, 648.  
 Gibbs, Frank C., 55, 587, 744, 754, 769.  
 Gifford, Stephen N., 24, 27.  
 Gilmore, Patrick S., 16.  
 Girdwood, John, 74.  
 Goldsborough, Louis M., 120.  
 Gooch, Daniel W., 24, 121.  
 Goodrich, John Z., 24.  
 Goodwin, John A., 24.  
 Gordon, George H., 15.  
 Gordon, John B., Confederate, 951, 952.  
 Gorton, Samuel A., 563.  
 Grant, Ulysses S., 54, 745, 776, 777, 781, 785, 788-791, 793, 794, 798, 799, 805, 808, 814, 816, 819, 820, 825, 827-829, 831-833, 851, 853, 854, 867, 871, 872, 876, 890, 904, 911-914, 923, 928, 931, 934, 950, 952, 953.  
 Gray, Horace, 32.  
 Greenwood, T. J., 84, 86.  
 Gregg, John I., 651, 740, 741, 745, 747, 758, 800, 936.  
 Griffin, Charles, 33, 55, 132, 135-137, 139, 140, 143, 145, 146, 161, 162, 173, 195-198, 203, 212, 213, 222, 240, 250, 255, 273, 290, 300, 304, 315, 317, 322, 339, 364-366, 373, 400, 465, 469, 471, 476, 481, 517, 544-546, 548, 562, 564, 572, 633, 700, 769, 780, 781, 799, 800, 806-808, 840, 854, 855, 857, 860-864, 866, 872, 878-881, 903-906, 911-913, 924, 925, 931, 932, 934, 941, 952.  
 Hall, Daniel, 455.  
 Hall, J. K., 86.  
 Halleck, Henry W., 282, 381, 383, 391, 394, 401, 402, 451, 455, 681, 695, 788.  
 Hamlin, Hannibal, 24.  
 Hancock, Winfield S., 607, 652, 654, 663, 777, 812, 820, 829, 852, 853, 869, 913, 914, 929.  
 Harrison, William Henry, 133.  
 Hart, Patrick, 606, 623, 624, 627, 636, 646, 651, 654, 662, 667, 679, 815, 935.  
 Hayden, Joel, 6, 55, 938.  
 Hayes, Joseph, 15, 700, 770, 772, 904, 905.  
 Hays, Alexander, 648.  
 Hays, H. T., Confederate, 731.  
 Hays, William, 934.  
 Hazard, John G., 679.  
 Hazlett, Charles E., 55, 420, 422, 440, 500, 540, 544, 578, 587, 588, 679, 769.  
 Heasley, Thomas, 945.  
 Heintzelman, Samuel P., 161, 270, 288, 289, 362, 419, 421, 422, 439, 447.  
 Heth, Henry, 782.  
 Higginson, T. W., 960.  
 Hill, A. P., Confederate, 590, 591, 650, 780, 782, 815, 827, 834, 836.

Hill, Edward, 466.  
 Hill, Wallace, 679, 756, 757.  
 Hinks, Edward W., 15.  
 Hodges, John, 41.  
 Hofmann, J. William, 918.  
 Hoke, R. F., Confederate, 731, 820, 905.  
 Holman, A., 959.  
 Holmes, Oliver Wendell, Jr., 840.  
 Holt, Joseph, 34.  
 Hooker, Anson P., 846.  
 Hooker, Joseph, 29, 161, 220, 260, 381, 417, 419, 461, 464, 484, 486, 487, 490, 495, 526, 541-548, 551-553, 560, 564, 565, 568-571, 583, 585, 586, 590, 592, 595, 603, 606, 608, 619, 620, 927.  
 Hooper, Samuel, 55, 939.  
 Horsford, Eben N., 845.  
 Howard, Oliver O., 607, 648, 650.  
 Howland, Cornelius, Jr., 77.  
 Hoyt, William J., 318, 322.  
 Huger, Benjamin, Confederate, 289.  
 Humphreys, Andrew A., 465, 478.  
 Humphreys, B. G., Confederate, 647.  
 Hunt, Henry J., 61, 64, 361, 368, 374, 380, 387, 494, 606, 632, 646, 649, 651, 654, 663, 777, 906, 915, 916.  
 Hunter, Joseph, 699, 707, 713, 729, 730, 843, 845.  
 Huntington, James F., 596, 597, 600, 615, 617.  
 Hyde, Thomas W., 314, 380, 469, 651.

## I

Ingalls, John, 978.  
 Ingalls, Thomas, 978.  
 Ingraham, Timothy, 69, 70.  
 Irish, Nathaniel, 671.

## J

Jackson, Andrew, 28, 102.  
 Jackson, Thomas J., "Stonewall," Confederate, 309, 310, 321, 342, 355, 419, 421, 422, 435, 460, 462, 464, 492, 546, 590, 804, 920.  
 James, Robert, 636, 669.  
 Jameson, Charlie, 217.  
 Jay, William, 706.  
 Jenckes, Thomas A., 390.  
 Johnson, Andrew, 850, 896.  
 Johnson, Bushrod, Confederate, 820.  
 Johnston, Joseph E., Confederate, 287, 288, 291.  
 Jones, Edward J., 898, 929, 965.

## K

Kearney, Philip, 29, 311, 419, 427.  
 Kershaw, J. B., Confederate, 830.  
 Keyes, Erasmus D., 161, 270, 288, 289, 362.  
 Kilpatrick, Judson, 726, 783, 790, 791.  
 King, Edward VII, 765.

King, Horatio C., 466.  
 King, Rufus, 421.  
 King, William S., 15.  
 Kingsbury, Henry W., 135-139, 141, 146-148,  
 172, 365, 366, 372, 373, 395.  
 Knox, Edward M., 677.  
 Kurtz, John, 73, 77, 90.

## L

Ladd, Warren, 91, 92.  
 Lafayette, Gilbert Motier de, 223, 229.  
 Lakeman, Moses B., 279, 280.  
 Lansil, Walter F., 547.  
 Lawrence, T. Bigelow, 123.  
 Leahy or Lahee, John, 563, 567.  
 Lee, Charles J., 39.  
 Lee, Henry, Jr., 24.  
 Lee, Robert E., Confederate, 263, 264, 429,  
 431, 460, 462, 476, 492, 525, 621, 633, 688,  
 691, 695, 722, 724, 740, 779, 780, 801, 805,  
 815, 828, 852, 855, 871, 883, 903, 914, 920,  
 928, 943, 950-954.  
 Lee, William, 41.  
 Letcher, John, 518.  
 Lewis, Edward, 207.  
 Lewis, Nathan, 91, 92.  
 Lincoln, Abraham, 24, 25, 29, 32, 35, 39, 70,  
 102, 122, 138, 158, 261, 271, 280, 281, 288,  
 296, 358, 381, 402, 431, 454, 484, 486, 487,  
 567, 568, 569, 570, 571, 572, 575, 577, 620,  
 672, 673, 683, 695, 757, 777, 788, 939, 955,  
 961.  
 Locke, Fred T., 9, 21, 22, 156, 797, 816.  
 Longfellow, Charles A., 712, 747, 748.  
 Longfellow, H., 475.  
 Longfellow, Henry Wadsworth, 712.  
 Longstreet, James, 314, 331, 419, 422, 424,  
 460-462, 500, 591, 609, 637, 646, 650, 651,  
 652, 655, 660, 663, 678-780, 952.  
 Lord, Charles, 207.  
 Lothrop, Samuel K., 17.  
 Lounsberry, Clement A., 562.  
 Lowe, T., 192.  
 Lyman, Theodore, 703, 711, 727, 728, 760, 771.

## M

Mahone, William, Confederate, 812, 952.  
 Mann, John, 150, 157.  
 Martin, Augustus P., 15, 21, 52, 54, 62, 63,  
 146, 148, 161, 162, 214, 251, 262, 272, 273,  
 283, 290, 324, 371, 382, 388, 389, 390, 393,  
 394, 398, 404, 408, 410, 429, 431, 432, 436,  
 439, 440, 452-454, 469, 475-477, 485, 486, 488,  
 490, 495, 512, 518, 521, 526, 527, 540, 541,  
 544, 553, 554, 557-559, 561, 562, 578, 586-  
 588, 593, 613, 687, 694, 696, 697, 700, 702,  
 712, 732, 737, 739, 743, 745-747, 753-755, 758,  
 760, 768-771, 774, 778, 784, 790, 792-794, 797,

798, 800, 803, 812, 816, 817, 867, 906, 920,  
 972.  
 Martindale, John H., 185, 221, 223, 261, 271,  
 302, 315-317, 330-332, 364, 372, 380, 395.  
 Mason, Charles, 622.  
 McCall, George A., 161, 304, 309, 312, 313,  
 315, 342, 400.  
 McCartney, William H., 56, 63.  
 McClellan, George B., 5, 8, 19, 67, 68, 88, 92,  
 93, 103, 107, 117, 118, 120, 122, 130, 137, 138,  
 147, 158, 161, 162, 163, 164, 189, 190, 192, 193,  
 200, 211, 213, 216-218, 223, 224, 229, 230, 232,  
 235, 236, 242, 252, 257, 260, 261, 264, 266, 271,  
 276, 282, 283, 288, 296, 299, 303, 304, 310, 312-  
 315, 320, 336, 337, 345, 362, 363, 366, 367, 378,  
 381, 383, 386, 387, 389, 394, 401, 402, 414, 428,  
 430-432, 444, 447, 449-452, 454, 455, 460, 461,  
 476, 482, 483, 485, 486, 491, 517, 552, 776.  
 McCrea, Tully, 679.  
 McDowell, Irvin, 161, 255, 264, 269, 271, 288,  
 297, 312, 418, 419, 422, 426.  
 McGilvery, Freeman, 213, 591, 595, 597, 598,  
 600, 606, 609, 613-615, 617, 624, 627, 632, 636,  
 646, 647, 650, 652-654, 662, 663, 665-667, 671,  
 672, 710, 712, 738.  
 McKim, W. W., 93.  
 McQuade, James, 261, 271, 272.  
 Meade, George G., 11, 52, 62, 309, 519, 544,  
 564, 569, 574, 603, 606-608, 619, 620, 622, 650,  
 657, 673, 681, 703, 715, 720, 722, 724, 728, 732,  
 736, 740, 742, 743, 745, 755, 757, 762, 774, 776-  
 778, 780, 781, 785, 797, 804, 805, 814, 819, 829,  
 835, 851, 853, 856, 857, 867, 870, 871, 876, 912,  
 913, 916, 929, 941, 950, 951, 956.  
 Meagher, Thomas Francis, 315.  
 Meigs, Montgomery C., 93.  
 Melcher, Holman S., 737.  
 Mellert, J. H., 364.  
 Merriam, Waldo, 704.  
 Merritt, Wesley, 811.  
 Miles, Nelson A., 222, 812.  
 Milliken, Frank A., 975.  
 Milroy, R. H., 451.  
 Milton, Richard S., 647, 669, 826, 935, 957, 971.  
 Mink, Charles E., 778, 924, 935, 939.  
 Mitchell, Morton D., 898.  
 Monroe, J. Albert, 424.  
 Montgomery, William R., 432.  
 Mordecai, Alfred, 229.  
 Morell, George W., 221, 264, 271, 272, 283, 293,  
 309, 315, 316, 319, 361, 363, 364, 366, 373, 390,  
 394, 397, 398, 401, 420, 421, 423, 426, 436, 441,  
 446, 453, 458, 460, 467, 471, 476, 477.  
 Morgan, Edwin D., 33, 34.  
 Morrissey, John, 24.  
 Morris, Fordham, 9, 10, 831, 848, 861, 881, 893,  
 915.  
 Mortimer, Caleb C. E., 56, 328, 335.

B

RD-94

Morton, Oliver P., 673.  
Mudge, Charles R., 582.  
Myer, Albert J., 228.

## N

Nason, Elias, 559.  
Nason, P. F. 690, 754, 758, 767, 774.  
Nelson, Thomas, 164.  
Newton, John, 315.  
Nichols, W. A., 784.  
Nims, Ormand F., 63, 208.  
Norton, Charles B., 468, 469.  
Nye, William A., 978.  
Nye, William F., 975, 976, 978.

## O

Oliver, Henry K., 6, 24, 55, 737, 739, 938.  
Ord, E. O. C., 911, 933.  
Osborne, Thomas W., 650.  
Osgood, Lewis V., 571, 572.

## P

Park, William, Jr., 955.  
Parsons, A. N., 679.  
Patrick, M. R., 928.  
Patton, A. S., 24.  
Peck, John J., 315.  
Peele, Willard, 970.  
Peirce, Richard A., 7, 18.  
Pendleton, W. N., 398.  
Penn, Richard, 622.  
Penn, Thomas, 622.  
Perrin, Walter, 679.  
Perry, John Gardiner, 738.  
Pettit, Rufus D., 669.  
Phillippe, Louis, Comte de Paris, 315.  
Phillips, Edward W., 37, 972.  
Phillips, George, 625.  
Phillips, Stephen C., 969.  
Phillips, Stephen H., 30-35, 45, 47, 703, 739.  
Phillips, Wendell, 3.  
Pickett, George, Confederate, 644, 678.  
Pierce, Franklin, 28.  
Pleasanton, Alfred, 479, 606, 619, 722.  
Pleasants, Henry, 874.  
Pope, John, 312, 413, 414, 417, 419-421, 426, 428, 429, 431, 435, 450, 565.  
Porter, Fitz John, 20, 121, 129, 132, 133, 135, 136, 138, 140, 143, 149, 159, 161, 186, 187, 197, 201, 208, 210, 212, 213, 224, 237, 250, 256, 264, 265, 269, 271, 275, 279, 283, 296, 297, 300, 303, 309, 312, 313, 315, 334, 341, 361, 362, 364, 366, 380, 383, 387, 389, 394, 396-398, 414, 416, 417, 419-422, 424, 428, 436, 443, 452, 453, 460, 469, 484-486.  
Porter, Josiah, 56.  
Potter, Robert B., 861.  
Powell, William H., 161, 252, 651, 698.

Pratt, F. A., 754.  
Prescott, George L., 817, 882, 883.  
Prevost, Charles M., 440.  
Prim, Juan, Count de Reuss, 296, 297.  
Prince de Joinville, 315, 318.

## R

Randol, Alanson M., 578, 586, 588.  
Randolph, George E., 207, 607, 646.  
Rank, William, 654.  
Raymond, Charles, 841.  
Reed, John D., 429.  
Reno, Jesse L., 421.  
Reynolds, —, 421, 422, 603, 606, 622.  
Reynolds, W., 978.  
Rice, Alexander H., 24, 52, 939.  
Rice, James C., 277.  
Richardson, Lester L., 807, 857, 859, 878-881, 887.  
Richardson, William H., 85.  
Richardson, Israel B., 161, 315.  
Ricketts, James B., 421, 431.  
Ricketts, R. B., 606.  
Ritchie, David F., 938, 940, 944, 945, 947, 948, 956.  
Ritchie, Harrison, 24, 34, 398.  
Rittenhouse, Benjamin F., 55, 692, 733, 738, 769, 778, 812, 815.  
Roberts, Charles W., 318.  
Robinson, George D., 677.  
Robinson, John C., 781, 811, 812.  
Rodgers, John, 362, 367.  
Rodman, Edmund, 359.  
Rogers, Charles O., 26.  
Rogers, Robert E., 679, 924.  
Rogers, W. B., 415.  
Rogers, William H., 944.  
Rorty, James M., 679.  
Rosecranz, William S., 543, 708, 714.  
Ruggles, George D., 11.  
Russell, David A., 731.  
Russell, Edward J., 677.

## S

Sargent, Horace Binney, 24, 93.  
Sawin, Robert L., 56.  
Sedgwick, John, 161, 548, 698, 742, 772, 777, 813, 817.  
Seeley, Frank W., 636, 669.  
Seward, William H., 35, 575.  
Schenkle or Schenkl, John P., 231, 235, 236, 303, 304, 311.  
Schouler, William, 14, 15, 27, 62, 72, 73, 89, 90, 93, 115, 120, 121, 926, 958.  
Schurz, Carl, 569.  
Scott, Winfield, 32, 34, 38, 46, 88, 125.  
Sheldon, Albert S., 679, 806.

Sheridan, Philip, 803, 813, 816, 911, 930, 933, 943, 951, 953.  
 Sherman, Pliny B., 74.  
 Sherman, W. T., 940.  
 Sherwin, Thomas, Jr., 167, 554.  
 Shrove, W. H., 686.  
 Sickles, Daniel E., 607, 609, 646, 667.  
 Sigel, Franz, 312, 421, 422-424, 451, 481.  
 Sleeper, J. Henry, 971.  
 Slocum, Henry W., 315, 478, 571, 606, 648, 649.  
 Smead, John R., 302.  
 Smith, Caleb, 35.  
 Smith, Cornelius, 263.  
 Smith, F. Hopkinson, 704.  
 Smith, Gustavus W., Confederate, 289.  
 Smith, William F., 299, 306, 323, 345, 827, 830, 852, 853-855, 869.  
 Smith, William O., 975.  
 Soule, Rufus A., 974.  
 Spencer, Gideon, 437.  
 Sprague, William, 35.  
 Stanton, Edwin M., 5, 30-34, 52, 54, 56, 62, 63, 193, 240, 257, 260, 280, 281, 381, 427, 575, 617, 683, 770, 788, 850, 888, 895, 896.  
 Sterling, John, 679.  
 Stevenson, J. D., 813.  
 Stewart, James, 778, 813, 814, 857, 862, 878, 879, 916, 924, 935.  
 Stone, A. L., 24.  
 Stoneman, George, 273, 276, 304, 404, 545, 568, 569, 590.  
 Stowe, William, 24.  
 Stryker, Stephen W., 249.  
 Stuart, J. E. B., Confederate, 455, 464, 559, 600, 726, 791.  
 Sumner, Charles, 24, 52, 55, 939.  
 Sumner, Edwin V., 161, 220, 244, 256, 265, 270, 289, 294, 304, 362, 461, 462, 464, 485, 866.  
 Sweitzer, Jacob B., 861, 862, 881.  
 Swinton, William, 678.  
 Sykes, George, 52, 256, 309, 313, 315, 316, 361, 413, 420, 422, 478, 479, 607, 697, 699, 717, 745, 747, 755, 761, 784, 791, 793.

## T

Taber, Isaac C., 68, 69, 74, 75, 77, 91, 407, 411.  
 Taft, Elijah D., 471, 472, 617, 629, 679.  
 Taylor, Bayard, 673.  
 Tennyson, Alfred, 764, 765.  
 Thomas, Benjamin F., 24.  
 Thomas, Evau, 679.  
 Thomas, Stephen, 190.  
 Thompson, Charles, 888.  
 Thompson, James, 624, 627, 636, 651, 654, 662, 669, 679.  
 Thompson, William B., 368.  
 Tidball, John C., 933, 942, 944, 946, 947.  
 Tilton, William S., 798.

Tompkins, Daniel S., 245, 389.  
 Tompkins, John A., 591, 593, 595, 596.  
 Toucey, Isaac, 31.  
 Train, Charles R., 24.  
 Tuttle, James, 142, 348.  
 Tyler, Philip H., 404, 408.  
 Tyler, Robert O., 361, 590-592, 606, 607, 667, 752, 754, 755.

## V

Vaughan, James, Jr., 104.  
 Van Reed, William E., 941.

## W

Wadsworth, James S., 648, 781, 782, 806.  
 Wainwright, Charles S., 9, 54, 99, 650, 751, 778, 793, 794, 797, 798, 831, 833, 838, 842, 848, 849, 872, 893, 897, 955.  
 Wallace, Lew, 914.  
 Ward, George Hull, 609.  
 Ward, J. Langdon, 44.  
 Wardrop, David W., 69, 190.  
 Warner, Oliver, 6, 24, 55, 938.  
 Warren, Gouverneur K., 9, 10, 422, 552, 740, 742, 777, 792-794, 815, 820, 852, 856, 857, 861, 879, 899, 903, 906, 917, 919, 929, 931, 932, 934, 937.  
 Washburn, William B., 55, 939.  
 Washington, George, 68, 102, 109, 138, 243, 263, 466, 487, 556, 574, 832, 940.  
 Waterman, Richard, 366, 368, 375, 423, 424, 436, 437, 440, 441, 478, 500, 521, 526, 540, 553, 578, 588, 599.  
 Waud, A. R., 772.  
 Webb, Alexander S., 111, 318, 470, 472, 574, 649, 650.  
 Webster, Fletcher, 425.  
 Weed, Stephen H., 465, 495, 500, 508, 547, 552, 553, 588.  
 Weeden, William B., 161, 162, 206, 213, 251, 300, 304, 316, 319, 324, 327, 364, 365, 367, 369, 390, 393, 409.  
 Weld, Stephen M., 132, 569.  
 Welles, Gideon, 35, 106.  
 Wells, W. H., 10th New York Battery, 643.  
 Wentworth, Lewis E., 153.  
 Weston, George Fiske, 574, 703.  
 Wetherell, John W., 24.  
 Wheeler, William, 679.  
 Whipple, Amiel W., 441, 445-449, 451-456, 571, 588.  
 Whitaker, Alexander H., 625, 633.  
 Whiting, W. H. C., Confederate, 309.  
 Wightman, Joseph M., 74.  
 Wilcox, Cadmus M., Confederate, 782.  
 Wilkeson, Bayard, 679.  
 Williams, Robert, 93.  
 Wilson, Henry, 24, 31, 52, 55, 61, 71-73, 688.

Winslow, George B., 778.

Woodfin, Philip T., 727.

Woodruff, C. A., 3.

Woodruff, George, 679.

Wool, John E., 253, 682.

Wright, H. G., 731, 813, 840, 851-853.

Wright, Joseph W. B., 115.

Wyndam, Percy, 818.











<http://stores.ebay.com/Ancestry-Found>

<http://stores.ebay.com/Ancestry-Found>



